

History of Northumberland.





THE LIBRARY
OF
THE UNIVERSITY
OF CALIFORNIA
LOS ANGELES

A
HISTORY
OF
NORTHUMBERLAND
ISSUED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF
THE NORTHUMBERLAND COUNTY HISTORY
COMMITTEE

NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE
PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY ANDREW REID & COMPANY, LIMITED

LONDON
SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, HAMILTON, KENT & COMPANY, LIMITED

1907

MOUTH OF THE CLIFF



A
HISTORY OF NORTHUMBERLAND

VOLUME VIII

THE PARISH OF TYNEMOUTH

By H. H. E. CRASTER, M.A.,
FELLOW OF ALL SOULS COLLEGE, OXFORD

NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE
PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY ANDREW REID & COMPANY, LIMITED
LONDON
SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, HAMILTON, KENT, & COMPANY, LIMITED
1907

NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE
ANDREW REID & COMPANY, LIMITED, PRINTING COURT BUILDINGS

*DA
670
Ns Ns
v. 3

PREFACE.

The importance of the locality included in the present volume of the new History of Northumberland has demanded prolonged investigations on the part of the Committee and editor; hence the length of time occupied in its production will be found to be more than compensated by the value of the results achieved. Since the publication of the former volume, the Committee have lost one of their most valued members by the death of Mr. C. B. P. Bosanquet, who was one of the founders and an original member of the Committee, and a regular and useful attendant at their meetings.

As originally planned the present volume was to comprise the history of the mother parish of Tynemouth, and that of the ancient parochial chapelry of Earsdon. Requirements of space have obliged the Committee to keep back the latter section; but it is already written and largely in print, and will form a portion of Volume IX. of the series.

The history of the Benedictine priory of Tynemouth, forming as it did the central point of interest in the district, was dealt with, many years ago, by the late Mr. Sidney Gibson, in a work in which thoroughness and partiality vie with each other. But Mr. Gibson had not direct access to the unpublished *Tynemouth Chartulary*, a document chiefly valuable as a custumal, of which the Duke of Northumberland has permitted the editor to make the fullest use. The real Chartulary of the convent, a large folio manuscript, known as the *Great Book of Tynemouth*, is lost and cannot be traced later than the seventeenth century, when it was in the possession of Sir Orlando Bridgeman, whose descendant and representative, the Earl of Bradford, at the Committee's request, caused an unsuccessful search to be made for it among his muniments.

b

The editor has made very full use of the *St. Alban's Register* (Cott. MS. Tib. E. vi.), a manuscript commonly reputed to have been destroyed by fire; of a collection of letters, written by monks, *temp.* Henry III., relating to the priory (Digby MSS. 20); and of a most interesting description of Tynemouth, written *circa* 1200, preserved in the Cambridge University Library. This document has been carefully revised and annotated by Mr. Francis Jenkinson, University Librarian.

In order to provide a plan of the conventual buildings worthy of the architectural and historical description of the priory, permission to excavate was sought at the War Office; it was granted by the Council for Defence and sanctioned by H.M. Board of Works. The excavations, made in the winter of 1904-1905, under the superintendence of Mr. W. H. Knowles, F.S.A., with labour freely supplied by the Corporation of Tynemouth, revealed a plan, almost unique, of the Norman conventual church. It has been described, with the architectural features of the monastic buildings, by Mr. Knowles. In this connection the Committee have pleasure in acknowledging the courtesy of Major Bryant, R.A., officer commanding the troops at Tynemouth castle. The plans, photographs, and drawings of the priory and castle were made, and are reproduced, with the permission of the officer commanding the northern district.

The position and history of the priory have tended to throw into obscurity the story of the growth of the important town of North Shields, and to distract attention from the character of the customary and copyhold tenures of Tynemouthshire. From the rich store of documents belonging to the Duke of Northumberland, of which the editor has been allowed to make a thorough examination, this deficiency has been supplemented, and the nature of customary holdings in the county has been dealt with generally. His Grace being the only great landowner in the district, it has not been found necessary to apply to the other proprietors for an inspection of

muniments. The steward of the manor of Tynemouth, Mr. W. H. Ryott, has not only given full access to the court rolls in his custody, but has spent much labour in tracing the descent of various copyhold estates within the manor.

The Committee are again indebted to Professor Garwood for an account of the geology of the district. Mr. T. E. Forster has written the article upon the coal trade, and Professor A. Meek of Armstrong College, Newcastle-upon-Tyne, that on the sea fisheries of Northumberland.

The pre-Conquest stones at Tynemouth have been described by the Rev. William Greenwell, and the elaborately ornamented shield found at the mouth of the Tyne, by Mr. F. J. Haverfield; the latter has also revised the other references to Roman antiquities found in the district. Mr. J. C. Hodgson, F.S.A., has prepared the pedigrees, and Mr. Maberly Phillips, F.S.A., has written the account of the non-established churches.

By the death of Mr. Charles James Spence the Committee have lost an active and sympathetic friend to their undertaking. In the planning out of the present volume he not only gave wise counsel to the editor, but placed his drawings, manuscripts, and rare printed books at his service. Some of his own beautiful drawings and etchings have been reproduced, and his family, in accordance with what they thought would have been his wish, have given a handsome contribution towards the cost of illustrating the volume.

To Mr. H. A. Adamson the editor is under deep obligation for the generous way in which he has placed at his disposal his wide and extensive knowledge of the local antiquities of Tynemouth and North Shields, and for the ample use allowed to be made of his legal and historical collections. The Committee have also to thank him, as well as Mr. W. S. Daglish and Mr. Wilfred Hall, for donations for extra illustrations.

Thanks are also due to Mr. S. S. Carr, Mr. W. W. Tomlinson, and others, for help willingly given, and to Mr. W. H. Charlton and Mr. Henry Clarke for the loan of drawings. The index has been mainly compiled by Miss B. M. Craster.

The Dean and Chapter of Durham have permitted the unrestricted use of charters in the Treasury. The Rev. T. E. Crawhall, vicar of Tynemouth, Mr. Stephen Sanderson, Clerk of the Peace for Northumberland, Mr. J. B. Lazenby, Registrar of the Consistory Court at Durham, and the Master and Brethren of the Trinity House of Newcastle, have given free access to documents in their custody.

Information regarding historical papers in their libraries has been given by Mr. L. Sackville-West, Mr. R. T. Gunton, librarian to the Marquis of Salisbury, and Mr. H. A. Wilson, librarian of Magdalen College, Oxford. Amongst others who have helped by advice or have revised the proofs of certain portions of the work are Professor C. M. Firth, Regius Professor of Modern History, Oxford; Professor Vinogradoff, Corpus Professor of Jurisprudence, Oxford; Dr. James, Principal of King's College, Cambridge; Professor Wright, Professor of Comparative Philology, Oxford; Professor Lebour, Professor of Geology, Armstrong College, Newcastle-upon-Tyne; Mr. H. C. Davis of Balliol College, Oxford; Mr. Horace Round; the Rev. Canon Savage, vicar of Halifax; and Mr. W. H. Stevenson of St. John's College, Oxford.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
PREFACE	v
LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS	x
LIST OF COMMITTEE	xi
ADDENDA ET CORRIGENDA	xii
INTRODUCTION—	
DESCRIPTION OF THE DISTRICT	1
GEOLOGY	2
COLLIERIES AND THE COAL TRADE	17

TYNEMOUTH PARISH.

TYNEMOUTH PRIORY	34
THE PARISH CHURCH	124
DESCRIPTION OF TYNEMOUTH PRIORY AND CASTLE	131
TYNEMOUTH CASTLE	154
THE LIGHTHOUSE	205
TYNEMOUTHSHIRE	207
TYNEMOUTH BOROUGH	247
TYNEMOUTH TOWNSHIP	247
CLIFFORD'S FORT AND THE LIGHTHOUSES	274
CULLERCOATS TOWNSHIP	280
NORTH SHIELDS TOWNSHIP	284
CHIRTON TOWNSHIP	315
PRESTON TOWNSHIP	342
MUNICIPAL HISTORY OF THE BOROUGH	350
CHRIST CHURCH	357
THE NON-ESTABLISHED CHURCHES	371
THE SEA FISHERIES	378
WHITLEY TOWNSHIP	389
MONKSEATON TOWNSHIP	402
MURTON TOWNSHIP	409
SHIRE MOOR	412

APPENDICES.

APPENDIX I.	417
APPENDIX II.	421
INDEX	426

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE
The Mouth of the Tyne	<i>frontispiece</i>
Map	1
Plate I. Fig. 1—The Ninety-fathom Dyke at Cullercoats	8
" Fig. 2—Table Rocks, Whitley	8
Plate II.—View of Boulder-clay	16
Plate III.—Map to illustrate the History of Coal Mining in Tynemouthshire	20
Roman Stones from Tynemouth	36, 37
Plate IV.—Charter of Edgar, son of Gospatric (<i>Dur. Treas.</i> 3 ^{cia} 2 ^{dnc} Spec. No. 1)	48
Tynemouth Priory, Effigy in the Choir	51
" " Choir of the Priory Church	56
Seal and Counterseal of Simon, Abbot of St. Alban's (<i>Dur. Treas.</i> 2 ^{da} 2 ^{dnc} Spec. No. 4)	64, 65
Plate V.—Tynemouth Priory Church, Presbytery	68
Tynemouth Priory, Effigy in the Nave	75
Plate VI.—Brass of Thomas de la Mare, Abbot of St. Alban's	92
Tynemouth Priory, Spandril	95
" " Newel Stair in Gate-house	99
" " Bosses over the Doorway of the Percy Chapel	103
" " Doorways in the Gate-house	110
Plate VII.—Tynemouth Priory Seals	122
Tynemouth Priory, the Church from the South-west	128
The Monk's Stone, near Tynemouth	132, 133
Pre-Conquest Crosses from Tynemouth	134, 135
Tynemouth Priory, Conjectural Plan of the Norman Church	136
Plate VIII.—Tynemouth Priory, Ground Plan of Church	136
Plate IX.— " " the Choir (from a painting in the possession of Mr. H. A. Adamson)	140
Plate X.— " " Ceiling of the Percy Chapel	144
Plate XI.— " " Plan of Site	146
Plate XII.— " " Elizabethan Plan (<i>Cott. MSS.</i> Aug. 1. ii. 6)	148
Plate XIII.— " " Plan of Gate-house	150
Plate XIV.— " " in the Eighteenth Century (from a painting in the possession of Mr. Robert Spence)	152
Plate XV.—Chart of the Tyne, <i>temp.</i> Henry VIII. (<i>Cott. MSS.</i> Aug. I. ii. 5)	160
Tynemouth Castle, the Spanish Battery	184
" " Fireplace in the Gate-house	189
North Shields, Clifford's Fort, <i>circa</i> 1680 (<i>King's Library</i> , xxxiii. 23, g.)	201
" Corner Turret in Clifford's Fort	276
" the Old Low Light	277

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

xi

	PAGE
Plate XVI.—Boss of Roman Shield found in the Tyne	280
Cullercoats, Sparrow Hall	282
„ Harbour	283
North Shields, Old Quays	304
„ Wooden Dolly Quay	305
„ River Side near the Low Lights	309
„ Low and High Lights	313
Billy Mill, near Chirton	329
Coble Dene	340
North Shields Harbour	353
„ Wellesley Training Ship	357
„ Fish Quay	384
Fireplace in the Ship Inn, Monkseaton	405
Plate XVII.—Map of Shire Moor	417

HISTORY OF NORTHUMBERLAND.

ISSUED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF THE NORTHUMBERLAND COUNTY HISTORY COMMITTEE.

COMMITTEE.

THE DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND, K.G.
 THE EARL OF TANKERVILLE.
 LORD ARMSTRONG.
 SIR JOHN EVANS, K.C.B., F.S.A.
 EDWARD BATESON, ESQ., B.A.
 ROBERT BLAIR, ESQ., F.S.A.
 WILLIAM BROWN, ESQ., F.S.A.
 F. W. DENDY, ESQ.
 THE REV. WILLIAM GREENWELL, D.C.L., F.R.S., F.S.A.
 RICHARD OLIVER HESLOP, ESQ., M.A., F.S.A.
 THOMAS HODGKIN, ESQ., D.C.L., F.S.A.
 JOHN CRAWFORD HODGSON, ESQ., M.A., F.S.A.
 JOHN GEORGE HODGSON, ESQ.
 W. H. KNOWLES, ESQ., F.S.A.
 RICHARD WELFORD, ESQ., M.A.
 E. G. WHEELER, ESQ.
 HUMPHREY JOHN WILLIAMS, ESQ.

ADDENDA ET CORRIGENDA.

- Page 35, line 16. Benebalcrag. This identification is probably based on Bede's description of the northern wall: Incipit autem duorum ferme milium spatio a monasterio Aebbercurnig ad occidentem in loco, qui sermone Pictorum *Peanfahel*, lingua autem Anglorum Penneltun appellatur; et tendens contra occidentem terminatur juxta urbem Alcluith. *Historia Ecclesiastica*, ed. Plummer, vol. i. p. 26. A similar attempt to suit Bede's description to the southern wall led Higden to place Alcluith in the neighbourhood of Carlisle. *Polychronicon*, Rolls Series, vol. ii. p. 66.
- Page 49. The donors of Wolsington were William de Merlay and Rohays his wife. *Liber de Benefactoribus*, p. 445.
- Page 86, line 4. Prior Tewing was assisted in his task of defending Tynemouth castle by Aymar de Valence, warden of the Marches, and by Richard de Kellaw, bishop of Durham. Both the bishop and the warden received from Edward II. letters of thanks for what they had done for the prior, to whom they were requested to continue their aid in matters touching the northern parts. The letter to Valence is dated September 1st, 1315 (*Ancient Correspondence*, P.R.O. vol. 49, No. 31); that to Kellaw is couched in very similar terms and is probably of the same date (*Reg. Pal. Dun.* Rolls Series, vol. iv. pp. 508-509).
- Page 87, line 13. It is uncertain how long John de Haustede continued in charge of Tynemouth; but the castle appears to have been still under the control of a royal officer on August 6th, 1323. See Palgrave, *Parliamentary Writs*, vol. ii. div. ii. appendix, p. 233.
- Page 99, line 8. An independent account of the Scottish invasion in 1389 is given by John Malverne, who states that the Scots, thirty thousand strong, crossed the Tweed on June 29th, and sent a message to the prior of Tynemouth, bidding him ransom the monastic cells and property of his house. The money apparently was not forthcoming. The earl of Nottingham, warden of the Marches, was absent on a foray in Scotland, and, upon hearing of the Scottish inroad, took up a safe position at Berwick. The earl of Northumberland prudently sought the king, who made him president of the Council. Only Sir Matthew Redman and Sir Thomas Ogle had courage to follow up the Scots, of whom they killed or captured two hundred in the course of retreat. *Polychronicon Radulphi Higden*, Rolls Series, vol. ix. p. 213. Malverne also records an invasion in the previous year, two months before Otterburn, wherein the enemy laid waste Northumberland as far as Tynemouth, and did greater havoc than had been experienced for a century. *Ibid.* p. 184.
- Page 102, line 24. Bourne, probably with greater accuracy, describes this stone as a round with the inscription: ORATE PRO ANIMA ROBERTI RHODES; *History of Newcastle*, p. 89. Similar bosses are to be seen in the groining of St. John's church, Newcastle, and in the church of Corbridge, the latter having been removed from the vaulted stage of the belfry of old All Saints' church, Newcastle. For an account of Robert Rhodes see Longstaffe in *Life of Ambrose Barnes*, Surt. Soc. No. 50, pp. 94-97. In his writ of *diem clausit extremum*, he is styled Robert Rhodes of Benwell (35th *Deputy Keeper's Report*, p. 125), and he may be safely assumed to have bestowed that manor upon Tynemouth priory; but his relation to the religious house was that of benefactor only, and his name should therefore be deleted from the list of priors on page 123.
- Page 106, line 31, for 'Prior Stonywell' read 'Prior Bensted.'

Page 118, line 30. For a description of 'King Oswin's psalter' see the 35th Deputy Keeper's Report, pp. 164-165, and *National Manuscripts of Ireland* (text), p. 39. Two pages are reproduced in coloured facsimile in *Facsimiles of National MSS. Ireland*, pt. ii. plate 48. Another volume probably emanating from Tynemouth but unnoticed in the text is in the Bodleian Library (*Gough Liturgies*, No. 18). This is a small psalter, with delicate illuminations in red, blue and gold, a few large capitals, and grotesque animals at the foot of some of the pages. Prefixed to it are illuminated pages representing Christ and the Holy Lamb, the Crucifixion, the Divine Person seated between the four evangelists represented as four beasts, and a Benedictine monk adoring the Mother and Child.

Page 119, line 18. This is probably the copy of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* mentioned by John Boston of Bury as being in the Tynemouth conventual library. It is significant that Boston only mentions one other volume in the library, namely, the *Historia Aurea* of John of Tynemouth, a fact which removes the doubt expressed on page 126 as to John of Tynemouth's identity. This copy of the *Historia Aurea* is not now known to exist.

Page 120, last paragraph and note 3. Glover and Camden derive their authority from Leland, who gives extracts from three unidentified chronicles which he found in the conventual library at Tynemouth. *Collectanea*, ed. 1772, vol. i. pp. 324-327. Another important chronicle from the same source is cited by Leland on several occasions in his *Commentarii de Scriptoribus* under the title of *Annales Tinenses*. None of these chronicles appear to have had any specially local character. For 'Walterus' in line 1 read 'Walcherus.'

Page 123, line 10, for 'Burton' read 'Bolton.'

Page 124, line 14, for 'Prior Dunham' read 'Prior de Parco.'

Page 143, line 30, omit 'the cathedrals of Canterbury and Lincoln, the chapel of King's College, Oxford.'

Page 171, Delaval pedigree, line 1, for 'she remarried, secondly, George Cramlington of Cramlington, and, thirdly,' read 'widow of George Cramlington of Newsham; she remarried.'

Page 202, Villiers pedigree, for 'William Chaffinch' read 'William Chiffinch.'

Page 215, note 2. Another list of the jurors of Tynemouth liberty occurs in a fragmentary subsidy-roll of about the year 1294 (No. 240/295), and is as follows:

			£	s.	d.		s.	d.
Summa bonorum	Roberti de Prudhow	...	3	8	10	unde regi	6	10½
"	Johannis de Wytel	...	4	15	0	"	9	6
"	Willelmi Russel	...	3	14	4	"	7	5½
"	Nicholai de Anebell	...	2	0	0	"	4	0
"	Willelmi Stiward	...	0	19	8	"	1	11½
"	Roberti de Chirton	...	2	17	10	"	5	9½
"	Nicholai Faukes	...	1	16	0	"	3	7½
"	Nicholai de Morton	...	1	9	8	"	2	11¾
"	Rogeri de Morton	...	1	10	2	"	3	0¼
"	Hugonis de Bacwrth	...	1	0	8	"	2	0¾

Radulphus serviens et Rogerus Gray sunt de duodena, et non debent hic taxari quare alibi in Seton monachorum et in Est Chirton.

Summa totalis duodene sine hiis duobus, £23 12s. 2d.; unde regi, £2 7s. 2¾d.

Page 215, note 3. Add to the list of seneschals of Tynemouth liberty, Thomas de Belsay, 1316.

Page 216, note 1. The office of constable of Tynemouth castle had been previously held by John de Haustedede, 1318 (see page 87); Henry Lancastre, 1445 (see page 425); and by John Mitford, circa 1510 (*Early Chancery Proceedings*, case 128, No. 43).

- Page 233, line 49. A record of this suit is to be found in *Exchequer Proceedings*, bundle 145, No. 238.
- Page 260, line 24. About the year 1490 the prioress and convent of St. Bartholomew addressed a petition to the chancellor, praying that a writ of sub-pena might be addressed to Nicholas, prior of Tynemouth, he having refused to continue the annuity of eight quarters of wheat, whereby the prioress and nuns had been brought to great poverty, and their house had been so decayed that they could not sustain the charges of their house and divine service as they had done heretofore and as they were bound to do by their religion. They stated that they were too poor in lands and goods to bring a suit at common law, and that a process for distraint, obtained upon a writ of annuity, would not be executed by reason of the great power of the prior, Northumberland being 'far from the cours and good ordre of the lawe.' *Early Chancery Proceedings*, case 103, No. 24.
- Page 270. Dockwray pedigree. Thomas Dockwray (1690-1760) was nominated perpetual curate of Wallsend in 1718.
- Page 273. Clark pedigree. The following are the dates of birth of the daughters of William Clark of Tynemouth: Anne Elizabeth, 4th June, 1796; Mary Elizabeth, 10th March, 1799; Elizabeth Sarah, 30th August, 1801; Jane Margaret, 22nd November, 1806. *Wallsend Registers*.
- Page 298, line 6, for 'Ramsay' read 'Ramsey.'
- Page 323. Cardonnel-Lawson pedigree. Ann, daughter of Mansfeldt Cardonnel, died at Cramlington, unmarried, in April, 1822. James Hilton de Cardonnel-Lawson was son of Adam Mansfeldt de Cardonnel-Lawson, by his second wife, Miss Vibart, and had an only daughter and heiress, Ada de Cardonnel-Lawson, living at Rome, unmarried, 1906.
- Page 339, note 3. It is somewhat remarkable that the one authoritative definition of 'fine of court' ascribes to that payment some of the characteristics peculiar to head-pennies. In 1278, a case between John de Hertweyton and Robert de Insula was heard in the king's court, and, in the course of the proceedings, fine of court was defined by the jurors as a payment made for exemption from attendance at the sheriff's town: 'Finis curie est talis quod ballivi domini regis venire solebant ad curiam baronum, et ibidem sedere et audire placita; et quam cito ballivi istius curie aliquid fecerint contra legem et consuetudinem regni, statim ballivi domini regis solebant amerciare sectatores; propter quod omnes sectatores comitatus et curie baronis adierunt curiam domini regis et finem fecerunt cum domino rege L libris pro cornagio reddendo ei quolibet anno, et pro fine curie pro L libris reddendo domino regi bis in septem annis.' *Placitorum Abbreviatio*, Record Com. p. 194. According to the custom of West Chirton, however, fine of court was payable twice a year; and the payment made twice every seven years, which is described as 'head-pennies' in the survey of 1377, is distinguished from fine of court, with which it may yet have been closely connected.
- Page 347. Spearman pedigree. Eleanor, first wife of George Spearman of Preston and Eachwick, was buried at St. Nicholas', Newcastle, 11th March, 1745/6. Her children were (1) Edward, baptised at St. Nicholas', 3rd February, 1735/6, died February, 1762; (2) John, baptised at St. Nicholas', 4th April, 1737, died 1774; (3) Matthew, baptised 29th April, 1739, buried at St. John's, Newcastle, 14th January, 1761; (4) George, baptised 20th April, 1738, died 1768. Sir Cuthbert Sharpe's interleaved Surtees, *Durham*, vol. i. pt. ii. p. 94.
- Page 391, line 12, for 'Adam de Tewing' read 'Adam de Maperteshall.'
- Page 408, note 2, omit 'Mary, the wife of . . . Ward.'

HISTORY OF NORTHUMBERLAND.

TYNEMOUTH PARISH.

INTRODUCTION.

IN this volume is given the history of the ancient parish of Tynemouth, exclusive of the chapelry of Earsdon which was formerly dependent upon it. The parish is composed of eight townships, five of which are included in the modern borough of Tynemouth. All the townships in the parish, and Earsdon and Backworth in Earsdon chapelry, fall within a single manor, and constitute a district to which the name of Tynemouthshire, as used in a restricted sense, is applied; but formerly this district was termed the *in-shire*, and, in conjunction with other outlying townships grouped together as the *out-shire*, formed a franchise or liberty held by the prior of Tynemouth for the time being.

Sir Walter Scott's description of Durham—'half church of God, half fortress 'gainst the Scots'—is even more applicable to Tynemouth; for the lord of the liberty of Tynemouthshire was not only prior of the premier cell of St. Alban's monastery, but held and guarded one of the strongest castles in the county, a castle which came into the hands of the crown in 1538 and continues to be the main defence of the Tyne. In Tynemouthshire the coal trade found its earliest development. The growth of municipal life within its limits, although of recent origin, is the natural outcome of a quarrel over river rights, carried on through many centuries, between Tynemouth and Newcastle.

Tynemouth parish forms the south-eastern corner of the county, and covers an area of eleven and a half square miles, extending three miles northwards along the coast to the Brierdean burn, and three miles up the Tyne to Howdon. Its population is chiefly distributed among the growing towns of North Shields, Tynemouth, and Whitley, and totals over sixty thousand inhabitants.

GEOLOGY.

The parish of Tynemouth and chapelry of Earsdon include some of the most interesting geological features to be found in the whole of Northumberland. In the first place, the district contains the only outcrops of Permian strata north of the Tyne, while the Coal-measures include most of the important seams worked in the county. In some cases, the shales associated with these beds enclose magnificent specimens of fish and reptiles, a splendid suit of which, obtained by local collectors, is exhibited in the Hancock Museum at Newcastle-upon-Tyne; while the sandstones show features of some interest. The glacial deposits again are finely exposed in a continuous section on the north bank of the Tyne, and afford information of importance concerning the origin of these deposits in Northumberland.

Permian.—These rocks occur in the form of outliers from the main mass of the Permian beds which bulk so large along the coastline south of the Tyne. They crop out at Tynemouth, Whitley and Cullercoats, and also at Hartley, where, however, only the lowest beds are seen capping the cliff near the old lime-kiln. They occur again at Clousden Hill, near Killingworth, outside this parish. They include representatives of the lower yellow sands, marl-slate and lower 'compact' and middle 'cellular' limestones of Sedgwick and Howse. The most southerly of these outliers, namely, that under Tynemouth castle, forms the northern limit of the main mass of the Permian in Durham. The block of the same strata at Whitley, Cullercoats and Hartley represents a further extension of these beds to the north, let down and preserved by the Ninety-fathom dyke. How much farther north in Northumberland the Permian beds were originally deposited it is now impossible to say, but the presence of the Middle Limestone at Whitley shows that the whole series must have once extended much farther north, since that bed was by no means a shore deposit. In this connection, it is interesting to note the occurrence of a large boulder of fossiliferous Magnesian Limestone, recorded by Kirkby in 1865, which was washed out of the till at the south end of Whitley sands, about a mile north of the present outcrop of these beds. The Lower and Middle Limestones were formerly well exposed at Whitley quarries, where the lower bed was noted for its fossils, for Kirkby, writing of these beds in 1865, specially alludes to this locality as the 'ultima Thule' of the Magnesian Limestone

and its fossils. The quarry was afterwards drowned out by water, and the fossiliferous bed, which lay towards the bottom, rendered inaccessible.

In the cliff at Tynemouth the lower bed was broken up and formed into a conglomerate, previous to the deposition of the upper 'concretionary' ('cellular') bed upon it. From this bed Kirkby quotes as many as twenty species on the authority of Professor King. In Northumberland, as in many places in Durham and Germany, the Lower Limestone rests on and passes into a shaly marl-slate, which thins out and disappears in the south of Durham. It seldom reaches a yard in thickness and its chief fossil contents are fishes, reptiles and plant remains. This bed was formerly exposed between tide-marks on the south side of Cullercoats bay, where it occurred as a sandy bituminous shale. It has here yielded many fine specimens of ganoid fishes, *Platysomus striatus*, *Pygopterus mandibulatus* and *Acentrophorus glaphyrus*, together with several species of *Palaconiscus*, of which *P. Frieslebeni* (Blainv) is by far the commonest. From Cullercoats also have been recorded specimens of the shark, *Woodnika striatula* (Münster), and the ray, *Fauassa bituminosa* (Schloth). At the present day (1905) the bed is practically worked out, though the writer succeeded in obtaining a specimen of *Palaconiscus* at low spring tide in the summer of 1904. Plant remains are very poorly preserved in this exposure, but specimens of *Ullmannia selaginoides* occur in the slate under Tynemouth castle.

The yellow sands below form an incoherent unfossiliferous deposit. Local in character and of variable thickness, they are often false-bedded and the grains of quartz are frequently much rounded. These characters point to deposition under shallow water or even shore conditions, and they may possibly represent an æolian deposit of the nature of sand dunes. The sands rest unconformably upon the denuded surface of the Coal-measures, which under Tynemouth castle consist of red sandstones and shales, apparently representing beds a little above the 'Yard' seam.

These red beds were originally referred by Sir R. I. Murchison and the early Northumbrian geologists to the Permian. Thus Howse in 1848 writes: 'They are the "lower-new-red-sandstones" of English geology, and from their relative position are considered equivalent to the "Rothlie-todte-liegende" of Germany.' In this statement he is only following Professor Sedgwick's classification of 1826. In 1857, however, he remarks:

At Cullercoats and Tynemouth the Red Sandstone is so evidently conformable, and passes so gradually into the shales and sandstones of the true Coal-measures, that it is impossible to separate them, or point out a line of separation,

and he goes on to state that the Red Sandstone contains at Tynemouth genuine Coal-measure fossils. In 1863, in his joint work with Kirkby, he allows the latter to sum up the question thus :

We include the Lower Red Sandstone as Permian with some hesitation, for it will be seen that all fossils are Coal-measure species. This fact would certainly have induced us to place it in the Carboniferous system, rather than with the Permian strata, had we not been aware that several other Carboniferous species extended up into the Magnesian Limestone. We therefore with some reluctance ignore for the present the paleontological evidence, and classify this deposit as we do, on the grounds of its apparent conformability with the Magnesian Limestone.

In 1889, in his guide to the local fossils, Howse entirely abandons this view and, in speaking of these two deposits, remarks :

It (the yellow sand) may be the English equivalent of the German *Weissliegende*, which is also an anomalous deposit, and, if so, must be admitted to be Permian, as the *Weissliegende*, in some parts of Germany, contains characteristic and well-known Magnesian Limestone or Permian species. There is no *Rothliegende* in these counties, the beds so classified are merely the disturbed denuded edges of the true Coal-measures.

In the last edition of his *Outlines*, Professor Lebour, referring to these beds, writes :

Messrs. Daglish, Forster, Atkinson and others have always stated their conviction that they were merely the ordinary Coal-measure rocks stained red at and near their line of contact with the overlying Permian. This conviction increased experience and observation cause me now to share completely.

The 'smuggler's' cave in Cullercoats bay has been excavated out of these beds where they are let down against the north side of the Ninety-fathom dyke, and here, as pointed out by Professor Lebour, the rock is calcareous in spots, giving rise to a curious knobby appearance on the weathered surfaces, due to segregation of calcareous cementing matter round certain points.

The unconformity of these yellow sands upon the Coal-measures, now generally accepted, is well illustrated by the fact that at Tynemouth the Permian strata rest on the Red Sandstone not far above the 'Metal' or 'Grey' seam, while at Killingworth, only six miles away, a coal-seam known as the 'Clousden Hill' seam is found, 1,000 feet higher in the formation, showing the denudation of a great thickness of Carboniferous rocks before the deposition of the Permian beds.

Historical.—The first published account of the Permian rocks in Northumberland is apparently that by Winch in 1814, in which he maps the beds as a continuous outcrop as far as Whitley, though he alludes to the Ninety-fathom dyke at Cullercoats as dislocating the Coal-measures and passing into the sea, and remarks, 'here is the northern extremity of the west boundary of the Magnesian Limestone,' but he does not seem to have realised that the preservation of this patch of Permian was due to the downthrow on the north side of the fault, for, in describing the quarry at Whitley, he evidently considers the fault to be of pre-Permian age. Thus he says :

A hollow space, formed like a basin or trough, is filled with the limestone. The length of this from east to west is about a mile, the breadth from north to south 400 yards, the depth seventy feet. The beds *pass over* the Ninety-fathom dyke, which has occasioned in them no confusion or dislocation ; so that there can be little hazard in stating that the beds of the Magnesian Limestone belong to a more recent formation than those of the coal-field.

He gives a detailed description of these beds, and also records the presence of strings of galena and of fossils. He also states that the stone is obtained for lime by lighting fires against the rock, thus causing it to split off. In the same year Dr. Thomson, in the *Annals of Philosophy*, traces the boundary between the Coal-measures and the Permian deposits. He alludes to the Ninety-fathom dyke as the 'Great' dyke, stating that it enters the sea a little south of Hartley. Incidentally also he first mentions the occurrence of 'flexible' limestone in the Magnesian rocks ; his examples, however, are taken from Marsden.

In 1826 Professor Adam Sedgwick published his classical paper on the Magnesian Limestone. In this work he alludes to the Permian rocks of Northumberland, and criticises Winch's statement that the Ninety-fathom dyke passes through the Whitley quarries as irreconcilable with his own observations regarding the dyke. He records the occurrence of nodules of galena and blende, and considers that the mode of occurrence of the former indicates a contemporaneous origin. The next allusion to these beds is that in 1831 by Nicholas Wood, who however merely briefly describes them. Up to this time and until some years later no allusion appears to have been made to the beautifully preserved fish remains in the marl-slate of Cullercoats bay. The first printed notice occurs in Howse' *Catalogue of Permian Fossils*, published in 1848, where he remarks :

This bed is exceedingly interesting on account of the numerous remains of fishes which are preserved in it. They are found pressed quite flat between the laminae of which this bed is composed, in the following localities, Whitley quarries and Cullercoats bay, etc. Last summer, while working some marl-slate in Cullercoats bay, to which our attention was directed by Mr. A. Hancock, we obtained two specimens of a *Palaeoniscus*,

so that the discovery of this rich locality must evidently have been made by Albany Hancock about 1847, but an account of it was only published by him in the *Natural History Transactions* for 1849. In his *Monograph of Permian Fossils*, published in 1850, William King figures several species of invertebrata from the Whitley quarries, as for instance: *Syncladia virgulacea*, *Cyathocrinus ramosus*, *Spirifer alatus*, *Spiriferina cristata*, *Camarophoria globulina*, etc. He also figures species of fish which occur in the marl-slate of Cullercoats. In 1857 Howse published the supplement to his former catalogue, and in 1863 appeared the *Synopsis of the Geology of Durham and Part of Northumberland*, by Howse and Kirkby, a pamphlet published especially in connection with the visit of the British Association to Newcastle. In this he records most of the important points in connection with the Permian rocks in Northumberland. In the same year appeared Binney and Kirkby's translation of Geinitz' work, *The Dyas*, as far as it referred to the British Permian beds. Since this time but little has been published which is new on these beds in Northumberland. A fine collection of fish from the marl-slate at Cullercoats, collected by the late Mr. Dinning, has however been presented to the Hancock Museum.

In 1878 Professor Lebour published his *Outlines of the Geology of Northumberland*, which again summarises our knowledge of the Permian deposits of Northumberland, while a second edition of this work was issued in 1886. Lastly, in 1889, Mr. Howse completed his guide to the local fossils in the Hancock Museum, in which will be found the latest list of Northumberland fossils from the marl-slate and Magnesian Limestone of Cullercoats and Whitley.

The Coal-measures.—The beds of this formation constitute the whole of the solid geology of the district, with the exception of the small outliers of Permian rocks mentioned above, and must represent an aggregate thickness of some 1,200 to 1,400 feet. They consist of sandstones, firestones and shales, with occasional coal-seams and clay-ironstones. The latter are often rich in lamellibranch remains (*Anthracosia*, *Carbonicola*),

when they constitute the well known *Mussel Bands* of the miner, and frequently contain over 18 per cent. of iron protoxide. At least three of these mussel bands occur in this portion of the coal-field at definite horizons; one a few feet above the Low Main seam, another close above the High Main, while a third is recorded from the Seaton Delaval colliery from above the 'Yard' coal. The first of these is well seen in the Whitley cliffs, in connection with the conglomerate mentioned below, while another band is visible along the coast near Hartley.

The coals in the district include most of the important seams worked in Northumberland down to the Low Main seam. The highest coal recorded is the so-called 'Clousden Hill' seam, described by Mr. Hutton on the authority of the late Mr. N. Wood as occurring in a quarry on the north side of the Ninety-fathom dyke, just on the western limit of this district, 800 yards south of Killingworth House and 450 feet above the Monkton seam. The chief seams below this, in descending order, are the Five-quarter seam and the Three-quarter or Seventy-fathom coal, both of the Cowpen district, near Blyth; the High Main, the Grey and Blake seams of Seghill and Cramlington, the Yard Coal, the Bensham seam and the Low Main or Hutton seam. At the present day the most important seam worked is the Low Main, which occurs at a wonderfully uniform depth; thus at Bebside colliery it lies at 93 fathoms from the surface, at Low Newsham colliery at 104 fathoms, at Cramlington colliery at 72 fathoms, and at Seaton Delaval at 102 fathoms. The High Main, once the most notable seam, is now practically worked out or abandoned; it formerly supplied the famous 'Wallsend' coal of the south of the district.

The general dip of the beds, as seen on the coast between Seaton Sluice and Cullercoats, is uniformly to the south-west. North of Seaton, however, and inland, the beds are much disturbed by faults. South of the Ninety-fathom dyke, the beds, where exposed on the coast, dip due south as far as the fault occupied by the Tynemouth dyke. South of this again, near the Black Middens, the dip changes to east.

The chief faults traversing this coal-field, though irregular, run roughly east and west in the general direction of the dip of the beds. Their chief effect is therefore a lateral shifting of the outcrop, but nevertheless the dip of the beds is never great, being usually between two and ten degrees.

The Ninety-fathom dyke is however an exception to this rule, since the beds in the neighbourhood of Cullercoats are dipping south, while the fault is a 'strike' fault running due west from the coast. As a result we get all the seams from the Low Main to the High Main repeated at the surface on the south side of the fault. The Low Main thus crops out on the coast just south of Cullercoats bay, the Bensham seam runs into the sea in the middle of the Long Sands, while the 'Yard' coal is seen in the cliff midway between Sharpness Point and Tynemouth castle, and a small seam which is frequently exposed after storms beneath the Boulder-clay, west of the Black Middens, is probably the 'Grey' or 'Blake' seam. The High Main is not seen on the coast but crops out inland from Chirton Hill by the south of Murton to Backworth station, west of which it disappears against the fault.

Another important fault is the Brierdean dyke, which has a downthrow of eighty feet to the north and shifts the outcrop of the High Main coal from Earsdon to a position midway between Hartley and Brierdean farms. At Crag Point, again, farther north, we find a pair of dislocations which throw the strata down eighty-five degrees to the north, and turn the dip on the north side round to the north-west. At Seaton Sluice, on the other hand, a fault lets down the beds seventy-eight feet on the south, so that these two faults practically neutralize one another. A peculiar group of faults, radiating like a 'starred' pane of glass, occur round Cowpen colliery, all of which have a downthrow on their southern side. Lastly, in the extreme south of Tynemouth parish, a fault occurs with a downthrow of 180 feet to the south, which runs from the Narrows at the mouth of the Tyne westward to Millbank.

The sandstones vary considerably in colour and texture, but form a valuable building stone in the district; they are frequently false-bedded and show shallow water characteristics. In 1852 Dr. Sorby attempted to work out the direction from which the currents had flowed during the depositions of these sandstones between the Tyne and Seaton Sluice. From careful observation he deduced that the drift ripples in the Red Sandstone under Tynemouth castle show a mean direction from north nine degrees east, while the beds at Cullercoats show a direction north twenty degrees east. The sandstones between Hartley and Seaton Sluice, which he considers to be the same beds, showed a drift from north seven-



FIG. 1.—THE NINETY-FATHOM DYKE AT CULLERCOATS
(SHOWING THE COAL-MEASURES ON THE LEFT BROUGHT AGAINST THE PERMIAN ON THE RIGHT, SEE P. 8).



FIG. 2—TABLE ROCKS. WHITLEY
(SHOWING MARINE DENUDATION ALONG A JOINT, SEE P. 16).

teen degrees east. He thought the current must have been a very uniform one and indicated a considerable velocity. He noted great variety in individual beds of the true Coal-measures on this coast and sums up his results as follows :

We have in the coal strata of the coast section, between Tynemouth and Seaton Sluice, beds drifted from very various quarters, but yet they may all be divided into two leading groups, namely, those which have come from some point between north-east, passing through north and west to south-west ; and those from between south and east, there being none from any point between south and south-east, or east and north-east.

Among other important sandstones which crop out in this district, special mention may be made of the well-known Burradon firestone between Killingworth and Seghill. Many of these sandstones show concentric ferruginous staining, and sometimes this is concentrated into concretionary nodules. A good example occurs in the cliff immediately under Northumberland Terrace.

With regard to the shales, many of these yield plant remains, which have been especially collected from the beds associated with the High Main, Bensham, and Low Main seams. Specimens of these are displayed in the collection at Barras Bridge. They have been procured from the Low Main at Newsham, Killingworth and Cramlington, and from the Ironstone shale at Whitley, and no doubt occur in connection with other seams.

Of still greater interest are the unique collections of fish and amphibians which have been obtained in such quantities and in such a fine state of preservation from the shale associated with the Low Main seam at Newsham colliery. Over thirty papers have been written by Owen, Agassiz, Albany Hancock, Atthey, Barkas and Embleton on the remains discovered in this bed, a summary of which, by Mr. Howse, will be found in *The Industrial Resources of the Tyne*, and also in the *Guide to the Local Fossils*, published by the same author in 1889. The unique collection made by the late Mr. Atthey is exhibited in the Newcastle museum. This collection includes thirty species of fish and six species of amphibians, four of them being originally described from this locality, while of the fish the interesting species of the rays, *Janassa linguaeformis*, together with six species of the dipnoid *Ctenodus*, were first discovered by Atthey in this shale. Indeed, so rich was this shale in fish remains that at one time Mr. T. P. Barkas, who was the recipient of many of the fossils discovered in the pit, was reduced to advertising gifts of typical specimens to any

readers of the *Geological Magazine* who would relieve him of his overwhelming store. Much interest was excited at one time by the alleged discovery by the same gentleman of mammalian remains from this bed. Subsequent investigation, however, failed to confirm this identification. Quite recently (1904) an interesting discovery has been made by Professor Lebour and Dr. Smythe in connection with the order of succession of the Coal-measures in this district, and the writer is indebted to these gentlemen for very kindly furnishing him with the following notes, in anticipation of a fuller description elsewhere. The discovery was made in connection with a series of shales and their beds of sandstone underlying the Table Rock sandstone in Whitley bay. These beds are only exposed at low tide, and the shore is inaccessible at other times, a fact which may account for this interesting section having escaped the attention of previous observers.

The junction between this series and the cliff-making sandstone above it is marked by a number of stratigraphical irregularities. These irregularities are rendered specially noticeable by carefully mapping the outcrop of a band of clay-ironstone crowded with *Carbonicola* (*Anthracosia*), which forms part of the lower set of deposits referred to. It is then clear that whilst the overlying sandstone is continuous and practically unbroken from its emergence above sea-level nearly as far as the Brier Dene, with a small dip inland which makes its strike coincide with the coastline, it is far otherwise with the mussel-band and its associated strata. These, though often for several yards running in apparent concordance of strike with the cliff-sandstone, over and over again become bent into folds—some gentle and others of violent pitch—most of which have their axes at right angles, or nearly so, to the strike of the sandstone. Moreover, these folds in numerous cases have given rise to small reversed faults of high (*i.e.*, flat) hade. Besides these disturbances, all in the same direction, the lower series is broken up by a few ordinary faults. Now these folds, reversed faults and nearly all the normal faults, affect the lower beds only, including the guiding mussel-band, and leave the sandstone above undisturbed. Here, therefore, are all the characters of an unconformity accompanied with occasionally great discordance of dip; and some of the characters of the floor of a thrust.

Examining now the cliff sandstone equally minutely, it is found that what change can be observed in it is chiefly this: in proceeding northwards the formation becomes less and less massive until near the northern end of the cliff-section, where a marked interlacing of shale and sandstone takes place, some of the wedging out and in of the constituent beds in one or two places showing by internal faulting that some differential movement undoubtedly took place, but only, be it noted, where the rock ceases to be essentially one massive deposit. Thus the sandstone, as well as the beds beneath, bears witness to something of the nature of thrusting, and the evidence from both points to the movement having been from south to north. But there might be thrusting without unconformity. The evidence of the denudation of the lower before the deposition of the higher beds is completed by the fact that fragments of the former are found in many places in the bottom position of the latter, and that these fragments include rolled and waterworn pebbles of the mussel-band already mentioned.

It is thus concluded (and many minor details uphold the conclusion) that the Table Rock sandstone was not deposited until the shales and other beds beneath it, including the mussel-band, had been denuded, and that after such deposition had taken place, the upper sandstone (and probably all above it) was moved a certain distance, chiefly to the north over the edges of lower beds.

The mussel-band is supposed to be the shelly layer a few fathoms above the Low Main coal, but this is by no means certain. What the exact horizon of the Table Rock sandstone may be, except that it must be high up in the Coal-measures, is by no means certain either.

It is clear that though the unconformity and accompanying thrust may not be, either of them, large in amount, yet in the absence of evidence on this point, their occurrence is well worth notice, since, should the lapse of time represented by the one and the shift due to the other be greater than is supposed, they may lead to an explanation of the difficulty which has frequently been felt in attempting to correlate some of the coal-seams in the south-east corner of Northumberland, and especially in that portion of the Durham Coal-measures which in the north-east of that county are concealed by the overlying Permian bed.

Dykes.—Five important Whin dykes reach the coast between the Tyne and Blyth. They are exactly parallel to one another, and belong to Professor Lebour's east and west series; the most southernly reaches the coast at the mouth of the Tyne, while the most northernly appears in the river Blyth, just beyond the parish boundary.

Of the three intermediate dykes, the two most southernly run about a quarter of a mile apart and reach the coast a little south of Seaton Sluice and at Crag Point respectively, while the one still farther to the north appears to run out to sea under the Blyth links, due east of Barras farm. The three southernly intrusions are connected with a set of east and west faults, but they do not, as a rule, seem to be affected by any of the cross faults associated with them, and would therefore appear to be younger than those dislocations; in fact, on account of their parallelism with similar dykes north of the Scottish border, they are usually regarded as of Tertiary age.

They are, however, far from continuous, and have a habit of dying out and overlapping along parallel fissures, especially in their westerly continuation beyond the boundary of the district. This feature is well seen, however, on the coast in the case of the Seaton dyke.

Winch evidently regarded the Seaton and Hartley dykes as one and the same, for he remarks, 'Another (dyke), about three yards wide, appears in the cliffs over Seaton Sluice: its direction is W.N.W., and it may again be seen in Hartley burn.' Wood also mentions the Hartley dyke, and alludes to its connection with a fault, and also describes the manner in which the coal in contact with it is charred where it is seen in the cliff.

This intrusion also shows, incidentally, a good example of the vertical dying-out of a dyke, as pointed out by Professor Lebour, for, near the spring on the beach, it is at least twelve feet wide at the foot of the cliff, where it is seen dying away upwards after dividing into two tongues, the longer of which thins out beneath a bed of sandstone about eleven feet below the surface, though the fault, along which it was intruded, is still seen continuing upwards.

The same feature is reported by Dr. Teall from another section inland where the dyke was exposed in a small quarry on the east side of the dene. Here the dyke was seen to diminish five feet in width in a height of about twenty feet, being about ten feet wide at the bottom and five feet at the top of the quarry, where it terminates abruptly upwards, arching up the shales above it. The Hartley dyke has been met with in the Shankhouse pit to the west where it was seen to be seven or eight feet wide and contained a fault breccia in the centre. The northern exposure in this colliery showed an example of the duplicating and overlapping mentioned above, one intrusion measuring several feet and the other only eleven inches in thickness. As usual the coal here was charred and altered into 'white whin.' The rock is very uniform in different exposures and resembles very closely the Tynemouth and Brunton dykes.

The Tynemouth dyke shows features of particular interest. It was first briefly described by Winch in 1814, in his paper read before the Geological Society, as follows :

A basaltic dyke six feet wide may be seen among the rocks of the coal formation at the south-eastern corner of the promontory on which Tynemouth castle stands.

This is his description on page 24 of the above work ; he does not, however, seem to have visited it himself, for before concluding his paper he appears to have forgotten this description and he proceeds to redescribe it as follows :

The next basaltic dyke worthy of notice is one which, passing from west to east under Tynemouth priory, may be seen to divide the strata at the south-east point of Prior's Haven, where it forms a wall twelve feet broad in the cliff, and in the rocks below a vein or fissure twelve inches in breadth and filled with tufaceous matter intersects the dyke from top to bottom near its centre, and the basalt strongly resembles the Coley-hill stone.

In 1826 Professor Sedgwick, in discussing the date of intrusion of the north of England basaltic dykes, remarks :

The Trap dyke at the south-west end of Tynemouth castle cliff is unfortunately of no assistance to this enquiry, because the capping of yellow limestone does not extend to that extremity of the cliff where the dyke is present. Such is the imperfect evidence, or rather such is the absence of all direct evidence, in favour of the conclusion, that the Trap dykes in our northern coal-fields belong to an age which is anterior to the deposition of the Magnesian Limestone.

The next mention we find of this dyke is by Nicholas Wood in 1831. In describing the beds at Tynemouth he remarks, 'a whin dyke, shown in section, from twelve to fourteen feet in width, and differing in no respect

from those generally found in this district, here intersects the Yellow Sandstone and Red Sandstone, at right angles to the stratification of the beds; but it cannot, from the incumbent alluvial matter, be ascertained if it also pierces the Magnesian Limestone.'

At the present day this dyke is still exposed in the south-west corner of Prior's Haven, just at the angle where the flight of steps descends from the north pier to the shore. The exposure shows a width of about ten feet and contains a brecciated quartz vein, six inches wide, near the middle. This is no doubt the vein, 'twelve inches wide, filled with tufaceous matter,' described by Winch. This central vein is very characteristic of many whin dykes; it is noticeably present in the inland exposures of the Hartley dyke, and is no doubt a feature resulting from the lateral cooling and shrinkage of the basalt, leaving a plane of weakness in the centre, along which movement or infiltration has taken place, as suggested by Dr. Teall.

The dyke was also exposed in 1882 in the excavations for the new railway station. Dr. Teall, who examined this exposure, writes :

The most interesting feature connected with this exposure was the evidence of a breach in the continuity of the dyke, accompanied by a lateral shift in the outcrop, amounting to seventeen yards. The width of the dyke was about eleven or twelve feet, and it possessed a hade to the north. Farther west the same dyke has been met with near Billy Mill by Mr. Flavell, during the construction of works by the North Shields Water Company. Still farther to the west, near Newcastle, occurs the well-known Coley-hill dyke, which was formerly worked on a very extensive scale for road-metal, and the course of which is now indicated by a deep trench.

This dyke agrees in general direction with the Tynemouth dyke; Winch appears to have regarded the two as connected, and Dr. Teall comes to the same conclusion from a microscopic examination of the two rocks. In appearance the Tynemouth dyke is a dark compact rock, containing crystalline aggregates of anorthite felspar embedded in a dark, finely crystalline ground-mass composed of augite, lath-shaped feldspars and interstitial matter. Olivine is occasionally present, forming a rock to which Rosenbusch has given the name of trolleite. The rock often exhibits small white spots scattered irregularly through it. These are due partly to the presence of amygdules and partly to the porphyritic crystals of anorthite felspar. Dr. Teall, who has described the rock in detail, points out the interest of these spots. The porphyritic feldspars are crystalline aggregates in which the outer zone of felspar substance possesses optical properties different from the central portion. The spherical amygdaloids vary in size from that of a mustard seed to that of a peppercorn, and as a

general rule vary in quantity inversely with the anorthite aggregates. They consist of calcite and frequently contain a chalcedony border. One point of interest is the manner in which, during the formation of the bubble, the lath-shaped feldspars have been pushed aside and arranged tangentially to the vesicles, while the interstitial matter is in no wise affected, being of later consolidation. These vesicles have been compared by Dr. Teall to the bubbles which rise in the contents of a soda water bottle as the cork is partially removed. In some cases the vesicles are filled partly or entirely with interstitial matter, which evidently entered on the escape or condensation of the gas. On the whole, the rock agrees microscopically as well as macroscopically with the Coley-hill dyke.

The dyke is intruded in the Coal-measures. The Permian strata are not seen in contact with it at the present day. Nicholas Wood's statement that in 1831 it could be seen intersecting the yellow sand is therefore of interest, but if the absence of the Permian beds above the dyke at the present day is due to subsequent denudations, it is curious that Sedgwick, writing in 1826, five years before Wood, should expressly regret that the dyke could not be seen in contact with the Permian strata. It is true that Sedgwick uses the expression 'yellow limestone,' but he specially insists on the inclusion of the lower sands in the Permian formation, and also states that the same sandstone is twenty-five feet thick under Tynemouth priory. It is obvious then that no such penetration of the yellow sands by the dyke was visible in 1826. The above statement by Winch, in 1814, that the dyke penetrated the coal formation, without any allusion to the Permian strata, is also against Wood's statement. An examination therefore of such records as we possess leaves the date of intrusion of the dykes, as testified by this critical example, still an open question. There is, however, evidence of a different character which seems to bear on this question. The east and west faults traversing the rocks in this neighbourhood appear to affect the Permian rocks as well as the Coal-measures, though this is by no means universally the case in Durham. This is notably seen in the case of the Ninety-fathom dyke and also several minor faults which are visible in the Tynemouth castle cliff; one of these is even figured by Sedgwick. The Tynemouth dyke occurs along one of these faults, which has a downthrow of fourteen feet to the north. It is obvious that the presence of this fault has directly influenced the intrusion of the basalt

along this line, and that the dyke is posterior to the formation of the fault. There is therefore strong indirect evidence that the date of intrusion of the Tynemouth dyke is post-Permian.

Glacial Deposits.—The deposits of this age are, on the whole, similar to those described in previous volumes of this history. The section, however, exposed between the Lifeboat station and the Low Lights, exhibits some points of special interest. The Boulder-clay here occupies the whole of the cliff, constantly giving rise to landslips. The clay is mostly unstratified and full of boulders of local rocks, together with Cheviot andesites and Scottish granites. No undoubted examples of Norwegian rocks have been found, but, at the top of the cliff, fragments of sharp flint and rounded pebbles of clear quartz occur in considerable abundance. Writing of this deposit, Mr. Howse remarks: 'It is at present uncertain whether this bed is a reconstruction of the Boulder-clay or a prolongation on to this coast of the Scandinavian drift. The flints seem to bear a very striking resemblance to some collected in the latter formation near Hamburg.' Though this was written in 1863, no definite solution of the problem has yet been arrived at. It is difficult to see how any 'reconstruction' of the Boulder-clay could produce true flints. We know of no Upper Cretaceous rocks cropping out in Northumberland from which they could have been derived, and they do not occur in the Boulder-clay farther north. Some of the layers near the upper part of this deposit also contain lenticular patches of sand which have very much the appearance of frozen fragments of the sea-bottom brought up to their present position by the shearing action of ice. This suggestion seems to be confirmed by the presence of marine shells, found in the sands by Mr. Howse.

An elevated beach, composed of fragments of Magnesian Limestone chiefly, with remains of flints and also pebbles from the Boulder-clay interstratified with beds of sand and grit and a very fine glacial silt, occurs in a section lately made in the castle-yard at Tynemouth. It contains also the remains of a marine shell, *Cyprina Islandica*, some fragments of which have been also detected in the Boulder-clay. This beach deposit rests on a thin bed of clay with pebbles, which appears to be a reconstruction of the Boulder-clay, under which is the proper rock surface. It reposes on a slope to the west, and contains material derived from some Magnesian Limestone cliff—from a cliff, in fact, which must have been situated considerably east of the present line of coast. The invasion of the sea from the west is only what we might expect when we remember the presence of undoubted Scandinavian erratics along our east coast, from the orthite-bearing 'Savil' boulder of Sanda Island to the blocks of 'rhombic' porphyry on the Cromer coast.

Another very interesting feature was exposed at the base of this section a few years ago, but is no longer visible in 1904. It occurred a little beyond the last outcrop of sandstone of the Black Middens, which

disappears under the beach, going westwards. Here the lower part of the Boulder-clay was seen to enclose layers of the sandstone broken up and folded into arches and troughs, and dragged out over the lowest layers of the Boulder-clay to the west, showing that the surface of the sandstone had been torn off by some solid object, travelling from east to west, and dragged over a bed of Boulder-clay previously deposited. The fragments, though disconnected, nevertheless still maintained their relative positions.¹ This fact, taken together with the manner in which it was folded, showed plainly that it must have been the work of ice. This proof of motion from east to west appears to afford additional evidence that the Northumberland ice was not free to move eastward, but was blocked and directed westward by some obstruction in the North Sea; it is difficult to see what other obstruction this could be but foreign ice from the north-east.

It is impossible to conclude this brief notice of the geology of a very interesting district without a word regarding the present disintegration of the coast line. This is naturally taking place most rapidly along the portion of the coast formed of Boulder-clay. Thus a massive stone wall, built by the then duke of Northumberland in 1811, supported the banks below Percy Square. The lime resisted disintegration longer than the stone, and stood out in sharp ridges. After the destruction of this wall and its outlying timber groyne, the cliff became undermined and landslips began to take place in the Boulder-clay. The front row of cottages in Percy Square disappeared, and up to 1892 about a hundred feet of frontage west of the front cottages had disappeared, while in 1827 the cliff is stated to have extended eighty feet farther seaward. Again, between Percy Square and the Howling, four acres have disappeared. Mr. Robert Tate estimated that 556,600 tons had fallen into the Tyne estuary in sixty-five years. The coast line is therefore here wasting at the rate of 8,560 tons a year. In other portions of the coast the sandstones and shales are being denuded at a considerable rate. One of the best examples of the method by which the sea obtains access into the heart of the sandstone is seen at the Table Rocks. Here a joint running nearly parallel to the coast-line has been enlarged by the seas coming from the north-east, a long water-worn tunnel penetrates the rock, and large rounded blocks can be seen at low tide lying in the trench, while farther inland the joint can be traced along which the destruction is taking place.

¹ See Plate II.

PLATE II.



VIEW OF BOULDER-CLAY

COLLIERIES AND THE COAL TRADE.

The Tynemouthshire district has many natural advantages for coal mining, both underground and on the surface. The seams comprise the whole of the series met with in the North of England coal-field, lying at comparatively shallow depths with moderate rates of inclination, and presenting no serious mining difficulties. The surface is level and well suited for the making of railways giving access to the rivers and sea, and so affording a cheap mode of carriage for the produce of the mines. Owing to a fold or syncline in the measures, the axis of which runs in a northerly direction across the south-east corner of the Northumberland coal-field, the beds in the Tynemouth district have, generally speaking, an easterly rise, so that the upper seams of coal outcrop in lines more or less parallel to the sea coast, the lines of outcrop passing, however, under the sea in the northern portion of the ground as the coast line trends to the north-west. The southern portion of the ground is intersected by the fault known as the Ninety-fathom dyke, which throws up the beds to the south and results in a repetition of the outcrops of the upper seams.

Considering these natural facilities, it is not surprising to find that coal mining dates back to very early times, and that the industry has for centuries played an important part in the history of the district. Early records show that coal was worked in Tynemouth during the latter part of the thirteenth century, and that the monks were then already deriving an income from collieries there.¹ Mention is also made of coal mines belonging to the priory at Merden, or Marden, in 1316,² at Earsdon in 1376,³ and at the time of the dissolution a mine of coal in Tynemouth was in the prior's own possession.⁴ The priors appear to have either worked the coal themselves, or let it to others to win, in the neighbourhood of Tynemouth, Preston, Chirton, Monkseaton and Earsdon.⁵

Their operations were no doubt confined to the eastern portion of this area, where the seams crop out to the day, allowing coal to be got at shallow depths. There is a reference⁶ which points to the shipment of

¹ Brand, *History of Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 591. ² *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 168.

³ *Ibid.* fols. 53 b and 32.

⁴ Gibson, *Monastery of Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 216.

⁵ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁶ *Northumbrian Assize Rolls*, Surt. Soc. No. 88, p. 163.

coal by the monks at Shields as early as 1269, but the trade was probably chiefly a 'landsale' one for the use of the prior and convent and their tenants, and for salt making, several salt pans being held by them.¹

After the dissolution of the monastery in 1539, although there are many records of grants and leases of lands and coal mines formerly belonging to the convent, there are but few details which indicate the situation of the various workings. It is, however, possible to trace the position occupied by some of the mines towards the close of the century. In 1584 a pit was working at Preston, while the Monkseaton pits, which appear to have been worked at a former date, were drowned out and East Chirton was unopened.² In 1590 the Preston pits were being worked by Peter Delaval, a merchant of London, who was then the farmer of the queen's mines in Preston,³ and in the same year the ninth earl of Northumberland was raising coal in Tynemouth under a right acquired by his father in 1569,⁴ although the mines appear to have been worked by him for some years prior to this date.

The Tynemouth and Preston pits were apparently worked with vigour for some years, the former partly by the earl of Northumberland and partly by his lessees, the latter by the successors of Peter Delaval, who had failed about the year 1602.⁵ The Tynemouth mines were at that time situated in the town fields to the north of the village, near the outcrop of a seam (probably the Bensham seam) which is described as being 'a yard and three fingers thick,' the pits being about five fathoms in depth and, as was usual at this period, placed close together. It is recorded that pits of this description could be sunk in twelve days at a cost of about £2 each, and were capable of producing about twenty score of six-peck tubs or corves a day, equal to about thirty-eight tons.⁶ In 1614 the 'compasse' of the earl's mines in the town fields and demesnes was three miles, and the farthest was distant about a mile and a quarter from the river, where a staith had been erected about a quarter of a mile from the sea.⁷ It is not quite clear where the Preston workings were situated, but probably they were on the east side of the township. The coals produced by these collieries appear to have been chiefly 'pan coals' for salt making, which

¹ Gibson, vol. i. p. 216.

² Exchequer Special Commission, 26 Eliz. No. 1743.

³ Exchequer Bills and Answers, 32 Eliz. No. 54.

⁴ *Ibid.* 33 Eliz. No. 57.

⁵ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁶ *Ibid.*

⁷ *Ibid.*

were sold on the river in competition with Newcastle coals and were also sent coastwise to be used in the alum industry, which by this time had been established in Cleveland.

In 1624 a grant was made by the Crown of the coal in Murton and Billy Moor to Henry, ninth earl of Northumberland,¹ by whom this coal, together with the Tynemouth pits, was leased to Ralph Reed, with right of access to the river for shipment.² The subsequent grants of Flatworth to William Collins and Edward Fenn (assigned by them to the earl of Northumberland in 1637),³ and of pits in Preston and East and Middle Chirton in 1633 to William Scriven and William Eden⁴ (by whom East and Middle Chirton and Monkseaton coal mines were conveyed to Ralph Reed and George Milbourn),⁵ seem to show that the trade of the district was extending and the number of collieries increasing.

With the extension of workings into Chirton, Billy Moor and Flatworth, the district occupied by the High Main seam had been entered upon and a better and more cheaply won class of coal rewarded the efforts of the adventurers. Tynemouth continued as a 'pan coal' colliery, but Preston, probably owing to the poor quality of its produce, seems to have been closed after the opening of the High Main pits. It was reopened again in 1684,⁶ but only for a short time, the coal being suited only for salt and lime making.

In 1645 Reed was succeeded in the occupation of Flatworth by Ralph Gardner of Chirton, author of *England's Grievance discovered in Relation to the Coal Trade*. Gardner was unfortunate in his tenancy. The prohibition of the Newcastle coal trade at the time of the civil wars, and the occupation of his premises by the king's and the parliamentary forces, with the attendant 'plundering and heavy quartering by them and the insatiable Scots,' involved him in heavy losses,⁷ though it is not clear whether he was obliged to give up the colliery in consequence.

The mines along the outcrop of the High Main on Shire Moor continued to be worked during the remainder of the seventeenth and commencement of the eighteenth centuries. During this period the lessees were extending their operations to the dip, and with the limited appliances

¹ Gibson, vol. i. p. 242.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ Gibson, vol. i. pp. 243-246.

⁴ *Ibid.*

⁵ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁶ Tomlinson, *Historical Notes on Cullercoats, Whitley and Monkseaton*, p. 40.

⁷ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

then in use for freeing the mines from water (the pumps, as well as the 'gins' for raising the coal, being then generally worked by horses) were beginning to find it difficult to go farther. In working the shallow mines in this district, support for the surface was generally left in accordance with the leases. The restrictions contained in these did not, however, prevent damage being done, of so severe a nature that, in the words of one agent, the land would 'neither bear meadow nor corn while the world endures.'¹

In 1717 the lease of Billy Moor ran out, and the lessees failed to come to terms for renewal, their intention at that time being to work the coal through Whitley and ship it at Cullercoats. Subsequent advances on the part of the lessors failed to effect a letting, and the ground remained untouched until 1755, when a lease was granted to Matthew Bell and partners.²

In the latter portion of the seventeenth century collieries were opened out in the neighbourhood of Whitley and Monkseaton to the north of the Ninety-fathom dyke. In 1676³ a lease of the coal in Whitley, which appears to have been previously held from 1673⁴ by John Dove, was granted by the trustees of Lady Elizabeth Percy to John Rogers, one of the conditions being that half the cost of building a pier and quay at Cullercoats should be allowed out of the rents. Rogers appears to have been a man of energy; he carried out the construction of the little harbour at Cullercoats in conjunction with his partners, John Carr and Henry Hudson, and together they worked the collieries in Whitley and Monkseaton for a considerable number of years. The Monkseaton pits were probably on the outcrop of the High Main seam, while those at Whitley worked the Low Main at a shallow depth near the sea. Both were connected by means of wagonways with the harbour at Cullercoats, where there had also been established a large number of salt pans, the produce of which was exported from the harbour.

The use of wooden railways or 'Newcastle roads,' as they were elsewhere called, had commenced earlier in the century, but had not become general until about 1670.⁵ The wagons were drawn by horses and carried 42 hundredweights or more, instead of $17\frac{1}{2}$ hundredweights, which

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² *Ibid.*

³ *Ibid.*

⁴ Tomlinson, *Hist. Notes*, p. 39.

⁵ *Proc. Archaeological Institute*, 1852, vol. i. p. 180.

TO ILLUSTRATE THE
HISTORY OF COALMINING

TYNEMOUTHSHIRE

REFERENCE.

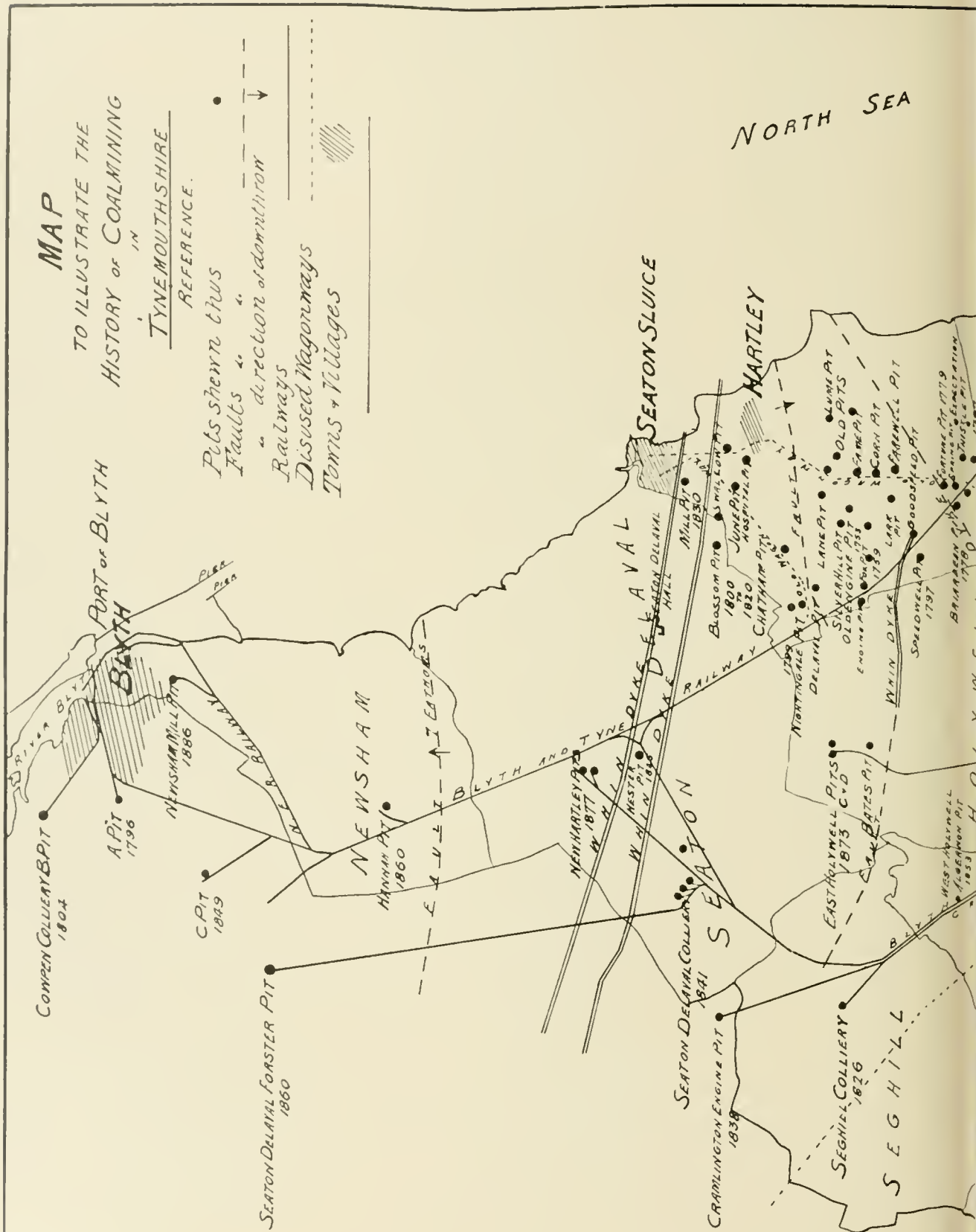
Pitts sherrn thus

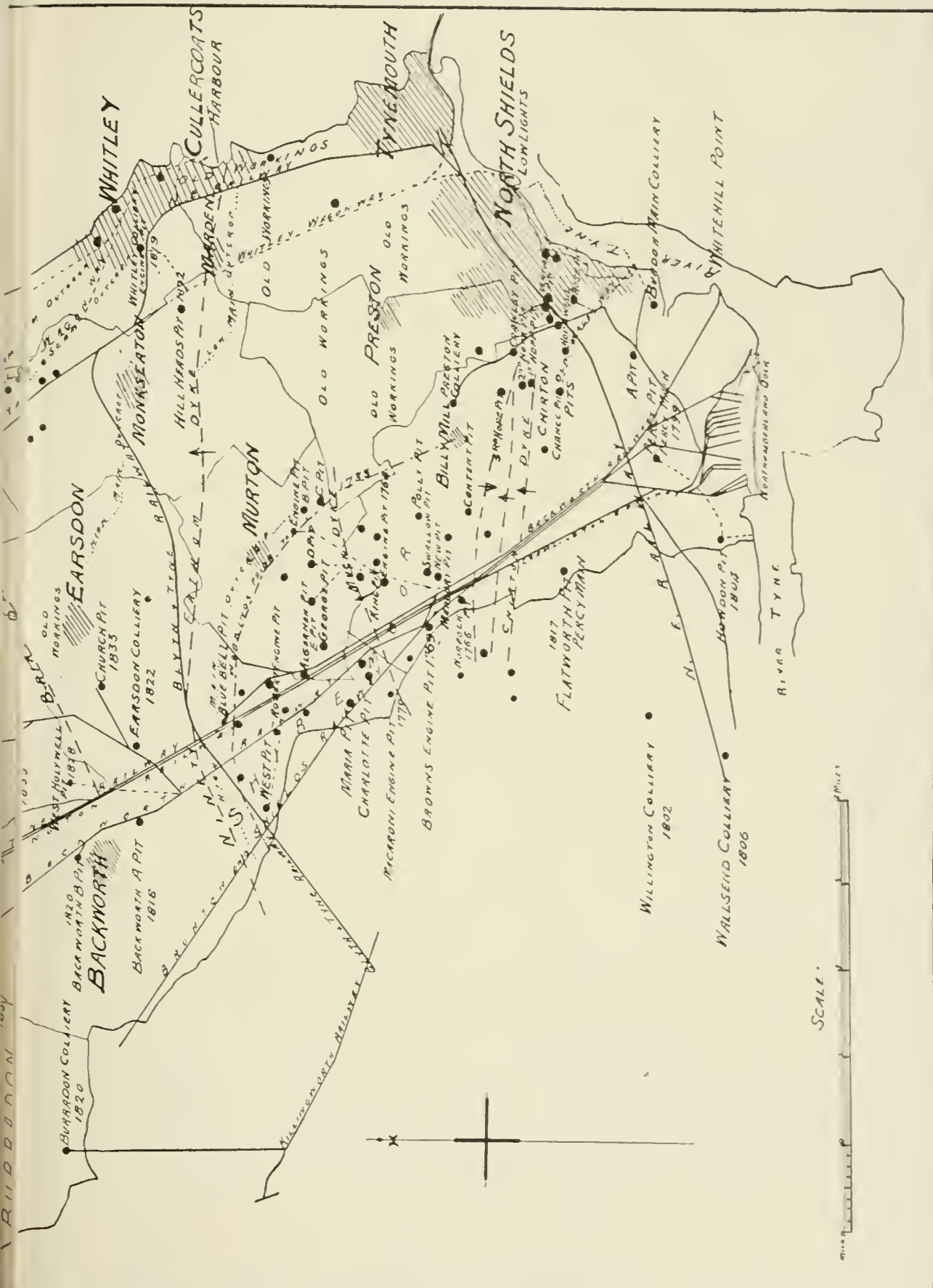
Faults

direction of downthrow
Railways

Disused Wagonways

Towns & Villages





had been the load of the old horse wains they superseded. To keep the top level on a falling gradient they had wheels of unequal size, made at first of wood and afterwards of iron, though for many years one pair of wooden wheels was retained on each wagon so that the brake, or 'convoy,' might be applied to them. The wagonways at Whitley in 1704 had oak rails and sleepers on the main line, while the rails on the branches to the various pits were made of ash or birch, the rubbish from the salt pans being used, as it was then described, 'for the ballast of the wagonway.'¹

After the year 1710² the prosperity of the Whitley collieries and salt works began to wane. The pits had exhausted the rise coal available to them and new winnings were required farther to the dip. The pier was very subject to damage by storms, and the repairs to it were a heavy charge upon the undertaking. The lessees attempted a fresh winning at Whitley, but the unusually heavy feeders met with caused the abandonment of the enterprise, with the result that they had to fall back upon Monk-seaton for their output.

Between 1716 and 1726 the salt trade declined greatly, and in the latter year the export was closed and six of the pans transferred to Blyth. In 1722³ the partners were prepared to make a further attempt to win the dip coal and proposed to risk additional capital in the erection of a 'fire engine,' as the pumping engines of the Newcomen type, then recently introduced, were styled. They failed, however, to arrange terms with the lessor, and the once prosperous concern shortly afterwards came to an end, the coal-field attached to it remaining derelict for many years.

Newcomen's invention of the atmospheric engine and its application to pumping purposes brought about a marked change in the condition of the industry. These appliances had come into general use in the Newcastle district by 1721,⁴ and in the latter half of the century improvements in the production of iron led to that material being more generally utilized in collieries. Cast iron was used instead of brass for the cylinders, so that larger and more powerful pumping engines could be built, and this, together with the substitution of iron for the old wooden pumps, resulted in a large increase in the number of these machines and the extension of mining operations to greater depths.⁵

¹ Papers in the possession of Mr. W. H. Ryott.

² Tomlinson, *Hist. Notes*, p. 42 *et seq.*

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁴ Deane, *The Coal Trade*, p. 22.

⁵ Galloway, *Annals of Coal Mining*, p. 260.

During this period the High Main seam was being developed farther to the dip by the Flatworth, Murton and Shire Moor collieries, over the ground extending from the Ninety-fathom dyke to the Chirton fault. In 1767 this seam had been won at Shire Moor to a depth of sixty fathoms and a large pumping engine erected, in addition to two smaller ones which were then draining the rise coal.¹ To the south of the Chirton dyke, the Chirton colliery was working the High Main towards Percy Main to a depth of about sixty fathoms.² By the close of the century these mines were beginning to decay; Murton had finished its High Main and afterwards tried the Yard and Bensham seams, finding them a poor substitute; while Flatworth, Shire Moor and Chirton were fast coming to an end which was hastened by the competition of the deeper collieries of the Tyne basin, then recently opened out along the river side, and producing High Main coal which commanded the readiest sale in the London market.

The last of these to be sunk, Percy Main, lay in Tynemouthshire, and the winning was commenced in 1799,³ the partners being Joseph Lamb, George Waldie, John Walker and Jacob Maude, who were already associated in the working of collieries on Shire Moor, their viewer being Mr. John Buddle.

At this point attention may be directed to the northern portion of the district, in which there are records of coal mines about Hartley so far back as 1291.⁴ These were doubtless small outcrop pits worked for local supply, one being held by the prior and convent of Brinkburn at the time of the dissolution, and afterwards leased by the Crown to Sir Ralph Delaval in 1596.⁵ Before this time salt pans had been established at Hartley and their produce shipped at Blyth, the coal trade continuing to be a purely local one. Sir Ralph leased his mines in 1611 to Sir William Slingsby, and in 1619 to his own sons, but at the time of his death in 1628 they do not seem to have been of much account and are described as yielding no benefit to the owner.⁶

Apparently there was little change until the latter half of the century, when Sir Ralph Delaval, the first baronet and grandson of the above-

¹ *Newcastle Courant*, January 2nd, 1768.

² North of England Institute of Mining and Mechanical Engineers, *Borings and Sinkings*, No. 452.

³ Diary of John Buddle.

⁴ *Inq. p.m.* 19 Edw. I. No. 5.

⁵ Marquis of Waterford's MSS.

⁶ *Ibid.*

mentioned Sir Ralph Delaval, took in hand the development of his property. He built a pier at Hartley Pans, or Seaton Sluice, as it was afterwards called from his having scoured the harbour by a device controlled by a sluice, and through the improvement of the harbour secured a coasting trade for the produce of his collieries and salt pans. Under his guidance and as the result of his energy the trade expanded, in spite of the fact that the Hartley coal was not so well suited for the needs of the coasting trade as that of the Tyne district. Its uses at that time may be best described in Sir Ralph's own words: 'the smallest will serve for lime burning and the rounder will please the cook because they make a quick fire and a constant heat.'¹

The pits at this period were situated near the coast, to the south of Seaton Sluice, where the High Main, Yard, and Low Main seams lie at shallow depths as they rise towards the sea, and their development was attended with some difficulty, owing to the heavy feeders of water which occasionally overcame the rag and chain pumps then in use.

Sir Ralph Delaval was succeeded by his son, Sir John Delaval, and the mines were leased by him to John Rogers, one of the lessees of Whitley colliery, who with his son worked them up to 1725, when they were taken over and carried on by Sir John until his death in 1729.² His successors continued to work them without any change of moment until the middle of the eighteenth century, when Sir John Hussey Delaval (afterwards Lord Delaval) became the owner of the estate and embarked on a career of enterprise of which his younger brother, Thomas Delaval, was subsequently the guiding spirit.

Glass and copperas works were established in order to utilize the small coal and 'brasses,' or iron pyrites, from the pits, and in 1758 a fresh winning to the dip was commenced. This was followed in 1764 by the opening of the new entrance to the harbour of Seaton Sluice,³ cut through the solid rock to the east of the old approach, and looked upon as one of the greatest engineering feats of the day. The harbour improvements brought more trade for the pits, which in 1770⁴ employed 300 hands, and six years later sent nearly 48,000 tons of coal away coastwise, principally to the London market, where, we are told, the Hartley coal was much esteemed by bakers.

¹ Brit. Mus. Additional MSS. 21,948. fol. 64.

² Exchequer Depositions, Hilary, 5 Geo. II. No. 12.

³ Marquis of Waterford's MSS.

⁴ *Ibid.*

Thomas Delaval, who was humorously described by a friend as being 'busy as a bee flying from flower to flower, extracting coals from the bowels of the earth, and bottles out of damnation fiery furnaces,' was equally energetic in his direction of the collieries. A new 'fire engine,' designed by William Brown, at that time the great authority on pumping engines in the district, was set to work in 1760, and in 1763¹ a steam winding engine, the invention of Joseph Oxley of Ford, was erected and regarded as the greatest improvement since the introduction of the pumping engine. At this time the problem of raising coals from the deeper seams, by some quicker and more economical method than the existing horse gins, was attracting attention, and Oxley made a determined attempt to solve it.

A second engine, put down at Hartley in 1765,² appears to have attracted a great deal of attention, drawing coals 'by fire' at the rate of a corf a minute for some years. It is evident, however, that it had its defects, and James Watt, who visited Hartley about 1768, described the engine as going sluggishly and irregularly, having no flywheel.³

Another mechanical curiosity was a boiler built of stone and used in connection with both the winding and pumping engines. It is represented⁴ as being capable of effecting a saving of £300 a year, but most probably it did not stand the test of constant use, and, like Oxley's winding engine, was superseded by appliances of a less 'advanced' description. The double water wheel,⁵ with a pumping engine for the circulation of the water, came rapidly into favour in the district for drawing coal, and it was not until the end of the century that, through Watt's improvements, a reliable steam winding machine was produced and drove the water wheels into oblivion.

By 1780 the workings in the Yard and Low Main seams had advanced southwards to the Brierdean dyke, and as far to the dip as the level of the Engine pit. In this year the coal beyond the dyke had been opened out, and the wagonway, which can still be traced connecting the pits with Seaton Sluice, was extended southwards to the Brier Dean. After this the field lying to the west of the burn and to the dip of the old pits was

¹ Marquis of Waterford's MSS. '1765, 20 January. Mary, daughter of Mr. John Allon, at the New Engine, near Hartley, baptised.' *Earsdon Register*.

² *Ibid.*

³ Muirhead, *Life of Watt*, p. 274.

⁴ Marquis of Waterford's MSS.

⁵ Galloway, *Annals of Coal Mining*, p. 297 *et seq.*

entered upon, and before 1799 the Chatham and Nightingale shafts had been sunk and connected with the harbour by a branch line crossing the dean on a wooden viaduct.¹

The days of the direct control of the Delavals were now nearly at an end. Lord Delaval died in 1808. His brother and successor, Edward Hussey Delaval, continued to reside in London, and seems to have let the mines before he died in 1814.

Although, as has already been remarked, the Shire Moor mines were in a state of decay at the beginning of the nineteenth century, the district did not fail to participate in the expanding coal trade of the Tyne. The new winning at Percy Main reached the High Main at a depth of eighty-nine fathoms in the Percy pit, followed by the Howdon pit in 1804 and the High Flatworth pit in 1817, the last two at depths of 135 and 86 fathoms respectively, the Howdon pit being on the deepest part of the Tyne basin.²

Until towards the close of the eighteenth century, the system of working practised consisted in the removal of a portion of the coal only, the remainder being left for support. The shafts, which had originally been only a few yards apart, were gradually extended to wider distances and worked larger areas as they reached greater depths. The small pillars left were then subject to 'creeps,' caused by the crushing down of the overlying strata, more especially when, as time went on, efforts were made to minimize the loss of coal by working out portions of the pillars, a common practice before the system of leaving larger pillars and afterwards removing them entirely had been introduced.

Under these circumstances and through the presence of gas and the inadequacy of the ventilating arrangements the working of the deep collieries on the Tyne was attended with many difficulties. Explosions or 'blasts,' as they were called, were common, and the workmen had frequently to be withdrawn from the pits owing to the air becoming loaded with gas to the firing point. In 1807 the coal at Percy Main took fire, and it became necessary to drown a portion of the workings in order to extinguish it, the subsequent withdrawal of the water being attended by severe outbursts of gas.³

¹ Mr. T. E. Forster's MSS.

² Diary of John Buddle.

³ Dunn, *Mining and Working of Coal Mines*, p. 234.

Notwithstanding this and several minor explosions, the colliery was for a considerable period very successful, owing to the excellence of the High Main seam worked by it. Its troubles from water were of a more serious nature and came at a later date. In 1819 the water in the old waste of Chirton colliery burst into the Percy pit, but was successfully dammed back in the following year. In 1838 a feeder came off in the Percy pit High Main workings near the river which threatened to flood the colliery. Attempts were made to dam the water back at great expense, but without success, the dams being swept away with the loss of three lives. The flood overpowered the pumping engines at the Howdon pit, and operations were then carried on at the Percy pit in the High Main and Bensham seams (the latter having been won in 1828) until May, 1839, by which time the Bensham had been drowned and the High Main dip workings were full of water.

By August of that year new pumping engines had been erected and the workings were gradually unwatered, but worse disasters were to follow. In 1841 the High Main workings holed into Burdon Main. The holing was dammed up, but, as Burdon Main ceased to work not long afterwards, its dip workings became drowned, and in 1846 the water from them burst into Percy Main, overpowering the pumping engines and doing great damage. The colliery was again unwatered, but the heavy cost of pumping, combined with the exhaustion of the High Main, rendered it so unprofitable as to bring it to an end in the year 1851.¹

Chirton colliery was reopened in the year 1811² for the purpose of reaching portions of the High Main which had previously been abandoned and was then generally known as Burdon or Collingwood Main. The Bensham and Low Main seams were subsequently sunk to, and the colliery was kept going until nearly the middle of the century, when it was closed.

About 1810 Whitley colliery, which had remained unworked for nearly a century, was reopened.³ A fresh winning of the Low Main was made by the lessees, William Clark and Thomas Taylor, to the dip of the old workings of the former tenants, and the colliery was carried on with vigour for a considerable period both in Whitley and Monkseaton, in conjunction

¹ Mr. T. E. Forster's MSS.

² *Transactions of the North of England Institute of Mining and Mechanical Engineers*, vol. xv. p. 220.

³ Tomlinson, *Hist. Notes*, p. 47.

with the adjacent limestone quarries in the Permian limestone, lying against the Ninety-fathom dyke. The pit and the limeworks were connected by a wagonway leading to the Low Lights at Shields, where a large part of the produce was shipped. In 1825 ironstone from the Mussel-bed above the Low Main seam was being worked near the south end of the links and sent by river to the ironworks at Lemington. The colliery was closed in 1848,¹ having during its latter years been a losing concern. In 1872² the high prices of coal led to a further winning being made near Hill Heads, but the undertaking, through the heavy fall in prices, subsequently became involved in difficulties and operations terminated in 1880.

The coal to the north of the Ninety-fathom dyke, with the exception of the above-described workings in the vicinity of Whitley, Monkseaton and Hartley, was practically undeveloped at the commencement of the nineteenth century. The first move in this direction took place at Backworth, a lease of this royalty having been secured from the duke of Northumberland in 1812 by George Waldie, Humble Lamb, Jacob Maude, John Walker, Edward Hetherington, Thomas Taylor and John Buddle,³ most of whom were already lessees of Percy Main and of a portion of the adjacent Shire Moor coal.

The enterprise must have been one of unusual risk. The projected winning was of a considerable depth and in an unknown part of the district, where the quality of the High Main had not yet been tested. In addition to this, some doubts existed as to the rights of the duke of Northumberland, as owner of the mineral, to occupy the surface of the ancient copyhold lands of Backworth, then owned by the Grey family. The winning was commenced in 1814, but was suspended in the following year in consequence of an action which was brought by Mr. Ralph William Grey against the duke. The case was tried in the same year and decided in favour of Mr. Grey, with whom an agreement was subsequently made which enabled the sinking to be continued in January, 1817, his estate being subsequently purchased by the duke in 1821.⁴

The High Main was reached in May, 1818, at a depth of eighty-seven fathoms, and a wagonway was constructed to the Tyne at Whitehill Point, more than four and a half miles in length. The distance from the river and the length of its wagonway must have placed the colliery at a dis-

¹ Mr. T. E. Forster's MSS.

² Tomlinson, *Hist. Notes*, p. 50.

³ Diary of John Buddle.

⁴ *Ibid.*

advantage in its competition with the riverside pits. At the end of the preceding century, however, the introduction of cast-iron rails for wagonways had, to a large extent, cheapened the cost of leading. Although some of them continued to use the old wooden rails, which had been in vogue since the middle of the seventeenth century, many, and, no doubt, amongst them the newly constructed roads, were laid with the short cast-iron plates set on stone blocks, afterwards known from their shape as 'fish-bellied' rails. The Backworth wagonway was started as a horse road, and, according to Mr. John Buddle, a horse drawing two wagons, each containing forty-four hundredweights of coal, could make three 'gates' or journeys a day upon it. It was not long, however, before rope haulage was substituted; in December, 1821, the first section to the Allotment was converted to a rope road; by the end of 1823 the section to Percy Main had been altered, and the last link to Whitehill Point was completed in August, 1827.¹ The line continued to be worked by ropes until 1867, when locomotives took the place of the old hauling engines.

As the workings extended northwards, the High Main was again sunk to in 1821 at the B pit, and early in 1826 coal drawing was confined entirely to that shaft.

About the same date as the commencement of the colliery at Backworth the opening out of the High Main at Burradon was begun by the 'Grand Allies.' This celebrated and powerful copartnery, consisting of the Ravensworth, Strathmore and Wortley families, dated back as far as the year 1726, and had, some years before, sunk to the High Main at Killingworth. They had connected this colliery with the shipping places on the Tyne by means of a wagonway which had, before its extension to Burradon, formed the scene of many of George Stephenson's experiments with his early locomotives.

In 1822 the High Main in Earsdon had been won by 'outstroke' from Backworth,² and in 1823 the Duke pit was sunk on the Earsdon royalty near the Backworth boundary by Messrs. Hugh Taylor and William Clark. It reached the seam at a depth of seventy-three fathoms and was followed by the Duchess pit in 1826.³

¹ Diary of John Buddle.

² *Ibid.*

³ *Borings and Sinkings*, Nos. 742 and 744.

The extension of the collieries northwards still continued, and in 1826¹ a sinking on Sir Francis Blake's estate at Seghill was made by Messrs. Carr and Company to the Low Main seam at a depth of seventy-eight fathoms. Access to the river was obtained by means of the wagonway from Cramlington colliery, until the Carrs constructed a railway of their own from Seghill to Howdon, which formed the nucleus of the Blyth and Tyne railway.

With the exception of those at Hartley, practically all the collieries in Tynemouthshire had, up to this time, been working the High Main seam, a coal peculiarly fitted for the household coal trade of London and the southern ports. To the north of Backworth this seam, however, began to deteriorate as a household coal, and the Low Main, which had been so extensively worked by the old Hartley pits, began to take its place, assuming the position of the principal seam of that part of the district. Its produce was unfitted for household use and, until the opening out of the steam coal trade, its market was restricted to special uses.

In 1828 West Holywell colliery was sunk to the High Main at a depth of fifty-six fathoms, a short distance to the north of the Earsdon shafts, the owners being Messrs. Taylor, Lamb, Plummer and Clark, who sank a second shaft to the same seam near Seghill in 1853.² After 1830 a great expansion in the trade took place, due both to the increased consumption of coal for steam purposes in this country and to the foreign demand which was then rapidly springing up. In 1831 the duty on best coal exported in British ships was reduced from 5s. 9d. to 3s. 4d. a ton, and in 1834 an *ad valorem* duty of one half per cent. was substituted.³ The export trade of Newcastle rose from 157,000 tons in 1828 to 476,000 tons in 1837.⁴

The reduction of the heavy export duties threw open to East Northumberland a market of the greatest possible value, without which the larger portion of the steam coal comprised in its lower seams would probably have for a long time remained undeveloped. The tax on coals exported in British ships was repealed in 1845,⁵ followed in 1850 by that on shipments

¹ Mr. T. E. Forster's MSS.

² *Borings and Sinkings*, Nos. 1180 and 1181.

³ Bunning, *Coal Duties*. United Coal Trade Papers.

⁴ Hair, *Northumberland and Durham Collieries*, p. 5.

⁵ Exports remained untaxed until 1901, when a duty of one shilling a ton was imposed on coal sold above six shillings.

in foreign vessels, and the trade continued to expand so rapidly that the exports from Newcastle had during the years 1854-1859 risen to an annual average quantity of 1,744,000 tons.¹

In 1838² an extensive winning was commenced at the south-west corner of the Seaton Delaval estate, which had become the property of Sir Jacob Astley, afterwards Lord Hastings. Six shafts were commenced at the same time by the partners Messrs. Lamb, Burdon, Barnes and Straker, and a connection was made with the railway of the neighbouring Cramlington colliery, by means of which the coals were led to the staiths erected by the Seaton Delaval partners at Howdon on the Tyne. The Low Main was reached, after many difficulties, in 1841, and the lessees were bitterly disappointed in finding it of so thin and uncertain a nature and so much disturbed by faults and dykes that its working was attended by heavy losses for a considerable number of years, until a fresh winning, known as the Forster pit, was made farther north in 1860.

In 1839³ the High Main, which had previously been won from Backworth colliery, was sunk to at a depth of forty-four fathoms and opened out at East Holywell by Messrs. Clark, Taylor and Lamb, the colliery being connected by a branch to the Backworth railway. By this time Backworth had begun to turn attention to the lower seams, and in 1836⁴ the B pit was put down to the Low Main seam at a depth of 107 fathoms. It reached the coal, as was proved later on, in the vicinity of the curious trough or 'swelly' which runs in a north-easterly direction through Seaton Delaval and Newsham to the coast near Blyth, containing coal of unusual thickness bordered by an area of abnormally thin section.⁵ The Low Main, in consequence, remained untouched at Backworth until the C pit was sunk to it in 1857.

Burradon had reached the Low Main seam in the year 1848, when it was purchased by Messrs. Carr and Company,⁶ the owners of Seghill, who worked it as a steam coal colliery.

The Church pit at Earsdon was sunk to the Bensham seam in 1838,⁷ and farther to the Low Main in 1840, working the latter extensively

¹ In 1904 the exports from the Tyne and from Blyth were 11,800,000 tons.

² Mr. T. E. Forster's MSS.

³ *Borings and Sinkings*, No. 1182.

⁴ Diary of John Buddle.

⁵ *North of England Institute Transactions*, vol. viii. p. 23.

⁶ Mr. T. E. Forster's MSS.

⁷ *Borings and Sinkings*, No. 746.

towards Monkseaton until the undertaking was sold to the Backworth Coal Company in 1844. This pit remained closed for many years until reopened recently to work the Yard seam. The Low Main was also attacked at West Holywell in 1858,¹ but the workings were closed and the colliery abandoned in 1860 on account of its unprofitable nature. In the latter year the same seam was reached at East Holywell, where, however, it remained untouched until the High Main and Yard seams had been extensively worked. Mr. Clark's interest in the colliery was purchased by Messrs. Taylor and Adamson during the same year. The Bates pit, to the north of Holywell village, and the D pit were afterwards sunk to the High Main and the Low Main, the latter in 1872.

The Hartley collieries, which had been leased by Messrs. Jobling and partners early in the century, gradually extended northwards as the coal in the vicinity of Hartley was exhausted. The Joblings sunk the Delaval and June pits² and worked the Yard and Low Main seams very extensively in the western portion of the old Hartley field. They continued to ship the coal at Seaton Sluice, where the copperas and bottle works remained in operation, although these trades, as well as the manufacture of salt, had begun to decline by the year 1825.³ In 1830 a move was made farther north and the Mill pit at Seaton Sluice was sunk to the Low Main, eighty-three fathoms in depth.⁴ It dealt with a narrow strip of coal lying between two whin dykes and rising somewhat heavily seawards. In 1845 the pit was closed and its workings abandoned on account of the increase in the heavy feeders of salt water which had always troubled the colliery. The Delaval pit was worked out in 1846, and in the same year the Low Main was opened out at the ill-fated Hester pit, situated to the west of Seaton Delaval hall.⁵ In 1847 the Joblings were bought out by their then partners the Carrs, who about that date became the owners of Cowpen and Burradon collieries in addition to Seghill.

The Hester pit, which was destined to have so calamitous an end, was unfortunate from the start. The Low Main to the north proved unusually thin and the colliery was heavily watered, so much so that in

¹ *Borings and Sinkings*, No. 1187.

² Mackenzie, *View of Northumberland*, vol. ii. p. 418.

³ Mr. T. E. Forster's MSS.

⁴ Mr. T. E. Forster's MSS.

⁵ *Borings and Sinkings*, No. 1069.

1852 the workings were drowned and the water rose in the shaft to a depth of seventy fathoms.¹ A more powerful engine was erected in 1854 and work continued until January 16th, 1862, when there occurred an accident probably unparalleled in the history of coal mining. The beam of the pumping engine suddenly broke and the outer half plunged down the timbered shaft which constituted the sole outlet to the colliery, blocking it above the Yard seam and entombing 204 men and boys. The shaft was full of wreckage but the dangerous task of clearing it away was pressed on with extraordinary energy in the hope of reaching the men alive. After a time, however, the workers were affected by the gas from the ventilating furnace as it began to leak up through the debris, and it was feared that the men below must have been fatally affected by it. This fear proved to be only too well founded. The ventilation was restored by means of a cloth brattice, and when at last, after seven days and nights of incessant labour, the explorers reached the Yard seam it was only to find that their comrades had gathered there and waited and died.²

Hartley as a separate concern then ceased to exist and the royalty was untenanted for some years, until it was taken by the Seaton Delaval Company, who commenced the winning of New Hartley, a little to the north of the old Hester pit, in 1872. The working of the Yard seam was commenced in 1877, and in 1895 the shafts were sunk to the Low Main. At the beginning of 1900 a communication was effected with the old drowned workings of the Hester pit, the water was drawn off them and work resumed after an interval of nearly forty years. In 1858 the Carrs parted with their collieries at Burradon, Seghill and Cowpen. Burradon became the property of Mr. Joshua Bower of Leeds and shortly afterwards, in 1860, was the scene of the most disastrous explosion which has occurred in the vicinity, resulting in the loss of seventy-two lives. In 1871 the colliery was purchased by Messrs. Lambert and Byas and remains in the possession of their representatives, forming one of the group worked under the style of the Burradon and Coxlodge Coal Company.

Seghill passed into the hands of Mr. Joseph Laycock and is still worked by his grandson, while Cowpen was taken over by a partnership consisting of Messrs. Straker, Henderson, Coppin, Cookson, Liddell and

¹ Mr. T. E. Forster's MSS.

² *Trans. N. E. Inst.* vol. xi. p. 147 ; *The Eagle*, vol. xxii. p. 124.

Forster, subsequently known as the Cowpen Coal Company. The coal under Newsham had been let to their predecessors by Sir M. W. Ridley, bart., and partly worked to Cowpen by outstroke, until the new tenants, in 1860, effected a winning of the Low Main to the west of Blyth, known as the Hannah pit, whence that seam was worked until 1877 when it was laid in.

Cowpen had hitherto used the port of Blyth as its shipping place, but towards the middle of the last century it became evident that this harbour, as well as that of Seaton Sluice, was insufficient for the growing necessities of the trade, and that the collieries shipping at these ports were placed at a disadvantage compared with those having access to the Tyne. The Seghill and Percy Main railway, completed by the Carrs in 1840, was subsequently extended to the Hester pit at Hartley (previously connected with the old wagonway leading from the Delaval pit to Seaton Sluice), and in 1847 on to Blyth. The undertaking was afterwards known as the Blyth and Tyne railway, being incorporated by Act of Parliament in 1852, and finally becoming merged in the North Eastern Railway in 1874. By the opening of railway communication to the Tyne, a great portion of the coal from Cowpen and the collieries farther north was diverted from Blyth and Seaton Sluice, and found its way to the Tyne at Hay Hole, where the Northumberland dock was afterwards constructed and opened in 1857. Seaton Sluice then declined rapidly and afterwards ceased to exist as a port, while Blyth in time decayed to such an extent that, in 1883, its shipments did not reach 150,000 tons. In this year the harbour was vested in Commissioners; it has since been developed and become a shipping place for the collieries of the Blyth district. The Newsham Mill pit was sunk in 1886, in close proximity to the harbour, in order to work the adjacent undersea coal as well as that remaining in Newsham.

During the last thirty years mining operations have been chiefly confined to the collieries lying to the north of the Ninety-fathom dyke. These have been engaged in producing steam coal, principally from the Yard and Low Main seams, for the export market, which continues to be the mainstay of the district. In order to work the coal to the south of the dyke, the Shiremoor Coal Company was formed about 1874, and a winning effected at the Blue Bell pit, near Backworth station, which worked the

Bensham seam for some years, leading its produce by the Blyth and Tyne railway to the Tyne for shipment. The Algernon pit, near Prospect Hill, was also sunk to the High Main in order to drain off the water which had accumulated in the old workings, and was afterwards carried down to the Bensham seam. The enterprise was unfortunate, and in the year 1896 the colliery was absorbed by the Backworth owners, who commenced to raise coal at the Algernon shaft from the Bensham, and connected both pits with their own railway.

Preston colliery, near Chirton, which for some years was carried on by Messrs. Hutchinson as a landsale, secured a connection with the North Eastern Railway, near North Shields, about the year 1897 and has since undergone considerable development, working the Yard and Bensham seams. A new shaft has been sunk to the Low Main and the colliery has recently become the property of Messrs. Utrick Ritson and Sons.

The history of the coal trade of Tynemouthshire during later years is practically that of East Northumberland. The trade has ever been peculiarly subject to violent fluctuations, and for this reason it is perhaps remarkable that the ownership of the collieries in Tynemouthshire has undergone, with trifling exceptions, so few changes in spite of long periods of depression. The trade has, however, continued to expand with that of the county and the yearly output of the Tynemouthshire collieries has now reached the, by no means inconsiderable, figure of 2,200,000 tons.

TYNEMOUTH PRIORY.

On the north side of the mouth of the river Tyne, a rock of Magnesian Limestone, running out into the sea, forms the south-eastern extremity of Northumberland. Its cliffs break away precipitously on the east and north, but slope down more gradually towards the south; upon this side a small haven and a second promontory, smaller and lower than the first, separate the rock from the channel of the river. On the landward side sand and soil have accumulated, so that there is now a level approach from the west to what was, perhaps, once a partly isolated rock. Upon this point stands a Government fort, including within its works the remains of a medieval castle, the site of a monastery and considerable remains of a church, half of which was conventual and half parochial.

The priory, the castle, and the parish church form three distinct elements in the history of the place, and deserve separate treatment; but the threads of their history intermingle. The castle was the possession of the monks, and formed the outer defence of their monastery. The parish church was simply the nave of the priory church, set apart for parochial uses. A change came with the suppression of the monastery by Henry VIII. From that date there was a royal castle with a parish church within it, till the latter fell into ruins during the civil wars, when a new church was built a mile away. Still the old graveyard remained in use, and spread itself over a considerable portion of the monastic area, while what was once a chantry chapel in the conventual portion of the church was surrendered to the parish in the middle of the nineteenth century, and services are now occasionally held in it.

The name of Tynemouth¹ requires no explanation. There was, however, a possibly older name for the rock. An old twelfth century chronicle relating to Tynemouth, now lost, entitled it 'Benebalcrag.'²

Upon this supposed place-name, Leland based his conclusion that Severus's wall ended at this point,³ being of the opinion that it extended beyond Wallsend to the sea. There was a still earlier tradition to this effect, for in a twelfth or thirteenth century abstract of Nennius's history, it is stated that Severus built a wall against the Picts and Scots from Tynemouth to Bowness.⁴ But it is impossible to find warranty for these statements, whether they are taken to allude to the stone wall or to the earthen dyke. A recent discovery of a portion of the former at Wallsend, running south from the camp of Segedunum towards the river, leaves no doubt that it terminated at this point. The vallum does not appear to have reached so far down the Tyne. There was no necessity for the extension of the lines farther eastwards, for the river itself and the camp at South Shields furnished sufficient protection against attack from the north. The fact that the river, before it was deepened by the Tyne

¹ The usual pronunciation of the name is with a short vowel in the first syllable, *Tinmouth*; and so the name was commonly spelt in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.

² Leland, *Collectanea*, ed. Hearne, 1774, vol. iv. p. 43. 'Locus ubi nunc coenobium Tinemuthense est antiquitus a Saxonibus dicebatur Benebalcrag.'

³ *Ibid.* 'Nam circa hunc locum finis erat valli Severiani.'

⁴ *Monumenta Historia Britannica*, p. 50. 'De secundo etiam Severo qui solita structura murum alterum, ad arcendos Pictos et Scottos, a Tinemuthe usque Boggenes praecepit.'

Commissioners, was occasionally fordable, at two points at least, below Wallsend does not militate against this view, for the lower reaches of the Tyne may have silted up since the days of the Roman occupation.

Later writers upon northern antiquities are agreed that the wall did not reach to the mouth of the river; but at the same time they

have urged that a subsidiary camp existed at Tynemouth, external to and dependant upon the main line of defence. It is not unnatural to suppose that, while the military station at South Shields guarded the entrance to the Tyne from the Durham side, a similar fort might be erected on the northern shore. The view is supported by the natural strength which a fortress at Tynemouth would possess. Early archæologists have been ready to detect Roman remains on the site of the priory, and Warburton, writing about 1720, alludes to 'remains of Roman mortar in the banks adjoining,' but no great reliance can be placed on this or similar statements.

In the year 1782, while military works were being carried out at the castle, a Roman altar was discovered on the north side of the priory church six feet below the surface. It appeared to have been used as a foundation stone for later buildings, the *focus* having been cut away from

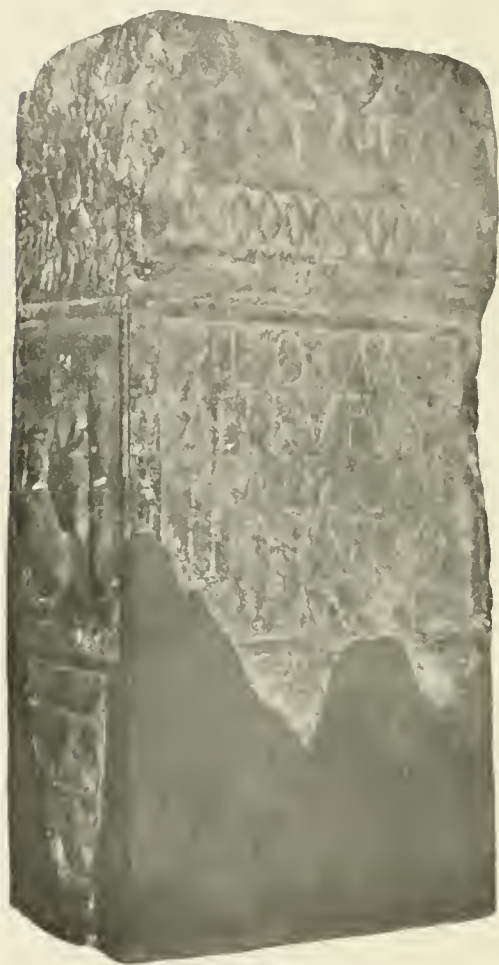


FIG. 1.

the top, so as to give a smooth surface. On one side there were carved in relief, a bullock's head, an axe, knife, and jug (*præfericulum*), the common symbols of sacrifice; on the other was the less common design of a *patena* between two snakes. The back of the altar was plain; the front bore the inscription of dedication to Jupiter Optimus Maximus,

made by Aelius Rufus, prefect of the fourth cohort of Lingones.¹ The dedication, taken in conjunction with that of an altar found at Wallsend in 1892, corrects a reading in the *Notitia Dignitatum*, as to the name of the auxiliary regiment which garrisoned Segedunum.

On June 12th, in 1783, a second inscribed stone was discovered in the same piece of ground. This was a slab or mural tablet, one foot nine inches long by one foot ten inches broad. As in the case of the altar, the top surface had been pared down, and about an inch in breadth had been cut away from the right side of the stone. This has rendered the first line illegible, and the whole inscription obscure. The most probable reading, and that favoured by Mommsen, is as follows: . . . | TYPVM CVM BAS[I] | ET TEMPLVM | FECIT. C. IV . . . | MAXIMINVS . . . | LEG. VI VI . . . | EX VOTO.² It has been conjectured that the Maximinus who built the temple thus com-

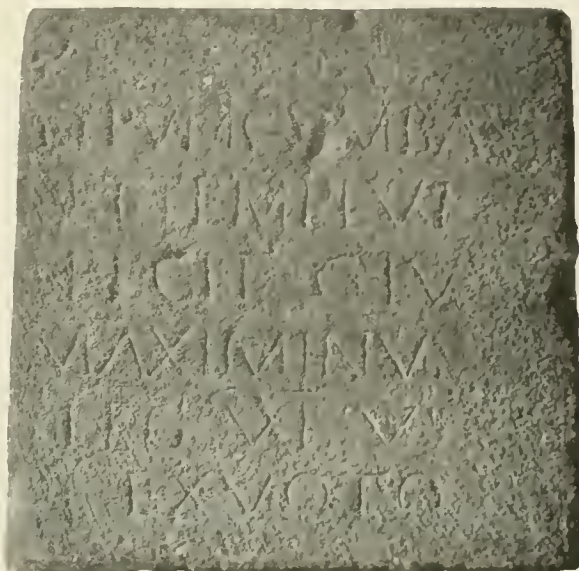


FIG. 2.

memorated was the Thracian soldier who, in the year 235, became emperor of Rome; the possibility, though interesting, is remote.

The actual discovery of Roman stones at Tynemouth would strengthen the case for a Roman occupation, were it not for the fact that the stones have evidently been used by later builders, and may have been transported by them from Wallsend. Medieval church builders went to considerable distances for worked stone, as is seen in the cases of Hexham and Chollerton. The inscription first quoted evidently points to

¹ *Corpus Inscriptionum Latinarum*, vol. vii. No. 493. See Fig. 1.

² *Ibid.* No. 494. Professor Hübner has suggested the reading [IOVI SIGNVM ANAG] | LYPVM, *anaglyphum* being a misspelling of *anaglyphum*, so that, in his view, the object erected would be not a statue but a bas-relief. Brand's suggestion of *gyrum, cumbas, et templum*, and his identification of this 'circular harbour' with the Prior's Haven, is devoid alike of linguistic and of topographical justification. The Rev. John Hodgson proposed to read *cyfum* (*i.e.* cippum) in the second line, but the first letter is certainly either L or T. This stone and the altar are now in the rooms of the Society of Antiquaries at Burlington House. See Fig. 2.

Segedunum as its source. Other arguments drawn from the form of the name of Tynemouth, which has been detected in the Roman station of Tunnocellum and the hermitage of Tunnacester mentioned by Bede,¹ are of still less weight. In the present state of the evidence it may be said that no case has yet been made out for supposing that a Roman camp ever existed at Tynemouth, though it may be urged that the Romans would not have omitted to fortify so strong a position. If further discoveries of Roman remains were made, it might necessitate a reconsideration of the question, and a fresh examination of the disposition of Roman defences at the eastern extremity of the wall would then be required.²

The first appearance of Tynemouth in history is in the early days of Christianity in the north. A countryman, who saw the scene, told the story to a monk of Jarrow, who in turn described it to Bede. It occurred in the middle of the seventh century. At South Shields a double monastery was being built by St. Hild. A party of monks had gone up the Tyne to bring timber from the woods which then shaded the river banks. The rafts with their cargo were brought safely back, but off South Shields a wind set up from the west. A landing was impossible. With wind and tide against them, the monks were driven out to sea. Their comrades put out in boats from Shields, but the weather prevented them from giving any assistance. They gathered on the Lawe and knelt in prayer. But meanwhile a large crowd had collected on the northern shore. Their thoughts were not prayerful, for they jeered at the five rafts which now looked no larger than so many sea-gulls riding the waves. The monks were getting their deserts, they said, for trampling upon the laws of nature, and setting up new and unheard of standards of life. St. Cutlibert was among the crowd. He was only a lad, but he tried to shame them, saying, 'Why curse those who, as you see, are being drawn to their death? Is

¹ Camden, *Britannia*, 1587, p. 543. 'Hoc Romanorum sacculo Tunnocellum fuisse fere asseverabo . . . Saxonica heptarchica Tunnacerten vocabatur.' Cp. Bede, *Hist. Eccl.* lib. iv. c. 22, ed. Plummer, vol. i. p. 250.

² The two inscribed stones, and the questions to which their discovery gave rise, have a small literature to themselves. See Bruce, *Lapidarium Septentrionale*, Nos. 1 and 2, and the authorities there quoted. When the present trench in front of the castle was being excavated in 1856, there was found (together with a large medieval lock and a quantity of broken pottery) a Roman tile, inscribed LEG VI V, now in the possession of the Rev. Thomas Stephens, vicar of Horsley, and a coin of Constantius II. (337-361), vide Latimer's *Local Records*, p. 385. A coin of the Emperor Magnentius (350-353) is also said to have been found at Tynemouth. *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. x. p. 308.

it not better and kinder to pray to the Lord for their safe return than to be glad of their danger?' But they turned on him angrily and cried, 'Let no man pray for them. May God have mercy upon never a one of them. They have taken away our old services, and no one knows how these new forms ought to be kept.' Then Cuthbert knelt down and laid his face to the earth, and, as he prayed, the wind shifted and brought back the rafts to land; so the monks reached the Durham shore unharmed. The crowd was abashed. They admired the young man for his boldness, and, when he came to be famous, the story of this deed was often told by those who then had stood upon the Tynemouth cliffs.¹

A monastery is not likely to have existed at Tynemouth at the period when this event occurred. In later times the monks asserted that Edwin had built a wooden chapel there, which St. Oswald replaced by a little monastery of stone;² but their tradition may be disregarded in view of Bede's express statement that no church was built in Northumbria before Oswald raised the cross at Heavenfield.³ Neither can one accept the identification of Tynemouth with the monastery of Donemuth, which would lead to placing the foundation in the reign of King Egfrid.⁴ Donemuth can only be Jarrow, which stands at the mouth of the little river Don. We must be satisfied with knowing that before the eighth century commenced an abbey had been built upon the headland.

This was probably the monastery at the mouth of the Tyne of which, when Bede was writing his history, his friend Herebald was abbot. Herebald, who died in 745, had been a disciple of St. John of Beverley, and Bede has told a story of how, as a young man, he was thrown from his horse, and woke from a long unconsciousness to find the bishop, his master, watching by his bedside.⁵

¹ Bede, *Vita S. Cuthberti*, cap. 3, ed. Giles, vol. iv. p. 214. The identification of the monastery here mentioned with St. Hild's first religious house, described in Bede, *Hist. Eccl.* lib. iv. c. 23, is made by Canon Savage in *Arch. Acl.* 2nd series, vol. xix. pp. 47-75.

² Leland, *Chronicon incerti auctoris*, above cited. 'Edwinus, rex Northumbrorum, sacellum erexit Tinemutæ ex ligno, in quo Rosella, ejus filia, postea velum sacrum accepit. Sanctus Oswaldus monasteriolum de Tinemuthe ex ligneo lapideum fecit.'

³ *Hist. Eccl.* lib. iii. c. 2, ed. Plummer, vol. i. p. 130.

⁴ Bishop Stubbs quotes a manuscript of Roger of Hoveden (MS. Reg. 13 A. 6), in which, opposite to an entry of the sack of 'monasterium Doni amnis' in 794, a rubric has been added: 'Dani cum eorum rege devicti sunt apud Tynemuth,' and is prepared to accept the identification. *Roger of Hoveden*, Rolls Series, vol. i. p. xxxvii.

⁵ *Hist. Eccl.* lib. v. c. 6, ed. Plummer, vol. i. pp. 289-291. Symeon of Durham, *Historia Regum*, Rolls Series, vol. ii. p. 38.

Very little is known of the history of this pre-Conquest abbey. A theory has been put forward¹ that the Northumbrian annals, which form the earlier portion of Symeon of Durham's *Historia Regum*, may have been composed here, but Lindisfarne and Hexham both have prior claims.

There was necessarily a cemetery attached to the abbey, a fact attested by the sepulchral remains found there and otherwise known to us from the *Anglo-Saxon Chronicle*. In 792, Osred, son of Alcred, a dispossessed king of Northumbria, returned from the exile to which he had been driven two years earlier. Deserted by his followers, he was captured and put to death by his successor, Ethelred, his body being buried at Tynemouth.²

The following year, to the general horror of the Christian world, the monastery of Lindisfarne was sacked by the Danes. A year later Jarrow shared the same fate, but the Danes received a severe check in a naval battle in Jarrow Slake, and Tynemouth gained a short respite. It was not for long, for in 800 the invaders came again, and this time despoiled the abbey church as well as the church of Hertness, and carried off their booty with them over sea.³

The piratical inroads of the Danes gave way to more ambitious projects of invasion and settlement. In 851 they first wintered in England. They directed their attention at first to the south and south-east, but in 867 they captured York. Northumbria was a prey to disunion and the weakness of its rulers. In 875 half of the heathen host sailed into the Tyne, completely destroyed Tynemouth abbey, and murdered the nuns of St. Hild's convent who are said to have established themselves there. According to another account the Tynemouth monks sought refuge in a little church on their domain which had been dedicated by St. Cuthbert. The invaders set fire to it, and the monks perished in the flames. Tynemouth became a Danish stronghold. The army, under the leadership of Halfdene, reduced the whole of Northumberland, and spread war into Scotland. All the

¹ By the late Mr. C. J. Bates, *History of Northumberland*, p. 73.

² Earle, *Two of the Saxon Chronicles Parallel*, p. 55. 'Osred the wæs Northanhymbra Cining, æfter wræcsithe ham cumenum, gekeht, wæs ofslagen; his lic ligh æt Tinanmuthæ.'

³ Matthew Paris, *Chronica Majora*, Rolls Series, vol. i. p. 367. 'A.D. DCCC. Exercitus paganorum nefandissimus ecclesias de Hertenes et de Tinemutha crudeliter spoliavit, et cum spoliis ad naves recurrit.'

monasteries on the coast of Northumberland, Durham and Yorkshire were destroyed, and monasticism ceased to exist north of the Tyne for a couple of centuries.¹

The downfall of the Anglian abbey marks the close of the first stage in Tynemouth's history. From that time till the eve of the Norman Conquest there is an entire absence of historical tradition connected with the place. Two things only appear certain, that the monastery was not rebuilt, and that in the resettlement of the country at the close of the Danish invasions, Tynemouth, like other lands of the destroyed monasteries, became part of the demesne of the Northumbrian earls. There Earl Tostig used to come on his journeys from one village of his demesne to another, bringing with him a host of followers, for whom each town or village were bound by custom to find lodging and provisions for one, two, or three nights in the year.² There was scant accommodation for them; the chaplain and his wife (for the tie of celibacy was then little regarded among the clergy) found a lodging on at least one occasion in the tower of the little parish church dedicated to the Virgin Mary.³

The church was in charge of a single custodian, a secular priest named Edmund. One night in 1065, according to the Tynemouth hagiographer, he dreamed a dream. There appeared to him a man of angelic mien and addressed him by name. 'I am King Oswin,' he said, 'who was betrayed and put to a terrible death by King Oswy, and I lie in this church unknown to all.' He bade him rise and tell Egelwin, bishop of Durham, to make search under the floor of the church and to give his body a more fitting resting-place. This Oswin, who was king of Deira, had suffered loss of kingdom and life at the hands of Oswy, ruler of Bernicia, four centuries before the time of this vision. Bede wrote in his history of Oswin's saint-

¹ *Annales Lindisfarnenses et Dunelmenses*, Monumenta Germanica, vol. xix. p. 506. '875. Halfdene, assumpta parte exercitus, intravit Tinam, totamque Northumbriam cum monasteriis et ecclesiis est depopulatus.' *Chronica Majora*, vol. i. p. 392. 'De multorum desolatione coenobiorum' (sub anno 870), and p. 531. Leland, *loc. cit.*, quoting *Chronicon incerti auctoris*, 'Dani Tinemuthe utebantur pro propugnaculo atque adeo receptaculo, cum transfetarent ex Dania et Norwegia in Angliam;' and vol. iv. p. 114, quoting a lost manuscript of the *Vita Oswini*, 'Hynguar et Hubba hoc monasterium destruxerunt. Monachi metu persecutionis fugerunt ad quandam ecclesiolam in fundo suo quam Sanctus Cuthbertus dedicaverat. Quo comperto, Dani ipsam ecclesiam, et omnes qui in eo erant, igni succenderunt, et omne loci nobilis aedificium in campi planitiem redegerunt.'

² *Vita Oswini*, cap. vii. Surt. Soc. No. 8. (*Miscellanea Biographica*), p. 20. 'Cum de more provinciae instructa essent convivia apud Tynemudham, quia villula modica erat, et ad tot hominum genera, quae comitem comitabantur, suscipienda hospitio minus sufficiens.'

³ This 'ecclesiola' would seem to have been on a more modest scale than the 'eximium coenobium' of the eighth century. Of its position it can only be said that it stood within the castle, and was not upon the site of the Norman church which succeeded it.

liness and humility, but neither he nor any earlier writer had told of the place where the murdered king lay buried.¹ Then Edmund awoke, and early in the morning he told the bishop, who was strongly drawn to believe his tale. With many others Egelwin came to Tynemouth. Men were set to dig up the floor of the little church. From dawn to noon they dug and found nothing. Edmund was stung by a sense of the saint's unfair dealing with him. At last he seized a spade himself and began to dig deeper than the others had done. A sharp ring from the tool showed that he had struck on stone. The earth was quickly cleared away; a coffin was disclosed; the lid was lifted, and immediately a wonderful fragrance filled the building. Bishop Egelwin lifted the body out of the coffin; it was washed, wrapped in linen cloths, covered with rich apparel, and placed in a tomb in a raised portion of the church. The finding of the body of St. Oswin occurred on March 11th, 1065.²

The monks of Durham had a somewhat different tradition. There was a monk at Durham named Elfred Westou. No man was a more zealous guardian of the relics of the saints, and no one could match him in the recovery and collection of fresh relics. His greatest title to fame is the abstraction from Jarrow of the bones of the Venerable Bede, which he deposited in the church of Durham. But he also visited the sites of many of the ancient monasteries and churches in Northumbria, bringing to light the bones of the saints who had been there buried, and placing them above ground, where they could be the object of popular veneration. The saints whose remains he had the merit of discovering were the hermits Balther and Bilfred, Acca and Alchmund, bishops of Hexham, the abbesses Ebba and Ethelgitha, and King Oswin.³ The story illustrates the general revival in the north during Edward the Confessor's reign of the cult of Northumbrian saints, of which the instance of St. Oswin was no isolated example.

The question naturally arises whether Oswin was actually buried at Tynemouth, and whether it was his body which was discovered. Answer may be given in the words of Oswin's biographer. 'As for others than

¹ Bede, in his account of King Oswin (*Hist. Eccl.* lib. iii. c. 14), mentions only the place of his death, Ingetlingum, i.e., Gilling, near Richmond, where a monastery was built in his memory.

² *Vita Oswini*, c. iv. pp. 12-15.

³ Symeon of Durham, *Hist. Dunelm. Eccl.* lib. iii. c. 7; Rolls Series, vol. i. pp. 87-90. If a choice has to be made between Symeon's statement and the St. Alban's tradition as represented by the *Vita Oswini*, the preference must be given to the former. The St. Alban's connection with Tynemouth dates only from 1085. The story of the hair of St. Cuthbert, which did not burn but glowed like asbestos in the fire, reappears in a different form in the *Vita*, where the hair is said to be St. Oswin's.

Bede who have told or written of the martyr, we allow a belief in their statements, but the weight of their authority is not sufficient to compel our belief.¹ And the question whether the bones were those of the Deiran king is one of small moment. They are lost now. The historical influence of St. Oswin in succeeding centuries was great; his Invention, whether true or false, is a date to be remembered in the religious history of the North. Strangers had heard of St. Oswin, when the name of St. Aidan was unknown to them.² The popularity of his worship is attested by the number of miracles performed at his shrine, and continued for at least a century, when his fame began to be eclipsed by that of Godric of Finchale.³

In the October following the discovery of St. Oswin's body, Northumbria rose in revolt against Earl Tostig, and he was forced to go into banishment. He went to the court of Harold Hardrada, king of Norway, whom he persuaded to join him in an invasion of England. They united their forces in the river Tyne (September, 1066), but the invasion was brought to a close the same month at Stamfordbridge, where Tostig and Hardrada lost their lives. Three weeks later the battle of Hastings gave England to the Normans.

At first Northumberland was left unvisited by the Conqueror, but he came with his army in 1070, wasting the land as far as the Tweed. Again, two years later, he marched into Scotland to force submission upon the Scotch king, Malcolm. Upon one of these two occasions, on his return march, he encamped at Monk-chester, soon to be known as Newcastle-upon-Tyne. He found the river unfordable, neither was there any sign of a bridge. During his enforced halt the Normans scoured the country for food and fodder. Word being brought that the supplies of the neighbourhood had been hurriedly collected at Tynemouth, a foraging party was despatched to seize them. They came in sight of the church tower, which stood a conspicuous landmark on the promontory. Then their leader gave

¹ *Vita Oswini*, p. 1.

² *Ibid.* p. 46. 'De Sancto Rege,' inquit, 'Oswino nonnulla dudum audieram, sed Sancti Aidani episcopi antea nec nomen ad me pervenerat.'

³ Several miracles performed on natives of Tynemouth are recorded in the *Vita Godrici*, Surt. Soc. No. 20.

'Quatre cens ans e quinze avoc
Aveit le cors ju iloc,
A Tynemue, u il estait,
E uncore est, co est drait,
E Deus i fet maintes vertuz
Pur le cors seint, co est seuz.'

Gaimar, *L'Estorie des Engles*, ii. 5109-5114; Rolls Series, vol i. p. 216.

orders forbidding a further advance, for he had heard of St. Oswin's fame. But his scouts were out of hand. They hurried on to Tynemouth, and came back to the king's camp laden with supplies. They appear to have set fire to the church, which remained roofless for fifteen years to come.¹

King William, on the second of these two campaigns, deposed the existing earl of Northumberland, Gospatric, and appointed Waltheof to be his successor. In 1074, when Waltheof had held the earldom for two years, there came to Monkchester a monk of Winchcombe named Alduin, with two companions from Evesham monastery. They came on foot, their books and vestments carried on a donkey. From this humble beginning sprang the revival of monasticism in the north. Walcher, who was then bishop of Durham, received them with honour, and gave them the old monastery of Jarrow as a place of residence.² Their number was increased by new recruits from the south, and many Northumbrians, influenced by their example, entered the monastic profession. Walcher further used his influence with Earl Waltheof for their better endowment. In the presence of the bishop and of the whole synod of the bishopric, Waltheof granted to Alduin, and to the monks assembled at Jarrow, the church of St. Mary at Tynemouth, with the body of St. Oswin, king and martyr, then resting in the said church, together with all places and lands and other things thereto belonging, to hold freely for ever. By the same charter he offered them his young cousin Morkar, to be brought up under monastic discipline. Moreover, because Tynemouth was as yet too wild and desolate a place for monks to inhabit, and Waltheof and the bishop had determined to find them a more suitable habitation at Durham, he granted to St. Cuthbert the church of St. Mary above mentioned, with all property bestowed or thereafter to be bestowed upon the same.³ Bishop Walcher likewise issued a charter at this synod, confirming the earl's deed of gift.

Symeon of Durham, who was himself a monk at Jarrow at this period, has left an account of how the congregation acquitted themselves of their charge. One of their number, named Edmund, served the church at

¹ *Vita Oswini*, c. viii. p. 20. Professor Freeman (*Norman Conquest*, vol. iv. p. 519) assigns the episode to 1072, which agrees best with the hagiographer's words, 'cum a Scotia reverteretur.' But Symeon of Durham's statement that in 1083 the church had been for fifteen years without a roof implies a devastation in 1070, so that this tale of a Norman foray may apply to the earlier campaign.

² Symeon of Durham, *Hist. Eccl. Dunelm.* lib. iii. c. 21 ; Rolls Series, vol. i. pp. 109-112.

³ *Dur. Treas.* 1^{ma} 1^{ma} Pont. No. 5 (an early transcript), and Cart. Prim. fol. 83 ; printed in *Hist. Dunelm. Script. Tres.* Surt. Soc. No. 9, p. xviii. The presence of Earl Aldred as a witness throws some doubt upon the genuineness of the charter, but there is no reason for questioning the fact of Waltheof's gift.

Tynemouth, and, after him, Eadred. They also appointed a priest, Elwald. He was one of the congregation of St. Cuthbert at Durham, and used to go over to Durham from Tynemouth whenever his week came round for celebrating mass. Others of the brethren were sent in turn to St. Mary's to hold divine service. But there was no settlement at Tynemouth, and the church continued in a dismantled state. The Jarrow monks at times brought over the bones of St. Oswin to their monastery, keeping them with them so long as they pleased, and then returning them to their original resting place.¹

Bishop Walcher did not live to carry out his scheme of establishing the Jarrow monks at Durham, being murdered in 1080. During the last five years of his life he had been earl of Northumberland as well as bishop of Durham. Now the two offices were separated. William de St. Carileph was appointed to the episcopal see, and a Norman noble, Alberic, was made earl. In the course of his brief tenure of that office (1080-1082), Alberic confirmed Waltheof's charter of donation.²

The new bishop was strongly influenced by the ecclesiastical reforms of Pope Gregory VII. He obtained papal and royal sanction for expelling the congregation of St. Cuthbert from the church which they had hitherto served, and replacing them by the combined monastic congregations of Jarrow and Wearmouth. In this way Durham priory was founded. Monks of the Benedictine Order were established at Durham on May 26th, 1083. The bishop had made preparations for the new body by endowing it with extensive property in Durham and Northumberland, and he also confirmed the monks in their possession of the church of Tynemouth. Robert de Mowbray, the new earl of Northumberland, joined with others in sanctioning this arrangement.³

The removal of the monks from Jarrow to Durham necessitated a change with regard to Tynemouth. It was no longer possible to send monks across the Tyne as in the days when only the river separated

¹ Symeon of Durham, *Hist. Regum*, Rolls Series, vol. ii. p. 261.

² Alberic's charter is described by Bishop William as granted 'eisdem monachis, domini Papae auctoritate in Dunelmum translatis.' 'Translatis' refers to the time of Bishop William's charter and not to that of Alberic. Alberic had probably ceased to be earl before the monks were transferred to Durham, though Symeon of Durham asserts the contrary. *Hist. Regum*, *loc. cit.*

³ *Dur. Treas.* 1^{ma} 1^{ma} Pont. No. 2, printed in *Hist. Dunelm. Script. Tres.* pp. i-v. The charter is a forgery (see the Rev. William Greenwell's introduction to the *Feodarium Prioratus Dunelmensis*, Surt. Soc. No. 58), but must be accepted as embodying an early tradition, to be followed for want of a better authority.

Jarrow from its dependent; a more permanent settlement at Tynemouth was required. By a resolution of the whole chapter, the monk Turchil was sent to Tynemouth, possibly with one or more companions. He put a new roof upon the dismantled church, and continued to reside there for the next three years.¹

A quarrel shortly broke out between William de St. Carileph and Robert de Mowbray. The earl sent two of his officers, Gumer and Robert Taca, and expelled the monk Turchil from St. Mary's church. The bishop replied by issuing a charter, in which he recited Waltheof's deed of gift and its various confirmations, and threatened with the usual anathemas whoever should dare to rob the monks of their possession (May 27th, 1085).² The feud became serious, and called for the interposition of the king, who restored peace, though without obliging Mowbray to give back the church to the prior and convent of Durham.³

Robert de Mowbray was not disposed or was not allowed to keep the church in his own hands. Acting, it is said, with the goodwill of the king and of Archbishop Lanfranc, he entered into negotiations with Lanfranc's nephew, Paul, the Norman abbot of St. Alban's, to ascertain whether he was willing to send monks from St. Alban's to settle in the vacant church. Paul accepted the proposals upon the condition that a suitable endowment was found for them. Mowbray assented; the monks were sent and installed under the protection of the civil power, and in this way Tynemouth became a cell of St. Alban's, and, except for brief assertions of independence, remained subject to that monastery for the remainder of its existence.⁴

¹ Symeon, *Hist. Regum*, loc. cit. and *Hist. Dunelm. Eccl.* lib. iv. cap. 4; Rolls Series, vol. i. p. 124. 'Quae (ecclesia), cum jam per quindecim annos velut deserta sine tecto durasset, cum monachi, culmine imposito, renovarunt.'

² *Dur. Treas.* 1^{ma} 1^{ma} Pont. No. 5, and Cart. Prim. fol. 83 b, printed in *Hist. Dunelm. Script. Tres.* p. xix. This charter is to be taken with the same reservation as that of Waltheof. It is dated 'v kal. Maii, feria secunda,' but the 27th in this year was a Sunday.

³ *Hist. Dunelm. Script. Tres.* p. ccccxv, quoting an abstract of the Liber Ruber, a lost manuscript which gave a history of the privileges conferred upon the see of Durham down to 1088, 'Willielmus Conquestor concordiam fecit inter Willielmum primum episcopum Dunelm., et Robertum comitem Northumbriae.' A deed in *Dur. Treas.* (1^{ma} 1^{ma} Reg. No. 17) gives the terms of a concord made by William Rufus between St. Carileph and Mowbray; printed in the *Feodarium*, ed. Greenwell, p. lxxxii. The list of witnesses would date it, if genuine, in 1091 or 1092. In this it conflicts with the statement in the Liber Ruber.

⁴ An obscurity hangs over the acquisition of Tynemouth by St. Alban's, due to the fact that the date must be a matter for conjecture. Matthew Paris is the only writer who assigns a year to the event, and he does not claim it to be more than approximate. (*Chronica Majora*, vol. ii. p. 31.) His date, 1090, conflicts with the statement in the *Gesta Abbatum Monasterii S. Albani* (Rolls Series, vol. i. p. 56) that the transference was carried out 'regis et archiepiscopi Lanfranci benevolentia,' for Lanfranc died May 24th, 1089. The event must have been prior to that date, and is admitted to be subsequent to the foundation of Durham priory (May 26th, 1083). If one is to keep as near as may be to the chronology of Matthew

Mowbray's charters are not extant, so that there are no means of ascertaining how extensive his gifts were, but they were, without doubt, lavish. He endowed the new cell with manors, churches, rents, and fisheries, together with mills and the usual appurtenances of a Norman manor, to be held freely, and quit of all secular service. He granted the church of Tynemouth, so endowed, to Abbot Paul and his successors, and to the church of St. Alban's for his own health and that of all his predecessors and successors to hold for ever, upon the condition that the abbot of St. Alban's for the time being, with the conventual chapter, should have the free disposal of the priors and monks of Tynemouth, alike in appointing and in removing them, as they should see fit.¹

Paris, the winter of 1088-1089 may be fixed upon, and the spoliation of Durham may under those circumstances be considered to form part of the consequences of William de St. Carileph's participation in Odo of Bayeux's rising of 1088. Robert de Mowbray also joined in the rising, but appears on this occasion to have escaped punishment. He may have made his submission and ratified it by joining with the royal party against the bishop, his former ally.

On the other hand, the Durham Red Book gives proof of a quarrel between Mowbray and Bishop William, which was made up while William the Conqueror was still alive, *i.e.*, before September, 1087. The words of Symeon of Durham (*Hist. Regum, loc. cit.*), 'postea per tres annos possederunt,' show that the monks of St. Cuthbert did not hold the church of Tynemouth for more than three years after they were transferred to Durham. This gives 1085-1086 as the required date, which is corroborated by the fact that the story of Mowbray's seizure finds a place in Symeon's narrative before the entry of the death of William the Conqueror. It is therefore probable that Bishop William's charter of May 28th, 1085, if genuine, was not unconnected with Mowbray's attack on the rights of his church. Tynemouth had been already confirmed to the priory along with other possessions in 1082. A special confirmation at a subsequent date must have been called forth by special circumstances. These considerations point to 1085 as the most probable date, though the chronology is undoubtedly difficult.

¹ Matthew Paris, *Chronica Majora*, vol. ii. p. 31. De monachis apud Tynemutham primo introductis. 'Consilio amicorum suorum (Robertus de Molbraio) Paulum, ecclesiae Sancti Albani abbatem, convenit. . . . Cujus petitioni abbas praedictus acquiescens, quosdam illuc de Sancto Albano monachis destinavit; quibus comes praefatus cum in maneriis, ecclesiis, redditibus et piscariis, cum molendinis et rebus omnibus sufficienter providisset et cartis suis praedicta omnia ab omni seculari servitio soluta et penitus libera confirmasset, dedit praedicto abbati Paulo, ejusque successoribus et ecclesiae beati Albani Anglorum prothomartyris, ecclesiam de Tinemutha, cum omnibus pertinentiis suis, pro salute propria et omnium antecessorum suorum sive successorum eternaliter possidendam, ita quidem ut abbates Sancti Albani qui pro tempore fuerint, cum consilio ejusdem loci conventus, liberam habeant dispositionem priorum et monachorum, tam in illis ponendis quam removendis, sicut viderint expedire.' The writer of these words must have had Mowbray's deed of gift before him. It was lost before 1292, when search was made for it, and a Tynemouth monk wrote, 'God only knows what has become of it.' Cottonian MSS. Tib. E. vi. fol. 150.

The manuscript here quoted is an unpublished register of St. Alban's monastery, of which the greater part appears to have been compiled in the last decade of the thirteenth century. It has been continued by various writers in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. The earlier portion relates largely to the various cells of St. Alban's monastery, for whose history it is of the highest value. It has never been printed as a whole, though well deserving of that attention, but extracts are given in the Rolls edition of the *Registrum Abbatiae Johannis Whethamstede*, vol. ii. app. D. Originally a fine codex, it was seriously injured in the fire which consumed many of the manuscripts of Sir Robert Cotton's collection. Fortunately three independent series of extracts from it exist which were made before the fire, viz.: (1) by Augustine Baker (MSS. Jesus College, Oxford, No. 77), (2) by Roger Dodsworth (volume 78 of his collections), (3) by Sir Richard St. George (Lansdowne MSS. No. 863). Selden also quotes it in his *History of Tithes*. Dodsworth's extracts were largely used in the production of Dugdale's *Monasticon*. Mr. Sidney Gibson printed the Lansdowne MS. extracts, so far as they related to Tynemouth, in his *History of the Monastery of Tynemouth*. The manuscript has been carefully rebound, and, though much injured in every page by fire, it remains otherwise intact. The greater part of it is decipherable. It will be hereafter quoted in this work as the *St. Alban's Register*.

Among the possessions so confirmed to Tynemouth and St. Alban's were probably the manors of Tynemouth and Preston, the manor of Amble with Hauxley, its member, the churches of Tynemouth and Woodhorn, and the tithes of Corbridge, Rothbury, Warkworth, Wooler, and Newburn. They were held by Tynemouth priory from a very early period, and appear to have been formerly part of the estates of the official earldom. Other grants were made by Mowbray's 'men;' Hubert de la Val, for instance, granted the tithes of all the townships in his barony, and possibly the township of South Dissington also.

The following table shows the extent of the possessions of Tynemouth priory, as well those now conferred as those acquired at a later date. Exactness cannot be ensured owing to the loss of almost all of the grants. Minor possessions, that is to say, houses or lands within a township, are omitted.

NORTHUMBERLAND. A. TEMPORALITIES.

Township.	Donor.	Date of Acquisition.	Subsequent History.
Tynemouth	Robert de Mowbray (?) ...	1085	Retained till dissolution.
Preston	" " ...	Before 1116 ...	" "
Whitley	Henry I.	<i>Circa</i> 1106-1116	" "
Monkseaton			
Seghill			
East & Middle Chirton	Unknown	Before 1116 ...	" "
Earsdon	"	"	" "
Backworth	"	Before 1158 ...	" "
Murton	"	Before 1189 ...	" "
Flatworth	Robert de Wircester ...	<i>Circa</i> 1158 ...	" "
West Chirton	Purchased from William Heron	1256	" "
Amble	Mowbray (?)	1085 (?)	" "
Hauxley	"	"	" "
Coquet Island ...	Unknown	Before 1119 ...	" "
Bewick	Queen Matilda ¹	<i>Circa</i> 1105-1106	" "
Lilburn			
Harehope			
Wooperton			
Eglingham	Winnoc the hunter	<i>Circa</i> 1106-1116	" "
Bebside	Unknown	Before 1189 ...	" "
Cowpen ... ..	..... de Bolam ²	"	" "
West Hartford ...	Unknown	"	" "

¹ *Liber de Benefactoribus Monasterii Sancti Albani*, Rolls Series; *Chronica Monasterii S. Albani*, vol. iii. p. 435. 'Matildis regina dedit nobis Bewyk et Lylleburne.'

² 'The mannor and towne of Cowpon by th' old feodary roll was holden of the barony of Bollam, and afterwarde the tenor given by the lordes of the said barony emongst other thinges to the prior and convent of Tynemouthe.' Early seventeenth century survey of Tynemouthshire, Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

Edgarus filius Gospatrici. omnibus ad quas littere iste puenierint sal. Nouerit uniuersitas uestra me concessisse
 et presentia carta confirmasse. Abbi scilicet ALBAHII et monasterio sancti Oswini de tinemutha. et monachis
 ibidem deo seruientibus. etiam de Eadlungetham quam pater meus Gospatricus eidem monasterio concessit.
 cum una carrucata terre et ceteris omnibus ad eam pertinentibus in libam et gratam elemosinam iure perpetuo
 possidendam. Hanc uero concessionem fecit mecum Alexander filius meus et heres consilio amicorum meorum
 in pleno capitulo sancti ALBAHII sub presentia Laurentij abbis Westmonasterij. his testibus. ex parte
 Edgari. Bernardo le borne. Waltero de abeuilla. Radulfo nobili. Witto de lega. Nicholao de
 morewic. hugo filius Wlthil. Adam filius huctredi. hugo malregard. Reingoclico. Symone clero
 de dena. Gaufrido ostiario. Witto le blund. Phylippo de mulesham. Ex parte domini abbis sancti
 ALBAHII Gaufrido de gorham. Phylippo de symai. Milone filius hubri. Nicholao dispensatore.
 Rodbeto ianitore. Alexandro lachelej. henrico filius Gaufridi de gorham. et Gaufridi frater eius. hugo pincen.
 Rogo de Arundel. Radulfo filius Radulphi de gorham. Radulfo eam. Reginaldo frater. Vttingo.
 Rogero Copneile. Theoderico Purchaz.



CHARTER OF EDGAR SON OF SPACRIC

NORTHUMBERLAND. A. TEMPORALITIES (*continued*).

Township.	Donor.	Date of Acquisition.	Subsequent History.
Elswick ... ..	..... de Bolam	Before 1120 (?)	Retained till dissolution.
Westgate			
Benwell			
Denton	Purchased from James Delaval	1454	" "
	Purchased from Adam de Fenrother and others ...	1381	" "
Wolsington	Unknown	Before 1189 ...	" "
South Dissington ...	William (?) de la Val ¹ ...	Before 1158 ...	" "
Wylam	Unknown	Before 1120 (?)	" "
Welton	"	Before 1189 ...	Lost before the dissolution.

The priory also owned, at the dissolution, a fee farm rent from the tower of Craster and lands in Warkworth, Donkin Rigg, Woodhorn, North Seton, Ellington, Mersfen, Newbiggin, Seghill, Holywell and Hartley, as well as several houses in Newcastle and Gateshead.

B. SPIRITUALITIES. 1.—IMPROPRIATIONS.

Church.	Donor.	Date of Acquisition.	Subsequent History.
Tynemouth	Robert de Mowbray ...	1085 ...	Retained till dissolution.
Woodhorn	Mowbray or Guy de Balliol	Before 1119 ...	"
Whalton	Unknown	Before 1189 ...	"
Hartburn	"	" ...	Transferred to St. Alban's circa 1258-1260.
Bolam ... ..	..... de Bolam (?) ...	" ...	Lost to the Archbishop of York, 1253-1254.
Bewick	Queen Matilda	1105-1106 ...	Retained till dissolution.
Eglingham	Winnoc the hunter	Circa 1106-1116	Transferred to St. Alban's circa 1215-1222.
Edlingham	Gospatric II.	Before 1138 ...	Surrendered to Durham, 1174.
Bywell St. Peter's ...	Guy (?) de Balliol	Before 1119 ...	"
Haltwhistle	Richard II.	1384	Retained till dissolution.

2.—TITLES, OTHER THAN THOSE OF THE CHURCHES ABOVE-NAMED.²

Parish or township.	Donor	Date of Acquisition.	Subsequent History.
Corbridge	Robert de Mowbray (?) ...	Before 1116 ...	} Conceded to Carlisle circa 1223.
Warkworth	"	"	
Rothbury	"	"	Lost to Carlisle.

¹ *Liber de Benefactoribus*, p. 448. 'Willelmus de Lavale dedit huic ecclesiae villam quae Ducentuna appellatur in regione Northanhumbroreum.'

² 'Henricus Rex Anglie R. Episcopo Dunelmensi et omnibus baronibus suis Francis et Anglis de Northumberland, salutem. Sciatis me dedisse Deo et Sancte Marie et Sancto Oswyno et abbati de Sancto Albano et monachis de Tynemuth omnes decimas suas per Northumberland quas Robertus comes et homines ejus donaverant eis, scilicet decimas de Colebrige, et illas de Ovinton et de Wylum, illas etiam de Neuburn, et illas de Dissington et de Calverdon et de Elstwyce, et illas etiam [de] Bothall et de Werkewrth et de Anebell, similiter et de Roubyr et de Wulloure. Et volo ac praecipio quatenus supradictus abbas et monachi de Tynemutha bene et integre habeant illas, ac libere teneant in mea pace, et quod nullus eis inde aliquid auferat, super meum forisfacturam. Teste Nigello de Alben' apud Brantonam.' *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 116. From Dodsworth's transcripts.

2.—TITHES, OTHER THAN THOSE OF THE CHURCHES ABOVE-NAMED (*continued*).

Parish or township.	Donor.	Date of Acquisition.	Subsequent History.
Newburn	Robert de Mowbray (?) ...	Before 1116 ...	Lost to Carlisle.
Wooler	" ...	" ...	Compounded before 1282.
Elswick	" ...	" ...	Retained till dissolution.
Bothal	Guy (?) de Balliol ...	" ...	Compounded in 1236.
Wylam ¹	" ...	" ...	Retained till dissolution.
Ovington	" ...	" ...	Lost before 1189.
Dissington ... }	Hubert de la Val ...	" ...	"
Black Callerton }			

DURHAM (WAPENTAKE OF SADBERGE). A. TEMPORALITIES.

Township.	Donor.	Date of Acquisition.	Subsequent History.
Carlbury ... }	Robert de Mowbray or Guy de Balliol	Before 1119 ...	Lost to the Bishop of Durham <i>circa</i> 1265-1290.
Morton Tynemouth }			

B. SPIRITUALITIES.

Property.	Donor.	Date of Acquisition.	Subsequent History.
Coniscliffe Church ...	Unknown ² ...	Before 1093 ...	Transferred to St. Alban's.
Tithes of Middleton-in-Teesdale	" ...	Before 1158 ...	Lost during the 13th century.
Tithes of demesne of the lordship of Hertness	Robert Bruce I. (?) ...	Before 1141 ...	The tithes of Elwick and Owton were retained till the dissolution.

This list will show that the great bulk of the possessions of Tynemouth priory, both temporal and spiritual, were conferred upon that house during the first century of its existence. There is ground for supposing that most of them formed part of the original endowment, to which many northern nobles besides Mowbray contributed, such as Guy de Balliol, the first Robert Bruce, and the second Gospatric.

So soon as Abbot Paul had leisure to attend to his new charge, he journeyed north, though it was not till the year 1093 that he was able to set out on this pastoral visitation. The church of Durham had in no way yielded its claims. Its prior, Turgot, sent some of his monks to meet Abbot Paul at York, and afterwards went there himself. In the presence of Thomas, the archbishop, and of many ecclesiastics, he prohibited the abbot by canonical authority from usurping the rights of the church

¹ See the letter of Robert Helme to George Warde quoted in the account given below of the Great Book of Tynemouth.

² He is described in MSS. Cott. Vitellius A. xx. fol. 76 b, as 'quidam nobilis de Novo Castello qui venit ad Conquestum Angliæ.' See Dugdale, *Monasticon*, new edition, vol. iii. p. 313. An account of this manuscript will be given in dealing with the literature of the priory.

of Durham, and violating the sacred canons. But the abbot answered that he cared nought for any prohibition; so when he fell ill and died on his homeward journey, the Durham monks saw in the event a just punishment of his and Mowbray's crime.¹

Upon the same day as that on which Abbot Paul died, Malcolm Caenmore, king of Scotland, was surprised and killed on the banks of the Ahn, November 13th, 1093. Two Northumbrians brought his body on a cart to Tynemouth, where Mowbray had it buried in the new Norman church then in course of construction. Subsequently Malcolm's son, Alexander I., asked that his father's body should be given back. A corpse was sent and buried in Dunfermline abbey.² The Scottish king, in gratitude, granted to the church his peace and the peace of God. Matthew Paris has a story that the remains sent to Dunfermline were really those of a farmer from the neighbouring village of Monkseaton. 'In this way,' he writes, 'we tricked the dishonest Scots.'³ Whether or no Malcolm's body continued to lie at Tynemouth, it so happened that when, in 1257, certain foundations were being laid for a new building, two coffins were discovered. One contained the body of a man of great stature; the body in the other coffin

¹ Symeon, *Hist. Dunelm. Eccl. and Hist. Regum*, loc. cit. Matthew Paris, *Chronica Majora*, vol. ii. p. 34.

² Symeon, *Hist. Regum*, vol. ii. p. 222. William of Malmesbury, *Gesta Regum Anglorum*, Rolls Series, vol. ii. p. 309. Cf. King David's charter given in Dugdale, *Monasticon*, new edition, vol. iii. p. 313.

³ *Chronica Majora* (Additamenta), vol. vi. p. 372. 'De Roberto de Mumbrai, fundatore de Thinemue. . . . Propter regiam excellentiam, fecit corpus regis occisi honorifice intumulari in ecclesia de Thynemue, quam idem comes construxerat. Scotis tamen postea corpus sui regis frontose postulantibus, concessum est et datum corpus cujusdam hominis plebei de Sethtune; et ita delusa est Scotorum improbitas.'



EFFIGY IN CHOIR OF PRIORY CHURCH.

was of smaller build. Ralph de Dunham, who was prior of Tynemouth at that time, thought them to be Malcolm and his eldest son, Edward, who was killed or mortally wounded when the Scottish king lost his life. He wrote to a monk of Kelso for further information about Malcolm. The monk sent him an extract from Roger of Hoveden's history, and suggested that a place of greater honour should be given to the two coffins.¹

Malcolm's death was shortly followed by the revolt and overthrow of his rival Mowbray. Carried away by his success, the earl defied William Rufus and broke into rebellion in the spring of 1095. The royal forces marched against him. He stood isolated, but effected a stout resistance. Siege was laid to Newcastle and to Tynemouth, both of which places now appear for the first time as fortified positions. Tynemouth seems to have been the first to fall,² after it had held out for two months. The earl's brother and the whole of the garrison were taken prisoners.

The St. Alban's monks made their submission, and found the king, who was conducting the siege of Newcastle, sufficiently generous. Three royal charters, drawn up during that siege, have been recorded in a register of St. Alban's. By one William confirmed to St. Alban's the church of St. Mary and St. Oswin, and all things that belonged to it in lands and tithes, waters and customs 'to the north and to the south of the Tyne and in England,'³

¹ Matthew Paris, *Chronica Majora* (Additamenta), vol. vi. pp. 370, 371. It is impossible to say whether the prior's conjecture was well founded. Only one may note that he claimed to have found the body of Prince Edward also. Yet no writer makes mention of that prince having been buried at Tynemouth, and Fordun (*Scotticronicon*, ed. Skene, vol. ii. p. 208) asserts that the prince escaped to Jedburgh, died there of his wounds, and was buried at Dunfermline. The prior would seem to attempt to prove too much.

² The part played by Tynemouth in Mowbray's revolt has been examined by the late Professor Freeman in *The Reign of William Rufus*, vol. ii. pp. 603-613. He inclines to place the siege of Newcastle before that of Tynemouth, but the dating of the two charters printed below, 'apud obsessionem Novi Castelli,' militates against his view. Rufus is not likely to have granted the monks their rights when the castle, and therefore the monastery, was still in the hands of the rebels; neither are the monks likely to have deserted the cause of their founder before it was lost. Freeman conjectures that Mowbray's castle was not upon the priory rock but on the smaller promontory where the Spanish battery stands, and that it was therefore exterior to the monastery. But this position has none of the natural advantages of the priory rock which commands it. There is no evidence to show that Mowbray's stronghold was not on the site of the fourteenth century castle.

The most detailed account of the siege of Tynemouth is that given by Florence of Worcester (ed. Thorpe, vol. ii. p. 38): 'Rex, exercitu de tota Anglia congregato, castellum predicti comitis Roberti ad ostium Tinae fluminis situm per duos menses obsedit; et interim quadam munitiuncula expugnata, ferme omnes meliores comitis milites cepit, et in custodia posuit; dein obsessum castellum expugnavit, et fratrem comitis, et equites, quos intus inveniebat, custodiae tradidit.' The *castellum* is Tynemouth. If Florence meant the *munitiuncula* to refer to Newcastle, which is doubtful, his authority still is not so good as that of the contemporary charters. Compare the *Anglo-Saxon Chronicle*, ed. Earle, p. 231.

³ 'In nort de Tyne et in suth de Tyne et in Anglia.' Anglia is confined to its Domesday limits. But Tynemouth held no property within those limits, unless the Yorkshire property of St. Alban's at Appleton and Thorp Basset was originally conferred on the cell. The phrase may therefore be a formula, though it is difficult to find another instance of its use. See this charter printed from the *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 116, in Dugdale, *Monasticon*, vol. iii. p. 313.

together with all that Earl Robert and his men had given to St. Oswin before his forfeiture. By the two other charters he granted to the monks of Tynemouth all their possessions in lands, in waters, in tithes and in churches, in wood and in plain, and gave them leave to hold their court with soc and sac, tol and theam, infangthef and wreck, and to exercise within their franchise the royal rights of jurisdiction.¹

Newcastle, like Tynemouth, fell into the king's hands. Rufus there-upon proceeded to besiege Bamburgh, where Mowbray had shut himself up. The northern fortress was closely blockaded. Mowbray resolved on a bold scheme which came near to success. He had succeeded in gathering the royal forces in strength round Bamburgh. He now resolved to make a dash for Tynemouth and Newcastle, recover possession of those castles, and so cut off the communications of the king's army with the south before they knew that he had escaped from Bamburgh. He had reached and regained Tynemouth, and was on his way to Newcastle when he learned that the royal garrison in that town had been warned of his approach. The only thing left for him was to beat a retreat to Tynemouth with his thirty followers, and there stand a siege, cut off from the resources upon which he had depended. He held out for two days. Then the castle was for the second time carried by the king's men, Mowbray's knights being all wounded or taken prisoners. The earl was himself severely wounded, but managed to gain the church and there sought sanctuary. He was dragged from the building and by the king's orders led to Bamburgh castle, whose garrison surrendered upon seeing their leader a prisoner.²

¹ *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 93. 'Willelmus, rex Anglie, justiciariis baronibus vicecomitibus et ministris atque omnibus fidelibus suis tocius Anglie, salutem. Sciatis me dedisse et concessisse Deo et Sancte Marie et Sancto Oswino et monachis de Tynemutha tenere libere et quiete et honorifice omnes res suas in terris, in aquis, in decimis et in ecclesiis, in bosco et in plano et in omnibus rebus. Et precipio ut Sancta Maria et Sanctus Oswinus et monachi de Tynemutha habeant curiam suam ita libere et plenarie in omnibus rebus cum soco et saca, tol et theam, et infangenetheof et wreck, et cum omnibus consuetudinibus et libertatibus sicut ego ipse habeo. Et volo et firmiter precipio ut vos defendatis ac manuteneatis ecclesiam Sancte Marie et Sancti Oswini, que est elemosina mea de Tynemutha et monachos et homines et omnes res ejusdem ecclesie sicut meam propriam elemosinam, et ne paciamini ut aliquis eis injuriam aliquam in aliquo faciat super forisfacturam meam. Teste Eudone dapifero, apud obsidionem Novi Castri.' From Baker's transcripts.

Ibid. fol. 118. 'Willelmus, rex Anglie, Willelmo Dunelmensi episcopo et Roberto Picot et omnibus baronibus suis Francis et Anglis de Northumberland, salutem. Sciatis me concessisse et dedisse Sancte Marie et Sancto Oswino et monachis de Tynemutha plene et integre curiam suam, sicut ego ipse habeo, cum aliis meis consuetudinibus. Et volo et precipio ut bene et honorifice teneant, et ut nullus super hoc eis injuriam faciat. Teste Eudone dapifero, apud obsidionem Novi Castelli.' From Dodsworth and Lansdowne MS. transcripts.

² The history of the revolt is given in Freeman, *Reign of William Rufus*, vol. ii. pp. 37-55, and in vol. i. of this work, pp. 25-27.

This was the end of the revolt. Carried in a litter on account of his wounds, Mowbray was taken south to Windsor, there to suffer a long imprisonment. Twenty-six years later a Yorkshire knight, Arnold de Percy, who had been present at the expulsion of the monks of St. Cuthbert from Tynemouth, testified at Durham to what he had then seen. When Mowbray reached Durham he asked leave to enter the church and pray. On his guards refusing this, he gave way to tears, and looking toward the church he groaned and said, 'Oh, Saint Cuthbert, justly do I suffer these misfortunes, for I have sinned against thee and thine. This is thy punishment on me. I pray thee, Saint of God, have mercy on me.'¹

Though he had sinned against St. Cuthbert, it had been to enrich St. Alban. On his release from imprisonment he became a monk in St. Alban's monastery, where he died at an advanced age and was buried. The founder of Tynemouth priory is described as a tall and strong soldier, dark and bearded. When he spoke a smile seldom relieved the sternness of his expression. He was of a silent and crafty disposition, and his pride was such as to lead him to despise his equals and to think that the orders of his superiors could be disregarded.²

When Henry I. came to the throne, that sovereign confirmed to the monks of St. Oswin their possessions, court and customs, to hold as freely as Earl Robert held them before his forfeiture. He also definitely specified in his charters their right to fisheries in the Tyne, as well as to wreck, and accorded them free warren in all their lands in Northumberland. He added to their endowment two small lordships, namely, Winnoc the hunter's manor of Eglingham, and Graffard's land, which comprised Seghill, Monkseaton and Whitley. His queen, Matilda, was likewise a benefactress to the monks. She gave them the lordship of Archil Morel, which comprised Bewick and Lilburn, for the sake of her father, King Malcolm, who lay buried in their church.³

¹ Symeon, *Hist. Regum*, vol. i. p. 262.

² Ordericus Vitalis, *Hist. Eccl.* ed. le Prevost, 1838-1855, vol. iii. p. 406.

³ No fewer than seventeen royal charters and writs of the time of Henry I., relating to Tynemouth priory, have been copied into the *St. Alban's Register*. They are as follows:—

(1) Fol. 123. Writ of Queen Matilda, addressed to Roger Picot, reciting grant to St. Alban, St. Oswin, and Abbot Richard of the land of Archil Morel; witness, Bernard the Chancellor, at London; probable year, 1105 or 1106; printed in Gibson, *Tynemouth Priory*, vol. ii. appendix, No. xix.

(2) Fol. 116 and fol. 123 b. Writ addressed by the king to Gerard, archbishop of York, and Robert de Lacy the sheriff, and Roger Picot; confirming last grant; witness, Queen Matilda, at Ludgershall; probable year, 1105 or 1106; printed in Gibson, *ibid.* xx.

(3) Fol. 117 b. Grant to St. Oswin of Tynemouth of his court and customs to hold in like manner as Earl Robert held them before his forfeiture; witness, Peter de Valoniis; dated at Westminster at Whitsuntide; probable year, 1108-1109 or 1121; printed in Dugdale, *Monasticon*, vol. iii. p. 313.

(4) Fol. 118. '[Henricus rex] Anglie, R. Dunelmensi episcopo et omnibus vicecomitibus suis de Everwyk[shire et de] Northumberland, salutem. Sciatis me concessisse et dedis[se Deo] et Sancto Oswyno et monachis de Tynemutha curiam suam et [cons]uetudines suas quemadmodum rex Willelmus frater meus dederat [eis. T. Petro] de Valoniis apud Westmonasterium in pentecost.' Same date as (3).

(5) Fol. 115 b. 'Henricus, rex Anglie, Rogero Picot, salutem. Sciatis quod [tibi firmi]ter precipio ut facias habere Sancto Albano et Sancto Oswino et [monachis Sancti] Albani omnes consuetudines suas in terra et in aqua [et in] wreck, scilicet socam et sacam, et tol et team, et omnes [libertates] in omnibus rebus suis. sicut unquam melius habuit Robertus comes tem[pore frat]ris mei, et fac eis plenam justiciam de omnibus qui terram suam intraverunt et supra x libras forisfacere. Testibus W. de Werelwast et Nigello de [Al]ben', apud Wyncestriam in pascha.' Probable year, 1108.

(6) Fol. 117 b. Grant to St. Mary, St. Alban, St. Oswin, and the monks of Tynemouth of all their property, in lands and waters, tithes and churches, wood and plain, with soc, sac, tol, tem, infangenetheof and wreck. Order to defend and maintain the church of St. Mary and of St. Oswin, the monks and the men and property of the said church. (Cf. William II.'s charter); witness, Nigel de Albini; dated at Windsor at Pentecost; probable year, 1110 for 1122.

(7) Fol. 118. Order to the justices, sheriffs and barons of Northumberland, to maintain the church of St. Oswin of Tynemouth, and to defend the monks so that none do them harm; order that the monks may have their court; witness and date as in the last charter.

(8) Fol. 124. Writ addressed to Ligulph and Aluric, sheriffs, reciting grant to St. Alban, St. Oswin, and Abbot Richard of the manor of Eglingham; witness, Urso de Abetot; given at Winchester; probable date, 1106-1116; Gibson, *ibid.* xvi.

(9) Fol. 124. The same for quiet possession of Archil Morel's land; witness and date as before.

(10) Fol. 116. Writ addressed to Ranulph, bishop of Durham, and to Aluric and Ligulph, sheriffs, confirming to the abbot of St. Alban's the tithes granted by Hubert de la Val to the monks of Tynemouth; witness, Nigel d'Albini; given at Winchester; probable date, 1106-1116; Gibson, *ibid.* xviii.

(11) Fol. 116. Writ addressed to Ranulph, bishop of Durham, confirming to St. Mary, to St. Oswin, to the abbot of St. Alban's and to the monks of Tynemouth, the tithes given them by Earl Robert and his men; witness, Nigel d'Albini; given at Branton; probable date, 1106-1116; printed above and in Dugdale, *Monasticon*, vol. iii. p. 313, and Gibson, *ibid.* xvii.

(12) Fol. 115 b and fol. 117. Writ addressed to Ranulph, bishop of Durham, and to Aluric and Ligulph, sheriffs, reciting grant to St. Alban and to St. Oswin and to Abbot Richard of Graffard's land; witnesses, Robert, bishop of Lincoln, and Nigel d'Albini; given at Branton; probable date 1106-1116; Gibson, *ibid.* xiv.

(13) Fol. 117 b. 'Henricus, rex Anglie, Ranulpho, Dunelmensi episcopo, et omnibus baronibus et min[ist]ris suis, salutem. Sciatis quod dedi Deo et Sancto Oswino et monachis [Tynemutham] cum ecclesia, et Prestonam, et Millington, et omnes piscarias in Tina [in aqua] de Tynemutha, et Erdes lun, et duas Chirtonas, et ecclesiam, Sehal et Seton et Wyteleye, et Bewyk et Lillebourn et Egel[ingham, cum] ecclesiis et omnibus pertinenciis suis. Hec autem et omnia quecun' que dederunt eis in North et Suth de Tynemutha possideant de [cetero, et eis et suc]cessoribus teneant in puram et perpetuam elemosinam. Quare [volo et pre]cipio ut ecclesiam de Tynemutha manuteneatis et defendatis, [quia mea] propria elemosina est. Teste M. regina, [apud] Cestr.' Probable date, 1106-1116.

(14) Fol. 118. 'Henricus, rex Anglie, Alurico et Ligulfo, salutem. Precipio ut elemosinam meam de Tynemutha manuteneatis et custodiatis et de operatione de Novo Castello ita sit quietum sicut erat tempore fratris mei. T. Willelmo episcopo Exoniensi, apud Westmonasterium.' Probable date, 1107-1120. From Baker's transcripts.

(15) Fol. 116. '[Henricus, rex A]nglie, W. Espec et For' et O[dardo] vicecomiti, salutem. Volo et precipio quod mo[nachi de Ti]nemutha in pace et quietudine habeant et teneant omnes suas terras et aquas suas et piscarias et consuetudines et decimas [et om]nes res suas de quibus saysiti et vestiti fuerunt die qua Ricardus Abbas [vividus et m]ortuus fuit. Et videte quod nullus eis aliquid auferat. Teste Episcopo Sarum', apud Odestoc.' Probable date 1120.

(16) Fol. 115 b. 'Henricus, rex Anglie, Odardo vicecomiti et justiciariis suis de Northumberland, salutem. Concedo quod abbas de Sancto Albano et monachi de Tinemuthe habeant warrennam in omnibus terris suis de Northumberlandia, et nullus in ea fuget nisi licencia sua, super decem librarum forisfacturam. Teste Willelmo de Pirou et Henrico de Pomer', apud Dunestaplam.' From St. George's transcripts.

(17) Fol. 117 b. 'Henricus, rex Anglie, vicecomitibus et cunctis ministris suis de Northumberland, salutem. Sciatis quod retineo in manu mea domum de Tynemuth' et monachos, et nolo quod abbas de Sancto Albano neque prior Dunhelmensis de ipsis se amplius intromittant, sed monachi de Tynemutha priorem sibi eligant, et ille prior clericos ad habitum et professionem ibidem recipiat. Et volo et precipio quod ecclesiam de Tynemutha ab omni injuria defendatis et manuteneatis, quia mea propria elemosina est. Teste Nigello de Albini, apud Dunelmum.' Date, autumn, 1122. Ex placitis de quo warranto.

During this reign a cell, dependent upon Tynemouth, was founded by a Danish hermit, St. Henry, on Coquet Island.¹ Another important event in the history of the priory was the completion of the new Norman church of St. Mary, which must have been begun immediately after the installation of the monks of St. Alban's, though the troubles of Mowbray's rising may have delayed the advancement of the building. The pre-Conquest church, containing the relics of St. Oswin, had been left standing. On the



CHOIR OF THE PRIORY CHURCH.

anniversary of the saint's martyrdom, August 20th, 1110, his relics were transferred to the new fabric, and deposited in a shrine prepared for them, in the presence of Ralph Flambard, bishop of Durham, the abbot of Selby and others.² A large number of monks, clergy, and laymen came to take part in the ceremony. Those who had ridden there hobbled their horses and turned them out to graze on the sea-cliffs. One unfortunate horse slipped over the edge; its rescue was ascribed to the saint's timely assistance.

¹ See vol. v. of this work, pp. 316-318.

² *Vita Oswini*, cap. xi. 'Hugo, abbas Salesberiensis.' Freeman notes the confusion between Selby and Salisbury (*William Rufus*, vol. ii. p. 606).

The new church, like its predecessor, was dedicated to the Virgin. Her worship, however, never attained such importance at Tynemouth as did that of the saint whose body rested in her church, and whose miracles became common occurrences. Royal grants were made to St. Oswin as well as to the Virgin. Their names began to be coupled as the patron saints of the church. So the church came to be called after the names of both saints, St. Oswin and St. Mary.

The building was not yet finished, and work was proceeding with the roof on September 22nd in the following year (1111), when a stout workman, named Arkill, fell from the roof to the ground, and narrowly escaped with his life.¹ He soon recovered sufficiently to proceed with the dormitory. When laying the floor beams for the farther end of that chamber, he had a second fall of nineteen feet. The fact that he only sprained his foot gave additional proof of the miraculous powers of St. Oswin.²

Though Bishop Flambard had tacitly acquiesced in the retention of Tynemouth by St. Alban's monastery, as was evidenced by his presence at the ceremony of 1110, the monks of Durham were only waiting for a favourable opportunity to assert their claims. With this object they made a formal complaint at York in the middle of Lent, 1121, in the presence of their bishop, Archbishop Thurstan, and his brother, the bishop of Evreux; and again on April 13th, when Robert de Brus, Alan de Percy, Walter Espec, Odard, the sheriff of Northumberland, and many other northern nobles had assembled at York for Easter. A speech then delivered by Arnold de Percy, a prominent knight, produced considerable effect. It was generally admitted that injustice had been done to Durham; at the same time the feeling of the assembly was that no action could be taken, though it was useful to put the protest upon record.³

The proceedings of 1121 led to a different result from that contemplated. There appears to have been now at Tynemouth, as there certainly was in later times, a party in favour of monastic independence, anxious to make use of any conflict between the houses of Durham and St. Alban's in order to acquire for themselves independence from either of those monasteries. The case was brought before King Henry, who came to Durham on a northern tour in the autumn of the following year. The monks probably argued that Mowbray's grant to St. Alban's was rendered

¹ *Vita Oswini*, cap. xiv.

² *Ibid.*, cap. xv.

³ Symeon, *Hist. Regum*, vol. ii. pp. 260-262.

null by his subsequent forfeiture. They won their cause, for the king issued a writ, declaring that he had taken the religious house of Tynemouth into his own hand; he forbade either the abbot of St. Alban's or the prior of Durham to meddle any more in the affairs of the priory, and he gave leave to the Tynemouth monks to elect for themselves a prior who should have full authority to receive new members into his congregation.¹

Durham again received a royal visit in 1136. On Stephen's accession, David, king of Scotland, took up arms in defence of the claims of his niece, the Empress Maud. The Scottish army overran Northumberland, and reached Newcastle, where its further advance was stayed by the arrival of Stephen and his army at Durham (February 5th). A fortnight was spent in arranging terms of peace between the two kings, David consenting to deliver up the castles and lands which he had occupied in Northumberland. Before quitting Durham, Stephen confirmed to Tynemouth priory the rights it had possessed under King Henry. A new privilege mentioned in a charter of his reign is freedom from tolls and ferry dues which the men of St. Oswin were to have when marketing for St. Oswin's monks.²

The peace of Durham proved of short duration. On January 10th, 1138, King David again invaded Northumberland and marched to Corbridge, whence he proceeded ruthlessly to ravage the country. Newminster

¹ The date of the charter is fixed by Henry of Huntingdon, *Hist. Anglorum*, Rolls Series, p. 244.

² Five charters of King Stephen remain, which are connected with the priory. They are the following:—

(1) *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 93. 'Stephanus, rex Anglie, judiciariis, baronibus, vicecomitibus, ministris, prepositis et omnibus fidelibus suis, etc. Sciatis me dedisse et concessisse Deo et Sancte Marie et Sancto Oswyno et monachis de Tynemutha tenere libere et quiete et honorifice omnia que tenuerunt die quo Henricus, rex Anglorum, fuit vivus et mortuus, in terris et in aquis, in decimis et in ecclesiis, in bosco et in plano, et in omnibus rebus sicut melius et honorabilius et quietius tenuerunt, rege Henrico vivente. Et precipio quod Sancta Maria et Sanctus Oswinus et monachi de Tynemutha habeant curiam suam ita libere et plenarie in omnibus rebus sicut rex Henricus eis concessit per breve suum, cum soca et saca, et tol et theam, infangenetheof et wreck, et cum omnibus consuetudinibus et libertatibus sicut ego ipse habeo. Et volo quod defendatis et manuteneatis ecclesiam Sancte Marie et Sancti Oswini de Tynemuth', que est elemosina mea, et monachos et homines et omnes res ejusdem ecclesie, sicut meam propriam elemosinam, et sicut rex Henricus precepit per breve suum. Et ne paciamini quod [aliquis eis] injuriam vel contumeliam faciat, super forisfacturam meam. Teste R. Cancellario, R. de Olivi, apud Dunelmum.' St. George's transcripts.

(2) *Charter Rolls*, 3 Ric. II. Writ commanding that the monks of Tynemouth may have such fisheries as they will in their waters throughout Northumberland; witnesses, R. de Vere and Robert de Avel; dated at Durham; printed in Gibson, vol. ii. appendix, xxviii.

(3) *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 124. Charter of confirmation to St. Alban, St. Oswin and the monks of Tynemouth, of the manor of Eglington; witnesses, Robert de Vere and Hugh Bigod; dated at York; Gibson, *ibid.* xxvii.

(4) *Charter Rolls*, 2 Edw. III. No. 75. Writ commanding that the church and monks of Tynemouth, their land and the men of the said church, be free from work on Newcastle and on all castles in Northumberland; witnesses, Robert fitz Richard and Hugh Bigod; dated at York; Gibson, *ibid.* xxvi.

(5) *Ibid.* Writ commanding that the men of St. Oswin be free from 'theolonium et passagium' wherever they go, if they are buying or hiring goods for the use of the monks of St. Oswin, even as they were free in King Henry's time; witness, Baldwin de Sigillo; dated at St. Alban's; Gibson, *ibid.* xxix.

abbey was destroyed; Hexham narrowly escaped. Tynemouth, by paying twenty-seven marks ransom,¹ obtained a royal charter of protection. David granted its monks his peace, coupling this with strict orders against injuring them or their property (June 11th). He was then at Norham, which had surrendered to him a month previously. Marching south by way of Bamburgh and Mitford, he crossed the Tyne, probably at Newcastle, to meet defeat on the 22nd of August at the hands of the Yorkshire barons in the battle of the Standard.

By a second treaty of peace, concluded in April, David's son, Henry, was recognised as earl of Northumberland. Under his rule the county became settled, and the Tynemouth monks won freedom from military service for themselves and their tenants, except in the case of actual invasion of the earldom. An important fishery charter gave them leave to make weirs in the Tyne, provided that the centre of the river was left free for navigation. The earl also gave them (as he did to Brinkburn) a salt pan at Warkworth between his own salt pan there and the Coquet.²

¹ Richard of Hexham, *De Gestis Regis Stephani*, Rolls Series, *Chronicles of the Reigns of Stephen, Henry II. and Richard I.*, vol. iii. p. 153. 'Unde et illud coenobium quod ad Tinae fluminis hostium situm est, quod Anglice Tinemuthe dicitur, ut sibi et illic existentibus pro praesenti necessitate pacem redimeret, regi Scottiae et suis xxvii marcas argenti persolvit.'

² The *St. Alban's Register* contains copies of the following grants made by David, king of Scotland, and his son, Earl Henry, to Tynemouth priory:

(1) Fol. 118. Charter of David, king of Scotland, granting to the church of St. Mary and St. Oswin of Tynemouth, to the brethren there and to the men on their demesnes and to their possessions his peace for ever, his son Henry consenting thereto: witnesses, Earl Gospatric, Hugh de Morvill, Manser Marmion, Robert Foliot, Hugh de Auco and Hugh Briton; dated at Norham, June 11th. 1138; printed in Dugdale, *Monasticon*, vol. iii. p. 313.

(2) Fol. 118 b. D., Dei gratia rex Scotorum, justiciariis suis et vicecomitibus et omnibus baronibus [Francis] et Anglis de Northumb', salutem. Sciatis me dedisse et confirmasse Deo et Sancte Marie et Sancto Oswino et monachis de Tynemutha tenere [libere et] quiete et honorifice omnia que tenebantur die qua Henricus [rex Anglorum] fuit vivus et mortuus, in terris et in aquis, in bosco [et in plano, et in] omnibus aliis rebus sicut melius et honorabilius et quietius [tenebantur], supradicto rege vivente. Et volo et iterum precipio quatinus [Sancta Maria] et Sanctus Oswinus et monachi de Tynemut[h]a habeant [curiam suam ita libere] et plenarie sicut egomet habeo, cum soca et saca et tol et team [et infangene] theof et wrec et omnes alias consuetudines tam bene et libere quam ipse habeo. Et volo et precipio ut defendatis et manuteneatis [ecclesiam Sancte Marie et] Sancti Oswini et monachos et omnia sua, [et ne paciamini ut aliquis eis injuriam] faciat sicut me diligitis, quia mea propria [elemosina est]. T. E. cancellario, et Roberto Brus, et Roberto de Hunfravill, et Gospatricio [comite. Apud] Novum Castellum.

(3) Fol. 118 b. Writ of King David addressed to his justices, sheriffs, barons, and good men of Northumberland, reciting previous charter, 'Et insuper precipio ut [ea] que ad predictam ecclesiam pertinent habeant pacem meam'; witnesses, E[ugenius] the chancellor, Robert de Brus, Robert de Hunfravill, Hugh de Morvill, and Earl Gospatric; dated at Newcastle.

(4) Fol. 119. Charter of Henry, son of the king of Scotland, confirming to the monks of Tynemouth all that they held on the day on which King Henry was alive and was dead, as in charter 2; witnesses, King David, R., bishop of St. Andrews, Geoffrey, abbot of Dunfermline, E[ugenius] the chancellor, and Hugh de Morvill; dated at Haddington.

(5) Fol. 119. Henricus, filius regis Scotorum, justiciariis, constabulariis, vicecomitibus, baronibus, et omnibus suis fidelibus totius Northumb', salutem. Precipio quod ecclesia et monachi de Tinemutha et tota terra et homines predictae ecclesie sint liberi et quieti de opere Novi Castell[um] et de opere aliorum

The spread of industries was promoted by freedom from the civil war which was devastating the south, though little external trade was possible. A Tynemouth fisherman, Leowric, was captured off Scarborough one day late in October by Ranulph, earl of Chester, carried off to Malton, there scourged, starved, thrown into prison, and hung by the wrists from a beam, according to the practice of those times.¹ But the conventual life was peaceful. An occasional miracle, in the shape of a cure from gout or toothache, added a new chapter to the monastic annals. One year might bring drought, but another season produced so plentiful a harvest that the priory barns were filled to overflowing.²

Once during this period a dangerous fire broke out in the monastery. Its buildings were arranged on the usual plan round a cloister garth. The church stood on the north side, the dormitory on the east, and the refectory on the south. At the south-east angle a thatched house adjoined

castellorum de tota Northumb', quia mea propria elemosina est. Et super hoc prohibeo ne ullus eis inde vim vel contumeliam faciat. Et concedo eidem ecclesie quod sui dominici rustici sint quieti ab omni exercitu et equitatu infra comitatum ad defendendam terram meam, [ni]si eis per breve meum mandavero. Testibus, Archewold' episcopo Karliol', Hugone de Morvill, Gospatricio comite, Gervasio Rad', Gilberto de Humframvill, Willelmo de Somervile, Ada vicecomite. Apud Bamburu. From St. George's transcripts.

(6) Fol. 119. [Henricus] comes, filius [regis] Scocie, justiciariis suis, baronibus, et vicecomitibus et ministris, omnibusque pro[bis homin]ibus suis tocius comitatus Northumb', Francis et Anglis, salutem. [Sciatis me] concessisse et confirmasse Deo et Sancte Marie et Sancto Oswino et [monachis de] Tynemutha omnes piscarias suas et tractus in aqua de Ty[nemutha, et omnes] piscarias suas in tractibus in aqua de Tynemutha quecum[que fuer]unt in ipsa Tynem' in tempore Henrici regis et meo tempore . . . usque in hostium Tynem', ita ut aqua rectum suum habeat [videlicet] terciam partem file aque liberam, et istas piscarias nominatim [express]as, scilicet Elstwyk, Brad yer, Hupward yer, Hoch, alia [Hoch, Cruck] et alia Cruck. Cavesherse, et apud Tynemut' . . . yer, . . . yer, et tractus suos super sabulum. Volo itaque [et] omnibus ministris meis precipio ut hec prenominata ha[beant et pos]sideant bene et in pace et honorifice, sine disturbacione et occasione . . . Testibus Humfrido, Gilberto constabulario, et Gervasio Rad' dapifero, Roberto Bertram vicecomite, Eugenio cancellario comitis. Apud Novum Castellum.

(7) Fol. 119 b. Henricus comes, filius regis Scotorum, justiciariis suis, baronibus, vicecomitibus et ministris [et omnibus] hominibus suis tocius comitatus Northumb', Francis et Anglis . . . salutem. Sciatis me dedisse et concessisse Deo et Sancto Oswyno et [monachis] de Tynemutha pro salute anime mee et antecessorum et successorum m[eorum] in perpetuam elemosinam illis terram in hall de Werkewurt ad [salin]am faciendam, que est inter salinam comitis ibidem et aquam de Ko[ket]. Volo itaque et firmiter precipio quod hanc salinam libere et q[ui]ete et honorabiliter habeant et imperpetuum teneant sicut aliquam elemosinam in to[ta] terra mea liberi[us et quietius] et honorabilius tenent. T. presente Eugenio cancellario, Gilberto constabulario, Gervasio Ridell dapifero, Radulpho . . . vicecomite, Willelmo de Somervill, G. filio Aylmer, D. de Burnvill. Apud Novum Castellum.

(8) Fol. 118 b. Henricus comes, filius regis Scocie, justiciariis, baronibus, vicecomitibus, ministris, et omnibus probis hominibus suis totius Northumbrel', Francis et Anglis, salutem. Sciatis me dedisse et concessisse ecclesie Sancti Oswyni de Tinemutha et monachis ibidem Deo et Sancto Oswyno servientibus, et toti terre prenominate ecclesie, et omnibus hominibus prenominata ecclesia terram suam tenentibus, libertatem et acquietacionem de exercitu et equitatu, nisi ita evenerit quod exercitus super me et terram meam infra Northumb' venerit inter Tinam et Twedam. Testibus presentibus, Gilberto de Umframvill, Thoma Riddell, G. de Perci, Milone de Arenis, Eugenio cancellario, apud Novum Castrum, ad festum Sancti Michaelis proximum postquam Leowyc', rex Francie, iter Jerosolimitanum aggressus est [September 29th, 1147]. From St. George's transcripts.

¹ *Vita Oswini*, cap. xix.

² *Ibid.* cap. xx. xxi. xxiv. xxv.

the west side of the dormitory, separated however by a passage two yards broad on the north from the refectory and the principal line of conventual buildings. It had been built as a guest house, but had ceased to be used for that purpose. Very early one morning, when the monks had retired to their dormitory to rest after matins, one of their number caught sight from the window of flames coming up from the former guest house. The strong west wind drove the flames on to the dormitory, which was also thatched with straw. Some of the monks climbed up on the roof to try and put out the fire. Others rushed into the church to remove whatever was of value to a place of safety. The prior, Ruelendus, and the sub-prior, Alcuin, carried out the shrine containing St. Oswin's body, and set it down on the grass plot within the cloister. There Ruelendus, angry and frightened, broke out in an apostrophe to the saint. 'What are you doing, Saint Oswin? Do you intend to let your house be burnt out and then throw the blame on me, your servant? It will be put down to my carelessness. If you are a saint, if you are God's friend, help us in our stress and fight for us. Why tarry? Why so slow? I shall not stir from this spot, neither shall you. The fire shall burn us up together. If you do not care for your monastery, take care of your corpse.' St. Oswin heard. The wind sunk, not before the fire had burnt out the former guest house and destroyed the passage which united it with dormitory and refectory. The dormitory narrowly escaped; and the writer of this story bears witness to its blackened walls, its charred window-frames, the stones loosened and detached from its walls, visible traces of the fire, which he found on his next visit to Tynemouth. One monk, brother Richard, nearly met his death on this occasion. While sitting upon the dormitory roof, where he had climbed to get away from the fire, a mis-directed jet of water caught him and brought him to the ground.¹

The Scottish earldom came to an end with the surrender of the county by Malcolm IV. of Scotland to Henry II. in December, 1157. The usual royal charters of confirmation were obtained, this time with important financial clauses added. The priory was to hold its land free of all geld, scutage, aid, customs, forced works and the like. No distresses were to be made upon it for the debts of overlords, contrary to the usual practice of the tenant being responsible for his lord's debts. The freedom from

¹ *Vita Oswini*, cap. xxiii.

custom duties, granted under restrictions by Stephen, was now made absolute. Orders were given to the royal officers to restore to the prior of Tynemouth his runaway serfs and their chattels. The monks now received an addition to their demesne lands, Flatworth being bestowed on them by its owner, Robert de Wircester, at the king's orders.¹

¹ Henry II.'s charters can be easily dated by means of Eyton's *Itinerary of Henry II.* Most of them were drawn up at different stages on Henry's journey south in January-February, 1158. They are:—

(1) *Charter Rolls*, 55 Henry III. pars 1, m. 3 and 4. 'Henricus, rex Anglie, etc., archiepiscopis, etc., salutem. Sciatis me concessisse et confirmasse Deo et Sancto Albano et Sancto Osewyno de Tynemutha et monachis ibidem Deo servientibus, ecclesiam de Tynemutha, et omnes ecclesias terras et decimas et alias tenuras ad eam pertinentes, videlicet, Wyteleyam et Setunam et Sihala et unam toftam in Novo Castello, et duas Chertunas et Erdisdunam, et Bachwurdam et Bewykham et Egelwyngham et Guedesho, et Wilum; et decimas de Corebriga, et de Newburna, et de Werchewrth, et de Rodebir, et de Bothala, et de Wolovela, et de Wylum, et [de] Dicentona, et de Kalverduna, et de Aleswycha, et de Ambella; et decimas de dominiis de Herth, et de Seytona, et de Tunestal, et de Daltona, et de Middelton, et de Oventhuna. Hec supradicta et insuper quicquid Robertus, comes Northumberland, et homines sui predictae ecclesie et Sancto Osewyno dederunt, et quicquid eis a quocunque donatore rationabiliter datum est, vel in futurum dabitur eis, concedo et confirmo in perpetuam elemosinam. Quare volo et firmiter precipio quod ecclesia predicta et monachi omnia supradicta habeant et teneant bene et [in] pace, libere et quiete, integre et honorifice, cum omnibus pertinentiis suis in bosco et plano, in pratis et pascuis, in viis et semitis, in aquis et molendinis et piscariis et stagnis, infra burgum et extra, in omnibus rebus et locis; cum thol et them, et soca et saca, et infangenthef et wrec; queta et soluta de omni geldo et scoto et adjutorio, et ab omnibus consuetudinibus et operibus et auxiliis et aliis querelis. Et habeant ita plenarie et libere curiam suam sicut ego ipse habeo, et sicut carte regis Willelmi et regis Henrici, avi mei, testantur. Et volo quod predictam ecclesiam manuteneatis et defendatis ab omni injuria, sicut meam propriam elemosinam. Teste R. archiepiscopo Eboracensi, Roberto episcopo Lincolnensi, H. episcopo Dunelmensi, [R.] priore Hagustaldensi, Hugone comite Nortfulch, Ricardo de Luscy, Willelmo filio Johannis, Willelmo de Vescy, Huberto de Vallibus, Manasser Byseth, dapifero, Henrico filio Gerardi, camerario; apud Dunelmum.' January, 1158.

(2) to (5) *Ibid.* Four writs witnessed by William Fitz John at Durham, January, 1158.

(2) Grant of free warren to the prior and monks of Tynemouth in their lands in Northumberland; Gibson, vol. ii. appendix, xxxv.

(3) Order that all goods of St. Oswin and of the monks of Tynemouth, which their men can testify to be theirs, shall be free from tolls; Gibson, *ibid.* xxxviii.

(4) Order that St. Oswin's land be not distrained upon for another's debt, but only for debts due from the demesne; Gibson, *ibid.* xxxix.

(5) Order that the prior and monks of Tynemouth have their wood of Burwood; Gibson, *ibid.* xl.

(6) *Charter Rolls*, 9 Edward II. No. 39. Order to restore to the prior of Tynemouth his fugitives and *nativi* with their chattels; witness, Henry de Essex, constable; dated at Nottingham, January, 1158; Gibson, *ibid.* xliii.

(7) *Charter Rolls*, 55 Henry III. pars 1, m. 3 and 4. Confirmation to the church of St. Mary and St. Oswin of Tynemouth, and to the monks there, of the gift of Flatford made to them by R. de Wircester; witnesses, Warin, son of Earl Gerald, and William fitz John; dated at Winchester, February, 1158; Gibson, *ibid.* xxxvii.

(8) *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 117 b. 'Henricus, rex Anglie, etc., Willelmo, vicecomiti Northumberl, salutem. Precipio tibi quod permittas monachos de Tynemutha et homines suos tenere bene et in pace et juste omnia tenementa sua, sicut carta mea testatur, et nominatim de omni opere castelli et de geldo et adjutorio, et si quid ab eis injuste cepisti juste reddi facias, et nisi feceris, justiciam meam facias. Teste Man' Biset, apud Leons.' March, 1161. From St. George's transcripts.

(9) *Ibid.* fol. 123. Charter of restoration to St. Alban, St. Oswin, and the abbot and monks of St. Alban, who are at Tynemouth, of the lands which the king had taken into his hand on the flight of Edgar into Scotland, namely, Eglingham, Bewick and Lilburn: witnesses, Richard, bishop of Winchester, Geoffrey, bishop of Ely, Richard de Lucy, William fitz Audelm, dapifer, Alfred de St. Martin, Robert Marmyon, Hugh de Cressy, Ralph de Glanvill, and Robert de Stutevill; dated at Gaititon, February, 1176; printed in Dugdale, *Monasticon*, vol. iii. p. 314.

(10) *Ibid.* fol. 123. Writ to restore seisin of the said lands to the abbot and monks of St. Alban's; witness, William fitz Audelm; dated at Woodstock, February, 1176; Gibson, *ibid.* xlii.

The writ of 1122 had long been disregarded. The abbots of St. Alban's retained their hold over Tynemouth priory, which was now once more challenged by the monks of Durham. Delegates were appointed by the Pope to hear and adjudicate upon the claims of both parties. The case dragged on. It was to the advantage of the St. Alban's party that this should be so, since the case of their opponents in part rested upon the evidence of certain very aged clergy and laity who had witnessed the expulsion of St. Cuthbert's monks from Tynemouth in 1085. A fresh commission was issued and new delegates appointed. In 1174 a settlement was reached by which Hugh Pudsey, bishop of Durham, and the prior and convent of Durham renounced for ever all claims to the church of Tynemouth and its estates, and confirmed the same by charter to the monastery of St. Alban's. In return for this concession the abbot and brethren of St. Alban's surrendered to Durham their churches of Bywell St. Peter's and Edlingham. Either party handed over such muniments as they possessed touching upon the title to the conceded churches. Bishop Pudsey granted to the abbot of St. Alban's the right to receive the usual payments from the churches belonging to Tynemouth, and also, upon the death of their existing incumbents, to increase the pensions derived from them from twenty and a half to sixty and a half mares yearly. Of his own free will Bishop Pudsey further conceded an additional yearly revenue of seven marks from the church of Eglington. It was probably on this occasion that the same bishop pledged himself to observe friendly relations with St. Alban's and Tynemouth, and renounced a claim which he had advanced to certain dues from the chapels attached to the priory. St. Alban's had reason to be satisfied with the result of the arbitration, for its right to the advowson of the priory was never again disputed by Durham.¹

¹ Numerous documents connected with this dispute are extant at Durham, and transcripts of others are contained in the *St. Alban's Register* above quoted. The letter of the delegates to the Pope is printed in *Hist. Dunelm. Script. Tres*, Suri. Soc. No. 9. See also the documents printed in Gibson, vol. ii. appendix, xlv-xlvii, and in this work, vol. vi. p. 104, and vol. vii. pp. 144, 145. The following documents, taken from Baker's transcripts, have been hitherto unpublished:—

St. Alban's Register, fol. 124 b. Hugo, Dei gratia Dunelmensis episcopus, universis sancte matris ecclesie filiis, presentibus et futuris, salutem. Inter cetera ad que debitum officii pontificalis extenditur circa virorum religiosorum quietem et tranquillitatem continuam, precipue debet cura sollicitudinis adhiberi, ne corda eorum a sancte conversationis studio aliquatenus avocentur, et religionis otium per antiqui hostis astuciam perturbetur. Nos itaque monasterio Sancti Albani tanto volentes studiosius providere quanto ipsum majori honestate et monastice institutionis observancia preminere dinoscitur, eidem monasterio cellam de Tynemutha cum universis ad eam pertinentibus que intra fines nostre parochie continentur confirmamus et presentis scripti patrocinio communimus; in quibus hec propriis duximus exprimenda vocabulis. In primis ecclesiam de Tynemutha cum capella de Setuna, ecclesiam de Wdehorn cum capella de Hortuna et de Wodringtona et de Newebigginge, ecclesiam de Egeling-

ham cum ecclesia de Bewich et capella de Lilleburn, ecclesiam de Cunesclive, ecclesiam de Herteburne cum capellis de Witeun et de Camho et de Staftho, et omnes terras et obvenciones ad predictas ecclesias pertinentes, salvo jure nostro et successorum nostrorum tam in ecclesia de Tynemutha quam in prenominationis ecclesiis, in synodalibus, et in aliis consuetudinibus episcopalibus. Concessimus etiam et presenti scripto confirmavimus supradicto monasterio Sancti Albani et ecclesie de Tynemutha et monachis ibidem Deo famulantibus omnes decimas et obvenciones, tam in blado quam in aliis decimacionibus, tam de dominiis regis quam baronum sive aliorum fidelium et propriarum villarum et dominiorum, tam in Northumbria quam in Haliwarsfolch, ita plenarie et libere possidendas sicut eas plenius et melius habuerunt vel habere debuerunt, tempore nostro vel antecessorum nostrorum, et sicut donatorum carte testantur. Hiis testibus, Germano, priore Dunelmensi, Burcardo et Willelmo, archidiaconis Dunelmensibus, Simone camerario, magistro Ricardo de Coldingeham, Henrico dapifero, Roberto de Adintonia, Willelmo filio archiepiscopi, Alano de Walesende, magistro Aristotele, Roberto clerico Norwicensi, Radulpho clerico de Waldena.

Fol. 124 b. Hugo, Dei gratia Dunelmensis episcopus, et Germanus prior, totusque ejusdem ecclesie conventus, universis sancte matris ecclesie filiis, presentibus et futuris, salutem. Celeberrime consuetudinis usus optinuit ut rerum series ad honorem Dei et pro ecclesiarum pace gestarum litteris commendetur,



SEAL OF ABBOT SIMON.

que et earum debeant perpetuare memoriam, et preteritorum posteris recentem noticiam representent. Ea propter universitati vestre litteris presentibus innotescat quod, cum inter ecclesiam nostram et monasterium Sancti Albani super ecclesiam de Tynemutha et pertinentia ejus, quam nobis de antiquo jure competere dicebamus, controversia verteretur et causa fuisset, venerabili patri nostro Rogero dei gratia Wigornensi episcopo, et magistro Johanni de Saresb' Exoniensis ecclesie thesaurario, et Roberto venerabili decano Eboracensi, a summo pontifice domino Alexandro tercio delegata, duobus eorum, domino videlicet Wigornensi et magistro Johanne, apud Warewic in jure residentibus, tercio absenciam suam ex causis necessariis per litteras excusante, inter nos et predictum monasterium Sancti Albani sub hac pacis forma convenit. Nos siquidem liti predicto et repeticioni ecclesie de Tynemutha atque ad eam pertinentium, tam ipsis iudicibus quam ceteris qui aderant religiosis sapientibus viris ad hoc operam dantibus, imperpetuum renunciamus. Abbas vero et conventus Sancti Albani pro bono pacis et prefata renunciacione dederunt nobis et scripto suo autentico confirmarunt ecclesias de Biwelle et de Edelingham, cum omnibus ad easdem ecclesias pertinentibus, jure perpetuo possidendas. Volentes igitur prescriptam transaccionem et mutuam inter nos caritatis vicissitudinem perpetuis temporibus observari, supradicto monasterio Sancti Albani prenominationem ecclesiam de Tynemutha cum universis ad eam pertinentibus presentis scripti testimonio concessimus imperpetuum possidendam. [Immo] siquando litem nobis super prenominationis ecclesiis vel alterutra earum contigerit suscitari, abbas et monachi Sancti Albani, cum nulla munimenta in quibus ille tantum ecclesie confirmentur, nisi cum aliis possessionibus, habeant, instrumenta que super ipsis ecclesiis cum aliis possessionibus habeant ad defensionem nostram exhibebunt. Hiis testibus, Burcardo et Willelmo archidiaconis,

Simone camerario, magistro Ricardo de Coldingeham, Henrico dapifero, Roberto de Adintonia, Radulpho clerico de Waldene.

Fol. 125. Hugo, Dei gracia Dunelmensis episcopus, universis sancte matris ecclesie filiis, presentibus et futuris, ad quos presens scriptum pervenerit, salutem. Cum inter ecclesiam nostram et monasterium Sancti Albani super ecclesiam de Tynemutha et pertinentia ejus controversia verteretur, tam nos quam ecclesia nostra prefate liti et peticioni ecclesie de Tynemutha et ad eam pertinentium imperpetuum renunciavimus, nomine [cujus] transaccionis dederunt nobis ecclesias de Bywelle et Edelvingeham. Nos etiam pro bono pacis in consideratione honestatis et religionis que in prenominatione monasterio Sancti Albani vigere dinoscitur, tam nostro quam ecclesie nostre nomine, concessimus ut abbas Sancti Albani et monachi de Tynemutha de ecclesiis quas in parochia nostra habent, decedentibus personis presentibus, supra quam tempore facte transaccionis solvere consueverant quadraginta marcas annuas percipiant. Quas in hunc modum duximus assignandas. De ecclesia de Wdehorna, que cum duabus capellis de Widringtona et de Newebigginge preter capellam de Hortuna quatuordecim marcas solvere consueverat, sex marcas de incremento percipiant, videlicet, post decessum Ricardi clerici, viginti marcas. De ecclesia de Hertburna, que duas marcas solvebat, decem de incremento, id est post decessum Roberti clerici duodecim marcas percipient, salvo jure Vtredi et Roberti in eadem ecclesia quamdiu vixerint.

De ecclesia de Cunesclive, que prius viginti solidos solvebat, quinque marcas et dimidiam post decessum Ade clerici, videlicet quatuor marcas de augmento, salvo jure Hermeri. De ecclesia vero de Egellingeham, que tres marcas abbati Sancti Albani solvebat consueverat, post decessum magistri Walteri de Insula perciperet idem abbas preter tres predictas marcas viginti marcas, et completa erit summa quadraginta marcarum. Nos vero, ex liberalitate nostra, amore predicti abbatum et monasterii Sancti Albani, prescriptis viginti tribus marcis septem marcas adjecimus, ut, videlicet, defuncto magistro Waltero, abbas et monachi Sancti Albani triginta marcas annuas de Egulvingeham et pertinentiis ejus percipiant, ita quod, ut si residuum administranti honeste sufficere non possit ad synodalia solvenda et ad debita episcopatum consuetudinum onera sustinenda, abbas quod defuerit supplere debeat. Ut igitur hoc a nobis supradicto ordine constitutum firmiter observetur, prohibemus ne quis hoc aliquo tempore presumat infringere. Hiis testibus, Germano, priore Dunelmensi, Burcardo et Willelmo, archidiaconis Dunelmensibus, Symone camerario, magistro Ricardo de Coldingeham, Henrico dapifero, Roberto de Adintona, Willelmo filio archiepiscopi, Alano de Walesende, magistro Aristotile, Roberto clerico Norwicensi, Radulpho clerico de Waldene.

Fol. 125 b. Omnibus videntibus vel audientibus has litteras, capitulum Dunelmense, salutem. Noverit universitas vestra nos gratam et ratam habere concessionem quam venerabilis pater noster, Hugo Dunelmensis episcopus, fecit dilectis fratribus nostris abbati de Sancto Albano et monachis de Tynemutha super augmentatione pensionum in ecclesiis de Wdehorn, Herteburna, Cunesclive et de Egellingham pro bono pacis, sicut in dicti episcopi autentico continetur, teste sigillo nostro.

Fol. 125 b. Rogerus, Dei gratia Eboracensis archiepiscopus, apostolice sedis legatus, omnibus sancte matris filiis, salutem. Noverit universitas vestra quod nos, inspectis cartis venerabilis patris nostri Hugonis Dunelmensis episcopi, juxta tenorem cartarum illarum concedimus et presenti carta nostra confirmamus monasterio Sancti Albani in perpetuum ecclesiam de Tynemutha cum universis ad eam pertinentibus que intra fines nostre provincie continentur. In quibus hec propriis duximus exprimenda vocabulis. In primis ecclesiam de Tynemutha cum capella de Setuna, ecclesiam de Wdehorn cum capellis de Hortuna et Wdrintun et de Newebigginge, ecclesiam de Egellingeham cum ecclesia de Bewich et capella de Lilleburn, ecclesiam de Cunesclive, ecclesiam de Herteburn cum capella de Witeun et de Camho et de Staffho, et omnes terras et olivaciones tam in blado quam in aliis decimacionibus, tam de dominiis regis quam baronum sive aliorum fidelium et propriarum villarum ac dominiorum, tam in Northumbria quam in Haliweresfolch, adeo plenarie et libere possidendas, sicut eas prefatum monasterium melius et liberior habuerit vel habere debuerit tempore nostro vel antecessorum nostrorum, et sicut donatorum carte testantur. Preterea transaccioni inter dilectos fratres nostros monachos Sancti Albani et monachos Dunelmenses pro controversia inter eosdem mota super ecclesiam de Tynemutha concorditer facte assensum prebemus secundum tenorem carte memorati Hugonis Dunelmensis episcopi, qua carta accepimus eundem episcopum et ecclesiam Dunelmensem liti et petitioni ecclesie de Tynemutha et ad eam pertinentium in perpetuum renunciasse, concessis eisdem a monachis Sancti Albani nomine transaccioni ecclesiis de Bywell et de Edelwingham. Prefati autem episcopus et monachi Dunelmenses pariter concesserunt ut abbas Sancti Albani et prior de Tynemutha de ecclesiis quas in parochia Dunelmensis episcopi habent, decedentibus personis presentibus, supra quam tempore facte transaccioni solvebat consueverat quadraginta marcas annuas percipiant, adjectis etiam septem marcis quas idem episcopus predictis monachis Sancti Albani nomine suo et ecclesie Dunelmensis ex propria liberalitate de incremento concessit. Que sane quadraginta et septem marce in hunc modum sunt in predictis ecclesiis assignate, videlicet in ecclesia de Wdehorn sex marcas de augmento, que preter capellam de Hortuna cum duabus capellis aliis prius quatuordecim marcas solvebat et post decessum Ricardi clerici viginti marcas annuas reddit. In ecclesia vero de Herteburn decem marcas de augmento, que prius duas tantum marcas ecclesie de Tynemutha solvebat, et post decessum Roberti clerici duodecim solvet, salvo jure [Vtredi] et Roberti in eadem ecclesia. In ecclesia de Cunesclive quatuor marcas de incremento, que prius viginti tantum solidos solvebat; post decessum vero Ade clerici quinque marcas et dimidiam annuatim solvet. In ecclesia de Egellingham viginti et septem marcas de augmento, que utique abbati Sancti Albani tres marcas solvebat, et post decessum magistri Walteri idem abbas triginta marcas annuatim percipiet. Has autem predictas concessionem juxta formam cartarum antedicti Dunelmensis episcopi, hujus carte nostre testimonio jugi memorie commendantes, necnon et omnia ecclesiastica beneficia que monasterium Sancti Albani in provincia nostra



COUNTERSEAL OF ABBOT SIMON.

The royal claims, however, remained a source of danger. When their prior, Gilbert, died, the monks, with the king's licence, elected one of their own number, Akarius, to be prior, who was then admitted and instituted with King Henry's assent, but without any reference to the abbot of St. Alban's.¹ This Akarius was perhaps the builder of the Transitional chancel of the priory church. Certainly during his priorate alterations were being made to St. Oswin's shrine, which adjoined the high altar both in the Norman and the Transitional chancels. One Baldwin was employed on the work, a famous goldsmith who had been brought from St. Alban's, where the art-loving Abbot Simon had been his patron. He was especially skilled in the setting of precious stones and in fine and intricate floral ornament. While at work in Tynemouth upon the new shrine on the festival of St. Oswin, he heard outside in the street the shouting of the holiday crowd. He went out to see the sight, and incautiously left the door of his workshop ajar. A man, looking in and seeing the shop empty, entered and laid hands on all the precious metal that he found within, wrapping it up in clothes lying there. Going out again with the stolen

prescriptis modis habere dinoscitur, sigilli nostri impressione confirmamus, auctoritate nostra precipientes supradictas concessionones et transaccionem inviolabiliter observari. Hiis testibus, Johanne archidiacono de Notingham, Johanne London', magistro Angot, magistro Lucane, magistro Milone, Ada de Glocestria, et aliis clericis nostris.

Fol. 126 b. Alexander episcopus, servus servorum Dei, dilectis filiis abbati et fratribus Sancti Albani, salutem et apostolicam benedictionem. Comuni et speciali debito nos vobis et monasterio vestro recognoscimus debitores, cum idem monasterium nobis sit, nullo mediante, subjectum, et vos sitis speciales Romane ecclesie filii in obsequio et devocione nostra, et ecclesie serventissime persistatis. Inde est quod cum jam pridem inter vos et venerabilem fratrem nostrum episcopum et monachos Dunelmenses super ecclesiam de Tynemutha et pertinenca ejus, de quibus hinc inde questio fuerat diutius agitata coram venerabilibus fratribus nostris R. Wigornensi et magistro J. nunc Carnotensi episcopis, qui causam ipsam de mandato nostro susceperant terminandam, transaccio facta sit sicut utriusque partis autentica scripta testantur, nos providere volentes ne alterutra partium super questione sopita denuo trahatur in causam, prescripte transaccioni apostolici favoris robur duximus apponendum; eandemque transaccionem, sicut de libero assensu partium facta est et suscepta et in scripto utriusque partis et predictorum judicium continetur, ratam habemus et firmam, eamque auctoritate apostolica confirmantes presentis scripti patrocinio communimus; statuentes ut nulli omnino hominum liceat hanc paginam nostre confirmationis infringere vel ei aliquatenus contraire. Si quis autem hoc attemptare presumpserit, indignationem Omnipotentis Dei et beatorum Petri et Pauli Apostolorum ejus se noverit incursurum. Datum Venetiis in rivo alto, xv kalendas Junii [1177].

Fol. 127. Forma reformatæ pacis inter dominum Hugonem Dunelmensem episcopum et Symonem abbatem Sancti Albani. Hec est, primo omnium, omnis inter eundem episcopum et ecclesias Sancti Albani et de Tynemutha preconcepta simulatas omnisque indignacio conquievit, fovebitque idem episcopus de cetero et provebit jura et negocia earundem ecclesiarum et se abbati et predictis ecclesiis familiarem et amicum exhibebit. Abbas vero versa vice et cedem ecclesie in observancia dileccionis et honoris episcopi perseverare studebunt. Synodalia que episcopus de tribus capellis, de Hortuna, videlicet, de Wdrinton et de Lilleburn de novo exegerat de cetero non exiget. De cimiteriis de Hortuna et de Setuna, que episcopus de novo dedicavit, matricum ecclesiarum indempnitati providit, sicut in cartis suis continetur, quas inde abbati dedit de possessionibus ecclesiarum Sancti Albani et de Tynemutha, quas quidem occasione indignacionis episcopi turbare presumpserunt, efficacem eis justitiam exhibebit (*sic*). Hiis testibus, Johanne archidiacono Dunelmensi, Symone camerario, magistro Ricardo de Coldingham et multis aliis.

¹ *Placita de quo warranto*, Record Commission, p. 585; Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. iii. vol. i. p. 120.

goods he wandered about the town, and at length went into the house of a woman, who, unluckily for the thief, was the goldsmith's laundress. She recognised the wrapping of the bundle. The thief was brought to justice and hanged upon the gallows.¹

The friction that arose at times between the priory and St. Alban's is well illustrated by the story of Abbot Simon's stay at Tynemouth. His visit was so prolonged that the stores of the priory became exhausted. The monks finally brought him a yoke of oxen harnessed to a plough. 'Everything is eaten up,' they cried tearfully; 'still we have these left; here they are; you may eat them too.' The abbot, realising that he had outstayed his welcome, called to his followers, 'Up, and away from here,' and so, in the words of the chronicler, 'he left the house despoiled of all that year's supplies to his eternal shame.'²

The accession of Richard I., and that monarch's financial needs in view of his coming crusade, gave an opportunity for the acquisition of new privileges by those who were willing to pay the price. His royal charter given on December 28th, 1189, may, in its original form, have acknowledged Tynemouth to be a cell of St. Alban's, thus renouncing any claim to advowson. It certainly confirmed to the monks of St. Alban's at Tynemouth all their possessions, temporal and spiritual. It gave to them in a more specific manner than had yet been done the various profits of justice, as well as the right to receive for their own use the danegeld and cornage to which their estates were subject. The king issued in this grant a prohibition against the sending of any officer of the royal household within the limit of their property should the monks be unwilling to receive him. 'We have granted,' the charter states, 'to God and to the church of St. Oswin of Tynemouth, and to the monks of St. Alban's there serving God, all liberties and free customs which the royal power can confer upon any church, in as ample a manner as may be done.'³

¹ *Vita Oswini*, cap. xlv. Cp. *Gesta Abbatum Monasterii Sancti Albani*, Rolls Series, vol. i. p. 190, for an account of Baldwin's great cup, 'quo non vidimus in regno Angliæ nobiliorem.'

² *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. i. p. 265.

³ The charter of 1189, as confirmed in 1198 and on subsequent occasions, ran as follows:—

'Ricardus, Dei gratia rex Angliæ, archiepiscopis, etc., et omnibus fidelibus Francis et Angliis in omnibus comitatibus in quibus Sanctus Albanus martir terram habet, amicablem salutem. Notum facimus vobis nos concessisse et presenti carta nostra confirmasse Deo et ecclesie Sancti Oswyni de Tunemuth' et monachis Sancti Albani ibidem Deo servientibus, omnes homines suos et omnes terras suas et omnes possessiones suas, videlicet villam de Tunemuth cum omnibus pertinentiis suis, Setonam, et Prestonam, et Chertonam, Mullitonam, Hwithelegam, Erdesdonam, Bacwrth et aliam Bacwrth, Sighale, Mortone, Bibeshet', Dischetonam, Wlsinton, Bewic, Egulingham, Lilleburne,

The importance which was attached to this charter is to be seen by the numerous occasions upon which its confirmation was sought and granted.¹ Not only did it bestow real and extensive privileges upon the church of St. Oswin, but it was regarded as a settlement of St. Alban's monastery in its possession, and also as creating a liberty or franchise similar in character to those of Hexham, Tynedale and Redesdale. When Richard I.'s change of seal necessitated the confirmation of the charters granted in the earlier years of his reign, this charter was also confirmed (November 13th, 1198).² It was one thing, however, to receive grants of privileges,

Ambell, Hauckeslowe, Ailsistwic, Wilum, Waltheden, et dimidiam villam de Copun, Carlesburi et Mortonam in Haliwerckenfolc, Bileshe et terram de Role et Danun. Hec omnia concessimus jam dictis monachis in redditibus et homagiis, in pratis et pascuis, in nemoribus et turbariis, et omnibus aliis rebus ad jam dictas villas et terras pertinentibus; cum soka et saca, in stronde on strene, on wod et felde, thol et theam, gridbrege, hamsoka, et pecunia que pertinet ad murdrum, forstal, danegeld, infangenethef et utfangenedtheof, flemenefremthe, blotwitha, wrec, cornagio; ut habeant super omnes terras suas et super omnes homines suos ubicumque sint, intra burgum et extra, in tantum et tam plene sicut proprii ministri nostri exquirere debent ad opus nostrum. Preterea concessimus eis ecclesiam de Tinemutha, et de Wdehorne, et de Walton, et de Bolum, et de Beiwic, et de Egulungeham, et de Herteburn, et de Cunesclive, cum capellis et omnibus aliis rebus ad easdem ecclesias pertinentibus. Concessimus eciam eis Herford super Blitham, et decimas de Herteneze, et decimas de Middelton super Teisam, et decimas de Colebrug et de Rodberi et de Werkewrd et de Wloure et de Neuburn, et omnia molendina sua cum predictis libertatibus possidenda. Et nolumus ut aliquis hominum, nec Francus nec Anglicus, de terris eorum neque de hominibus ullo modo se intromittat, nisi ipsi et ministri sui quibus ipsi committere voluerint. Et eciam concessimus Deo et ecclesie Sancti Oswini de Tinemutha et monachis Sancti Albani ibidem Deo servientibus, pro redemptione anime nostre et parentum nostrorum, omnes libertates et liberas consuetudines quas regia potestas liberiores alicui ecclesie conferre potest. Prohibemus super forisfacturam nostram ne aliquis eas aliquo modo infringere presumat. Prohibemus eciam ne in ipsorum terris vel domibus minister, dapifer scilicet vel pincerna, camerarius [vel] dispensator, janitor vel prepositus, contra ipsorum voluntatem et assensum, tempore nostro aut successorum nostrorum, per manum alicujus principis vel justiciarii quocumque tempore ponatur. Teste Baldwino, Cantuariensi archiepiscopo, Galfrido, Eboracensi electo, Hugone, Dunelmensi episcopo, Willelmo Marescallo. Datum per manum Willelmi de Longo Campo, cancellarii nostri, xxviii die Decembris, anno regni nostri primo, apud Cant'.

Is erat tenor prime carte nostre in primo sigillo nostro quod, quia aliquando perditum fuit, et, dum capti essemus in Alemannia in alia potestate constitutum, mutatum est. Innovacionis autem hujus hii sunt testes, H. Cantuariensis archiepiscopus; Johannes, comes Moreton, frater noster; H. de Chastellum, Cantuariensis, magister R. de Sancto Edmundo, [Richemundus, magister Malger', Eboricensis, magister Petrus, Batton', archidiaconus; Willelmus Marescallus; Willelmus de Stagno.] Datum per manum magistri Rocelini, vices cancellarii tunc agentis, apud rupem Andel', xiiij die Novembris, anno regni nostri decimo.³ *Cartae Antiquae*, BB, 18.

Considerable variations occur in the spelling of place-names in the transcript of this charter in the *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 120 b, and also in those contained in later confirmations enrolled on the Charter Rolls.

¹ The charter was confirmed by Richard in 1198, by John in 1204, by Henry III. in 1271, by Edward I. in 1301, by Edward II. in 1315, by Edward III. in 1328, by Richard II. in 1380, by Henry IV. in 1401, and by Edward IV. in 1463.

² Upon Richard I.'s change of seal see Mr. Horace Round's *Feudal England*. Mr. Round points out that when the charters were confirmed in 1198 it was with a difference in the terms. The case of Tynemouth is no exception. The change there was significant, in view of the dormant royal claims to the advowson. An extract from the first charter, preserved in the *Rotuli Parliamentarii* (vol. i. p. 26), shows the change effected.

CHARTER OF 1189.

Notum facimus vobis nos concessisse et presenti carta confirmasse Deo et Sancto Albano et ecclesie Sancti Oswyni de Tynemuth', *celle Sancti Albani*, et monachis ibidem Deo servientibus.

CHARTER OF 1198.

Notum facimus vobis nos concessisse et presenti carta confirmasse Deo et ecclesie Sancti Oswyni de Tynemuth' et monachis Sancti Albani ibidem Deo servientibus.



TYNEMOUTH PRIORY CHURCH
PRESBYTERY

and another to enforce them. The sheriff continued to exact cornage. He even mulcted the prior's men of Amble for seizing on the wrecks which came to their shores.¹ On King John's accession it was determined to seek a new confirmation of the charter from him, and an engagement that it should be observed. By way of security two charters were obtained, one differing verbally from the other; one was enrolled at Westminster, the payment of the fine for confirmation being enrolled in the Court of the Exchequer. The monks of Tynemouth paid, in return for this, sixty marcs and a palfrey, and St. Alban's twenty-five marcs and a palfrey.² A royal writ was addressed to the sheriff, forbidding him to exact from the monks of Tynemouth the scutage which they should raise from their tenants, and charging him to deduct in future from the total cornage rent of the county that proportion due from the tenants of the priory, namely, twenty-four shillings yearly.³ Assurance was made doubly sure by obtaining a confirmation of the charters of Richard and John from Pope Innocent III., who likewise confirmed to them in the same bull the churches and pensions

A more rhythmical form was given to the enumeration of customs and rights in the charter of 1189, which ran as follows: 'Cum sacha socha, over stronde et strene, in wode et felde, tol et tem et gridbruch; hamsock, murdrum et forstallum; danegild, infangenethefe et utfangenethefe; flemmenes-flemeth, bludwyte, wrec.'

The earlier charter is described (*St. Alban's Register*, fol. 116 b) as 'Signata sigillo regis, ut multi asserunt.' Mr. Round states that: 'Such charters and grants as are known to us all proceed from the king himself, either before he left Messina or after he had reached Germany on his return' *op. cit.* p. 544. He proposes to alter the date of the first charter to November 28th, on the ground that Richard had already left Canterbury before December 28th, having sailed from England on the 11th of the month. The date cannot, however, be questioned, in view of a second charter given in the *St. Alban's Register* (fol. 123 b), dated at Canterbury on December 20th, and witnessed by the bishop of Lincoln and William Marshall, confirming Bewick, Eglingham, and Lilburn to the priory, and which, like that of the 28th, is given under the hand of Longchamp as chancellor. The great seal was despatched to Richard in Normandy before the following March, but it would seem to have been left temporarily in Longchamp's hands till the business of the Council of Canterbury was completed.

Mr. Round has shown that the journey of the prior of St. Alban's to France to secure confirmation of charters 'cum effusione multae pecuniae et laboris,' described by Matthew Paris as occurring in 1190, is to be assigned to 1198.

¹ *Pipe Rolls*, anno 1203, Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. iii. vol. iii. p. 85.

² *Pipe Rolls*, anno 1204, *ibid.* p. 88. 'Prior et monachi de Tinemue computant de l marcis pro carta sua de libertatibus suis confirmandis et ut carta illa irrotuletur apud Westmonasterium. et ut ipsa teneatur et observetur, et ut quieti sint inrotulati ad scaccarium de xxx marcis et j palfredo quas pro eo obtulerunt, et pro alia carta de boscis suis claudendis quam non habent. . . . Idem reddunt computum de ij palefredis pro carta duplicanda de libertatibus suis, et in una cartarum illarum non ponitur sicut, etc. In thesauro x marcae pro palefredis, et quieti sunt.' Cp. Madox, *History of the Exchequer*, vol. ii. p. 405. The two charters were given at York on February 25th and March 1st, 1204. See *Rot. Cart.* 5 John, m. 12, Record Commission, p. 120; and *Cart. Ant.* G 21 and BB 16 and 18. By another charter King John confirmed Eglingham, Bewick and Lilburn to the monks, May, 3 John. *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 123 b. The charter roll for that year is missing.

³ *Close Rolls*, 6 John, m. 5, Record Commission; writ dated April 1st, 1205. The *Pipe Rolls* show a regular allowance of twenty-four shillings to the prior of Tynemouth every year for cornage from 1204 onwards.

granted by Archbishop Roger de Pont l'Evêque of York and Bishop Pudsey of Durham, as well as the liberties and immunities bestowed by his predecessors on St. Alban's and its cells.¹

John de Cella, who was at this time abbot of St. Alban's, established the custom of banishing to distant cells of the monastery the more unruly members of his congregation. Tynemouth was especially useful for this purpose. The monks received an unwelcome addition to their number in the person of William Pygun, of whom Matthew Paris could write no good thing. He was, he tells us, no monk, but a cowed devil, a Lucifer among angels, a Judas among apostles. Incited by Robert fitz Walter, he had forged a charter, conferring on that earl the patronage of the cell of Binham, and had sealed it with the convent seal, surreptitiously procured for that purpose. Abbot de Cella's successor, William de Trumpington, continued the practice of banishment; among others he sent to Tynemouth, Reymund, prior of St. Alban's, 'forcibly reft of his books and other jewels.'²

When peace was restored in England, after the death of King John, Abbot Trumpington made a splendid progress to the cells of his monastery. At Tynemouth he received the homage of his tenants, and entertained the neighbouring nobles and people of the district. The old prior of Tynemouth, Ralph Gubiun, took the opportunity of begging to be allowed to resign his post, but leave was refused, though it was accorded to him a few years later. A certain Symon de Tynemouth claimed for himself for ever two monks' corrodies,³ under the grant of an earlier abbot, and the case was referred to the decision of single combat. William Pygun, 'the monks' great champion' was overcome. Prior Gubiun journeyed to St. Alban's and insisted on being allowed to resign, whereupon, leave being granted, Germanus, a northerner by extraction, was appointed to replace him.⁴

¹ *Opera Innocentii III.* ed. Migne, vol. ii. p. 1526; bull dated January 3rd, 1209.

² *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. i. pp. 221-223, 257, 258. 'Cella de Thinemue, quae exilium nostris solet esse monachis.'

³ A corrody was 'originally the right of free quarters due from the vassal to the lord on his circuit; but later applied especially to certain contributions of food, provisions, etc., paid annually by religious houses. . . . Sometimes the contribution might be commuted, and then it would be practically undistinguishable from an annuity or pension.' Plummer, *Fortescue*, pp. 337-338. An example of the later form of corrody is contained in a deed of November 20th, 1538, by which Robert Blakeney, prior of Tynemouth, granted to Thomas Wallis of Tynemouth, for life, in return for his good and faithful service, an annuity of 40s. with meat and drink, coat and clothing, to the value of 15s., and agreed in default of meat and drink to pay him 14d. weekly from two tenements in Whitley. *Laing Charters*, No. 427. About 1290 Roger Bercarius was receiving seven loaves and seven hens from the priory weekly. *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 129 b.

⁴ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. i. pp. 270-273, 275.

Pygun's end was suitably repellent. One night he retired to the rear part of the dormitory, and there fell asleep. His fellow monks listened to the dreary sound of his snores. At length the sound stopped, and there came a loud cry, which they distinctly heard, of 'Seize him, Satan, seize him.' In the morning they found him lifeless. He had died where he had sat. 'Perhaps,' Matthew Paris wrote, 'he had caught a chill. I prefer to think that he was struck by divine vengeance.'¹

What an exile for the southerner Tynemouth proved to be is shown in a letter which has been accidentally preserved in a formulary of St. Alban's.² As the earliest contemporary account of the priory and its

¹ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. i. p. 224.

² The St. Alban's formulary, in which the letter is contained (Cambridge University Library, MS. Ee. 4.20), was once the property of Robert de Blakeney, the last prior of Tynemouth, who was also the owner of a fifteenth century Latin psalter now in the possession of Sir John Lawson at Brough Hall (*Historical Manuscripts Commission*, third report, p. 255), as well as of the register of the second abbacy of John de Whethamstede (Arundel MSS. College of Arms, No. 3), which has been printed in the Master of the Rolls Series. The letter has been copied in a fifteenth century hand on to the last page of the codex. Though the name of Tynemouth is not mentioned, internal evidence leaves no possible doubt that Tynemouth is the place described. The letter cannot be later than the building of the present gateway in 1390, and is probably far older. The description of the church as 'de novo confecta' seems to point to the Transitional extension of that building (*circa* 1190) as being a recent occurrence.

Quoniam supplicavit michi fraternitas tua attentius rogando ut situm loci nostri et patrie mores, necnon et quid boni vel mali ex maris vicinitate inhabitantibus proveniat vobis significarem, pareo libens pro possibilitate mea petitioni tue satisfacere. Artus locus noster, super rupem eminentem positus, fluctibus marinis circumquaque cingitur, excepto uno aditu in quo est porta fere plaustro nimis arcta, opere humano de rupe precisa, que intrantibus et exeuntibus unicum prestat iter ad ambulandum. Hunc artissimum locum fluctus cotidie nocte dieque sevientes, tumultuantes crebris impulsionebus nimis impetuose infestant, corrodendo in tantum quod rupes durissima pender jam obesa, noviter ut credo ruitura, non vi sed assiduitate, sicut dicitur, 'Gutta cavat lapidem non vi sed sepe cadendo.' Proveniunt nempe ex predictis fluctibus nebule densissime et vehementer caliginose, tanquam esset fumus opacus exiens de antro Vulcani. Hec etiam, nebule etiam tempestive, aciem oculorum reddunt ebetem et debilem, vocem dulcisonam acerbant, arterias perstringendo fere concludunt ne aer subtilis in pectore inclusus per suos occultos meatus liberum et vagum introitum et exitum more debito possit obtinere. Quicumque advena ibi hyemaverit rauci Theseide Codri afficitur.* Ver cum vernis floribus ibi proscribitur, estas estuare illic non permittitur, sed boreas cum suis collateralibus illic perpetue perhendinat, qui, tanquam de potestate et carcere Eoli regis sui egressus, patriam nostram jure hereditario sibi vendicat et sedem suam ibi collocat metropolitanam, eandem patriam letali frigore et compede nivali perstringendo. Hic est nephandissimus boreas cujus ad imperium fretum frequenter fremit, mare amare debacatur, pontus ponte carens portum petentibus efficit periculosum; pelagus penas laboriosissimas infert navigantibus; equor inequale efficitur et ultra quam credi potest in modum montis excelsi tumescendo in altum extollitur; unde provenit quod spuma maris nimis amara, vi ventorum exagitata, domos nostras transcendit et in castrum in modum pumicis descendit conglobata. Miseria maxima est respicere naufragantium pericula, rates in caute super caute ruentes, malum male titubantem, carinas inter scopulos et saxa. fractis tabulis, clavorum compage non obstante, penitus esse collisas; nautas membris frigore solutus quasi plumbum in aquis vehementibus demergentes, quibus perituris non potest vis humana auxilium conferre, quia quidam versificator dixit, 'Si ruat in caute navis est dictura Tu autem.'[†] Talia infortunia in oculis nostris flebilibus sepius contingunt. Vox nusquam turturis in terra nostra auditur. Philomena fines nostras dedignatur visitare, quia non est locus amenus nec aura suavis ubi possit in ramali modulationes dulcisonas per suas dilatatas arterias dulciter organizare. Sed sunt ibi volucres in scopulis nidificantes, glaucum colorem habentes, mortuorum cadaveribus insidiantes quibus avidè vescuntur. Hec aves rauca voce et horribili presagium future tempestatis infeliciter pronunciant. Homines habitantes circa litus maris sunt quasi mauri, mulieres sunt quasi Ethiopisse, virgines eorum squalide, pueri eorum velud nigri

* Cp. Juvenal l. 1.

[†] A reference to the phrase used at the end of each lesson in the church service, 'Tu autem, Domine, miserere nobis.'

surroundings, it possesses considerable interest. Stripping the unknown writer's account of its graces of style, the letter runs as follows:—

Our house is confined to the top of a high rock, and is surrounded by the sea on every side but one. Here is the approach to the monastery through a gate cut out of the rock, so narrow that a cart can hardly pass through. Day and night the waves break and roar and undermine the cliff. Thick sea-frets roll in, wrapping everything in gloom. Dim eyes, hoarse voices, sore throats are the consequence. Spring and summer never come here. The north wind is always blowing, and brings with it cold and snow; or storms in which the wind tosses the salt sea foam in masses over our buildings and rains it down within the castle. Shipwrecks are frequent. It is great pity to see the numbed crew,

pueri hebreorum. Proth pudor, indigene patrie illius comedunt algam maris que est attramento nigrior. Hec est quedam herba super saxa in mari crescens, carens dulcore sapore ac bono odore, magis vero stomachum ad nauseam provocat quam confortat. Hec herba vocatur a vulgo *slauk*. Hac utuntur patrie illius mulieres tanquam esset herba aromatica, unde color earum assimilatur colori herbe illius. Arbores que deberent esse fructifere sunt quasi fructices non audentes ramos in altum extollere propter maris asperitatem que eas floribus et foliis spoliat et denudat. Tempore verno cum debeat parens natura pratum picturare, flores parere, flosculos de arboribus producere, tunc maris flatus nimis amarus et corosivus teneros flores, ante quam possint formose et perfecte pullulare, tanquam abortivos efficit violenter marcescere. Hinc est quod vix aut raro fructus in arboribus ibi inveniuntur. Quicumque mala punica suaviter redolencia dulci sapore reperierit, cum poeta exclamare poterit, 'Rara avis nigroque simillima cigno.' Si vero contingit contra spem quod ibi poma nascantur, tunc sunt arida et sicca, succo et sapore carencia; propter nimiam amaritudinem eorum dentes edentium obstupescunt. Cave igitur tibi, frater karissime, ne venire desideres ad talem locum omni amenitate privatum, omni solacio et jocunditate carentem, excepta ecclesia eleganter de novo constructa, mire pulcritudinis, que inhabitantes invitat ad devocionem, in qua corpus beati et gloriosi ac propiciabilis martiris Oswini in theca argentea auro et gemmis venustissime decorata requiescere dinoscitur. Hic est vere qui pro Christi nomine sanguinem suum fudit, qui rabiem persequentium non formidavit nec mundane glorie pompam quesivit, set celeste regnum pro terreno feliciter commutavit, celum pro domo lutea, margaritam prefulgidam pro carnis testa comparavit. Hic est pius et propitius rex et martir inclitus cujus ope inopes ab omni clade liberantur, qui ex toto corde eius deposcunt largicionem, cuius munimine muniuntur profugi et exules a propria patria propter homicidia furta vel sediciones contra regem et regni statuta nequiter perpetrata. Hic est gloriosus martir Oswynus optimus egrorum medicus effectus. Quod non valet practica nec quecumque phisica, pii martiris prestant beneficia.

'Surdi, claudi, ceci, muti
Sunt ad usum restituti
Martyris clemencia.'

Egregii martiris protectio et venuste ecclesie pulcritudo, simile conjuncte efficiunt quod fratres ibi habitantes simul ambulantes in domo domini cum consensu et ore et corde alacriter decantant, 'Ecce quam bonum et quam jocundum habitare fratres in unum.' De corporali dieta non est ibi murmur aut querimonia, quia magnorum piscium ac regalium fertilitas materiam aufferit murmurandi. Fertilitatis vero ydempnitas quibusdam generat fastidium, quorum unus ego aliquando sic proclamo: 'Inopem me copia fecit.' Multocius contingit quod copiosa abundancia stomachum efficit fastidire. Si enim piscis esset ibi rarior, esset preciosior, quia omne rarum carum, et alibi dicitur, 'Alimenta que minus sufficiunt avidius sumuntur.' Ecce, karissime, ad vestram instanciam situm loci, mores patrie, et quid boni et mali maris vicinitas conferat hominibus circa litus maris habitantibus, prout potui in tempore hyemali et estivali perpendere, vobis significavi. Valete.

The *ulva marina*, locally called *slauk*, still formed part of the food of the poorer classes of Northumberland in 1568, when William Turner, master of Pembroke College, Cambridge, and a native of Morpeth, wrote of it: 'The Brion thalassion of Theophrastus and Pliny is called in Northumberland *slauke*, which in Lent the poore people seth, and that with lykes and oyniones. They put it in a pott and *smore* it, as they call it, and then it loketh black, and then they put oyniones to it and eate it. But, before it is sodden, it is wonderfully grene.' *Herbal*, pt. i. p. 94. In an earlier work the same writer describes it as having leaves like lettuce, and adds, 'It groweth in the sea about shelles and stones also. It coletth and dryeth.' *Names of Herbes*, 1548, ed. James Britten for the English Dialect Society. The reference to sea gulls nesting in the cliffs of the priory rock finds a parallel in Turner's account of the cormorants which he saw nesting there: 'In rupibus marinis juxta hostium Tinae fluvii mergos nidulantes vidi.' *On Birds*, 1544, ed. A. H. Evans, p. 110. For the erosion of the sea-cliffs described in this letter, see R. M. Tate, *On the Erosion and Destruction of the Coast Line from the Low Lights to Tynemouth and Cullercoats*, and the petition of 1380 quoted on p. 97.

whom no power on earth can save, whose vessel, mast swaying and timbers parted, rushes upon rock or reef. No ring-dove or nightingale is here, only grey birds which nest in the rocks and greedily prey upon the drowned, whose screaming cry is a token of coming storm. The people who live by the sea-shore feed upon black malodorous sea-weed, called 'slauk,' which they gather on the rocks. The constant eating of it turns their complexions black. Men, women and children are as dark as Africans or the swarthiest Jews. In the spring the sea-air blights the blossoms of the stunted fruit trees, so that you will think yourself lucky to find a wizened apple, though it will set your teeth on edge should you try to eat it. See to it, dear brother, that you do not come to so comfortless a place.

But the church is of wondrous beauty. It has been lately completed. Within it rests the body of the blessed martyr Oswin in a silver shrine, magnificently embellished with gold and jewels. He protects the murderers, thieves, and seditious persons who fly to him, and commutes their punishment to exile. He heals those whom no physician can cure. The martyr's protection and the church's beauty furnish us with a bond of unity. We are well off for food, thanks to the abundant supply of fish, of which we tire.

The claims of the bishop of Durham over Tynemouth had been settled in 1174, only to arise again in a new form. Successive bishops asserted their rights as diocesans to visit the church of Tynemouth, and to exact obedience from its priors. They also raised claims to certain other churches, of which the monastery held the advowson. Upon the case being carried to Rome, delegates appointed by the Pope decided that the bishop and his officials should confine their visitations to that part of Tynemouth church which was set aside for parochial purposes, and should not interfere in any way with the conventual portion of the church or with the monastery itself. They confirmed the right of the abbot of St. Alban's to appoint or remove, with the consent of his chapter, the priors of his cell of Tynemouth. During a vacancy at St. Alban's the prior of that abbey was to exercise the same right. On the other hand the prior of Tynemouth was, after his appointment, to be presented to the bishop of Durham, and was to promise him canonical obedience so far as the parish churches in his gift were concerned, and as the privileges granted to St. Alban's monastery allowed. He was not, however, on that account to be summoned to attend the diocesan synod. The vicars of Tynemouth were to be presented, upon their appointment, by the prior and convent of that place to the bishop; they were to be answerable to the bishop for spiritualities and to the monks for temporalities (May, 1247).¹

¹ This award is given by Matthew Paris, *Chronica Majora*, vol. iv. pp. 615, 616, and *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. i. pp. 390, 391. Numerous claims were made by the bishops of Durham during the reigns of John and Henry III. to churches in the gift of the prior of Tynemouth and the abbot of St. Alban's, namely, to Woodhorn in 1205, Hartburn in 1252, and Coniscliffe in 1258. Patrick, earl of Dunbar, claimed the advowson of Eglingham in 1225; Robert fitz Roger claimed that of Whalton in 1269; and in 1254 the church of Bolam was lost by Tynemouth to the archbishop of York. In 1225 Richard de Nafferton, probably a monk of Tynemouth, obtained a letter from the king directed to the bishop of Durham, forbidding the bishop to meddle with the demesnes or villeins of Tynemouth priory. *Patent Rolls*, 1216-1225, p. 571.

In spite of this composition, the bishop, Nicholas de Farnham, continued to inflict such injury as he could upon the monks. He compelled their church to contribute to the cost of building the chapel of the Nine Altars at Durham, forbade certain vicars to pay their annual pension to Tynemouth, and distrained on the prior's cattle. Relying upon a verdict procured from twelve of his own knights, he disregarded the letters of the king and of the abbot of St. Alban's, and endeavoured to weary the monks into submission.¹

Fortunately for them, Bishop Farnham resigned his office in the following February. His successor, Walter de Kirkham, surrendered to St. Alban's all right to the churches of Hartburn and Eglington (*circa* 1252), which he conferred upon the monastery for the promotion of hospitality and the bettering of their ale. Tynemouth did not, however, profit by the arrangement. So wealthy were these two churches that Prior Ralph de Dunham made an offer of two hundred and forty marcs to St. Alban's, if only he were allowed to retain them.² Bishop Kirkham proved in the end no better disposed towards the priory than his predecessor had been. In 1256, William de Greystoke commenced a suit in the bishop's court for the advowson of Conescliffe in Durham. The abbot of St. Alban's and the prior of Tynemouth refused to appear, grounding their claim on their privilege of not being called in question for any tene-ment belonging to them except in the king's court and under a special royal mandate. Walter de Kirkham retorted by traversing the right of the abbot and prior to hold a free court within the wapentake of Sadberge, which, since the date of Richard I.'s charter, had been transferred to the bishop of Durham. The lawsuit was of great length, even for those times. By making very considerable concessions, the abbot of St. Alban's ultimately, in 1275, secured the recognition of the advowson as belonging to his monastery.³

The priory had many enemies besides the bishops of Durham. Patrick, earl of Dunbar, laid claim to the manors of Bewick and Eglington. Dying at Marseilles in 1248, his body was brought home to Tynemouth, and

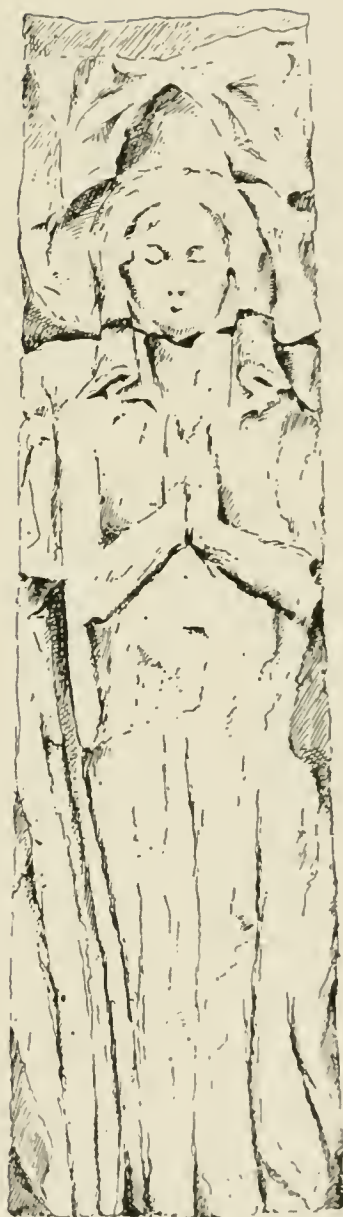
¹ *Chronica Majora*, vol. v. pp. 8-13.

² *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. i. pp. 320-322. The churches did not form a new donation to St. Alban's, though Bishop Kirkham's confirmation earned him a place among the benefactors to the abbey. *Liber de Benefactoribus*, Rolls Series, *Chronicles of St. Alban's*, vol. iii. p. 441.

³ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. i. pp. 350, 427-430, 436, and *Chronica Majora*, vol. vi. (*Liber Additamentorum*) *passim*.

buried there in the church which he had harassed.¹ John de Balliol was impartially hostile to Tynemouth and Durham. On both churches he is said to have inflicted enormous loss before he was persuaded to conclude peace with them in 1255. 'He who should recount the wrongs,' says Matthew Paris, 'which William de Valence did to the abbot of St. Alban's and the prior of Tynemouth, would draw tears from the eyes of his hearers;' but the wrongs have been untold and our eyes are dry.² Add to this the expenses of special missions to the papal court, as in 1256, relative to the papal provision to Hartburn, a living round which would-be incumbents are said to have gathered 'like eagles round a carcase;' and the exactions of such unscrupulous prelates as the bishop of Hereford, and the demands of Henry III.³

The cell of Tynemouth was called upon to contribute twenty-five marcs to the *auxilium prelatorum* of 1235, and again to make a payment of five marcs in 1245. When in 1253 the clergy granted to the king a tithe of all ecclesiastical revenues, Tynemouth contributed by paying a hundred marks to Alebrando Alebrandini and Bernardo Prosperini, the king's Siennese creditors. In spite of the convent's rising commercial prosperity, of which signs are to be found in the growth of North Shields, the development of the fishing industry, the establishment of tan-yards at Preston, the holding of markets at Tynemouth and at Bewick, and, not least important,



SCALE

1 ft

2 ft

¹ *Chronica Majora*, vol. v. p. 41; cf. vol. vii. of this work, p. 61.

² *Chronica Majora*, vol. v. pp. 229, 528. William de Valence held the neighbouring castle of Horton, 1257-1270.

³ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. i. pp. 346-350, 383.

the commencement of the coal trade, the monastery fell considerably into debt. Two small debts to the Crown of a hundred shillings and five marcs, incurred in 1252 and 1257, were still outstanding at the close of Henry's reign. The tithe of their revenue, which brought in £66 13s. 4d. in 1253, amounted only to £41 8s. 3d. in 1292.¹

A collection of letters which has been preserved, covering the years 1258-1269, throws some light on life in the monastery at this time. They give a few interesting notices of the turmoil into which the country was thrown by the Barons' War. Prior Ralph de Dunham wrote to his abbot in the summer of 1258, 'I dare not in these days send you any money in return for the outlay which you are making on behalf of our cell, alike in the king's court and before the legate, for I fear the robberies to which travellers are daily subjected.' A few years later a canon of Hexham wrote to the cellarer of Tynemouth, 'I am sending you Stephen de Len, who is an honest workman, and, as I have heard, is skilled in plumbing and in laying on water. Do not think the worse of him for his shabby clothes. He has two or three times lost his all in this war, which is hardly yet over.' But on the whole the monks were concerned more with lesser matters, such as the debt incurred by one of their number to the flockmaster of Newminster abbey, or the insertion of new windows in

¹ *Pipe Rolls*, Hodgson, pt. iii. vol. iii. pp. 177, 208, 226, 243; *Patent Rolls*, 40 Henry III. m. 13 d.

The *St. Alban's Register* (fol. 92) contains a list of extraordinary payments made by Tynemouth during the abbacy of John de Hertford (1235-1260). Unfortunately this page of the register is in particularly bad condition, some five or six entries are altogether illegible. The remainder are:

'Ad opus domini pape pro accione Sancti Albani et [ecclesie Dunelmensis]	
de cella de Tynemuth	25 marce.
Dominus abbas	10 marce.
Item eidem	10 ^{li} et duo [^s]
Pro fine foreste de Bewic domino regi	20 ^{li} .
Pro obligatione facta in curia Romana per dominum Herefordensem episcopum	100 marce et 20 ^s pro lucro.
Item domino abbati de Sancto Albano eodem anno de domo	10 marce.
Item pro villa de West Chirton in puram elemosynam redigenda, Willelmo Herun, 4 marce, et domino Gilberto Haunsard, 100 sol., et pro finali concordia facta in curia domini Regis apud Novum Castrum coram iusticiariis suis, 40 sol.	
Pro amerciamentis et disseysinc de Cressewell domino Regi	.....
[Item domino] abbati et conventui de Sancto Albano ad auxilium, A.D. ....	.... 7 marce.
Item domino abbati pro quibusdam aliis	.....
Item eidem, de dono, A.D. 1260	.... 10 marce.
Item conventui de Sancto Albano pro Roberto de Bewic	44 ^{li} [^{li}].
..... communis venditionis decimarum suarum de Herteburn et de Egelingham	.... marce et 10 sol.
Item de arreragiis ecclesiarum de Herteburn et [de Egelingham] pro morte Hugonis Gaidum	20 ^{li} .

(There is also an item of £23 17s. 4½d. and another of 100 marcs and 20d.)

the refectory. The letters show how they were called upon to give passports to fishermen travelling with loads of herrings to other monasteries, or requested by Florentine merchants (to whom they were under money obligations) to inform them whether the convent was in need of any further assistance, how they were thanked for hospitality shown to kinsmen of their neighbours, and received applications from tenants to be allowed to purchase so much of the tithe of corn as the priory did not require for its own use. Proprietors, whose estates marched with those of the monastery, asked leave to put some of their sheep on to the prior's common, and to have passage allowed for so many wagon-loads of felled timber. Other letters relate to the appointment of attorneys and to the adjournment of suits pending in the prior's court. The mayor and burgesses of Newcastle wrote to the prior asking him to give shelter and protection to Thomas de Carliol, a citizen of their town, who 'had thrashed a man and given him satisfaction, whereupon they were made friends,' but who was, for all that, liable to be called on to satisfy the king's officers. In a curious letter Abbot Roger de Norton gave his directions to the monk who had been appointed as custodian of the priory during a vacancy: 'I wish by all means to have that book which I mentioned to you. It is not very valuable, but the late prior very courteously gave it me when I left Tynemouth. I want that mazar, price four marks, for I have not got a respectable one at present. See that a good part of the other silver cups, mazars, and spoons remains for the next prior. I do not wish to be thought covetous. Do not let your good will for me, whom you now represent, lead you into raising a scandal.' The prior seems to have had a large stable; frequent applications were made to him for the loan of horses for the York assizes or upon other urgent business. Even the sheriff made application for a carter and cart horse to go to York.

Historically the most important letter in this collection is one from this same sheriff, John de Halton, written at the close of 1265. The battle of Evesham had been fought. John de Vesci was escaping northward, bearing with him the severed foot of his slain leader, Simon de Montfort. The sympathies of Tynemouth are not likely to have been with the winning side. Halton wrote a strongly worded letter to the prior, in which he informs him that he had learned that de Vesci would that night attempt to cross the Tyne from South Shields. He threatened him

with the displeasure of the king and of Prince Edward should he fail to guard the ferry. But John de Vesci and his treasure came safe to Alnwick.¹

¹ This collection is in the Bodleian Library, *Codices Digheianae*, 20, fol. 110 et seq. It is entered in the catalogue of the collection as belonging to St. Neot's, but internal evidence shows that the letters relate to St. Alban's and its cells. Proper names have been for the most part omitted, St. Alban's is given as 'Sanctus N,' Tynemouth as 'N.' A selection of these letters is here printed.

Fol. 124 b. Venerande discrecionis viro ac amico confidentissimo domino R. de N., suus J. de Hawelton, salutem quam sibi. Dilectionem vestram, omni precum instancia, rogo et requiro quatinus, sicut de vobis amoris mei, et precibus, mihi de uno homine qui quandam caretam apud Ewerwyk scit deducere, et de uno equo ad caretam ad presens succurrere digno, per quod vobis, si aliquo tempore penes me habueritis agendum, forcius merito astringar.

Ibid. Dilecto et speciali sibi amico, domino R. de N., suus J. de Hawelton, salutem quam sibi, cum dilectione scincera. Vos tanquam amicum rogo et requiro, ac ex parte domini Edwardi mando, quatinus, visis literis, sicut dampnum vestrum evitare volueritis, mihi transmittatis Robertum Schipurit, inimicum et rebellem domini regis, ac excommunicatum, quem infra pacem vestram nullatenus receptare debetis, quem servientes mei ipsum infra libertatem vestram persecuti sunt. Valete. Velle vestrum mihi significetis.

Ibid. Venerande discrecionis viro et amico suo in Christo karissimo, domino R., priori de T., Johannes de Haulton, salutem et amorem. Quia a viris fide dignis datum est nobis intelligi quod dominus J. de Vesci hac instanti nocte versus partes boreales ad passagium vestrum de Tynem transiturus est, vobis tanquam speciali nostro, ac in fide qua domino regi tenemini, necnon sicuti vos ac omnia bona vestra diligitis, et indignacionem domini regis et domini Edwardi, primogeniti filii sui, vitare nolueritis, passagium predictum cum omni posse vestro custodiat; ita quod dictus Johannes pro defectu custodie minime transire valeat, per quod ad vos et domum vestram dominus noster rex et Eadwardus primogenitus graviter capere debeant pro vestro defectu, quia comodum vestrum ac honorem tanquam meum proprium affecco. Ideo hoc mandatum speciale vobis transmittito. Placitum vestrum mihi vestro significare velitis per portitorem presencium. Valete.

Fol. 125. Reverendo patri et in Christo karissimo domino R. c. de N., suus in omnibus frater Gilbertus de Hirlawe, custos et magister averiorum Novi Monasterii, salutem et quicquid potest honoris et obsequii. Si dicere audeo, mirum est valde quod apud vestram paternitatem invenio. Nec est etiam novum quod antea non solebam. Dominus quippe Elyas, monachus vester, mutuo acceptas a me duas libras argenti, quod credo vos non latere, quas ad diem Ascensionis dominice proximo preterite mihi, sicut fidelis monachus erat, debuit, omni occasione remota, pleniter persolverisse, quod necdum fecit. Ego autem mutuo accepi tantam pecuniam ad officium vestiarii domus nostre, ad quod domum argentum pertinebat. Et nunc cotidie exigunt a me debitum suum creditores, et graviter me molestant. Quare vobis, tanquam patri karissimo, devotissime supplico quatinus, si predictum argentum ad opus vestrum sumpsum fuit, faciatis illud sine dilacione mihi persolvi. Sin autem in alios usus per dominum E[lyam] predictum expensum est, faciatis mihi justiciam de eo, ne forte compellar vos gravare, quod utique invitus facerem sine causa, remittentes, si placet, mihi dictos denarios per latorem presencium. Expecto ergo reditum suum domi. Valete. Verumptamen de hiis que ad officium meum quod nunc habeo pertinet, et eciam que ad officium vestiarii pertinent, pro vobis facere volo et possum libentius quam alicui prelato in hac provincia. Mandetis ergo michi in omnibus tanquam vestro confiderent, si quid prosum, quod vobis placet. Iterum valete.

Fol. 125 b. Viro religioso et amico in Christo karissimo, domino R. de Acra, celerario de T., frater W. de Miteford, canonicus de Hextild', eternam in Domino salutem. Mittimus ad vos Stephanum de Len, fidelem operarium et, ut a viris fide dignis didicimus, que ad plumbum et que ad conducciones aquarum pertinent sufficienter instructum, quod si aliter est, cito experimento scire poteritis; non contempnentes, si placet, vilitatem habitus, presertim cum omnia bona sua occasione guerre nondum penitus sopite bis vel ter perdiderit. Valete. Salutetis, si placet, dominos socios nostros, R. de O. et W. de T., et omnes tam notos quam ignotos, quos Dominus noster in vera caritate semper conservet. Iterum valete.

Fol. 126. Domino R. de Acras, c. de T., frater J. de N., salutem, cum sincere caritatis affectu. Quum J. vitrearius jam venit apud T. ad faciendas fenestras in refectorio, et nullum opus potest facere antequam habeat v bordas ad operas predictas componendas, quocirca vobis supplico quatinus mihi de quinque bordis pro precio si placet succursum faciatis. Ego vero de precio earum ad voluntatem vestram satisfaciam. Item velle vestrum de navi de Wodeorn mihi significantes que modo est attachiata apud le Pull, quin fere naute predicate navis cum ea clam recessissent a nobis, unde velle vestrum super hoc mihi remandare non differatis. Valete.

Ibid. Venerabili et religioso viro domino R. de N., c. de T., Reynerus Albanis civis et mercator Florentinus, salutem et paratam ad ejus beneplacita voluntatem. Cum propter quedam negocia

When Abbot Roger de Norton came on a visitation to Tynemouth in 1264, the men of Newcastle received him 'with great and infinite honours.'¹ This friendly state of things did not last long, for four or five years had hardly gone by before Nicholas Scot, mayor of Newcastle, at the head of over a hundred armed citizens, named by the monks 'satellites of Satan,' attacked the new town of North Shields, burned the mills, set fire to the houses, beat the monks, carried off a shipload of coals to Newcastle, and inflicted loss on the priory to the extent of three hundred pounds.² It was the beginning of a lasting enmity between monastery and town. In April, 1290, the first contest commenced over their conflicting liberties. The case was heard before parliament, where the king and the men of Newcastle joined in calling in question the rights of Tynemouth to load and unload vessels and to buy and sell at Tynemouth and Shields, within the king's port of Tyne, without obtaining licence from the Crown; they also brought up against the monks the charge that they baked bread at Tynemouth in public bakehouses, which was then sold to the sailors who put in at Shields; that they took wreck of the sea within the port; that they held a market at Tynemouth, and that the wharfs of Shields encroached upon the soil of the river. In all this they were stated to have acted to the detriment of the Crown and of Newcastle. The action was heard, and a commission was appointed to certify as to the truth of the charges. An accidental delay led to the report of the commission not being made before August of the next year. It was altogether favourable to the claims of the Crown. Judgment was accordingly delivered against the priory upon every vital point (July 15th, 1292).³

expedienda Willelmum nuncium meum, latorem presencium, in Scotia transmittam, vos tanquam dominum meum et amicum rogo quatinus statum vestrum et siquid penes me volueritis cum per vos reversus fuerit idem nuncius per eundem mihi significare velitis. Valete bene et diu.

Fol. 126 b. Venerande religionis viro domino R. de A. custodi de T., R. de Mideltun clericus, salutem et dileccionem sinceram. Vobis attentius supplico quatinus unum sarum palefridum meum qui aliquantulum infirmatur in domo vestra de T. ad modicum tempus perhendinare velitis, saltem quousque convaluit, quod erit in brevi, Deo dante, vel status suus melius mittetur. Veniam quidem in brevi apud T., Domino concedente, vobiscum super pluribus colloquium habiturus. Bene valete.

Fol. 127. Omnibus Christi fidelibus presens scriptum visuris vel audituris frater R. de A., custos de Tynem', salutem in domino sempiternam. Universitatem vestram dignum duximus exorandam quatinus, cum J. de B., lator presencium, per vos transitum fecerit cum x lastis alletum ad opus domini N. de C. et ejusdem loci conventus, saluum eidem si placet conductum probeatis et licenciam per vos transeundi habere una cum allece libere et quiete in pace permittatis. In hujus rei testimonium sigillum nostrum apposuimus. Datum apud Tynem' die veneris proximo ante Epiphaniam, anno d. M^oCC^oLX^oVIII.

¹ Magnos atque infinitos honores eidem impendentes. *St. Alban's Register*, fols. 63 and 112.

² *Northumberland Assize Rolls*, Surt. Soc. No. 88, p. 163.

³ *Rotuli Parliamentarii*, vol. i. pp. 26, and Brand, *History of Newcastle*, vol. ii. pp. 557-568. A fuller account of this lawsuit will be given under Tynemouth and North Shields.

While this case was still proceeding, a quarrel arose between the prior and his tenant, the lord of Whitley. The latter was thrown into prison at Tynemouth and kept there for several months. He laid his case before the king, with the result that two justices of oyer and terminer were appointed, who commenced to investigate the circumstances at Newcastle on April 27th, 1291. They found that a serious miscarriage of justice had occurred, and that the case involved a decision upon the claims of the prior of Tynemouth to a franchise. Though the right of Tynemouth to a private jurisdiction had been undisputed for half a century or more, the extent of its right and the basis of its claim were extremely doubtful. Accordingly, the proceedings were reserved for parliament, then about to commence its session at Norham. There the pleas were reopened on May 13th. Sentence was given upon June 24th. The prior was found to have exceeded his rights. His liberty was therefore taken into the king's hands as forfeited, and annexed to the Crown.¹

With the loss of its commercial and judicial privileges, ruin seemed to threaten the monastery. Pope Nicholas's grant to the Crown of a tithe of all ecclesiastical revenues served to increase their financial extremity. A detailed assessment drawn up by the obedientiaries and ministers of the priory upon March 26th, 1292, shows that the yearly revenue which they derived at this time from their temporal possessions amounted to £180 16s. 6 $\frac{3}{4}$ d.; the spiritualities brought in £214 2s. 11d.²

The settlement of the Scotch succession was at this time occupying King Edward's attention. After declaring in favour of John Balliol at Berwick, he came south, reaching Tynemouth from Horton on December 22nd, 1292, where he remained a couple of days as guest of the prior, and rode on to Newcastle on Christmas Eve to receive Balliol's homage.³

Simon de Walden, prior of Tynemouth, appears to have found opportunity in the previous summer for laying proposals before the king. The

¹ Gibson, vol. ii, appendix, xci. See also the account of the liberty of Tynemouth in this volume. The *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 153 b, and *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii, p. 18, give details of the itinerary of John de Berkhamstead, newly elected abbot of St. Alban's. He was absent from England at Rome in the early months of 1291, where he obtained papal confirmation of his election, reached England at the beginning of May and arrived at Norham at the end of the same month, having visited his cell of Hertford on his way north. At Norham he presented the papal letter of confirmation to the king, which done he returned south by way of Tynemouth, holding courts there upon the 8th and 11th of June. He reached St. Alban's upon the 22nd of the same month.

² Printed from the *Tynemouth Chartulary* in Brand, vol. ii, pp. 591-594, and Dugdale, *Monasticon*, vol. iii, pp. 315-317.

³ Houshold Roll of Edward I., given in *Documents illustrative of the History of Scotland*, ed. Stevenson, vol. i, p. 372.

royal claim to the advowson of the priory had been intermittently asserted and never definitely waived. A party existed at Tynemouth which preferred that the king, rather than the abbot of St. Alban's, should be their patron. Only in this way could they hope to obtain satisfaction for such grievances as they might have against their abbot. As matters then stood they could not expect to make good their complaints against a superior who could at pleasure depose an intractable prior, and remove the monks to other cells. Prior Walden had an ally in his cellarer, John de Trokelowe. At least five other monks threw themselves in on the side of their prior against the abbot. Edward naturally heard them willingly. Upon November 30th he issued a writ, calling upon the abbot to surrender the said advowson, or else to prove his case at the next assize.

The abbot, John de Berkhamstead, had probably already become acquainted with the plot made against him. A search through the muniments of Tynemouth and St. Alban's showed him that he had no good case. Mowbray had definitely made over the advowson to St. Alban's, but that earl's subsequent forfeiture could be regarded as invalidating the grant. Accordingly he hastened to Scotland, and there threw himself on the king's mercy. The case was nevertheless opened at Newcastle on January 14th. The Crown officers cited the election of Prior Akarius in Henry II.'s reign, and produced Henry I.'s writ of 1122. Berkhamstead, who appeared in person, pleaded long undisturbed possession. Further proceedings were reserved for the next meeting of parliament after Easter. A select number of charters bearing on the case were sealed up and despatched to London. Orders were given to the abbot not to molest the monks who appeared to give evidence on the side of the Crown.¹ But the king was content with having proceeded so far. Upon May 2nd, 1293, and before a further hearing was reached, he released to the abbot and his successors all claims to the advowson.²

The position of St. Alban's with regard to Tynemouth was now for the first time firmly secured. In a letter to Berkhamstead a monk of St. Oswin pointed out the consequences of the royal grant. After showing that the claims of Tynemouth to rights in the Tyne went back to the days of the Northumbrian earldom, while those of Newcastle rested upon a charter granted by King John, he continued:—

¹ *Placita de quo warranto*, Record Commission, p. 585.

² *Patent Rolls*, 21 Edw. I. m. 19. Dugdale, vol. iii. p. 317.

'I write to let your reverence know that if the above considerations had been urged by the prior's party in the course of the lawsuit between the prior and the burgesses of Newcastle, they would certainly have been of weight. But then no one of the prior's party dared mention the earl and his grants, because the royalists were threatening the abbot of St. Alban's with a claim to the advowson of Tynemouth priory. Should the action ever be started anew, I think that, with God's help, things will go better for Tynemouth, for now everyone can speak freely of the earl and his grants, since the king has wholly resigned to the church of St. Alban's, for himself and his heirs, all claim to the advowson.'¹

Prior Walden must have thought that he had got well through the struggle with his abbot. The latter was at Tynemouth on September 25th, 1294, holding a court, and everything seemed quiet. Walden was thrown off his guard. A few months later, probably in April, Abbot Berkhamstead made a secret journey to Newcastle. There he saw the mayor and arranged with him to conduct him to Tynemouth with an armed following. Henry Scot, a leading Newcastle burgess and a friend of the prior, was bribed to take part by a promise of lands in Elswick. The whole party came silently one night up to the gate of the priory. Scot went forward and knocked. The porter opened the gate, whereupon the band rushed in, overpowered the porter, and seized the keys. They made their way to the prior's lodging and hammered at the door. It was past midnight; Walden had returned from attending matins; he had doffed his cowl, and, wrapping himself in a sheepskin, had lain down to sleep. The sound of knocking aroused him. He asked who was at the door. 'Your abbot,' was the reply; to which he made answer, 'Nay, what should the abbot be doing here at this hour?' At that moment the door was burst open. The soldiers rushed in, and, at the abbot's bidding, seized the prior, who was sent a few days later by sea to St. Alban's, and a new prior was appointed in his place. John de Trokelowe and his other accomplices had before this been carried, fettered and chained, to the same monastery.²

The greatest of all Edward I.'s exactions from the clergy was the demand for one half of the whole of their revenue (September, 1294).

¹ *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 150, printed in Gibson, vol. ii. appendix, xcii.

² *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. pp. 19-23. It will be noticed that the prior's name is there given as Adam de Tewing. But Prior Walden, who was elected to his office in 1280, was still prior on September 25th, 1294 (*St. Alban's Register*, fol. 154 b). The name of Adam de Tewing first appears on April 30th, 1295 (*ibid.*). Tewing was still prior in 1300 (*Assize Roll*, P.R.O., No. 638), long after this supposed removal, which is said to have taken place in the fifth year of John de Berkhamstead (Dec. 1294 to Dec. 1295). Taking into consideration the fact shown by the Assize Roll of 21 Edw. 1. that Walden was prior when the action for the advowson was being carried on, there seems no doubt that the author of the *Gesta Abbatum* has recorded the name of the wrong prior. One may observe that John de Trokelowe, who was cellarer in January, 1293, no longer filled that office in September, 1294. His removal was therefore probably antecedent to that of his prior.

Tynemouth contributed £204 9s. 10d.¹ A general tallage-roll of 1294, a survey of lands held in demesne and in villeinage, taken at Christinas, 1295, and a custumal of about the same time, alike attest to the necessity for strict economy which this financial pressure must have caused, and add to our knowledge of the state of the priory lands at this period.²

The destruction of Hexham priory by the Scots in April, 1296, must have warned the monks of Tynemouth that the time had come to put their monastery into a state of defence. In the autumn of that year they obtained licence from the king to fortify the priory with a wall of stone and lime, and to crenellate it.³ They appear to have commenced work at once upon their new fortress,⁴ and it was well that they did so, for in November, 1297, a Scottish army, led by William Wallace, again invaded Northumberland. Marching down the Tyne from Hexham, the Scots laid waste the village of Wylam, a possession of the priory,⁵ and advanced upon Newcastle. The inhabitants of Tynemouthshire, alarmed at the approach of the enemy, carried their valuables to the monastery. But the Scots, upon this occasion, did not dare to attack.⁶

Edward I. stayed a second time at Tynemouth from December 1st to 4th, 1298.⁷ A little later he restored to the monks their forfeited franchise (February 20th, 1299).⁸ He was again at Tynemouth on December 8th, 1299. Upon a fourth visit (June 21st to 26th, 1301), he was met by Anthony Bek, bishop of Durham. That bishop was then engaged in a dispute with the prior of Durham, which Edward heard in the chapter house upon the day of his arrival.⁹ Two years later the young

¹ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. p. 71.

² The rental is given in the *St. Alban's Register*, fols. 109-111, and the mensuration and custumal in the *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 4-10 and 36-44. Both may be supplemented, as evidences for the economic position of Tynemouthshire, by the Subsidy Roll of 1296.

³ Pro priore et conventu de Tynemuth. Rex omnibus, etc., salutem. Sciatis quod concessimus pro nobis et heredibus nostris dilectis nobis in Christo priori et conventui de Tynemuth quod ipsi prioratum suum predictum muro de petra et calce firmare et kernellare, et illum sic firmatum et kernellatum tenere possint sibi et successoribus suis sine occasione vel impedimento nostri vel heredum nostrorum justiciariorum aut aliorum ballivorum seu ministrorum nostrorum quorumcumque. In cujus, etc. T. R. apud Berewyk super Twedam, 5 die Sept. [1296]. *Pat. Rolls*, 24 Edw. I. m. 8. Duke of Northumberland's transcripts.

⁴ Upon February 2nd, 1296-1297, John de Greystoke and Robert de Somervill granted to the prior and convent of Tynemouth a wayleave over Benton moor, presumably for the carting of building material to the castle. *Newminster Chartulary*, Surt. Soc. No. 66, p. 283.

⁵ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 28.

⁶ Rishanger, *Gesta Edwardi I.* Rolls Series, p. 414.

⁷ Rishanger, *Chronica*, Rolls Series, p. 188.

⁸ *Charter Rolls*, 27 Edw. I. No. 31; Gibson, vol. ii. appendix, ci.

⁹ *Coram Rege Rolls*, No. 165.

queen, Margaret, stayed for some months (June to October, 1303) at the monastery.¹ Her royal husband did not forget, in the press of a Scottish campaign, to order a consignment of pike, bream and eels to be sent thither to her from the fishponds of the Fosse at York.² The men of Tynemouth were less hospitable, for some of them set upon her trumpeter, and robbed him of his silver and gilt trumpets.³ Upon leaving Tynemouth, Queen Margaret joined the king in Scotland, and returned south with him next year. Their hosts, the monks, took advantage of this last stay (September 8th to 18th, 1304) to obtain the queen's mediation with Edward for the restoration of Tynemouth market, which was granted to them;⁴ so their position was now nearly as secure as it had been before their unfortunate lawsuits of the last decade.

Edward II. also once visited Tynemouth. He had come to Newcastle with his favourite, Piers Gaveston, recalled for the last time from the banishment to which the baronial party had consigned him. Queen Isabella accompanied them, but left Newcastle to go to Tynemouth. On the morning of Ascension Day (May 4th, 1312), news came that Thomas, earl of Lancaster, Henry de Percy and Robert de Clifford were marching upon Newcastle with a large armed following. In hot haste the great seal was sent off. The king and Gaveston retreated to Tynemouth, just in time to escape capture, for the barons rode into Newcastle the same afternoon. Next day, in spite of the high seas, and in spite of the supplications of his wife, who was shortly to give birth to a child, Edward set sail with Gaveston for Scarborough. The earl of Lancaster followed, and forced Gaveston to capitulate on the 19th of the month. The subsequent execution of the unlucky favourite is a well-known tale. It was afterwards made a charge against Hugh Despenser the younger, who was at Tynemouth upon this occasion, that he had counselled Edward to leave his queen in great bodily peril when the county was full of invaders.⁵ Queen Isabella was again at Tynemouth in 1322, at which time a bastard child of the king, named Adam, was buried there.⁶

¹ *Cal. Doc. Rel. Scot.* ed. Bain, vol. ii. pp. 1376, 1398.

² *Close Rolls*, 31 Edw. I. m. 3.

³ *Coram Rege Rolls*, No. 186.

⁴ *Charter Rolls*, 32 Edw. I. No. 14; Gibson, vol. ii. appendix, ciii.

⁵ John de Trokelowe, *Annales*, Rolls Series, p. 75. *Gesta Edwardi de Carnarvon*, Rolls Series; *Chronicles, Edward I. and Edward II.*, vol. ii. p. 88. Rymer, *Foedera*, Record Commission, vol. ii. p. 169. Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. ii. appendix. cix and cxi.

⁶ Wardrobe account of Edward II. cited by Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 92.

A few years later the long struggle between St. Alban's and the Greystokes over the possession of the advowson of Conescliffe came to an end. Though the abbey had obtained a formal recognition of its claims in 1275, it had never gained peaceable possession. Hugh de Eversdon, abbot of St. Alban's, now induced Ralph fitz William, lord of Greystoke, to quitclaim all right to the advowson in exchange for the surrender of Thorpe Basset in Yorkshire. Eversdon also conceded to Greystoke and his heirs the right to have one secular chaplain in Tynemouth who should pray for the souls of Ralph de Greystoke, John de Greystoke his kinsman, and for the souls of their ancestors and of all faithful departed. The prior and convent bound themselves, March 26th, 1315, to appoint and make provision for the said chaplain and his successors.¹

With the inroads made into Northumberland by Robert Bruce and the increasing turbulence and restiveness of Northumbrian landowners, the county was in a very unsettled state. In November, 1313, it was found necessary to issue letters of protection to the prior of Tynemouth.² The English defeat at Bannockburn, next June, made matters worse, followed as it was by renewed activity on the part of the Scottish invaders. New letters of protection were obtained, which forbade the carrying off of the prior's corn or hay or farm stock—good evidence that the prohibited offence had been committed.³

The four following years (1314-1318) were probably the most disturbed in the whole history of the priory. Upon the office of prior falling vacant, the abbot of St. Alban's gave that onerous position to a man who in every way proved himself worthy of the trust reposed in him. 'Richard de Tewing well and nobly ruled the cell with a strong hand in a time of great distress, when for four years on end no serf dared plough and

¹ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. pp. 115-117. *Newminster Chartulary*, Surt. Soc. No. 66, pp. 290-291. The names of the following chaplains of the chantry are recorded: Thomas de Bulmer 'ante primam pestilenciam,' Gilbert Wilkynson of Tynemouth (living 1363-1391), Robert de Amble, John de Walsingham, and John de Whalton. *Ibid.*

² *Cal. Pat. Rolls*, 1313-1317, p. 42.

³ *De Protectione*. Rex omnibus ballivis et fidelibus suis ad quos, etc., salutem. Indempnitati dilectorum nobis in Christo prioris et conventus de Tynemuth, quorum bona et catalla per hostiles aggressus Scotorum inimicorum et rebellium nostrorum in comitatu Northumbrie quam plurimum devastantur, prospicere volentes, suscepimus in proteccionem et defensionem nostram ipsos priorem et conventum, homines, terras, res, redditus, et omnes possessiones suas. Et ideo vobis mandamus quod ipsos priorem et conventum, etc. Volumus etiam quod de bladis, fenis, victualibus, carcagiis, vel aliis bonis seu catallis dictorum prioris et conventus ad opus nostrum seu aliorum quorumcumque contra voluntatem ipsorum prioris et conventus quicquam nullatenus capiatur. In ejus, etc. Per unum annum dur. T. R. apud Eboracum xv die Sept. [1314]. *Pat. Rolls*, 8 Edw. II. p. 1, m. 25. Duke of Northumberland's transcripts.

no sower dared sow for fear of the enemy. Yet none the less did he keep the place, and not only by his industry did he honourably maintain the monks, but during that time he kept within the priory eighty armed men to guard the place, not without great expense.¹ Prior Tewing has earned the gratitude of the historian by having left a chartulary and a fragmentary register of his priorate.²

The Scots poured over the border in 1315. Carlisle, Newcastle, Tynemouth priory and the Northumbrian castles were the only places in which safety could be found, and even their defence was difficult and costly.³ Marauding bands of English too roamed over the country. They were known as 'shavaldores' and their mode of warfare as 'shavaldry.'⁴ Chief among these robbers were Gilbert de Middleton and Walter de Selby, whose eventful histories will be related later. John the Irishman—an old soldier of Bamburgh garrison, who kidnapped the Lady Clifford—was another noted shavaldore. The *Tynemouth Chartulary* gives two letters relating to him, written to the bailiffs of Tynemouth by Adam de Swynburn, the sheriff, who afterwards turned rebel himself; in one of which the arrest of John the Irishman and his band is ordered; in the

¹ Cottonian MSS. Nero D vii. fol. 51 b, cited by Gibson, vol. ii. p. 36.

² They form the nucleus of the so-called *Tynemouth Chartulary*, a small octavo volume of 218 leaves in the possession of the duke of Northumberland. The chartulary of Richard de Tewing is a good specimen of medieval penmanship and is illuminated; a facsimile of one of the charters is given in Gibson, vol. i. to face p. 140. It extends from fol. 77 to fol. 104 of the volume, and is headed, 'Conscripta diversarum cartarum et diversorum scriptorum de tempore fratris Ricardi de Tewing, quondam prioris.' Later hands have continued it (unilluminated) to 1352 and thence to 1381 (fols. 105-118). The Register extends from 1328 to 1340 (fols. 159-176), and documents relating to the earlier part of Tewing's priorate are given in other parts of the codex.

³ John de Trokelowe, *Annales*, Rolls Series, p. 91.

⁴ There are several authorities for the use of the name 'shavaldores' as applied to marauders at this period. (1) Trokelowe, *Annales*, p. 99, in an account of the capture of Lewis de Beaumont in 1317—'Quidam fatui de Northumbria, qui dicebantur *savaldores* (quorum duces fuerunt Gilbertus de Midiltone miles et Walterus de Selby), cum magna multitudine fatuorum, de quadam valle ex inopinato prorumpentes, irruerant in eos.' (2) Sir Thomas Grey, *Scalachronica*, Maitland Club Publications, p. 147—'Johan le Irroys ravist la dame de Clifford. Les maufesurs estoient appelez *schavaldours*.' (3) Robert de Graystones, *Tres Scriptores*, p. 94—'Quidam enim qui portabat robas episcopi (Dunelmensis), et erat in munitione castri de Norham, occidit quandam *schavaldum* vel praedonem, Johannem de Wardal nomine, sed regi familiarem, in Insula Sacra.' (4) *Guisborough Chartulary*, vol. ii. p. 357; Surt. Soc. No. 89—'Sciat celsitudo regia . . . ecclesias nostras de Valle Anandiae, de dyocesi Karliolensi, ac etiam de episcopatu Dunolmensi, per miserabilem Scotorum et etiam *schavaldorum* depredationem . . . multis temporibus retroactis funditus dissipatas. (5) *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 11, survey of Tynemouth in 1336—'Primo est una placea terrae vastae propinquier porte prioratus de Tynemuth ex parte australi, quae placea, dum edificata fuit, reddere consuevit xvijjd.; set, domibus super eandem placeam edificatis per priorem de Tynemuth dirutis, et, ut oportuit, prostratis, ne *shavaldores* et alii barones tempore guerrae et shavaldri in destructionem et capcionem prioratus de Tynemuth in eisdem domibus fuissent recepti et absconsi, Robertus de Slikborne eandem placeam dicto priori sursum reddidit; set adhuc eadem placea jacet vasta in manu prioris nec aliquid reddit.' All these writers refer to northern events, so that the name would seem, in its origin, to have had a very local character. It is difficult to find an etymology for the word, which, from its suffix, would seem to be of French origin. It occurs latinised as 'discursor, vacabundus.'

other, written after some members at least of that company had been captured, directions are given for the levying of distraint upon their goods with a view to enforcing their appearance before the king.¹

Gilbert de Middelton was a more dangerous enemy. He appears to have made a strong effort to get Tynemouth castle into his hands. Vigorous measures were taken by the monks. A number of the houses which nestled round the priory gateway were pulled down, lest the shavaldores should use them as a cover for attack. The defence, which was entrusted to Sir Robert Delaval, proved successful.²

Middelton's capture and execution in 1318 lessened the strain of the situation, but, as things were still in a very unsettled state, the king, with the consent of the abbot of St. Alban's, entrusted the custody of the castle, May 12th, 1318, to John de Haustede to hold at the royal pleasure. This measure was prompted by the necessity for resisting the attacks of the Scots and Northumbrian rebels, and giving some security to the people of the district.³ A two years' truce was made with the Scots in

¹ Adam de Swyneburn viscount de Northumbr' as bailiffs de la fraunchis de Tynemue salut. Le maundement monsieur William de Mountague gardeyn du chastel Bernard ai resceu en cestes paroles. "William de Mountague gardeyn du chastel Bernard de part nostre seigneur le roi a sire Adam de Swyneburn viscount de Northumbr' salut. Nous vous comandonns de part nostre seigneur le roi que vous prenetz Johan de Ireys et tot sa compaignie ou que vous les trovetz deintz vostre baillie, deintz fraunchis ou dehors, et sauvement en prison le gardetz taunque nostre seigneur le roi en face sa volente." Par quoi vous maund que execucion de ceo maundement deintz vostre fraunchis pleynement parfourmetz issint que le roi neit meistre de mettre la meyne.

Adam de Swyneburn viscount de Northumbr' as bailiffs de la fraunchis de Tynemue salut. Le maundement nostre seigneur le roy ai resceu en cest paroles. "Edward par la grace de dieu roy d'Engleterre etc. a viscount de Northumbr' salut. Pur ceo que vous avez maunde que vous ne avez dount a faire venir les prisouns en vostre gard et que fourent en la compaignie Johan le Ireys, vous maundons que vous facetz enquire en qi meyns les biens sont que feurent pris ovesq eux, et ces biens facetz prendre et seisir en nostre meyn, et de ces biens facetz venir les prisouns avaunditz, ou que nous seioms en Engleterre, a pluis en haste que vous poaitz. Don' sontz nostre prive seal a Clipston en Sherwode le primer jour de Januer l'an de regne novisme." Par quay vous maund que plenere execucion de ceste maundement facetz.

Memorandum quod, die Jovis proxime ante festum sancti Hillarii anno r. E. fil. reg. E. nono, Warinus de Swetopp, subvicecomes Northumbriae, recepit apud castrum regis ville Novi Castri super Tynam de Thoma de Belsowe, senescallo libertatis de Tynem', per returnum brevis domini regis de privato sigillo dicto senescallo et ballivis libertatis predictae directum, corpora Willelmi Cosyn et Johannis Lyvet, Hibernicorum captorum et imprisonatorum in prisona libertatis de Tynem' per returnum et mandatum littere domini Willelmi de Montague, constabularii et custodis castri de Castro Bernardi, ad corpora predictorum Willelmi et Johannis unacum aliis qui fuerunt de secreta Johannis de Hibernia capienda et in prisonam salvo custodienda, ad ducenda corpora dictorum Willelmi et Johannis coram domino rege ubicumque fuerit in Anglia, prout idem dominus rex per litteram suam de privato sigillo prefato vicecomiti mandavit. In cujus rei testimonium sigillum officiale conventuale est apensum. Datum apud castrum regis Novi Castri super Tynam, die et anno supradictis [January 1st, 1315-1316]. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol 167 b.

Adam de Swynburn was appointed sheriff October 16th, 1315. P.R.O. Lists and Indexes, No. ix. p. 97.

² *Ancient Petitions*, No. 3,994, and *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 11.

³ De custodia mansi prioratus de Tynemuth commissa. Rex, de assensu abbatis de Sancto Albano, commisit Johanni de Haustede custodiam mansi prioratus de Tynemuth, qui est cella abbacie predictae, habendam quamdiu regi placeret, pro repulsione Scotorum inimicorum et rebellium regis et securiori salvacione populi regis partium earundem. In cujus, etc. T. R. apud Wyndes' xij die Maii. Per ipsum

1319, but was kept with difficulty, owing to acts of aggression on the part of the English. A letter in the *Tynemouth Chartulary* furnishes an instance of this continued bickering.

'To his dear friend, Richard, prior of Tynemouth, Robert de Umframvyll, earl of Angus, guardian of the truce in the north parts, love and greeting. As we have heard that your men have arrested three poor Scottish boys, who landed at Shields out of a Scottish vessel, partly because their vessel was damaged in a gale in the port of Tyne, and partly for want of food, as we are credibly informed, we pray you and command you, sir, in the king's name, for the maintenance of the truce and accord between the kingdoms, to deliver up the said boys, that the men of Scotland take not example and grieve our people of England by reason of the said boys' detention. May God keep you, sir.'¹

Walter de Selby surrendered at Mitford in November, 1321, and William de Middelton, a brother of Gilbert, was taken with him. Middelton, thrown into prison at Newcastle, was afterwards released on bail. When on bail he was captured and carried off by the Scots, but, escaping from them, found refuge in the liberty of Tynemouth. The bailiffs of the liberty refused to hand him back to the sheriff, and a special mandate had to be sent to them by the king before he was surrendered.²

regem. Et mandatum est comitibus, baronibus, militibus et omnibus aliis de comitatu Northumbrie, tam infra libertates quam extra, ad quos, etc., quod eidem Johanni in omnibus que ad repulsionem dictorum inimicorum regis ac salvationem populi regis ibidem et partium predictarum ac custodiam illam pertinent intendentes sint et auxiliantes, quociens et prout idem Johannes regi scire fecerit ex parte regis. *Pat. Rolls*, 11 Edw. II, p. 2, m. 18. Duke of Northumberland's transcripts.

Haustede was appointed custodian of the river Tyne from Newcastle to the sea on August 23rd of the same year (*Cal. Pat. Rolls*, 1317-1321, p. 201).

¹ A son chier amy Richard priour de Tynemuth, Robert d'Umframvyll, counte d'Anegus, gardeyn de la trewe en les parties de North', salut et bon amour. Pur ceo, sire, que nous avoms entenduz que vos gentz ount arestuz treis povres garceons d'Escoce qui vyndrent sur terre as les Sheles hors d'une nief d'Escoce, qui fuyt chatrie desur (?) en le haven de Tyne par tempeste et par defaute des vitailles alce que nous avoms de certeyn; par quoi, sire, vous prioms et chargeoms de par le roi, pur la trewe meyntiegnier et acord entre les realmes, voiletz les ditz garceouns delyvrer, issynt que les gentz d'Escoce ne preignent ensamble de grever nos gentz d'Engleterre par la reson de la detenue des les avant ditz garceouns. A dieu, sire, qui vous gard.

Littera originalis hujus transcripti est in thesauro. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 215.

² (1) De Willelmo de Middelton vicecomiti Northumbrie liberando. Rex dilecto sibi in Christo . . . priori de Tynemuth, salutem. Cum, ut accepimus, Willelmus de Middelton, qui cum aliis malefactoribus et pacis nostre perturbatoribus in castro de Mitford, tunc contra nos tento, captus et ea occasione per vicecomitem nostrum Northumbrie prisione nostre castri de Novo Castro super Tynam extitit mancipatus, et postmodum per ipsum vicecomitem per manucapcionem a prisiona praedicta deliberatus, ut dicitur, per Scotos inimicos et rebelles nostros, tunc partes marchie hostiliter invadentes, captus fuisset et abductus, idemque Willelmus a manibus ipsorum Scotorum evadens se transtulit ad libertatem nostram in qua per vos detinetur, licet dictus vicecomes a vobis petierit ipsum Willelmum sibi liberari, per quod dictus vicecomes nobis supplicavit ut ei subvenire curaremus in hac parte; nos supplicationi illi annuere et manucapcionem predictam in suo robore volentes permanere, vobis mandamus quod ipsum Willelmum prefato vicecomiti nostro liberetis prisione nostre predictae, sicut prius mancipando. T. R. apud Eboracum xxv die Junii [1322]. *Close Rolls*, 15 Edw. II, m. 4. Duke of Northumberland's transcripts.

(2) Writ to the sheriff to the same effect, dated June 30th.

(3) Nec indentura testatur quod die Martis proximo post festum Translationis Sancti Thome Martiris, a. r. r. E. fil. r. E. 16^o, Johannes de Fenwyk, vicecomes Northumbriae, recepit de ballivo libertatis de Tynemuth, virtute cujusdam brevis domino R. priori de Tynemuth directi, Willelmum de Middelton, etc. In cujus rei testimonium, etc. In presentia Roberti de Ryhull, Gilberti Daudre, Alani de Castro, et aliorum tunc presentium. Datum apud Tynem', die et anno suprascriptis [July 5th, 1322]. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 212 b.

Cp. vol. v. of this work, p. 299, for similar documents from this chartulary relative to Nicholas of Hauxley.

These dissensions, and the want of harmony prevailing between the king's officers and those upon whose help they ought to have relied, received a further illustration a few months later when David de Strabolgy, warden of Northumberland, ordered the arrest and detention at Newcastle of forty-one of the armed men whom the prior was keeping at his own expense as a garrison for Tynemouth.¹

King Edward found it necessary to interfere and to disavow the action of his officer. It was an act of folly to deprive Tynemouth at this critical time of half its defenders. He wrote, therefore, to the prior, desiring him not to allow any of his garrison to quit the castle, and sent a similar command to Strabolgy. Orders were issued to the warden not to compel any of the garrison to come before him; but to permit them to go out and in freely for stores, and assist the prior. The sheriff was commanded to release at once those whom he had arrested and to restore what he had distrained.² Prior Tewing secured his position, March 8th, 1322/3,³ by obtaining fresh letters of protection.

¹ Johan de Fenwyk vic' de Northumbr' as les bailifs de la franchise de Tynemuth, salut. Jeo ai resceu le maundement Davy de Strabolgy, counte d'Atholl, seigneur de Chillam, gardeyn de Northumbr'; 'Au viscount de Northumbr', salut. Nous vous maundons de par nostre seigneur le roi que vous facetz attacher et prendre trestoutz les corps dont nous vous enveions les nouns deynz nostre lettre, c'est assavoir, etc. (a list of 41 names follows), quele part que vous les puysetz trover deynz vostre baillie, issynt que vous metz lour corps daynz le chastel nostre seigneur le roi de la ville de Noef Chastel sur Tyne yceo lundy proscheyn devant la feste seynt Thomas l'apostle, illoesque salvement agardyr tanque vous cietz altre maundement de part nostre seigneur le roi. Et facetz seysyr en la meyn nostre seigneur le roi lour terres et tenementz biens et chateux ou qu'ilz soient trovez, qux q'ilz soient et ou q'ilz soient trovez, et salvement les gardetz al oepe nostre seigneur le roi tanque il vous maunde sa volonte, et ceo ne lessetz sur quant que vous porriez forfaire vers le dit nostre seigneur le roi. Escrypt a Tyn' le jour de seynt Luce, l'an, etc., xvj^o [October 18th, 1322]. Par quoi vous maunde de par nostre seigneur le roi que vous perfacetz ceste maundement en toutz, sur peyne de quant que vous porrietz forfaire au roi et de perdre vostre fraunchise. *Tynemouth Charters*, fol. 213.

John de Fenwyk was appointed sheriff of Northumberland October 12th, 1319, and again February 19th, 1325. P.R.O. Lists and Indexes, No. ix. p. 97.

² De prioratu de Tynemuth sufficienti garnistura, etc., muniendo. Rex vicecomiti Northumbrie, salutem. Ex parte dilecti nobis in Christo prioris de Tynemuth nobis est ostensum quod, cum ipse habeat prioratum illum de Tynemuth suo periculo custodiendum, etc., dilectus et fidelis noster David de Strabolgi, comes Athol, etc., tibi jam precepit quod ipsum priorem et quam plures de garnestura predicta per corpora sua capi, ac libertatem ejusdem prioris ibidem, et terras et tenementa, bona et catalla sua et aliorum quamplurium de eadem garnestura in manum nostrum seisire faceres, causa aliqua precepti illius in eodem minime expressa; nolentes quod idem prior in hac parte indebite prosequetur seu super custodiam dicti prioratus faciendam aliquatiter impediatur, tibi precipimus quod, si prefatus comes preceptum hujus modi tibi fecerit, et tu eo pretextu ipsum priorem aut aliquem de garnestura predicta ceperis, seu libertatem ipsius prioris aut terras aut tenementa, bona vel catalla aut aliquorum de garnestura predicta in manum nostram seisire feceris; tunc, accepta sufficienti securitate a prefato priore et aliis de garnestura illa, quos negotium illud tangit, de respondendo nobis si prefatus comes vel alius nomine nostro versus eos loqui voluerit de inobediencia aliqua nobis facta in hac parte, ipsum priorem et alios de garnestura predicta sic captos a prisa hujusmodi sine dilacione aliqua deliberari eidemque priori libertatem suam predictam, ac terras et tenementa, bona et catalla sua, et aliis de garnestura similiter terras et tenementa, bona et catalla sua in manum nostram sic seisita, restitui facias, per securitatem predictam, ipsum priorem seu aliquem de garnestura predicta de cetero non molestans seu gravans pretextu precepti memorati. T. R. apud Eboracum xxx die Decembris. *Close Rolls*, 16 Edw. II. m. 16. Duke of Northumberland's transcripts.

³ *Cal. Pat. Rolls*, 1321-1324, p. 261.

The truce now made with the Scots relieved the Northumbrian land-owners from the duty of defence, and left them a free hand in the prosecution of their private enmities. Robert Delaval, Walter Delaval, Thomas de Woodburn, Walter de Gourley, and John de Oseworth cut down the prior's trees in the manor of Bewick, carried off plunder, and turned cattle into the standing corn; seized his goods and chattels at Ellington and at Middle Chirton, impounded and starved a number of his cattle at Seaton Delaval, and stole ten cows and other property from Tynemouth itself. The prior estimated his losses at £150.¹ Thomas de Middelton and others took away eighty oxen and sixty cows as well as household goods from Tynemouth, Preston, East and Middle Chirton, Backworth and Monkseaton, the whole valued at £300. William de Ellerington and his companions cut down trees and carried away valuables at Wylam to the amount of £200. These are a few instances of the brigandage to which the monastic lands, and especially Bewick, were subjected.²

It speaks well for the capacity of Prior Tewing that, in spite of these heavy losses and of the legal expenses which they entailed, in spite too of the expense of keeping up a large garrison, he was able to satisfy the financial demands of his abbot, Hugh de Eversdon (itself no easy task), by judicious purchases of demesne land and house property in Newcastle and Berwick. Nor did his enterprise stop at investments in temporalities. Abbot Eversdon was renowned for his special devotion to the Virgin, of which he gave proof by completing the Lady-chapel at the east end of

¹ Prior de Tynemuth per Thomam de Wilton attornatum suum optulit se versus Robertum de la Val, Walterum de la Val, Thomam de Wodeburn, Walterum de Gourley et Johannem de Oseworth de placito quare vi et armis arbores ipsius prioris apud Bewyk nunc crescentes succiderunt et arbores illas ac alia bona et catalla sua ad valenciam quadraginta librarum ibidem inventa ceperunt et asportaverunt, necnon blada et herba sua ad valenciam sexaginta librarum ibidem similiter nuper crescencia cum quibusdam averiis depasti fuerunt conculcaverunt et consumpserunt; versus Johannem de Oseworth de placito quare vi et armis bona et catalla ipsius prioris ad valenciam viginti librarum apud Middel Chirton inventa cepit et asportavit: versus Robertum de la Val, Walterum de la Val, et Johannem de Oseworth, de placito quare vi et armis decem vaccas ipsius, precii decem librarum, apud Tynemuth inventa, maliciose interfecerunt, et bona et catalla sua ad valenciam decem librarum ibidem similiter inventa ceperunt et asportaverunt; versus Radulphum Hoby, Willelmum Roberdespundere de la Val, Robertum de la Val, et Johannem de Oseworth, de placito quare vi et armis averia ipsius prioris apud Seton de la Val absque causa rationabili ceperunt et imparcaverunt, et ea tam diu imparcata sine alimento contra legem et consuetudinem regni nostri detinuerunt, quod magna pars averiorum illorum fame interiit; versus Thomam de Wodeburn de placito quare vi et armis bona et catalla ipsius prioris ad valenciam decem librarum apud Elyngton inventa cepit et asportavit. *Coram Rege Rolls*, No. 260. Duke of Northumberland's transcripts.

² *Cal. Pat. Rolls*, 1324-1327, p. 289, and *ibid.* 1330-1334, pp. 389, 444. Details of an outrage at Elswick committed against the prior will be found *ibid.* 1334-1338, p. 512.

St. Alban's church.¹ Prior Tewing, emulous of his example, found means to erect a Lady-chapel at Tynemouth. It is described as a new building in 1336, and was probably begun before Eversdon's death in 1326. A special endowment of lands was set apart for its maintenance, and it was put under the control of a master or warden, an office held by Geoffrey de Binham in 1338.² Repairs to other conventual buildings seem to have been proceeding in 1320, when Henry de Faukes granted to the prior and convent a wayleave for their carts for carrying stone slates from the quarries in West Backworth for roofing the monks' dwellings.³

Building and purchases of land were both calculated to be profitable investments. But capital was being sunk at a time when much depended upon the retention of a balance in hand. The maintenance of a garrison over several years was exceedingly costly. Private purses were providing the means for public defence. So great had the strain become at the commencement of Edward III.'s reign that the prior addressed the following petition to the king, in which he drew a gloomy picture of the state of affairs :

To our lord the king and to his council, their chaplain, the prior of Tynemouth, prays that, whereas the property of his priory is burnt and destroyed by the Scottish enemy, so that he is unable to sustain or retain men-at-arms and others for the safeguard of the said house, if he be not aided, it may please you to command that he be aided with victuals for the safety of the house above-mentioned, or certainly he must abandon the defence.

The king accordingly granted supplies to the amount of £20, and (September 28th, 1327) ordered his receiver of victuals at Newcastle to make the necessary payment.⁴ Letters of protection were issued to the prior in the same year, and again in 1332, when, after the ineffectual peace of Northampton, war recommenced between England and Scotland.⁵ The

¹ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 18 b (survey of Tynemouth in 1336), cited in Gibson, vol. i. p. 148, note. For Hugh de Eversdon's cult of the Virgin, see *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. p. 114. 'Hic abbas, cum, inter omnes electos Dei, Beatam ejus Genitricem speciali devotione veneraretur, loca sua et ornamenta eidem Virgini dedicare semper studuit.' He also had a reputation for extortion. The prior of Tynemouth is reported to have been 'so cleared out' (tantum exinanitus) as to be unable to make any gift at the election of the next abbot. *Ibid.* p. 187.

² *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 172 b.

³ *Ibid.* fol. 80 b ; Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 90.

⁴ A nostre seigneur le roi et a son conseil prie son chapelain le priour de Tynemuth que come les biens de mesme sa prïorie sjoient ars et destrutz par les enemys d'Escocie par quoi il n'est mye de poair de sustenir ne de retenir gentz d'armes et autres pur la sauve gard de mesme la meson s'il ne soit eideitz, q'il vous pleise comander q'il soit eideitz de vitailles pur la sauve de la meson avantdite, ou certeynement il lui covent weyver la gard. Endorsed : Memorandum quod habeat de victualibus que sunt apud Novum Castrum super Tinam pro municione ad valenciam xxli. hac vice de dono, etc., et super hoc mandetur custodi victualium, etc., quod liberet. *Ancient Petitions*, P.R.O. 3,800. Cp. *Cal. Close Rolls*, 1327-1330, p. 170.

⁵ *Cal. Pat. Rolls*, 1327-1330, p. 98 ; *ibid.* 1330-1334, p. 344. Letters of protection were also granted in 1335 ; *ibid.* 1334-1338, p. 178.

battle of Halidon Hill won the English a temporary advantage. Next year (July 1st, 1335), the king, who was then at Newcastle, paid a visit to Tynemouth priory.¹ Meanwhile his army lay at Elswick, where the soldiers did such damage to the prior's pasture by their going and coming that but little was offered for it during the next few years.² This, however, was of comparatively small consequence to the priory, since Richard Scot of Newcastle levied the prior's rents at Elswick and Wylam himself, and so terrorised the men and servants of the monastery, that they dared not even come to Newcastle to buy victuals or to transact business.³

Prior Richard Tewing died in 1340. Thomas de la Mare, a St. Alban's monk of aristocratic connections, succeeded. Among his near kinsmen he numbered the Montacutes, de la Zouches, and Grandissons. His two brothers and his sisters had, like himself, adopted the monastic profession. The description given of him by his biographer, as well as the fine brass of Flemish workmanship which formerly marked his grave in St. Alban's abbey church, shows him to have been singularly handsome. He had well-modelled features, long graceful fingers, and as a boy he had had a very delicate complexion. He was a good scholar, being especially a student of rhetoric. 'The Pope himself,' it was said, 'could find no fault in his Latinity.' His pleasant courtesy won him popularity with high and low. The Black Prince was in later days his special friend, and is reported to have said to the earl of Northampton upon one occasion, 'I love Thomas de la Mare as if he were my father's son.' The sick and the leprous were tended by him; he was always ready to supply his fellows with personal comforts, and his natural dignity was such that he did not shrink from the performance of menial offices. Afterwards, when abbot of St. Alban's, he would sometimes himself ring the chapel bell for the services at which he was a regular attendant. He was justly proud of the singing of his monks. Always punctual himself, he knew how to promote punctuality in others; those who came late to dinner were not met with angry words, but were made to pay for the wine drunk during the meal. The encomium passed upon him by Edward III. was probably true, 'In person, breeding, and humanity, there is no abbot in my kingdom who can compare with him.'⁴

¹ *Cal. Close Rolls*, 1333-1337, p. 415.

² *Cal. Pat. Rolls*, 1338-1341, p. 67.

³ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 166 b, 172 b.

⁴ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. p. 371 *et seq.*



BRASS OF THOMAS DE LA MARE, ABBOT OF ST. ALBANS.

Thomas de la Mare had assumed the monastic habit at Wymondham, where he had been chaplain to the prior. At St. Alban's he had held the offices of kitchener and cellarer, and the business capacity which he there showed was much needed in the conduct of affairs at Tynemouth. He found that house 'so miserably depressed in its estate that its goods no longer sufficed for the maintenance of the prior and convent, and for the defence of the priory against the perils then imminent.' This was due to the need of entertaining the nobles whom the conduct of the Scottish war brought into those parts, quite as much as to the frequent forays of the Scots themselves, who burnt the manor houses, villages, barns, and buildings of the priory, drove off the cattle from the estates and plundered the houses of the tenants. One of Thomas de la Mare's first acts was to journey to Langley in Hertfordshire, where the king was holding a great tournament. There he disclosed to King Edward the necessities of the priory, and what danger there was of its capture and destruction. He succeeded in getting letters of protection for the monastery and its possessions during the duration of the war. The king also issued injunctions to the wardens of the marches that neither they nor others should upon any pretext make a stay in the priory unless they were specially invited to that house by its prior, and that they should not take anything of the prior and convent or of their tenants against their will.¹

¹ De Protectione. Rex universis et singulis custodibus Marchie Scocie vicecomitibus ballivis ministris et aliis fidelibus suis ad quos, etc., salutem. Quia prioratus de Tynemuth, qui est cella abbathie Sancti Albani que quidem abbathia de nostro patronatu esse dinoscitur, tam per frequentes aggressus et invasiones Scottorum inimicorum nostrorum qui maneria villas grangeas et alia edificia ad prioratum predictum spectancia hostiliter sepius combusserunt et pecora ac alia bona et catalla dilectorum nobis in Cristo prioris et conventus eiusdem prioratus ceperunt abduxerunt et totaliter consumpserunt, quam accessus magnatum et aliorum ad prioratum predictum confluencium et in eodem perhendingancium, adeo miserabiliter deprimitur, ut accepimus, hiis diebus quod bona illius ad sustentacionem dictorum prioris et conventus prioratus illius ac municiones pro eodem necessarias et ad quedam alia ad custodiam eiusdem prioratus spectancia invenienda guerrarum periculis imminetibus sufficere non poterunt, quodque de status eiusdem prioratus subversione et monachorum ibidem pro animabus progenitorum nostrorum omniumque fidelium divina celebrancium dispersione, necnon elemosinarum que ibidem hactenus fieri consueverunt diminutione et subtraccione, et, quod peius est, predictus prioratus, qui castrum reputari poterit, perditionali capcione quod absit verisimiliter formidatur, nisi remedium super hoc cicius apponatur; nos tantis malis periculis et dispendiis precavere volentes ut tenemur, affectantesque quod exitus redditus seu proventus terrarum et possessionum predictarum, quatenus ultra sustentacionem dictorum prioris et conventus et ministrorum suorum necessario sufficere poterunt, in relevacione status prioratus predicti saluam et securam custodiam eiusdem applicentur, prioratum predictum ac priorem et conventum et homines terras res redditus et omnes possessiones ad prioratum predictum spectantes seu pertinentes suscepimus in protectionem et defensionem nostram specialem. Et ideo, etc. Et si quid, etc. Nolumus enim quod aliquis vestrum aut alius quicumque cuiuscumque status seu condicionis fuerit in prioratu predicto, imminetibus periculis predictis, quocumque colore hospitetur aut moram faciat quovis modo, nisi per priorem dicti prioratus ex certa causa fuerit specialius invitatus, nec de bonis aut rebus ipsorum prioris et conventus seu hominum suorum contra voluntatem suam quicquam capiant quovis modo. In cuius, etc. Quamdiu dicta guerra duraverit duratura. Teste rege apud Langele viij die Februarii [A.D. 1341]. Per ipsum regem et consilium. *Patent Roll*, P.R.O. 15 Edw. III. pars 1, m. 44.

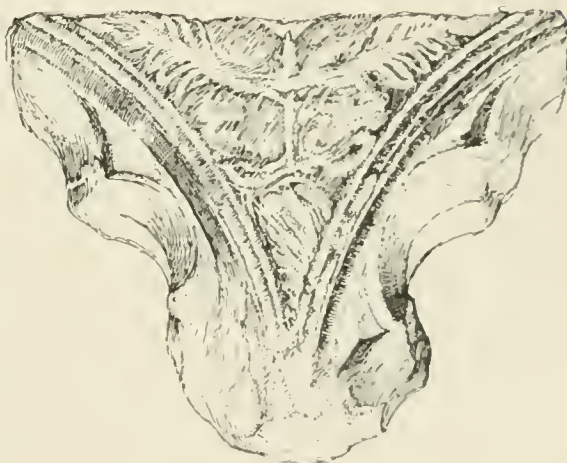
The first three years of de la Mare's priorate were spent in the prosecution of various lawsuits. In the most important of these suits Gerard de Widdrington claimed the manor of Hauxley. As the case proceeded it became more and more evident that the prior would win, upon which Widdrington attempted force. The prior's biographer reports that for a whole year de la Mare was daily in fear of assassination; no day dawned which might not bring news of the murder of one of his supporters. Upon one occasion some Austin friars were caught by Widdrington on their way from Tynemouth and put to the torture under the impression that they were Benedictines. Sir Henry Percy, though a friend of the prior, was unwilling to give him any help, since he would not take any steps against a knight who was of his fee, so strong had the tie already become which bound lord and retainer. His wife, Lady Mary Percy, was the only friend upon whom the prior could rely. She is said to have sent him all her jewels, and to have bidden him sell them and employ the proceeds in the suit rather than suffer it to drop for lack of means. She also sent him a renowned duellist, Sir Thomas Colville, for force could only be met by force. Colville engaged to maintain the prior's cause in battle, and as no one dared to stand up against him, de la Mare won the day. Lady Mary Percy subsequently appointed the prior to be her confessor.

Another three years were spent mainly in the work of religious instruction. De la Mare himself preached effectively, both in English and in Latin. So earnest was he in discourse that his sermons were often interrupted by his sobs. He gathered round him many secular clergy and mendicant friars to assist him in his work. The Scottish invasion of 1346, when the upper Tyne valley fell entirely into the hands of the invaders, put an end to peaceful evangelization. Their leader, Sir William Douglas, sent a message to the prior, bidding him prepare dinner for him at Tynemouth; for in two days' time, he said, he would sup with him in his priory. So it was, though under different circumstances to those which had been in Douglas's mind when he sent his arrogant message, for he was captured at Neville's Cross, and sent to Tynemouth for safe custody. De la Mare met him and bade him welcome to the dinner which was made ready. 'In truth,' said Douglas, 'I am sorry for this visit.' De la Mare replied, 'You could not have chosen a better time for it.' In the same fight David, king of Scotland, was taken prisoner. The prior was suffering at the time from

an eye complaint, but the joyful news made him well again. He tore off his bandages, and never had a return of the disorder.

Though the victory of Neville's Cross relieved the priory of the long strain of the Scottish war, it occasioned a struggle with the English military leaders. Ralph de Neville, who had lately been appointed warden of the marches, argued that Tynemouth was a royal castle. He sent there all the able-bodied Scottish prisoners to be kept under guard. Their custody naturally proved an expensive charge upon the monastery, as well as detrimental to its privileges. Accordingly the prior journeyed to the royal court, and, through the mediation of a nobleman there, named De Ufford, obtained a royal writ which forbade any prisoner to be sent into Tynemouth castle, and ordered that no one except the prior for the time being should exert authority within the castle.¹

De la Mare had already planned several alterations to the priory buildings, which had hitherto been deferred owing to the necessities of the time. Peace being now regained, he was able to execute his projects, and the last three years of his priorate (1346-1349) were spent in repairing the walls and buildings of the castle and priory, as well as in making new buildings. Until that time the shrine of St. Oswin had been united with the high altar. Monastic services had consequently interfered with, or been interrupted by, the devotions of pilgrims. The prior now moved the shrine from its original position to another portion of the church (his



SPANDRIL IN PRIORY CHURCH.

¹ Walsingham's narrative cannot be accepted as it stands. He says that the prior 'clam venit ad Langley, ubi curia regis fuit, et hastiludia ob puerperium Philippae reginae, quae enixa fuerat tunc Edmundum.' The tournament was held on February 2nd, 1341 (Baker, *Chronicon*, Caxton Society, p. 73), while Edmund of Langley was not born till June 5th following (*Chronicon Angliae*, 1328-1388, Rolls Series, p. 12). Apart from this discrepancy, there is the more serious difficulty that Ralph Neville, warden of the marches, is made the principal in the quarrel. Neville was not made warden till September 12th, 1346; and the battle of Neville's Cross, about which time these events are said to have occurred, was fought on October 17th, 1346. Walsingham appears to have confused an occurrence of 1346 or 1347 with the granting of the letters of protection quoted in the last note, which were granted at Langley on February 8th, 1341. His whole account of the priorate of Thomas de la Mare (*Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. pp. 375-380) is a vivid and perhaps highly-coloured sketch, which cannot be trusted for accuracy of historical detail.

biographer, unfortunately, does not indicate what new place was found for it). This work, with the alteration to the high altar necessitated by the removal of the shrine, and the decoration of the church in certain minor and unspecified particulars, cost £70. De la Mare further expended £90 in building a new brew-house, and £87 in making a dormitory. The total outlay made by him upon the church amounted to no less than £864. On the other hand, by the purchase of various tenements and 590 acres of arable and meadow land, he increased the annual revenue of the priory by £35 4s. 10½d.

A strange story is told of what was seen at Tynemouth one winter morning when Thomas de la Mare was prior. Service was daily said for the souls of the departed in the 'chapel of the dead,' which was perhaps a mortuary chapel within the conventual cemetery. Early in the morning, before sunrise, a monk was reciting the customary service in this chapel. He was alone, except for a boy who made the responses. Office, collect, epistle and gospel had been read, and the ceremony of cleansing the sacred vessels was being performed, when the boy turned round and saw a cowed figure coming in at the chapel door. In the half-light he saw it kneel down in a corner of the chapel and bend its face to the earth, as if in prayer. The scared lad put himself between the priest and the altar. His behaviour surprised the priest, who, however, proceeded with the mass, and, when the celebration was over, asked the boy the cause of his alarm. Then he too saw the apparition kneeling in the corner of the building. Boldly approaching the figure, he lightly touched it with his sleeve, saying, 'Rise, brother; return to thy rest;' upon which the kneeling form stood up, went out at the door, and was lost to sight.¹

When the Black Death depleted the monastery of St. Alban's and carried off its abbot, Thomas de la Mare was chosen to fill the vacancy, and a Tynemouth monk, Clement of Whethamstede, was nominated as prior in his stead. De la Mare went with a notification of his election to the papal court. But the Roman cardinals, on hearing the words of the decree which announced the election of the prior of Tynemouth to be abbot of St. Alban's, broke in with the commentary, 'Then the priory is vacant.' Though the appointment to the cell lay wholly within the sphere of the abbey, upon which it depended, the papal legate demanded the

¹ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. p. 368.

first fruits from the prior designate, using threats to obtain payment. 'On this occasion,' it was said, 'trifling as it was, we spent an immense sum of money before the cell could have its customary liberty recognised. When the abbot saw the cardinals and some of the Curia eagerly waiting to see who would have the priory allotted to him, he sought audience with the Pope, and obtained from him a bull giving him licence to confer the priory upon one of his own monks. So Tynemouth was saved from out of the clutches of the Roman harpies.' Besides the bull (dated August 11th, 1349), a royal letter to the papal legate was obtained. In this letter the king stated that Tynemouth priory was one of the strongest fortresses in the marches, that during the Scottish wars it had been garrisoned and provisioned against attack, and that its revenues were not in themselves sufficient for the cost of defence; wherefore he commanded the legate not to appropriate the revenues, as such action would bring impoverishment and ruin upon the monastery.¹

The first thirty years of Whethamstede's long priorate are blank except for a dispute with Newcastle with regard to the ownership of Fenham in 1357. When we next meet with the priory, it is to find that its walls, which Thomas de la Mare had repaired, were crumbling, while the rents of the priory lands were diminished by the constant harrying of Bewick and Eglingham. In 1380 the following petition was addressed to the king:

To our lord the king and his council, their poor chaplains, the prior and convent of Tynemouth, show that, whereas their said priory has been long time and still is one of the strong fortresses of the north, and now by the inroad of the sea the walls of the said priory are in great part fallen, and the rents of the said priory are in no way sufficient to repair them as well as to bear their other charges, because great part of their said rents lies near the march of Scotland and is destroyed by the enemy, therefore the said prior and convent pray our lord the king and his council to assign them some reasonable aid, whereby they pray to be recovered, to the saving of the said priory and fortress and of the country round about.²

Richard II. thereupon (February 20th, 1380) granted licence to the prior and convent to acquire lands and tenements to the amount of £20

¹ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. pp. 390-394.

² *Ancient Petitions*, P.R.O. 7,157. A nostre seigneur le roy et son conseil mustrount se povers chapeleins priour et couent de Tynmuth que come leur dit priourre ad este par long temps et ore est un de les forcible fortes de North', et or par cretyen et surunder de mer les mures de dit priourrie sunt chaies en grant partie et les rentz de dit priourrie ne sunt mie sufficient de les reparailier et porter leur autres charges pur ceo que grant partie de leur ditz rentz gist pres de march d'Escece et est destruit par les enmis, sur quoy les ditz priour et couent priount a nostre seigneur le roy et son conseil de les assigner asque ayde resonable dunt ils priont estie recouere en cel part en saluacion de dit priourrie et forcelet et tout le pais environ. Cp. Letters Patent printed in Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. pp. 96, 97; and Gibson, vol. ii. appendix, cxxvi.

yearly rent. Next year they increased their resources by purchasing the manor of West Denton, a rich coal-field on the Tyne, and at the same time added 362 acres to their home demesne. In this year (1381), the peasants' revolt broke out. Northumberland remained quiet, and the prior of St. Alban's and four of his brethren did not think themselves safe from their angry serfs till they had reached Tynemouth.¹ In 1384 there was a renewal of the old complaints as to the decay of the sea-walls and priory buildings, the 'constant mortal pestilence' of the Scottish invasions, and the cost of entertaining nobles. This time the complaints of the priory were voiced by the king's two uncles, the dukes of Lancaster and Gloucester, who were friends of the monastery and partakers of its hospitality. Richard allowed the monks to appropriate for their own use the advowson of Haltwhistle in Tynedale.² The year 1384 is deserving of remembrance in the history of the priory, for in it St. Oswin performed his last miracle :

In this year, on the 20th of August, being the day of the Passion of St. Oswin, at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, two sailors wished to hollow out a piece of timber for their vessel. And when one of them had struck the wood with his axe, to his amazement blood poured from it as if it had been a living thing. He stood rooted with fear, and then, remembering that it was St. Oswin's Day, he vowed that he would never work again on that day as long as he lived. His comrade made little of it and swore that he would hollow out the timber ; but, when he had struck it, he saw blood flow more freely than before. He aimed at another part of the wood, but blood followed from every stroke ; so then he saw his wickedness and promised to cease from the work on that day. This miracle was seen by many and gave great proof of the martyr's holiness.³

Scottish invasions now came nearer home. The Scots pressed south in 1386 ; they had reached Billy-mill moor before a truce was arranged. In 1388 they appeared before the walls of Newcastle. Upon August 19th in that year, the day upon which the battle of Otterburn was fought, the king granted protection for a year to the priory, in similar terms to those which Edward III. had used at Langley in 1341.⁴ Twelve months later came a fresh invasion, and this time the Scots harried and burnt nearly the whole of Tynemouthshire, meeting with no opposition. When they had come to Tynemouth, they desired to hold a parley with the cellarer and those who were in the castle. So the cellarer went out to treat with them for sparing the town, but, while he conferred with them, some

¹ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. iii., p. 301.

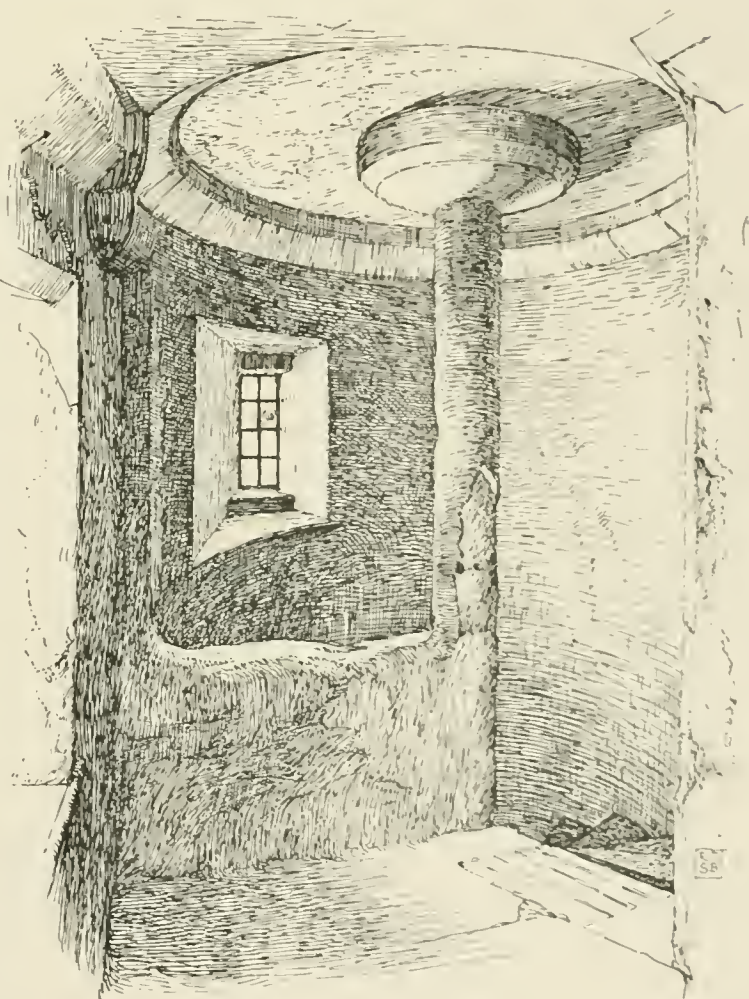
² Gibson, vol. ii., appendix, cxxviii and cxxix.

³ Thomas of Walsingham, *Historia Anglicana*, Rolls Series, vol. ii. p. 116 ; Capgrave, *Chronicle of England*, Rolls Series, p. 240.

⁴ *Patent Rolls*, 12 Ric. II. pars 1, m. 28.

of the enemy were entering the houses, and suddenly flames burst out in every street. Seeing this, one of the garrison of the castle levelled his crossbow and shot a servant of the earl of Moray, whereat the Scots raised a great outcry, declaring the cellarer to have done treacherously; and he had almost lost his life but that some of the Scots, who were his friends, saved him and allowed him to go in again to the castle upon this condition, that he should cure the wounded man of his wounds and send him home at the charges of the house.¹

It was absolutely necessary to improve the military defences of the castle. Its gate-house was in ruins; the greater part of its walls seaward were thrown down; and neither the revenues of St. Alban's nor those of its cell sufficed for the work of reparation. A petition made by Thomas de la Mare and his convent was strongly supported by the dukes of Lancaster and Gloucester, the earl of Huntingdon, and the earl of Northumberland. King Richard agreed (February 23rd, 1390) to give £500 in aid of the needful repairs, John of Gaunt himself subscribed £100, and Henry Percy, first earl of Northumberland, gave

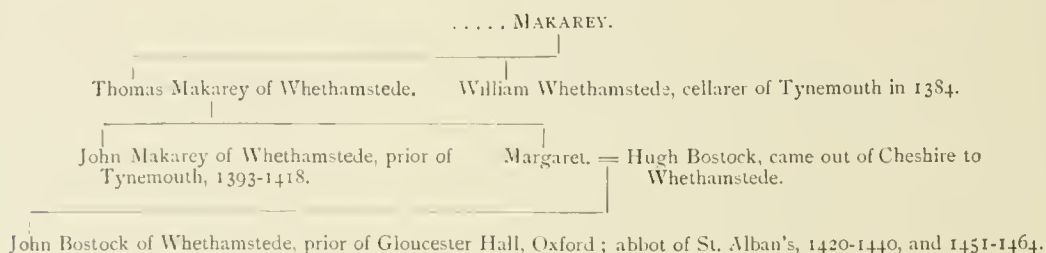


NEWEL STAIR IN GATE-HOUSE

¹ Walsingham, vol. ii. p. 402. Contemporary surveys corroborate the harrying of Tynemouthshire and destruction of the town; e.g., a house in Tynemouth owned by the heirs of Sir Alan de Heton was returned as worth ten shillings in 1388 (*inq. p.m.* 12 Ric. II. No. 28, but three years later it was worth nothing 'causa destructionis Scotorum' (*ibid.* 15 Ric. II. pars 1. No. 87).

a hundred marks, as well as a thousand trees to replace those which the Scots had burned. The gate-house, which is still standing, was then built by the prior, John de Whethamstede.¹ Another building erected about this time was the prior's great stone house, which stood upon the Quayside, in Newcastle, till 1854, when it, and several old streets adjoining, were burnt by fire.² The priory acquired considerable house property in Newcastle in 1391.

In 1405 Whitley was purchased for the priory by William de Whethamstede, the cellarer above-mentioned. During his tenure of office, Johanna, widow of the Black Prince, gave a donation for the adornment of St. Oswin's shrine.³ This William was a member of a family which was for long closely connected with Tynemouth. His nephew, John de Whethamstede, surnamed Makarey or Macrel, was at this time prior. The prior in his turn had a nephew, also named John de Whethamstede, who attained celebrity as abbot of St. Alban's.⁴



¹ Pro priore et conventu de Tynemoth. Rex omnibus ad quos, etc., salutem. Supplicarunt nobis dilecti nobis in Cristo abbas et conventus abbacie de sancto Albano ut, cum prioratus de Tynemoth in comitatu Northumbrie, cella eiusdem abbacie, qui supra portum maris et os aque de Tyne situatur, tantam et excessivam destructionem de terris et possessionibus suis per Scotos adversarios nostros sustinuerit, quod magna turris et porta ac maior pars murorum dicti prioratus versus mare per infortunium ad terram prosternuntur; ita quod omnia bona abbacie et prioratus illorum ad reparacionem eiusdem prioratus, qui castrum et refugium toti patrie tempore guerre existere consuevit, non sufficiunt ut accepimus; velinus, consideratis tam dampnis et deperditis in premissis que toti patrie predictae, si dictum castrum pro defectu celeris reparacionis per inimicos nostros quod absit capiatur, quam quod predicti abbas, prior, et conventus, nisi magnum auxilium et succursus nostra in hac parte habuerint, ad defendendum et reparandum eundem prioratum siue castrum minus sufficientes existunt, poterunt evenire, ordinari iubere quod idem prioratus siue castrum, ad quod faciendum iidem abbas, prior, et conventus plenariam potestatem suam, ut asserunt, fideliter apponent, cum omni festinatione possibili reparetur; Nos ad supplicationem predictam et alia premissa debitam consideracionem habentes, primo ad honorem Dei et subsequenter ad rogatum carissimorum avunculorum nostrorum ducum Lancastrie et Gloucestrie ac carissimi fratris nostri comitis Huntynghonie et dilecti consanguinei nostri comitis Northumbrie, de gracia nostra speciali concessimus eisdem abbati, priori et conventui quingentas libras habendas per sufficientem assignacionem inde infra duos annos proximo futuros soluendas in auxilium reparacionis prioratus antedicti. In cuius, etc. Teste rege apud Westmonasterium xxij die Februarii (A.D. 1390) per breve de privato sigillo. *Patent Rolls*, P.R.O., 13 Ric. II. pars 2, m. 8. Cp. *Liber de Benefactoribus*, Rolls Series, pp. 434, 436; and Walsingham, vol. ii. p. 403.

² Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 100. Dr. Embleton, 'Ruins of Buildings once existing on the Quayside,' *Arch. Ael.* second series, vol. xviii.

³ *Liber de Benefactoribus*, p. 435.

⁴ Old writers, e.g., Dugdale and Hearne, are mistaken in classing John de Whethamstede, abbot of St. Alban's, among the priors of Tynemouth. See Riley, *John of Amundesham*, Rolls Series, vol. ii. p. xvi, note 2. Prior Clement de Whethamstede does not appear to have been a member of this family.

Prior Whethamstede, besides building the gatehouse, inserted several windows in the church, amongst which is probably to be reckoned the large Perpendicular window in the west front of the nave. He restored the monks' house at Wylam which had fallen into ruins during the Scottish wars. It is also recorded of him that he increased the half-yearly allowances paid to members of the monastery, and instituted the practice of distributing pittances or doles among the sick monks in the infirmary.¹

What knowledge we possess of him is derived from some verses written by his nephew, Abbot Whethamstede, in 1426, when he made a visitation to Tynemouth. Upon that occasion the abbot, after conducting an investigation into the affairs of the priory, issued a set of constitutions to the following effect :²

1. The brethren are to attend the daily and nightly services in the choir. The precentor of the choir is to see that the services, and especially the psalms, are distinctly rendered ; special care is to be taken on festivals. In starting the antiphons, the precentor is not to begin to intone the psalm until the antiphonist has finished his phrase. The priests are to celebrate mass daily.
2. The brethren are to discontinue the practice of acting plays in the church, every fourth of September, for the entertainment of their dependents, who have been accustomed to make that day a general holiday.
3. They are to minister to feeble and sick monks ; the pittances assigned by Prior John de Whethamstede to brethren in the infirmary are hereby confirmed.
4. Twice a year they may absent themselves from the monastery. But they are not, on these occasions, to wander about aimlessly, or to go to places which may make them the subject of scandal.
5. The sums of money which they used to receive from the hands of the prior shall be paid to them by an officer appointed for this purpose, and shall be a charge on the rents of the townships of Hauxley and West Chirton.³
6. The prior is to give diligent attention to the discipline of his monks, and to use, if necessary, the rod of correction. He is to guard against a diminution of temporalities, which he is to augment if possible. He is to have a cellarer who shall look after the estates and afford alleviation, when necessary, to the tenants of the townships and stewards of the manors ; the cellarer shall be free from all duties which do not concern his office.
7. Every year, on the eve of All Souls' Day, the prior shall call together his obedientiaries and receive their accounts ; he shall present his own accounts every third year to the sub-prior.

¹ Abbot Whethamstede has left the following account of his great-uncle and uncle :

'Primus Whiteia cum pratis emerat arva
Et domui junxit, claviger unde fuit ;
Post Haltwesiliae rectoriam propriare
Prudenter studuit ; praeter haec bona plurima fecit.
Proximior primo, prior ordine, junior illo,
Diruptam januam reparat, rursusque relapsam
Erigit a fundo, variatque situm situando.
Ornat honore locum, terret munimine Scotum.
De Wylomque domum, fiunt ubi gaudia fratrum,
Per guerras lapsam, rursus levat, efficit ipsam.
Aegris acra dedit, cameram quoque fratribus auxit ;
Ecclesiam variis in vestibusque fenestris
Ornat et illaesa sua servat singula jura.'

John of Amundesham, *Annales Monasterii Sancti Albani*, vol. i. pp. 220-221.

² *Ibid.* pp. 212-220.

³ This is the 'camera fratrum' which Prior Whethamstede is said to have increased. For further regulations concerning it see *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. pp. 312, 313.

It may have been upon this visit that Abbot Whethamstede made his present to the monastery of a silver-gilt chalice, valued at £8, and a purple cope of cloth of gold sumptuously worked, of the value of £20. He also presented the cellarer of the monastery with a silver-gilt cup.¹ The necessity of attending a general chapter made him hurry home without taking the usual homages of his tenants.²

This abbot's letter-book preserves a portion of his correspondence with members of the cell.³ He wrote to the monks admonishing them to guard against the sin of overeating. Upon banishing to Tynemouth a refractory monk of Beaulieu, he sent directions to Prior Barton that this disobedient brother was to be put, if necessary, into gyves and fetters. Barton, upon another occasion, sent his superior a book called the *Pilgrim's Scrip*, with strict injunctions that it should be returned. Whethamstede replied that he had read portions of Aristotle's *Ethics*, and that he would not fail to comply with this request.

A certain Robert de Rhodes is said to have been prior in the middle of Henry VI.'s reign. He appears to have acquired the manor of Benwell for the priory by purchase from the Delaval family, but it was more probably acquired in the capacity of seneschal than in that of prior.⁴ That he was the Robert de Rhodes who built the spire of St. Nicholas' church, Newcastle, is far from being probable.⁵ His coat of arms was upon the gate-house of the priory until 1705, when it was taken down by Colonel Villiers, then governor, and sent to Dr. Ellison, vicar of Newcastle.⁶

Another name connected with Tynemouth at this period is that of the sub-prior, John de Bamburgh, who was afterwards prior of Wallingford and finally of Belvoir. He was a donor to the library of the convent and

¹ John of Amundesham, *Annales Monasterii Sancti Albani*, vol. ii. p. 257.

² Memorandum quod 12^o die mensis Junii, anno domini millesimo cccc^o xxvj^o, anno vero regni regis Henrici sexti quarto, apud Tynemutham in camera prioris ibidem, Simon de Welden, alias Weltesden, armiger, fecit homagium et fidelitatem Johanni Whethamstede abbati pro terris dominicis, et abbas, de sua gracia speciali, condonavit eidem feodum camerarii sui, presentibus domino Thoma Barton, tunc priore, domino Willelmo Savage, Nicholao Wellis, capellanis dicti abbatis, Roberto Welpynton, predicti loci senescallo, Willelmo de la Vale, armigero, cum tota familia domini abbatis. Et nota quod alii varii qui propter suas tenuras prestassent et fecissent dicto abbati homagium, admoniti fuerint sub pena juris ut venirent et facient homagia sua, set, quia abbas dictus, ad instanciam prioris ecclesie cathedralis Dunelmie, citius quam proposuit propter celebrationem generalis capituli reversus est ad partes, pro tunc dictus abbas a suis tenentibus talia servicia non recepit, sed posuit in suspenso quousque hujusmodi negocio liberius vacare posset; Willelmo de la Vale, propter sue defectum etatis, ab eo servicio pro tunc excusato. *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 61 b. From Baker's transcripts.

³ *Registrum Abbatiae Johannis Whethamstede*, Rolls Series, vol. ii. appendix E.

⁴ Flower, *Visitation of Yorkshire*, Harl. Soc. No. xvi. p. 98.

⁵ Grey, *Chorographia*, pub. 1649, p. 10.

⁶ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 101, citing Dr. Ellison's MSS.

himself an author. He wrote a life of Prior Whethamstede, and sent it to the prior's nephew, the abbot. The latter fell, as he himself puts it, into 'a stupor of admiration' over the book. After comparing Bamburgh's achievement with those of the several Latin authors from Ennius to Eusebius, and expressing his wonder that Bamburgh should have come by such eloquence, though he had 'never slept by the Hippocrene which wells up in the heart of Oxford, nor ever tasted a single draught of the Cirrean stream which flows past Cambridge,' he prophesied an immortality for this work, that 'while sun gives forth its rays and the stars their light,



BOSSSES OVER THE DOORWAY OF THE PERCY CHAPEL.

steel shall not raze it nor fire consume, neither shall time nor eld have power to destroy.' But our literature is no longer enriched by its presence, for the book is lost.¹

John Langton, who first occurs as prior in 1450, has the best claim to be considered the builder of a chapel or chantry at the east end of the priory church, popularly known as the Lady-chapel ; for the monogram

¹ *Registrum Whethamstede*, vol. i. pp. 311-316.

I.L.P. (Iohannes Langton, prior) twice occurs upon the bosses of its roof. The Percy chapel would be a more suitable name, for the arms of Percy and Lucy and the crescent and shacklebolt badge are to be found within it, and point to some connection with the earls of Northumberland. Its style of architecture dates it a century later than the time when the real Lady-chapel was constructed.

Margaret of Anjou, sailing from France in the autumn of 1462 with French reinforcements for her husband, landed at Tynemouth, probably intending to attack Newcastle; but a sudden change of plan, or a panic among her troops, led her to embark once more and set sail for Berwick, whither she made her way in a rising gale.¹ Otherwise the Wars of the Roses passed lightly over the priory, which presumably remained resolutely Yorkist. A few months after Queen Margaret's abortive landing, King Edward IV. issued to the priory a confirmation of Richard I.'s charter, this time with a commentary upon, and specification of, its terms as being general and obscure. He further granted to the prior and convent the right to buy all kinds of victuals and goods for their own use in the port of Tyne, from their own or from stranger vessels, and to load and unload there their cargoes of salt and coal, without any impediment from the men of Newcastle. He also sanctioned the erection of breakwaters at Tynemouth and Shields, the baking of bread and brewing of ale, and the sale of fresh and salt fish free from all payment of custom.²

Some remarkable transactions concerning Tynemouth are disclosed in the register of Abbot William Wallingford, a successor of Whethamstede. In November, 1462, a commission was granted to Nicholas Boston, almoner of St. Alban's monastery, to make a visitation of Binham priory, which was then ruled by William Dixwell. Boston's report appears to have been unfavourable, and Dixwell was superseded. In January, 1464, Abbot Whethamstede, acting probably at Boston's suggestion, wrote to Edward IV., asking him to secure the ex-prior's arrest, 'forasmuch as he, like another son of perdition, wanders about from place to place, from village to village, and from market to market, more like a vagabond and an apostate than a regular monk.' However, when Whethamstede died, the new abbot reinstated Dixwell in his former position at Binham.

John Langton, who was then prior of Tynemouth, was growing old,

¹ Hall, *Chronicle*, ed. 1809, p. 259.

² Gibson, vol. ii. appendix, cxxxvii.

and on that score and on the ground of ill-health he was unable to attend Abbot Wallingford's election in 1476. Preparations were made to provide for the approaching vacancy in that cell. In accordance with the prevalent practice of trafficking in preferment, the right was accorded to Richard, duke of Gloucester, and to Lord Say of appointing to Tynemouth, upon the next vacancy, Nicholas Boston, now (1477) archdeacon of St. Alban's. Very shortly after this grant was made, two officers of St. Alban's monastery were despatched to Tynemouth to hold a visitation there, carrying with them certain letters to Prior Langton. Whatever these letters may have contained, and they may have called upon Langton to resign in favour of Boston, they were not to his liking. He tore them into shreds, and the two emissaries thought themselves fortunate to have escaped from Tynemouth alive. Upon March 15th, 1478, sentence of deposition was pronounced upon Langton. He was inhibited from celebrating mass, and was summoned to appear at St. Alban's within fifteen days, there to give account of his conduct. Boston succeeded, as a matter of course, to the vacant cell. Next day the abbot secured to him his new dignity for life, but he did not set out for the North until the following September, and then spent thirty-nine days upon the road, spending also, it is said, large sums of money which might have much availed his house.

His tenure of office was a short one. On April 28th, 1480, a commission was issued for visiting the priory. The commissioners were the dispossessed prior, John Langton; Boston's old enemy, William Dixwell; and another. Ten days later the abbot appointed Dixwell to be prior of Tynemouth. The letter of appointment must have come close on the heels of the commissioners. Armed with it they presented themselves to Boston, who, on his part, produced the grant of the office of prior to him for life. Dixwell snatched the deed out of his hands and tore it to pieces. Prior Boston submitted to the inevitable, and in 'the chapel hard by the prior's chamber,' resigned the post from which he would otherwise have been deposed. Retirement was made easy to him by the grant of an annuity of £10, secured upon the manor of Hauxley. By a rather curious arrangement, Henry Percy, fourth earl of Northumberland, granted a similar annuity at the same time to Prior Dixwell, nominally upon appointing him to be one of the earl's council. Consequently the maintenance of Nicholas Boston actually fell upon the earl.

Events followed hard upon one another. It was upon July 24th that the abbot of St. Alban's confirmed Boston's annuity. On September 5th he issued a commission to prior Dixwell to take and examine Boston, who had been accused to him of excesses. Boston was ordered to appear before the prior, and a few days later a letter was sent to the bishop of Durham requesting him to arrest the ex-prior, 'forasmuch as he, like another son of perdition, wanders about from place to place, from village to village, and from market to market, more like a vagabond and an apostate than a regular monk.' The repetition of his own phrase must have proved bitter to him if he saw the writing. He replied by making charges against his rival which put a different complexion upon the case, and in December the prior of Belvoir was empowered to visit Tynemouth and to make enquiry into the case. This resulted in the reinstatement of Boston in his former post, while Dixwell again became prior of Binham. Two years afterwards the latter, being seized with repentance, entreated Abbot Wallingford to re-issue to Boston his old grant of the priorate in perpetuity, which was done, but sealed only with the abbot's seal. Upon the intervention of Richard III. it was again granted, this time sealed with the conventual seal in addition. At the same time the king promised Prior Boston a valuable benefice and £100 towards building a water mill (possibly that at Marden burn). It will be remembered that Richard, when duke of Gloucester, had presented Boston to the priorate.

A final reconciliation between Boston and Dixwell was effected in 1485. Dixwell made a promise in writing to discharge all debts incurred by him as prior of Tynemouth. Ten years afterwards Prior Boston died, and was buried in the church of the Grey Friars in London. His former antagonist survived him at least sixteen years, and died prior of Hertford.¹

A large establishment appears to have been maintained by the later priors of Tynemouth. When Henry VII.'s daughter, Margaret, the affianced bride of James IV. of Scotland, made her progress to the Scottish court in 1503, Prior Stonywell came to meet her three miles from Newcastle, 'well appointed, and in his company thirty horses, his men in livery.'² His successor assembled at Tynemouth great numbers of the inhabitants of Tynedale and Redesdale, to whom he gave arms and wages of sixpence

¹ *Registrum abbatiae Willelmi Wallingforde*. The events have been carefully investigated by Riley (*Registrum Whethamstede*, vol. ii. pp. xxxv-xliv), whose account is here followed.

² Leland, *Collectanea*, ed. Hearne, 1774, vol. iv. p. 277.

a day, to the intent, it was said, that by his commandment they should have murdered the mayor, aldermen, and other inhabitants of Newcastle.¹ At the same time the upkeep of the castle and monastic buildings was neglected. In 1527 it was stated that the decays within the castle walls of the priory were numerous and that it would cost much to remedy them; the glass windows and leads of the church and the barns and garner for the corn were in especial need of repair.²

A marked feature of the close of the history of this monastery is its growing independence of St. Alban's and dependence upon persons of influence at court. Wolsey, in 1519, with the nominal consent of Abbot Ramrigge, exempted Prior Stonywell from the jurisdiction of St. Alban's during that prior's lifetime.³ When he determined to create Stonywell's successor abbot of Peterborough, William Franklin, chancellor of Durham, and Sir William Bulmer, hearing of the cardinal's intention, wrote requesting him to give the priory to Dr. Peter Lee of the monastery of Durham, a man of learning and good conversation.⁴ Lady Mary Cary prevailed in getting the appointment given to Thomas Gardiner, one of the king's chaplains, a son of William Gardiner, citizen of London, by a natural daughter of Jasper Tudor, earl of Pembroke. She was rewarded by receiving an annuity of a hundred marks out of the conventual revenues. The favour of Thomas Cromwell was secured by the grant of a pension, and altogether Gardiner burdened the revenues of his house with annuities amounting to two hundred marks.⁵ Cromwell informed the abbot of St. Alban's that it was the king's pleasure that Gardiner should have Tynemouth priory for life, an order with which the abbot was obliged to comply.⁶

An ominous hostility towards the priory on the part of the neighbouring gentry was beginning to be apparent, as is shown in the following petition addressed to the king at some date between 1528 and 1536:

To the kynge our soveraigne lord.

In his most humble wyse shewith and complayneth unto your excellent highnes your daily and feithfull oratour, Thomas, pryor of Tynmowth, in your countie of Northumbreland, that where Sir Thomas Hylton, knyght, son and heire apparent vnto the baron of Hylton, Sir John Delavale, knyght,

¹ *Star Chamber Proceedings*, Hen. VIII. bundle 20, No. 2.

² *Letters and Papers*, Hen. VIII. vol. iv. p. 1469.

³ *Letters and Papers*, Hen. VIII. vol. iii. p. 176.

⁴ *Ibid.* vol. iv. p. 1574.

⁵ See Augmentation Office, *Conventual Leases*, Northumberland, bundle 1, for an annuity of ten marks granted by Gardiner out of Benwell. Gibson, vol. ii. appendix, cli.

⁶ *Letters and Papers*, Hen. VIII. vol. vi. p. 337.

Henry Ewer and Richard Bellyces, esquyers, accompayned with cc persons or ther-aboutes to your seid oratour unknowen, the Fryday next before Candelmes Day last past, ryottously assembled and gathered themselves togider at Tynmowthe forseid, and than and ther ryottously with force and armes endyored themselves to the best of ther power to have entred in at the gate of the priory of Tynmowthe forseid, to th'entent and purpose without any autoritie, right or title, against the order of your lawes, soveraigne lorde, and against the will of your seid oratour, to have kepte a court within the precyncte of the seid pryory; and for the appeasyng of the seid ryottous persons, and to th'entent that no hurt or breche of your peax shuld growe or ensue therby, your seid oratour shewed and declared, in the open presence of them all, that my lorde of Rocheford was high stuard of the seid pryory, and it apperteyned to no person other than to the seid Lorde Rocheford and his deputies to kepe any court within the precyncte of the seid pryory. And for by cause your seid oratour wold have had the good will, love and favour of the seid Sir Thomas Hylton and Sir John Delavale, and of the other above named, desired them in gentill maner to come into his place and take such chere as he than had, and they shuld be welcome right hartily thereto; and than the seid Sir Thomas Hylton, being in a great fury, swore many great othes that he wold be high stuard of the sayed pryory whosoever sayed nay; and than and ther, most gracious soveraigne lorde, the seid Sir Thomas Hylton and Sir John Delavale gafe unto your seid oratour many great manessheyng wordes, and put your seid oratour and all his household and servaunttes in great feare and jupardie of ther lyfes. And aswell the seid Sir John Delavale as the seid Sir Thomas Hylton than and ther openly reported and sayed that, yf your seid oratour or any of his servaunttes came within ther walke, they wold do them right high displeasure. And so it is, most gracious soveraigne lorde, the seid ryottous persons perseveryng ther said ungracious purpose, shortly after a mounke of your seid oratour, being bowser¹ of the seid pryory, was rydyng in the countrey ther aboute the besynes of the seid pryory by the comaundement of your seid oratour;—diverse of the servaunttes of the seid Sir John Delavale, by the commaundement of the seid Sir John Delavale, lay in wache for the seid bowser, and with force and armes forcibly against his will toke hym and caryed hym to the place of the seid Sir John Delavale, and ther kepte hym prysoner by the space of too dayes. And furthermore, the seid Sir John Delavale, therwith not contentid, syns that tyme hath made his avowe, and in sundry places within your seid contie openly reported and sayed, that he wold serve your seid oratour in lyke maner as he served his chaplen, by reason wherof your seid oratour dar not for feare and juperdie of his lyfe goo oute of his seid pryory to kepe his courtes and oversee his manourz, landes, tenementes and hereditamentes belongyng to the seid pryory, for feare of the seid Sir John Delavale and Sir Thomas Hylton; for they be confidered togider to murder and slaye your seid oratour, as far as your seid oratour can understond and perceive; which haynous actes be not onely against your peax and lawes, but also to the worst example that hath been seen in those parties, yf due punesshement be not had and provided herein. In consideracion wherof may it please your gracious highnes of your most aboundaunt grace to graunte your gracious letters of pryvey seale to be directed unto the seid Sir Thomas Hylton, Sir John Delavale, Henry Ewer and Richard Bellyce, comaundyng them in your most dreid name personally to appere before your roiall highnes and the lordes of your most honorable counsaill, at a certen day and under a certen payn by your seid highnez to be lymytte, in your halles at Westminster to make aunswer unto the premyssez, and for the same to be orderd and punesshed according to ther demerites; and your seid oratour shall daily pray for your most noble and ryall person long to endure.

(Endorsed.) Fiant brevia sub privato sigillo ad comparendum quindena Trinitatis Thome Hilton militi et tribus aliis infrascriptis.

Tuo. MORE, Knight, Chauncellour.²

Like all other northern monasteries, Tynemouth was visited by the king's commissioners early in 1536. Charges of a most serious nature

¹ *I.e.* bursar.

² *Star Chamber Proceedings*, Hen. VIII. bundle 29, No. 84.

were made against Prior Gardiner and seven of the fifteen monks.¹ Though the statements are lacking in substantiation, it must be admitted that Tynemouth was not, like other religious houses in the county, beyond the reach of calumny. Abbot Whethamstede's correspondence shows that the standard of morals there a century earlier was low,² and it is probable that it had not been raised since his time.

Gardiner did not long remain prior. In the following December his post was vacant. The Pilgrimage of Grace had taken place in the meantime. Rich monasteries like Tynemouth had little to gain by joining in that movement; indeed, that house seems to have suffered from standing aloof; its own tenants carried off cattle, sheep and corn from the demesne, withheld the rents by force, and threatened to enter into the priory.³

Cromwell was the means of securing the appointment of Robert Blakeney, late chaplain to Abbot Ramrigge, to the office of prior. Shortly after his election, on April 3rd, 1537, Blakeney wrote to his patron:

'When of your goodness you preferred me to the room of the priory of Tynemouth, I showed your lordship that my lady Mary Carye, now Stafford, had an annuity of a hundred marks, under convent seal of my house, for no cause except it should be for preferring my predecessor to his room. The said lady can now demand no such annuity, as she can do no great good for me or my house, which is now onerate by first fruits and charges. I once stopped the payment, but could not continue, through the command of my lord chancellor. These be to desire your lordship that the convent seal may be reversed, as this bearer, Mr. Warmyngton, your servant, shall declare. For your kindness herein your annuity of twenty marks shall be made thirty marks, to your lordship and Mr. Gregory your son in survivorship.'⁴

Blakeney sought to have a grant of the priory for life. On July 14th in this same year, John Gostwyk, Cromwell's secretary, wrote to his master:

'Be good lord to my old acquaintance the prior of Tynemouth. The valuation made of his monastery in the time of Mr. Bellesses (1527) is much more than it is now worth, and, since then, the last prior gave away over two hundred marks in annuities; yet he is willing to compound for your lordship's favour by a grant under convent seal of St. Alban's, like his predecessors.'⁵

The prior also obtained the good services of the duke of Norfolk in laying his case before Cromwell. By a convenient confusion of surname, that nobleman's ancestors, the Mowbrays, had come to be regarded as founders of the priory.⁶

¹ *Letters and Papers*, vol. x. p. 142.

² *Letters and Papers*, vol. xi. p. 524.

³ *Ibid.* pt. 2, p. 109.

⁴ *Registrum Whethamstede*, vol. ii. pp. 458-463.

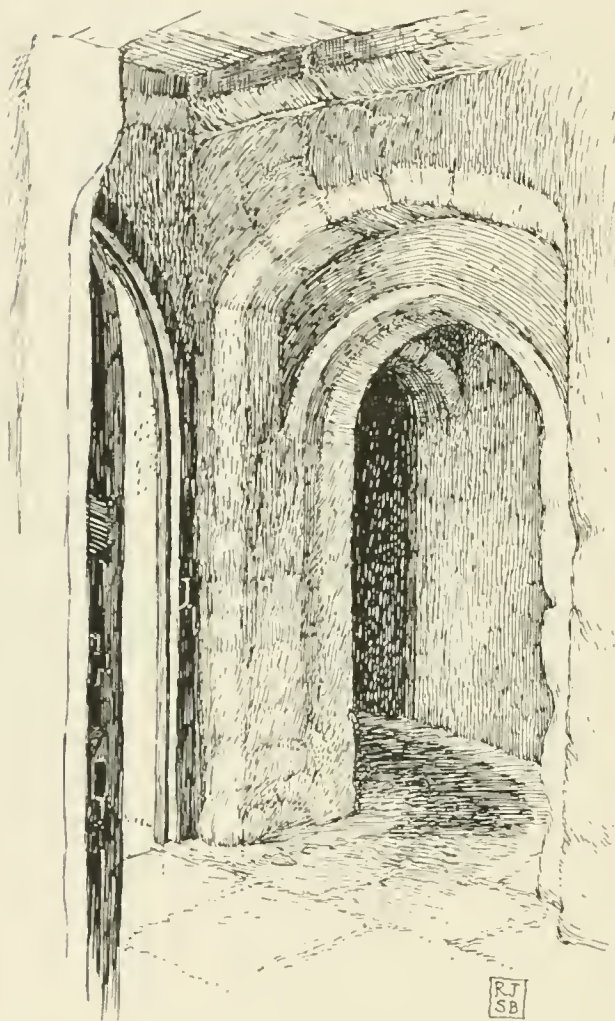
⁵ *Ibid.* vol. xii. pt. 1, p. 363.

⁶ *Ibid.* pt. 1, p. 544.

Though the extent of its income saved Tynemouth from suppression in 1536, it must have been evident that the blow could not be long deferred. Every effort was made by the monks to raise money and to attach influential landowners to their cause by leasing to them for long terms of years various

outlying estates of the priory. Thus on September 1st, 1536, the prior and convent leased to Thomas Lawson of Cramlington their lands at West Hartford for forty years, and on October 8th following a sixty-one years' lease of the manor of Bewick was granted to Robert Collingwood. Sir Thomas Clifford lent to them 'in their great need' the sum of a hundred marks, to be employed to the use and profit of their monastery.¹

At last they submitted. On January 12th, 1539, Prior Blakeney and his monks signed a deed of surrender, by which they made over their monastery and all its possessions to the king.² They had previously parted with what they could. Only four days earlier a lease had been drawn up conferring upon John, son and heir apparent of their former enemy, Sir John Delaval, the tithe sheaves of corn in the town of Whitley for forty years.³ But they were



DOORWAYS IN THE GATE-HOUSE.

liberally rewarded for their surrender. Blakeney received a pension of £80 and was allowed to farm from the Crown his former manor of Benwell.

¹ Acknowledged in bond dated February 20th, 1538. Madox, *Formulare Anglicanum*, p. 367.

² *Deeds of Surrender*, Augmentation Office, No. 228; Rymer, *Foedera*, vol. xiv. p. 623, and Gibson, vol. ii. appendix, clii. Facsimiles of the signatures to the deed are reproduced *ibid.* vol. i. to face p. 208.

³ *Waterford Charters*, No. 25, at Ford Castle.

The sub-prior, Thomas Castell, obtained ten marks yearly, together with the perpetual curacy of Earsdon. Annuities varying from £2 to £6 were given to the other monks, and smaller allowances to their servants.¹

Sir George Lawson was appointed to take the surrender.² All the household stuff, stores and farm stock were sold, and, together with outstanding debts, realised £261 16s. The lead was reserved, but the commissioners carried off the six bells, 62 ounces of gold, and 1,827½ ounces of silver.³ St. Oswin's shrine was broken up and his bones were scattered.

One might be allowed to fancy that the Deiran king still rested at Tynemouth, were it not that a certain Christopher Chaitour, servant to the bishop of Durham, had told of how one Sunday, coming from Huntingdon, he overtook two men and rode past them. But one of them named Cray followed and asked him what news and why he rode so fast, and, so falling into conversation, enquired whether there were any abbeys still standing. Chaitour answered, 'They shall down shortly, by report.' Then he asked, 'How doth your shrines? Are they taken away?' and Chaitour said there was one at Tynemouth, where he had seen the visitors handling the relics very irreverently, spoiling them of their gold and silver and casting them away. They gave him some bones garnished with silver, 'and he that gave me them said the silver thereof would make a chaïpe⁴ to my dagger.' He said he had them still and had gathered up some of the bones they cast away. He would have great need ere he should sell them, 'for, as I have heard a learned man say, which was Dr. Ridley that is dead, St. Jerome and Ambrose had these relics of saints in honour.' Cray was 'a man much inquisitive,' and began asking about other things as he and his companion travelled along the London road.⁵

It may not be amiss to examine a little more closely certain features in the history of the priory which was thus dissolved. Subject to the Benedictine rule generally, and in particular to the regulations of St. Alban's monastery, upon which it was dependent and in whose privileges it shared, it had certain characteristics which were not common to other monasteries.

¹ *Letters and Papers*, vol. xiv. pt. 1, p. 68. *Ministers' Accounts* in Gibson, vol. i. p. 225.

² *Ibid.* p. 60.

³ Gibson, vol. i. p. 209, quoting Harleian MSS. No. 604. fol. 92 b.

⁴ Chape: 'the metal plate or mounting of a scabbard or sheath, particularly that which covers the point.' Murray, *New English Dictionary*, vol. ii. p. 274; citing Holland, *Pliny*, vol. ii. p. 483. 'Their scabberds and sheaths bee set out with silver chapes.'

⁵ *Letters and Papers*, vol. xiv. pt. 2, pp. 277, 281.

There were in this house fifteen monks¹ and a few novices, all under the authority of the prior. Appointments to the post of prior were made by the abbot of St. Alban's, who, upon vacancies occurring, presented his nominee to the bishop of Durham with the request that he might be admitted to the priorate. To a very limited extent the prior was subject to his diocesan, who visited the parochial portion of his church and ordained members of his house, but could not compel him to attend the diocesan councils or to join in monetary contributions imposed upon the rest of his diocese. When appointed, the new prior took an oath of obedience to his abbot. In virtue of his office he obtained a stall in the abbey church, a seat in its chapter, and a vote in the election of a new abbot. On the other hand he remained subject to the visitatorial jurisdiction of his superior, who might depose him at will. He was supreme in his cell and reckoned among his privileges the right to receive the professions of monks who entered his monastery, to confess and absolve his monks, over whom he exercised disciplinary powers, to appoint and remove the officers of the convent, and to present to benefices in the case of churches of which his priory held the advowson.

Quite half the total number of the monks at Tynemouth held some sort of monastic office. Most of them were priests or at least were in minor orders. They were by no means all of northern extraction, and there were frequent cases of a single family sending more than one of its members to the priory in the same or in successive generations.

Occasionally the abbot of St. Alban's came upon a visitation to his cell. Abbot Simon's visit was long remembered for its length, William de Trumpington's for its magnificence. Eversdon employed the threat of a six months' stay to extort contributions from priors who knew the cost of entertaining their abbot.² Upon these visitations the abbot came attended by some of his tenants on horseback, who held their lands of him upon this service.³ On his arrival at Tynemouth he feasted his tenants, who in return paid him the dues known as the 'Abbot's Welcome.' There he conducted a visitation of the priory, issued constitutions for the monks, presided at the manorial court and received the homage or the fealty of

¹ Fifteen monks paid poll tax in 1381 (Gibson, vol. i. p. 160), and the same number signed the deed of surrender in 1539.

² *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. p. 130.

³ *Ibid.* vol. i. p. 265, and vol. ii. p. 208.

those who held their land of him.¹ The sums then demanded from the tenants as a recognition of the abbot's overlordship proved a heavy tax upon the poorer of their number. Abbot Heyworth in consequence waived his right to hold homages at Tynemouth, and his predecessor de la Mare only exacted it because 'men of the stamp he had to deal with were ever ready to rebel against their lords' and to take advantage of the breach of custom.²

A detailed account has been preserved of Abbot Norton's progress in 1264.³ Reaching Tynemouth on December 13th, he held his visitation of the priory, and then on the 22nd in the great hall of Tynemouth received the homages of the six tenants who held of him by military service. The day after Christmas he took the fealty of the men of Tynemouth, and that of the tenants of Shields on the 27th. Next day Hugh de Milneton and the heir of Anick came before him. On January 8th he was at Bewick, receiving the fealty of that place and of Lilburn and Eglingham. On the 11th in the hall of Amble he took the fealty of the men of Amble and Hauxley, and those of Cowpen on the 13th in the hall of Bebside. He was again at Tynemouth on the 15th taking the fealty of Earsdon, Monkseaton, Preston, and East and Middle Chirton. Next day came the turn of West Chirton. Three tenants came before him on the 22nd in the prior's chamber and there received confirmation of their lands, before he left Tynemouth for Wylam, where two days later the tenants of that place and William de Dissington and Walter Scot of Welton paid him fealty and homage, as did the men of Elswick and the burgesses of Newcastle on the 25th in the hall of Elswick. Gilbert de Wolsington did him homage there on the morrow, and on the 29th he was taking homages and fealty at Carlbury in Durham.

During the first two centuries of its existence, the priory appears to have found little difficulty in providing the hospitality expected of all religious houses to laymen and to religious alike. But under the pressure of the Scottish wars its revenues were no longer equal to the burden, being

¹ The oath of homage ran as follows: 'Ego devenio vester homo ab hac hora in antea, et fidem vobis facio pro illis tenementis que de vobis et de ecclesia vestra de Sancto Albano in capite teneo, ea fide semper salva qua regi dominisque meis superioribus obligatus existo.' *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 61 b, Baker's transcripts.

² *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. p. 395; vol. iii. p. 495.

³ Printed from the *St. Alban's Register*, fols. 62, 111 and 112, in *Registrum Whethamstede*, vol. ii. pp. 319-324.

mainly derived from landed estates which were exposed to forays and attacks. In 1292 the yearly income from temporalities was estimated at £180 16s. 6 $\frac{3}{4}$ d., and that from spiritualities at £214 2s. 11d. A detailed account, prepared in 1526,¹ shows what other sources of revenue then existed.

	£	s.	d.
Rents of farm lands	225	13	4
Rents of demesne lands let to farm	191	8	8
Tithes	96	8	4
Fines for lands and tenements	30	0	0
Sales, viz.: hides, £12 4s.; wool, £13 6s. 8d.; salt, £61; coal, £10; malt, £40; fish, £40; sheep, £12	188	10	8
	<hr/> £732 1 0		

Perquisites of courts, goods of felons and fugitives, and sales of woods and underwoods (of which the priory owned forty acres) brought in additional revenue, so that the total sum can hardly have fallen short of £750. And when consideration is taken of payments in kind, labour services and the produce of demesnes in the hands of the prior and convent, it will be seen that at the dissolution the monastery must have been in receipt of about £1,000 yearly. The clear value of its possessions over and above annual reprises was then returned by the Commissioners as being £537 10s. 11d.,² but eighteen months later the farmer for the Crown accounted for £854 2s. 9 $\frac{1}{2}$ d. as the income from these lands during the previous year.³

A small income may have been derived from the exhibition of relics, for here, amongst many other treasures, the beard of St. Enthymius the abbot, Moses' bush, the earth of which Adam was made, and 'four very small bones and one great bone' were exhibited to the curious or devout.⁴

The priory was continually adding to its capital and increasing its demesne by purchases of land, as is shown in the table given below of land acquired from the time of the Statute of Mortmain to the commencement of the fifteenth century.

¹ Dugdale, *Monasticon*, vol. iii. p. 319.

² Certificate made upon the dissolution, Gibson, vol. i. p. 209.

³ *Ministers' Accounts*, 30-31 Hen. VIII. Gibson, *ibid.* pp. 218-232.

⁴ Gibson, *ibid.* p. 201, citing MS. C.C.C. Oxford, No. 134, fol. 2.

TYNEMOUTH PRIORY.

115

Place.	Extent of property.			Grantor.	Yearly value. £ s. d.	Date.
Hartford	1	message	...	Robert Chevale ...	0 0 12	1307 ¹
"	87	acres 3 roods of arable	...	" ...	0 14 6 ¹	
"	2 ¹ / ₂	acres of meadow	...	" ...	0 2 6	
"	23d.	rent	...	" ...	0 1 11	
Bebside	1	message	...	John de Horton ...	0 0 6	
"	12	acres	...	" ...	0 3 0	
Cowpen	4	tofts	...	Walter fitz Roger fitz Hughtred	0 1 4	
"	70	acres	...	" ...	0 17 6	
"	2	tofts	...	Robert de Bebside ...	0 0 6	
"	22 ¹ / ₂	acres	...	" ...	0 5 7 ¹ / ₂	
East Backworth and West Backworth	7	tofts	...	Adam de Pickering ...	0 3 6	1325 ²
Tynemouth	140	acres	...	William " fitz Alan le Machun	0 11 8	
"	4	acres	...	William " fitz Alan le Machun	0 2 0	
"	1	acre	...	Adam le Vacher ...	0 0 4	
"	1	acre	...	William de Kenneslawe	0 0 4	
Preston	1	acre	...	Geoffrey fitz Alan ...	0 4 4	
Backworth	1	message and 40 acres	...	Thomas de Raynton ...	0 13 8	
East Murton	2	acres	...		over and	
Whitley	1	message and 3 roods...	...		above	
Milneton	2	messuages and 18 acres	...		rents and services	
Newcastle	1	message in Pamper- dene	...	John de Felton, chap- lain	4 marks	1326 ³
Woodhorn	1	message	...	Thomas de Raynton ...	—	1328 ⁴
"	1	acre	...		—	
Seaton Woodhorn	1	message	...		—	
"	1	acre	...	John Gros of Berwick	6 0 0	1335 ⁵
Berwick	1	message in Uddynggate	...		" "		0 13 4
"	13s. 4d.	rent from a mes- suage in St. Marygate	...	Thomas de Aukland, vicar of Whalton	0 4 10	1337 ⁶
Seghill	1	acre	...	" "	over and	
"	13s. 4d.	rent	...	" "	above	
Ellington	1	rood	...	John Deste ...	rents and	
Tynemouth	1	message	...	John Deste and Robert de Kelleseye	services	1339 ⁷
Murton	2	acres 1 rood	...	Richard de Dalton of Newcastle	0 10 0	
"	1	message and 60 acres	...	John de Thoresby, rector of Elwick	—	
Elwick, co. Durham	1	message	...	Henry de Burnetoft, chaplain	2 14 10	
Tynemouth, Preston, Back- worth, Murton, Seaton and Bewick	8	messuages, 285 acres of arable and 9 acres of meadow	...	John de Libert of Saxton	0 15 5	1345 ⁸
Murton and Cowpen	3	messuages and 28 acres	...	Robert de Steventon and Roger Turnour	0 13 4	
Earsdon	1	message, 30 acres of arable and 3 acres of meadow	...	Robert de Tewing ...	0 7 6	
Tynemouth and Middle Chirton	2	messuages and 9 acres	...	" ...	0 6 0	
Backworth	6s.	of rent in reversion on the death of John de Backworth	...	" ...	1 4 8	
"	1	message and 112 acres in reversion on the death of John de Bacworth	...	Henry de Burnetoft, chaplain	2 9 5	
East Murton, Milneton and Backworth	1	message, 2 tofts and 40 ¹ / ₂ acres	...	John Lyberd ...		
Tynemouth, Preston and East Chirton	1	message and 6 acres...	...	Richard Scot of New- castle	—	1348 ¹⁰
Elswick	66	acres and pasture for 12 oxen	...			

Place.	Extent of property.	Grantor.	Yearly value. £ s. d.	Date.
West Murton, West Backworth, Tynemouth, Preston, East Backworth and East Chirton	9 messuages, 1 toft, 160 acres and 10s. rent	John de Wheteley, vicar of Tynemouth	1 9 4	1354 ¹¹
Tynemouth	3 tofts and 14 acres ...	John de Wheteley and Alan Whitheved, chaplain	2 11 6½ over and aboveser- vices and customs	1360 ¹²
"	2 tofts and 10 acres ...	Alan Whitheved ...		
Wolsington	8 tofts, 140 acres, 10d. in rent, and half a pound of pepper in rent	Richard de Stanhope		
Murton	1 toft and 14 acres 1 rood	John Cissesou... ..		
Middle Chirton	1 toft and 6 acres 1 rood	Simon del Vikers ...	4 1 4½ over and aboveser- vices and customs	1380 ¹³
Denton and Redewood near Newburn	The whole manor (subject to two yearly rent charges of 10 marks and 1 mark)	Adam de Fenrother, clerk; William Mer- yngton, chaplain; Hugh de Brandon, William de Chevyng- ton and William de Seton		
Tynemouth, Monkseaton, East Chirton, Middle Chirton, Preston, East Murton, East Backworth, Cowpen, Wylam and Eglington	8 messuages, 8 tofts and 362½ acres	Alan Whitheved, vicar of Tynemouth, and Robert de Fenrother		
Newcastle	1 messuage and 2 shops	Alan Whitheved, Adam de Fenrother, master of the hospital of St. Edmund, Gateshead, and Hugh de Brandon		
"	1 garden	Alan Whitheved, Hugh de Brandon, and Roger del Buth, chaplain	—	1382 ¹⁴
"	1 messuage	Thomas de Walton, Thomas de Whitly, William Warenner and William Vescy		
"	Reversion of 3 messuages upon the death of Robert Galeway of Newcastle and of Agnes his wife	Hugh de Brandon and William de Chevyngton		
Haltwhistle	Advowson	—		
Newcastle	2 messuages	Adam de Fenrother, rector of Stokesley, Alan Whitheved and Thomas de Walton	2 7 4	1391 ¹⁶
"	2 messuages	Alan Whitheved and Thomas de Walton		
"	3 messuages	Alan Whitheved, John de Dalton, chaplain, Robert de Amble, chaplain, Thomas de Walton and Thomas de Whitly		
"	1 messuage	Robert de Amble and Thomas de Walton		
"	4 messuages	Thomas de Walton and William de Seton	1 15 2	1391 ¹⁷
"	4 marks rent	Alan Whitheved, Thomas de Walton, Adam de Fenrother and Sampson Hard- yng		
"	7 shillings rent	John de Dalton ...		

Place.	Extent of property.						Grantor.	Yearly value. <i>f</i> <i>s.</i> <i>d.</i>	Date.
Elswick	5 acres	John de Dalton and William Cheseman	0 0 4	1392 ^{1a}
Newbiggen	1 messuage	Thomas de Walton and Hugh Amble	0 3 4	
Widdrington	1 cottage	...	...	...	...	...	Thomas de Whitly and William de Seton
Cowpen	3 messuages, 3 cottages, 42 acres and 3 roods	Thomas de Walton and Alan Whitheved	1 13 2	
Tynemouth, Preston, Chirton and Milneton	4 cottages and 48 acres...	...	...	...	...	...	" "
Tynemouth	1 messuage, 1 acre, and a yearly rent of 3s. from a tenement formerly belonging to Philip Taillour	...	...	...	...	...	" "
Backworth	1 messuage, 1 cottage and 29 acres	...	...	...	...	...	" "
Seghill	Yearly rent of 20s.	Alan "Whitheved"	10 0 0 over and aboveservices and customs	1404 ^{1b}
Tynemouth, Preston and Chirton	1 messuage and 9 acres...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Whitley	The whole manor	Thomas Thornburgh, William Parker and William Asshe		

¹ Acquired without licence, *Inq. ad quod damnum*, file 65, 10. *Pat. Rolls*, 35 Edw. I. m. 29. The properties here mentioned were purchased at various dates after the Statute of Mortmain (1279) and before 1307, *c.g.*, Adam le Vacher's acre was acquired in or before 1291. *Assize Roll*.

² *Inq. ad quod damnum*, file 175, 3. *Pat. Rolls*, 19 Edw. II. pars 1, m. 35. The acquisitions of 1325-1345 were made in virtue of letters patent, dated June 26th, 1323, according licence to the prior and convent to acquire lands and tenements of the annual value of £10.

³ *Ibid.* file 187, 4. *Ibid.* pars 2, m. 4.

⁴ *Ibid.* file 194, 1. *Ibid.* 2 Edw. III. pars 1, m. 35.

⁵ *Ibid.* file 235, 9. *Ibid.* 9 Edw. III. pars 1, m. 6.

⁶ *Ibid.* file 243, 3. *Ibid.* 11 Edw. III. pars 1, m. 2.

⁷ *Ibid.* file 247, 4. *Ibid.* 13 Edw. III. pars 1, m. 11. Assigned to be held as of the value of 15s. yearly.

⁸ *Reg. Pal. Dun.* vol. iii. p. 279. Confirmed to the priory by Bishop Bury, subject to a perpetual rent charge of 5s.

⁹ *Inq. ad quod damnum*, 19 Edw. III. No. 31. *Pat. Rolls*, 19 Edw. III. pars 3, m. 4. Assigned to be held as of the value of 29s. 8d. yearly.

¹⁰ *Inq. p.m.* 22 Edw. III. pars 2, No. 12. *Ibid.* 22 Edw. III. pars 2, m. 30. The acquisitions of 1348-1380 were made in virtue of letters patent, dated October 14th, 1335, according licence to the prior and convent to acquire lands and tenements of the yearly value of £10. The properties here mentioned were assigned to be held as of the value of 30s. yearly, in part satisfaction of the said £10.

¹¹ *Inq. ad quod damnum*, 27 Edw. III. No. 3. *Ibid.* 28 Edw. III. pars 1, m. 2. Assigned to be held as of the value of 40s. yearly.

¹² *Inq. p.m.* 34 Edw. III. pars 2, No. 52. *Ibid.* 34 Edw. III. pars 1, m. 19. Assigned to be held as of the value of 30s. yearly.

¹³ *Inq. p.m.* 4 Ric. II. No. 122. *Ibid.* 4 Ric. II. pars 2, m. 3. Assigned to be held as of the value of £5 yearly.

¹⁴ *Pat. Rolls*, 5 Ric. II. pars 2, m. 2. Inquisition missing. The acquisitions of 1382-1404 were made in virtue of letters patent, dated February 20th, 1380, according licence to the prior and convent to acquire lands and tenements of the yearly value of £20.

¹⁵ *Ibid.* 8 Ric. II. pars 1, m. 2. Being a grant from the Crown.

¹⁶ *Inq. p.m.* 15 Ric. II. pars 2, No. 39. No entry on *Patent Rolls*.

¹⁷ *Ibid.* No. 155. *Pat. Rolls*, 15 Ric. II. pars 1, m. 12.

¹⁸ *Inq. p.m.* 16 Ric. II. pars 1, No. 112. *Ibid.* 16 Ric. II. pars 1, m. 6.

¹⁹ *Inq. ad quod damnum*, 5 Hen. IV. No. 13. *Ibid.* 6 Hen. IV. pars 1, m. 35. Assigned to be held as of the value of £15, in full satisfaction of the grant of £20.

Annual payments had to be made to St. Alban's by its cell. Various regulations were made at different periods. Richard, who was abbot between 1097 and 1119, decreed that Tynemouth should pay thirty shillings yearly, and took into his own hand the manor of Amble, Coquet Island, and the churches of Bywell and Woodhorn.¹ Fragmentary accounts for the years 1270-1277 in the *St. Alban's Register* show that the priory was then paying yearly £15 15s.² At the dissolution the sums paid were £20 pension in token of subjection to the abbey, £1 13s. 4d. contribution towards a sum of seventy marks paid yearly to the king and the Pope, and £6 8s. paid as pensions for scholars at Oxford.³ Extra-ordinary payments were numerous; for instance, a grant had to be made by the priory upon the election of each new abbot.

Restrictions were placed upon the prior's control of the finances of his house. He was forbidden by the regulations of Abbot Maryns (1302-1308) to make any alienation, to sell or lease customary lands to a free-man or to enfranchise them in any way, or to grant corrodies and pensions in perpetuity. He might not, without previously obtaining the abbot's consent, lease manors, mills, tithes, or rents for a term of more than three years.⁴ These regulations were subsequently relaxed by de la Mare, who, by a constitution of 1352, permitted the priors of his cells to lease lands and tenements, which their predecessors had retained in their hands, for thirty years or for one or two lives, without special licence from the abbot.⁵

In the premier cell of St. Alban's literature was sure to find a place. The contents of its library have been scattered and for the most part lost, but the few volumes remaining show something of the character of the collection. They are :

1. Brit. Mus. Cottonian MSS. Julius A X. Life of St. Oswin, an illuminated manuscript of about 1300, published by the Surtees Society, No. 8.

2. *Ibid.* Galba A V. Psalter; an Irish manuscript of the twelfth century, illuminated in purple, scarlet and gold, erroneously called King Oswin's psalter.

3. *Ibid.* Vitellius A XX. Various historical collections, including an abridgment of Matthew Paris. This portion of the volume was given to the library by Prior Ralph de Dunham (1252-1265), and is said to be the work of Matthew Paris himself, but see *Catalogue of Materials for British History*, Rolls Series, vol. iii. p. 318. Also a history of England from Brutus to 1348 and chronicles from the birth of Christ to 1347.

¹ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. i. p. 69.

² *St. Alban's Register*, fols. 65 and 71, cp. fol. 65 b. 'Memorandum quod quolibet anno percipiendum fuit de Tynemuth x^[h vj] et iiij^d, videlicet pro pensione magistri Bonetti v^{ll}, de cornagio iij^s et iiij^d, de Northon xlv^s, de Torp xxx^s, ad opus [procuratoris] Romani j marca, pro Conisclive j marca; de quibus debent subtrahi xl denarii [qui] debent solvi pro cornagio Carlebur⁷ et Morton.¹ Two additional items elsewhere mentioned are abbot's cornage (£2 16s. 8d.) and tithes from the house (£3 13s. 4d.).

³ John of Amundesham, vol. ii. p. 309.

⁴ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. p. 96.

⁵ *Ibid.* p. 447.

4. *Ibid.* Faustina, B IX. Three chronicles, namely, the *Chronicle of Melrose*, *Rishanger's Chronicle* (printed in the Rolls Series), and a chronicle of English history, 1360-1399 (printed to 1377 in the Rolls Series as *Chronicon Angliae*). This is the volume which Leland says he found in the Tynemouth library (*Collectanea*, ed. Hearne, 1774, vol. iii. p. 403), and which he cites as the Tynemouth Chronicle. It is to be distinguished from the work so named by Glover and Camden.

5. Bodleian library, Laudian MSS. No. 657. Richard de Wallingford, abbot of St. Alban's, on the *Albion* and *Rectangulum*, revised by Symon Tounstede; a fifteenth century manuscript presented to the priory by John de Westwyke, and afterwards the property of Thomas Horsley.

6. Library of Corpus Christi College, Oxford; No. 134. Life of St. Oswin, a sermon on his passion, and offices, hymns, etc., for his festival, with musical settings; an illuminated manuscript of the twelfth century.

7. *Ibid.* No. 144. Astronomical and poetical treatises, including Geoffrey de Vinsauf *De nova poetica*, and Richard de Wallingford on the *Albion* and *Rectangulum*. This volume was presented to the library by John Bamburgh, sub-prior, in 1438, 1447, and 1450. It and the life of St. Oswin mentioned above were given to Corpus Christi College by Bryan Twyne, the antiquary. The life of St. Oswin contains the autographs of Gilbert, Robert, and Mark Errington of Woolsington.

8. Library of Pembroke College, Cambridge, No. 82. Bede's *Ecclesiastical History*; late twelfth century manuscript, containing the autograph of John de Westwyk.

9. Library of the Dean and Chapter of Durham, A. N. 6. The books of Daniel and Esdras, with interlinear gloss; a thirteenth century manuscript given to the priory by brother Henry de Goreham.

10. The Duke of Northumberland's MSS. *Tynemouth Chartulary*. This contains, besides the chartulary and register already mentioned, transcripts of many documents which were formerly in the treasury of the priory, including rentals and customals of 1295 and later dates, extracts from the *Testa de Nevil* and from plea-rolls, and Walter de Henley's tract on husbandry. It has never been published as a whole, but an abstract of its contents is given in the sixth report of the Historical Manuscripts Commission, pp. 224-226. In the seventeenth century it belonged to Sir Ralph Portington, from whose executors it was bought for £5.

Of literature properly so-called, the only existing work known to have been produced in the monastery is the life and miracles of St. Oswin, which is valuable for the light which it throws upon the history of the priory during the twelfth century. The life and the earlier portion of the miracles was the work of an anonymous prior of Wymondham who visited the priory in 1111 and was subsequently invited by its monks to write an account of their patron saint. His volume appears to have drawn a healing power from the miracles of which it told, for one of the brethren of Gervase, abbot of Westminster, on applying it to his eyes, staved off the blindness which threatened him.¹ Fresh chapters were added from time to time as noteworthy events occurred, but the work, as it exists, stops short with the close of the twelfth century.

John of Throckley (Trokelowe), whose history of Edward II. is one of the best accounts of that king's reign, was once cellarer at Tynemouth, but he did not commence his work until some years after he had been

¹ *Vita Oswini*, cap. xxxii. The life in the twelfth century Corpus Christi College manuscript concludes at this point.

carried thence in chains to St. Alban's. John Bamburgh, his life of Whethamstede being lost, has left nothing but a short commentary upon Geoffrey de Vinsauf. John of Tynemouth has little or no claim to be considered a member of the monastery which his name has made famous.

Much has been lost. The early court-rolls have been long missing. Of the numerous deeds which once filled the treasury, a twelfth century grant to the priory of a few acres in Jesmond and a lease of a fishery in the Tyne were found among the records of the Court of Augmentations and again disappeared.¹ The fine charter of Edgar, son of Gospatric, reproduced in this volume, remains because it was handed over to Durham priory in 1174. Two late leases of little consequence complete the tale.

Nothing is known of the long roll of which one of the earl of Northumberland's officers wrote to his master about the year 1600:

'It is to be remembered that his lordship may move Sir Robert Cycill to have the aneyent grantes of Tynemouth againe containing three large skinnes of parchment, which the late earle your father did deliver to the late Lord Treasurer, Sir Robert's late father, which he can come by and gett if he please, which would greatly further his lordship's proceedinges for the libertyes, etc., bycause the[y] conteyne the grantes and confirmacons of sundry kinges and princes of this land, and made to the prior and convent of Tynemouth.'²

The Tynemouth Chronicle survived long enough to be quoted by Glover and Camden, and then all knowledge of it was lost. Judging from the few extracts from it which remain, it must have been of some value for northern history during the twelfth century.³

¹ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 77.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS. ; an early seventeenth century survey of Tynemouthshire.

³ Anno 1080, Walterus, Dunelmensis episcopus, in loco qui dicitur Gateshevet, id est caput capre, a Northumbrensibus innocenter est occisus in ultione necis Liulfi nobilis generosque ministri.

Anno gratiae 1093, ecclesia nova Dunelmi est incepta, iii kal. Augusti, feria quinta, episcopo Willelmo et Malcolmo rege Scotorum, cum Alexandro fratre suo et Turgoto priore, ipso die ponentes primos lapides in fundamento.

Anno domini 1179, in Natali Domini, apud Oxenhal in territorio de Derlington in episcopatu Dunelmensi, elevavit se terra in altum ad similitudinem procerae turris, et mansit ab illa die quasi immobilis usque ad vesperam, et tunc cecidit tam horribili strepitu quod vicinos terruit omnes, et absorbit eam tellus, et fecit ibidem puteum profundum, qui est ibi in testimonium usque in hodiernum diem.

Anno 1177 Willelmus comes Gloucestriae, filius Roberti comitis fratris imperatricis, dedit Johanni, filio domini sui regis Angliae, filiam suam in uxorem cum comitatu Gloucestriae, si praefatus Johannes praedictam mulierem licentia domini papae posset sibi in matrimonio copulare. Et pro hac concessione dominus rex Angliae pater dedit promogenitis filiabus ejusdem comitis ducentas libratas reddituum in Anglia, scilicet uxori Aumari comitis Ebroicarum centum libratas, et uxori Ricardi comitis de Clare centum libratas.

The third of these extracts is from Camden's *Britannia*, ed. 1587, p. 498; the others from the Ashmole MSS. (Bodleian Library), vol. 860, fol. 7 b, 'ex codice MS. collectaneorum Roberti Gloveri, scilicet miscellaneorum liber 2,' fols. 18 b to 21. For an allusion made by a writer who was apparently a monk at Tynemouth in the fifteenth century to 'a very old book kept in this monastery called *Septem Signacula*,' which book contained an account of the later history of Robert de Mowbray, see *Registrum Whethamstede*, vol. i. p. 449.

Lastly must be added to the list of lost records the Great Book, also called the Black Book, of Tynemouth. In the early years of the seventeenth century it was kept in the custody of John Carville, solicitor to the earl of Northumberland, and it was frequently consulted upon points of law and title. Robert Helme, an officer of the earl, wrote about it in 1606 to George Warde, the king's surveyor for Northumberland :

I perceyve you have seene Codnehan's purchase of the parsonadge of Ovingham, parcell of the late monastery of Hexham. Nowe to prove and shew you that the tyethes of Ovington were and are belonginge to the late monastery of Tinemouth ys very easye to be made and done yf you can procure the Lord Highe Treasurer's lettre to the nowe earle of Northumbreland to deliver the great book of Tinemouth, which is the king's evidence, nowe in the custody of John Carvile, his lordship's solicitor; in which booke yt appeareth playnely; and the gift of John Baliol, lord of Bywell, who did give the said tyeth and the tyeth of Wylhm to the church of Tinemouth, annexed to the said booke will shewe. Besides there is in the same book iij severall sentences against John Pikeworth, clark, parson of Ovingham, at the suyte of the pryor and covent of Tinemouth, with like chardges, which I think ys suffeycent prouff of the mater. You must not make me an author that Carvile hath the book, lest by some sinister informacion to my lord and master I lease his lordship's favour; but use the mater in that sort as to your good discretion shall seame convenyent and good, so hereby I may be saved blamelesse.¹

This letter was intercepted by George Whitehead, the captain of Tynemouth castle, who sent it on to a friend at Essex House with the commentary :

Sir. By great happe, I met with this lettre which somewhat concernes my lorde; and yf I had not by great fortune prevented the delivery therof as it was directed, it might wrought soome discontent to his lordship. Onely nowe it rests to prevent the lyke heareafter, and is good we have found out a false disciple to soc good a master, which to make knowne to his lordship I thought it my dewty, and therfor intreat you to certefye his lordship heareof.²

It subsequently passed out of the earl's hands. A note in the *Tynemouth Chartulary* informs us that 'Sir Orlando Bridgman hath a coucher book of his lordship's for Tynemouth in fol:'

Among conventual seals and seals of the priors of Tynemouth may be noticed:

1. *Dur. Treas.* 3^{cia} 6th Spec. No. 37, and 2^{da} 1^{ma} Ebor. Nos. 10 and 11. Seal of Prior Akarius in 1198, oval, 2½ inches by 1½ inches; tonsured figure standing to right; cape of habit thrown back; right hand placed on breast; a clasped book held in the left hand. ✠ SIGILLVM ACHAR...RIORIS DE TINEMV.....

2. *Ibid.* 4^{ta} 2^{da} Spec. No. 25. Seal of a prior of Tynemouth between 1210 and 1239; rounded oval, 1½ inches by 1¼ inches, ancient gem; head of an emperor. ✠ CAPVT NOSTRV M XPS EST.

3. *Ibid.* 1^{ma} 1^{ma} Archidiac. No. 2. Seal of Prior Germanus, circa 1230; oval, 1½ inches by 1¼ inches; figure kneeling to right, holding right hand on breast and some object in the left hand. ✠ NON CLAVSALAT...NGIS PATET.

4. Charter in the possession of the Duke of Northumberland. Seal of Prior Ralph de Dunham (?); oval, 1¾ inches by 1¼ inches; (a) Our Lady seated with the Child on her knee. PLENIT DE . . . THA. (b) On counter seal a male figure seated facing. A conventual seal attached to a lost charter of Prior Germanus is described as having on it the figure of St. Oswin, on the counter seal the figure of the Virgin (Augmentation Office, *Cartae Antiquae*, B. 81).

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² *Ibid.*

5. *Dur. Treas.* Misc. Chart. No. 4361. Seal of Prior Simon de Walden, 1310; oval, $1\frac{1}{2}$ inches by 1 inch; demi-king facing, holding a sceptre topped with fleur de lys in right hand, his left hand on his breast; a pinnacle on each side on a canopy above him; beneath, under a sharply pointed trifoliated arch, a demi-figure praying to left; on the canopy work above the praying figure, SERVE DEUM. FRIS . . . NIS: PRIORIS: DE TI. EMV . . . This seal was used by Prior Richard de Tewing in 1330 (*Dur. Treas.* 4th 5th Eleemos. No. 8), and by Prior Clement de Whethamstede in 1380 to a charter in the possession of Sir Charles Legard, bart., reproduced as frontispiece to vol. vii. of the *Genealogist*, new series.

6. *Dur. Treas.* 1^{ma} 3^{cin} Pont. No. 7 and Augmentation Office, P.R.O. *Deeds of Surrender*, No. 228. Conventual Seal, 1385 and 1539; oval, 3 inches by $1\frac{1}{2}$ inches; Our Lady standing facing, holding Christ with the left hand; on her left a king standing holding a spear in his right hand and a sceptre in his left; each under a canopy; above, a female bust facing, with a star on each side of neck. SIGILLV: COE: PRIORATVS: SCE: MARIE: ET: BI: OSWINI: DE: TYNEMVTHA.

In a visitation of 1530 the following arms were ascribed to the monastery: *gules, three crowns or*. The three crowns were formerly visible on a shield on the eastern exterior of Percy chapel.¹ They appear, along with the arms of the founders of the other cells of St. Alban's, at the east end of the chapel of Abbot Ramrydge in the abbey church (1490-1521).

PRIORS OF TYNEMOUTH.²

- 1129. Remigius.
- 1148. Germanus, elected abbot of Selby in 1153.
- 11.... Ruelendus.
- Geoffrey.
- [Henry.]³
- [Robert.]³
- Gilbert.
- 1189 (before). Akarius, elected by the monks of Tynemouth on the death of Gilbert; occurs as prior in 1195 and 1197; afterwards prior of St. Alban's; elected abbot of Peterborough in 1200; died 1210.
- 1200, *circa*. [Hugh Gubiun.]
- 1208. Ralph Gubiun [prior of Binham in 1199]; as prior of Tynemouth was party to fines in 1208 and 1212;⁴ resigned *circa* 1217 and retired to St. Alban's; died May 4th, 1223.
- 1224. [William de Bedford, elected prior of Worcester and admitted to that office November 21st, 1224; died October 29th, 1242.]⁵
- 1227. Germanus [*per resig.* Gubiun].⁵

¹ *Tonge's Visitation*, Surt. Soc. No. 41, p. 35. Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. plate to face p. 47. A shield, similarly blazoned and encircled with the inscription, *Scutum Sancti Oswyni Regis*, occurs on the ceiling of the choir of St. Alban's church. The ceiling has been ascribed to John de Whethamstede. See J. G. Waller, 'Armorial Bearings on the Ceiling of the Monks' Choir in the Abbey Church of St. Alban,' *Archæologia*, vol. li. pp. 427-446. The same arms were attributed to Offa, king of Mercia, the founder of St. Alban's monastery, whose shield appears on the ceiling of the nave of the same church. See Rev. C. Boutell, 'The Early Heraldry of the Abbey Church of St. Alban,' *Journal of Archæological Association*, vol. xxxiv. pp. 16-30.

² For further details and authorities see Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. ii. Several additional priors are given in Gibson's list, whose inclusion is not warranted by evidence.

³ Henry and Robert occur in the Belvoir Obituary as priors of Tynemouth, but without date. Their absence of surname makes an early period probable.

⁴ *Feet of Fines*, John, Nos. 2 and 17.

⁵ The *Curia Regis Rolls*, Nos. 88 and 96, show that Germanus was prior in 1227, and consequently there is a conflict of evidence between *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. i. p. 275 (where Germanus is said to have immediately succeeded Ralph Gubiun), and *Annales de Wigornia*, Rolls Series, *Annales Monastici*, vol. iv. p. 417 (where William de Bedford is stated to have been prior of Tynemouth in 1224).



1



4a



2



6



4b



3



5

TYNEMOUTH PRIORY SEALS

1233. Walter de Bolum,¹ died January 2nd, 1244.
 1244. Richard de Parco, surnamed Rufus, of Winchelcombe; prior of Binham 1226-1244; elected prior of Tynemouth before February 20th, 1244; died April 25th, 1252.
 1252. Ralph de Dunham, elected prior on or before May 1st, 1252; living in 1264; died August 13th, 126...
 1265, *circa*. William de Horton, prior of Wymondham in 1264.
 1273. Adam de Maperteshall.²
 1279. William Bernard, died 1280.³
 1280. Simon de Walden.⁴ *p.m.* Bernard; deposed in 1294 or 1295 and banished to St. Alban's.
 1295. Adam de Tewing, party to a suit with the master of the leper hospital at Burton in 1300.⁴
 1305. Simon de Walden, restored; living in 1310;⁶ died April 17th, [1311].
 1311. Simon de Taunton, presented July 1st and admitted July 21st, 1311.⁷
 1315. Richard de Tewing, presented March 20th and admitted March 31st, 1315;⁸ died September 29th, 1340.
 1340. Thomas de la Mare, born in 1309; presented October 6th, 1340;⁹ elected abbot of St. Alban's in 1349; died September 1st, 1396; buried at St. Alban's.
 1349. Clement de Whethamstede, *per resig.* de la Mare, admitted . . . 1350;¹⁰ living in 1389.¹¹
 1393. John Macrell¹² of Whethamstede, took part in the election of Abbot Heyworth in 1401; buried at Tynemouth.
 1419. Thomas Barton, [*p.m.* Macrell,] presented May 12th, admitted June 6th, 1419;¹³ living in 1436.
 1440, *circa*. [Robert de Rhodes.]
 1450. John Langton, deposed March 15th, 1478; living in May, 1480; died August 21st, 14...
 1478. Nicholas Boston, nominated successor to Langton in 1477; presented by Richard, duke of Gloucester, and Lord Say; appointed prior for life in May, 1478; resigned May 17th, 1480.
 1480. William Dixwell, prior of Binham, 1462-1480; appointed prior of Tynemouth, May 8th, 1480; presented, June 29th, 1480; removed from Tynemouth and again made prior of Binham, *circa* 1481; created prior of Hertford in 1495; living in 1511.
 1481, *circa*. Nicholas Boston, restored; appointed prior for life by grant of the abbot of St. Alban's, March 8th, 1483, and by grant of the abbot and convent, November 19th, 1483; died June 12th, 1495; buried in the chapel of St. Francis in the church of the Grey Friars, London.
 1503. John Bensted,¹⁴ born 1455; prior of Hertford in 1483; appointed abbot of Whitby and received episcopal confirmation in that office August 12th, 1505; died in 1514.
 1512. John Stonewell, S.T.P., received from Wolsey exemption from the jurisdiction of St. Alban's for life, November 14th, 1518; as prior, made a return of the revenue of his house in 1526; died or resigned before July 3rd, 1527.¹⁵
 1528. Thomas Gardiner, chaplain to Henry VIII.; appointed prior for life in 1533; died or resigned shortly before December 13th, 1536.¹⁶
 1537. Robert Blakeney, appointed prior before April, 1537; signed deed of surrender of his monastery, January 12th, 1539; received a pension of £80 and retired to Benwell; died before 1553.

¹ *Curia Regis Rolls*, No. 116.² *Feet of Fines*, 1 Edw. I. No. 4.³ *Pat. Rolls*, 7 Edw. I. m. 2 d. *Assize Rolls*, No. 1254. m. 7.⁴ *Ibid.* 18 Edw. I. m. 5 d.⁵ *Assize Rolls*, No. 658.⁶ *Coram Rege Rolls*, No. 202. ⁷ *Registrum Palatinum Dunelmense*, *Rolls Series*, vol. i. pp. 44, 79-84.⁸ *Ibid.* vol. ii. pp. 696, 699.⁹ *Ibid.* vol. iii. p. 378.¹⁰ *Durham Registers*, Hatfield, fol. 1.¹¹ Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. ii. vol. ii. p. 252.¹² *Cal. Papal Registers*, Letters, vol. iv. p. 487.¹³ *Durham Registers*, Langley, fols. 267, 268.¹⁴ *Registrum Whethamstede*, vol. ii. p. xlvi.¹⁵ *Letters and Papers*, Hen. VIII. vol. iii. p. 176; vol. iv. p. 1469.¹⁶ *Ibid.* vol. v. p. 329; vol. vi. p. 337; vol. xi. p. 524.

THE PARISH CHURCH.

Part of the priory church at Tynemouth was set apart for parochial purposes and divided from the rest of the building by a stone screen erected at the time of the Transitional extension of the chancel. The vicar was appointed by the prior of Tynemouth with the consent of the abbot of St. Alban's, and admitted by the bishop of Durham. The church shared the immunity from contributions to the diocesan conferred by Pope Adrian IV. and his successors on churches in the gift of St. Alban's.¹

Disputes having arisen between Durham and St. Alban's as to the bishop's right of visitation, an agreement was effected in 1247, and by it the bishop's right to visit the parochial portion of the church was acknowledged. It was arranged that the vicars should be responsible to the bishop for spiritualities, and to the monks for temporalities.

An instrument drawn up by Prior Dunham in 1250, with the consent of his abbot, specified the extent of the endowment of the vicarage. The vicar for the time being was to receive the fruits of the vicarage, estimated at forty marks, to be paid to him in kind in the following way: every day he was to have from the priory two monks' loaves, four bottles of ale, one small white loaf, one squire's loaf, and two gallons of ale drawn from the wood, as well as a quarterly payment of forty quarters of oats for his horses, and fodder for two horses. The prior and convent further assigned to him the tithes of corn and hay in the townships of Burradon and Murton, and the tithe of one of their fisheries. They were to pay him weekly one penny for bread for the mass, and allowances for service books. He had, as vicar, two houses in the village of Tynemouth and two houses at Earsdon, free from all customary service, to be kept in repair at his own cost. He was to serve the church of Tynemouth in person along with a competent chaplain and clerk, and to find a chaplain and a clerk to celebrate mass daily in the chapel of Earsdon. These had to be lodged by the vicar, and were all to take oath of fealty to the prior and convent. The vicar was to find the mother church of Tynemouth and the chapel of Earsdon in wine, wafers, lights, vestments, vessels, utensils, and all things

¹ *Chronica Majora*, vol. v. pp. 9-11.

needful, for which the sacristan was to pay him forty shillings yearly. On the other hand the sacristan was bound to provide, in the usual manner, lights for burial services. All the ordinary dues to which the church of Tynemouth and the chapel of Earsdon were liable were to be paid by the vicar.¹

This sum of forty marks paid to the vicar was only a small portion of the total yield of the rectory, which was stated in a taxation of 1292 to be, apart from the vicar's endowment, £111 12s. 10d., of which thirty pounds was yearly bestowed in alms and ten pounds in pittances to the monks. It was made up of £87 11s. 8d. from the grain tithes of the parish (excepting those of Burradon and Murton held by the vicar), five marks from the mills, sixty-nine shillings from the tithes of wool and lambs, five shillings and six pence from the tithes of geese and pigs, forty shillings from the

¹ [Omnibus] sancte matris ecclesie filiis ad quorum noticiam presens scriptum per[venerit. Ri]cardus prior de Tynemuth et ejusdem loci conventus, salutem in domino sem[piternam.] Noverit universitas vestra nos, de consensu venerabilis patris nostri [Johannis.] Dei gratia abbatis de sancto Albano, ad sustentacionem domini Petri vicarii et successorum ejus [de Tynemuth.] ac capellanorum ac clericorum eorundem tam in ecclesia [de Tynemuth] quam in capella de Erdesdun deserviturorum, in hunc modum providisse. . . . Predictus Petrus vicarius et successores ejusdem, qui pro tempore [fuerint. singu]llis annis nomine vicarie percipient ad valenciam quadragin[ta m]arcarum, quam juxta estimacionem bonorum virorum sic duximus expri[mendam, vide]licet duos panes monachales et quatuor justatas cervisie mo[nachalis.] et duos panes, unum panem parvum album et alium panem armigeri, et duas lagen]as cervisie de dolco expensabilis singulis diebus percipient. Ad sustentacionem suorum equorum quadraginta quarteria avene qualiter de garba [ad qua]tuor terminos, videlicet ad festum sancti Michaelis, ad festum [Purificationis virginis, ad pascham et nativitatem beati Johannis, [quolibet festo] decem quarteria, et foragium ad duos equos singu[llis diebus perci]pient. Preterea dicti prior et conventus concesserunt decimam garbarum et fenum de Burudon imperpetuum, [et gran]i et feni de Morton, cum decima garbarum per [fines] tote parochie sue ; item decimam piscarie three lincs illegible, sacristam dicte ecclesie et dictum vicarium et ejusdem su[ccessores] legataria fabrice ecclesie, luminaria sancti Oswini, et cap. dictarum fabrice capelle et cerei memorati predictus vicarius et successores [septimanis] singulis unum denarium pro pane benedicto offerendo, denarios missalicios et denarios salicios. Habebunt etiam imperpetuum vicarius et successores ejus nomine vicarie duo messuagia in villa d[e Tynemuth.] unum videlicet quod fuit quondam Rogeri le Harpur et aliud quod fuit Roberti Coki Dunelmensis de empcione Petri ejusdem loci tunc vicarii, sibi et success[oribus] suis imperpetuum possidenda, et tercium mesuagium in villa de Herdesdun capelle, preter unum ex parte orientali, ex omni servili exactione liberum et [quietum], sibi et successoribus suis propriis cum sumptibus constituenda et, cum o[ccasio] fuerit, eadem reparanda. Et sciendum quod supradictus vicarius et ejus [suc]cessores in predicta ecclesia de Tynemuth in propriis personis cum capell[ano] et clerico competenti deservient, et capellanum ydoneum et clericum compete[n]tem in capella de Herdesdun singulis diebus ministraturos invenient, et o[mn]ibus cum habitaculo competenti exhibebunt. Preterea predictus Petrus vicarius et successores, necnon et eorundem capellani et clerici, juramentum fidelitatis p[re]f[ati]ori et conventui de omnimoda indempnitate dicte ecclesie et de aliis tibus successive prestabunt. Predictus vero vicarius et ipsius successores omne [mi]nisterium, tam matricis ecclesie de Tynem[outh] quam capelle de Erdesdon, nec[non] utpote in vino, oblatis, luminariis, vestimentis, vasis, utensilibus, et] aliis consimilibus invenient; ad que inveniend[a] percipient a[n]nuatim de sacrista quadraginta [solidos], scilicet medietatem in festo sancti [Cuthberti in] autumpno, et aliam medietatem ad pascham, luminaria tantum ad et mortuorum exequias pertinencia sacrista more solito invenient. [Et scien]dum quod vicarius de Tynemuth qui pro tempore fuerit omnia s[ervicia] matricem ecclesiam de Tynemuth et capellam de Erdesdon quocum[que] nomine con]tingentia sustinebit: extra ordinarium vero juxta quantitatem sue [porcionis]. Ut autem hec ordinacio imperpetuum robur optineat firmitatis, [prior et conven]tus et Petrus vicarius huic scripto in modum cyrografi s[igilla sua] apposuerunt. Datum apud Tynemutham in vig[ilia] anno gratie m[ille]c[ies] quinquagesimo. *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 128.

tithes of hay and flax, forty shillings from wax, twenty shillings from baptism and churching fees, seventy shillings from mortuaries and the sale of the clothes of deceased persons, six pounds ten shillings from annual offerings, and forty shillings from sundries ('de minutis rebus propter conscientiam').

It appears from an inquisition taken in 1295, upon the death of the vicar, that a third part of the goods of all fugitives within the parish was paid over to the incumbent, that the chaplain and the clerk received a proportion of every mortuary, and that the vicarage was of the annual value of forty-five marks.²

Sometimes the right of presentation *hac vice* was accorded by the prior and convent to others. Anthony Bek, bishop of Durham, presented divers of his clerks to the vicarage upon three occasions. In 1308 he drew up a statement acknowledging that this was not done of right but by the courtesy of the prior and convent, who should henceforward make free exercise of their privilege.³

John de Barneburgh was presented to the living in or about that year. He was succeeded by John de Howyk, who was followed in his turn by John de Howorth. One of these three men may have been the compiler of the *Sanctilogium* and the *Historia Aurca*, John of Tynemouth, who is commonly reputed to have been vicar here, and to have afterwards entered St. Alban's monastery as a monk. John of Tynemouth's history and identity are, however, obscure. Sir Thomas Grey, the earliest writer who mentions him, has recounted a vision in which he was led by a sybil up the ladder of history; and, when they had stepped upon the fourth rung, they were in a chamber in a village that stood before a strong castle, where they found a chaplain writing upon a lectern. 'Sweet friend,' said the sybil, 'this is the vicar of Tillmouth, who is writing the *Historia*

¹ *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 108 b. Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. i. p. 593.

² *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 129 b.

³ [A. permi]ssione divina sancte Jerosolinite ecclesie patriarcha et episcopus Dunulmensis. Attendentes quod religiosi . . . prior et conventus de Tynemuth, nostre diocesis Dunulmensis, diversos clericos nostros [ad vicariam] de 'Tynem' predictae jam per tres vices ad nostri rogatus instanciam presentarunt, . . . [ind]empnitate prospicere in hac parte, ne etiam eorum curialitas ipsis in presentacione dicte vicarie [sit] in prejudicium vel jacturam, universis tenore presencium volumus esse notum quod dicti [religiosi] non ex aliquo debito nominacionis nostre set ex sola liberalitate sua dictos clericos nostros [et] non aliter presentarunt, quodque nec nos nec successores nostri occasione nominacionis nostre [clam]emus in jure ipsorum ad dictam vicariam libere presentandi quicquam juris aliquibus [modis], sed dicti prior et conventus clericum quem voluerunt ydoneum possint ad dictam vicariam libere presentare. In cujus rei testimonium has nostras patentes litteras prefa[.] sigillo nostro episcopali signatas fieri fecimus communitas. Datum Londoniis, anno domini m^occc^o octavo, patriarchatus nostri tercio et consecracionis nostre [vicesimo sexto]. *Ibid.* fol. 213.

Aurea. Sybilline sayings are dark, and, as the manuscript of Grey's history is unique, it is impossible to say whether 'Tillmouth' is a copyist's error, or whether it contains a correct tradition.¹

No visitations of the church antecedent to 1501 have been recorded. In that year it was presented that the vicar was non-resident, that matins and vespers were not said at fitting times, and that the glass windows in the choir were broken.²

After the dissolution, the choir or conventual portion of the church was suffered to fall into ruin, but the nave remained standing as a separate church. This probably necessitated some alteration in its structure, and on January 19th, 1546, Sir Francis Leeke, then captain of the castle, had a warrant from the Privy Council for '£20 towards the making of a church at Tynemouth.'³ Use was made of the building for storing artillery, a procedure which Bishop Tunstall of Durham brought in 1558 to the notice of the Privy Council, with the result that an order was issued to the lord lieutenant and to Sir Thomas Hilton, captain of the castle, for the removal of the ordnance, 'to th'ende the inhabytanntes may have the use of the churche for the hearing of Deyvne service, as reason is.'⁴ The conversion of the monastery into a royal castle and a house for the Percys made it inconvenient to the residents to have a parish church within it, and on October 27th, 1566, Sir Henry Percy wrote to Sir Robert Cecil: 'I have already told you the annoyance to this house by the parish church being within it, and much frequented by the strangers who visit the haven. At my request Sir Richard Lee has inspected it, and can report on the cost of a new one, and the value of this towards it.'⁵ Percy's suggestion was not carried out; on the other hand, little was done to keep the church in repair, though Luke Akome of Tynemouth, by will dated December 18th, 1563, left 20d. to the mending of the south window,⁶ and 12s. 4d. was paid in 1592 for the making of new stalls in the church for the use of the captain of the castle.⁷

¹ *Scalachronica*, ed. Stevenson for the Maitland Club, p. 3. There was a chantry but no vicarage at Tillmouth. It stood near to the strong castle of Wark, which was Grey's home. Upon John of Tynemouth see *Nova Legenda Anglie*, edited for the Clarendon Press by Carl Horstman, who, with too great positiveness, identifies Tynemouth with John of Howyk. Horstman relies upon a statement made by John Boston of Bury: 'Johannes dictus Anglicus, vicarius de Tynemuthe, floruit A.C. mcccclvi et scripsit Historiam Auream, etc.' Boston, who wrote about fifty years after Grey's death, was the first writer to give a full account of John of Tynemouth's works. Pits. in 1619, adds that the vicar afterwards became a monk of St. Alban's, a statement unsupported by direct evidence.

² *Ecclesiastical Proceedings*, Surt. Soc. No. 22, p. xxi. ³ *Acts of the Privy Council*, 1542-1547, p. 316.

⁴ *Ibid.* 1556-1558, p. 382.

⁵ *Cal. State Papers Domestic*, Addenda, 1566-1579, p. 18.

⁶ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 114.

⁷ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

Upon a visitation made in 1608 the church was stated to be in great decay.¹ Sir William Brereton, who came to Tynemouth in 1635, in the course of a tour through the county, described it as 'the fairest church I have seen in any castle, but now it is out of repair and much neglected.'² When the Civil War broke out the parishioners were no longer able to obtain access to their church, since it lay within the castle. It was rapidly becoming dismantled, and the Oliverian commissioners in 1650 reported it to be quite ruined.³ Ten years later the roof fell in. Work had then already commenced upon a new parish church (Christ Church), near North



THE PRIORY CHURCH FROM THE SOUTH-WEST.

Shields. Proposals made to rebuild the ruined nave of the priory church, which had been used during four centuries for parochial services, were not executed, but the east chapel was fitted up and appropriated to the parish; a movable oak communion-table, covered with a red marble slab, being substituted for the former altar.⁴ This building continued to be used

¹ *Durham Visitation Books*.

² Brereton, *Notes of a Journey through Durham and Northumberland*, Richardson's Reprints, p. 17.

³ *Arch. Acl.* 1st series, vol. iii, p. 9.

⁴ 'April 13th, 1675. Richard, son of Richard Hudson of Tinemouth, baptised: ye first baptised in Tinemouth church after it was rebuildd.' *Tynemouth Parish Registers*, ed. Couchman, vol. i. p. 97.

for services until 1810, when it was taken over by the Board of Ordnance and converted into a powder magazine, in which state it remained for forty years. It was then restored to the parish and repaired under the supervision of Mr. John Dobson. Services are occasionally held in it.

From the commencement of the seventeenth century, if not earlier, the chancel of the priory church was used as a burial ground for the parish. In the course of two centuries and a half interments had covered a considerable area, including the nave and site of the Lady-chapel and ground on the east and south sides of the chancel. The incongruity of a churchyard with undefined limits existing within the walls of a government fort was a circumstance which not unnaturally led to disputes between the parish and the military authorities. The governor of the castle raised a claim in 1826 to a payment of ten shillings upon each occasion that ground was broken for the interment of a parishioner. This claim was abandoned, but at the same time the parish consented to a limitation of the burial ground.¹ Except in certain vaults, burials no longer take place within the precincts of the castle.

MONUMENTAL INSCRIPTIONS.

Here lyeth the body of the Reverend Mr. Ralph Clarke, vicar of Long Benton, who departed this life March the 4th, 1733/4, aged 59 years. Also near this place lyeth interred Eliz. Taylor, daughter to the Rev. Ra. Clarke, who departed this life Nov. the 9th day, 1741, aged 41 years. Eliz., wife of the Reverend Ralph Clarke, died Sept. the 3rd, 1758, aged 79 years. Also lieth here Ralph Clarke, son of the above Rev. Ralph Clarke, who died the 2nd of May, 1785, aged 77 years. Arms: *A saltire enrailed between four horses' heads coupéd.*

In memory of Henry, son of Robert Clarke of North Shields, master mariner, who died the 26th of December, 1768, aged 5 years. Also four more children who all died young. Dorothy, wife of the said Robt. Clarke and mother of the above said children, died the 12th of October, 1784, aged 51 years. Near this place also lyeth interred the body of the above named Robert Clarke, who departed this life the 3rd August, 1786, aged 73 years.

Thomas Dawson, esq., died 9th October, 1784, aged 59.

Barbara Dawson, died July 27th, 1781, aged 24. Also in memory of Dorothy Sanderson, sister of the above, who departed this life on the 9th day of Oct., 1809, aged 41 years. Also of Mary Clementina, eldest daughter of Capt. Wm. Henry Temple, late of the 52nd reg., and granddaughter of the above-named D. Sanderson, who died on the 13th of Jany., 1830, aged 6 years and 6 months.

The burial place of Armorer Donkin at the Low Lights. Here lieth the body of Elizabeth Donkin, who departed this life the 8th of May, 1772, aged 46 years. Also the above-named Armorer Donkin, who departed this life the 12th of March, 1798, aged 76 years. Likewise two of his children who died young.

William Sidney Gibson, esquire, born Nov. 12th, 1814, died Jan. 13th, 1871, greatly beloved and deeply regretted.

¹ Gibson, vol. i. pp. clxxxii-clxxxv.

Sacred to the memory of Frances, wife of Rev. William Haigh, vicar of Wooler, who died October 17th, 1824, aged 60 years. Frances Susannah Haigh, eldest daughter of the above, departed this life Sept. 23rd, 1851, aged 63 years.

Sacred to the memory of William Preston Haigh, esq., captain, Royal Engineers, eldest son of the late Rev. William Haigh, A.M., vicar of Wooler, departed this life March 11th, 1840, aged 49.

In memory of Edward Hall of Whitley, esquire, who died the 7th of June, 1792, aged 65 years.

Erected to the memory of John Johnson of Woodhorn, who departed this life March 22nd, 1825, aged 70 years. Isabella, his daughter, died July 18th, 1821, aged 8 years. Also three of his children died young. Mary, wife of the above, died Feby. 25, 1825, aged 53 years.

The burial place of Samuel Lacy of Great Yarmouth, master and mariner, who died October the 6th, 1762, aged 71 years. He married Ann, the daughter of the Reverend Mr. Ralph Clarke, vicar of Long Benton, who had issue eighteen children—sixteen died young. Ann, the wife of the above-named, who died the 6th of December, 1765, aged 60 years. Arms: *On a bend three martlets, over all a label of as many points*, Lacy; *impaling a saltire engrailed between four horses' heads couped*, Clarke.

The burial place of Richard Lacy, esq., of Newcastle, who married Dorothy, third daughter of Joseph Dacre, esq., of Kirklington in the county of Cumberland. Richard Lacy died March 18th, 1778, aged 34. Joseph Dacre Lacy, his second son, died May 25th, 1772, aged 5. Arms: *On a bend three martlets*, Lacy; *impaling quarterly first and fourth three escallops*, Dacre; *second and third six martlets, three two and one*, Appleby.

Sacred to the memory of John Liddell of Dockwray Square, who departed this life the 14th of Nov., 1802, aged 67. Jane Liddell, wife of John Liddell, departed this life the 16th of August, 1805, aged 69 years. John and Anthony, sons of John and Jane Liddell, both died young. Also Jane, their daughter, departed this life the 21st of May, 1781, aged 12 years. Elizabeth Cay, granddaughter of the above John and Jane Liddell, died the 27th of August, 1803, aged 11 months. Sarah Wright, daughter of John and Jane Liddell, died the 10th of Dec., 1821, aged 58 years. Albert Liddell, son of the above-named John and Jane Liddell departed this life the 17th of Dec., 1826, aged 61 years. Elizabeth Cay, died at Edinburgh the 27th of Oct., 1831, aged 61 years. Isabella Robinson, died in London, the 13th of June 1833, aged 57 years. George Liddell died at Beech Grove, near Chester-le-Street, 16th of Aug., 1835, aged 68 years. Barbara Liddell, died in Edinburgh, Jan. 2nd, 1845, aged 72 years.

Here lyeth ye body of Mr. John Lomax, who departed this life May ye 25, 1693.

In memory of John Lowes, gentleman, died Jany. 13th, 1760, aged 44 years. Eleanor his daughter, died June 16th, 1764, aged 16 years. Jane Boucher, his daughter, died July 29th, 1782, aged 28 years. Mary Lowes, wife of Ralph Clarke Lowes, departed this life January 23rd, 1784, aged 25 years. Jane, relict of the above-named John Lowes, died the 19th of August, 1794, aged 75 years. Mary, wife of Willm. Fall, died July 23rd, 1804, aged 82 years.

In memory of Anthony Pearson of North Shields ropery, who departed this life ye 6th day of February, 1769, aged 58 years.

Here lieth interred the body of Henry Reay, esq., alderman and twice mayor of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and Hannah his wife, daughter of Utrick Whitfield of Whitfield, esq., by whom he had issue two sons, Utrick and Joseph, who both survived them. She departed this life July 10th, 1733, aged 58, and he October 18th, 1734, aged 63. Here lieth interred the body of Utrick Reay, son and heir of Henry Reay, esq., alderman of Newcastle-upon-Tyne By his wife Bridget, daughter of Henry Blencowe of Blencowe, in the county of Cumberland, esq., he had issue three children, Philadelphia, who died April 4th, 1736, in the first year of her age, Hannah and Utrick who survived him. He died April 10th, 1742, aged 30. Here also lieth the body of Utrick Reay, his son, who died March 4th, 1744, aged 6; to whose memory this monument was erected by the above-named Bridget Reay.

Sacred to the memory of Sarah Shadforth, who died the 10th of March, 1806, in the 35th year of her age, leaving four young children and a most disconsolate husband ever to lament her loss.

Here lieth the body of Prudence, late wife of John Topping, some years governour of this castle, who departed this life in child-bearing the 19th day of Feby., 1658, as alsoe four of her children, Ellinor, Richard, and a sonne still borne, with a child who was interred with her, the 21st Febr., 1658.

Also lieth here, Mary, the wife of Zechariah Tizack, who died May, 1748. aged 44 years. Also Benjamin Cowley Tyzack, chain and anchor manufacturer. of North Shields, who died April 9th, 1851, aged 78 years.

Hic sitae sunt mortales reliquiae Henrici Villiers, armigeri, stirpe antiqua prognati, unici honoratissimi comitis de Jersey fratris, necnon hujus presidii circiter 20 annos fidelis et perquam dilecti prefecti. Vixit annos 49; obiit 18 Aug., Anno Domini 1707.¹

Here lies the body of James Wilkinson, merchant, of Newcastle, who died the 11th of August, 1761, aged 46. Here also lieth interred the body of Bridget, the wife of the above-named James Wilkinson, who died the 12th day of November, 1776, aged 71. Christopher Wilkinson, merchant, died the 21st November, 1784, aged 38 years. Also lie interred the remains of James Wilkinson, esq., most sincerely and deservedly lamented by all his friends: he departed this life on the 28th of August, 1801, aged 52 years. Here lie interred the remains of Jane Wilkinson, widow of the above James Wilkinson, who died March 10th, 1823, aged 71 years.

Sacred to the memory of John Wright, esq., of North Shields, founder of several elegant streets both there and at Newcastle. He died the 25th November, 1806, aged 75 years. Also of Ann, his widow, who died on the 29th of June, 1812, in the 60th year of her age. Also of his eldest son, William Wright, who died Dec. 10th, 1847, aged 80 years. He was many years deputy-lieutenant and acting magistrate for the county of Northumberland and Newcastle-upon-Tyne. Also of Frances, his widow, who died the 5th of April, 1864, in the 83rd year of her age.

Sacred to the memory of Stephen and Margaret Wright of Dockwray Square. Margaret Wright, died March 28th, 1795, aged 72 years. Stephen Wright, died June 28th. 1803, aged 86 years. Also near this place lie eleven of their children who all died young.

DESCRIPTION OF THE PRIORY AND CASTLE.

PRE-CONQUEST REMAINS.

As might be expected on the site of an Anglian settlement, occupied from early days by a religious congregation, Tynemouth has supplied some remains of the sepulchral memorials of its early christian inhabitants.² They are few in number, however, and are all fragmentary, consisting of portions of the shafts and heads of the crosses which once stood over the graves in the cemetery of the church. One of these stones is of more than ordinary interest. It is known as the Monk's Stone, and now stands a mile to the north of the priory ruins, at a little distance from the road to Whitley. Its present position is not the original one, and it is without doubt part of a memorial cross, originally placed in the cemetery.

The roughly-hewn square base, on which the cross stands, is modern. The upper portion, including the cross-head, is wanting, and the shaft, which Grose³ described as being ten feet in height, is now only six feet high above the socket. The two faces, which stand east and west, taper from

¹ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 122.

² For Roman remains found at Tynemouth see pp. 36-38.

³ *Antiquities of England and Wales*, new edition, vol. iv. p. 127.

18 inches to 14 inches; the sides from $11\frac{1}{2}$ inches to $8\frac{1}{2}$ inches. For a space of 22 inches from the base, the shaft is plain on all sides, never having had any carved work there. The remainder has been sculptured over the whole surface with human figures, a tree, animals, lacertine creatures, and interlacing knot-work patterns. These elaborate ornamental

designs exhibit many tasteful qualities, giving evidence of the employment of a skilled and experienced workman, though there is nothing to show the influence of the vine and other foliage motives, characteristic of the Hexham school, or of that which produced the Bewcastle and Ruthwell crosses. Neither the design nor the execution show any sign of decadence, and the cross may be assigned to a time not later than the first part of the ninth century. As it has suffered considerably from weathering, an adequate description of its sculptured work cannot easily be given.

The angles of the stone have all been occupied by bead-mouldings, carried across the four sides as single beads, immediately beneath the ornamental work. The beading is also to be seen on the north side, above the upper pair of loops of knot-work, as well as on the south side, between the interlaced pattern and the two lacertine creatures presently to be described.

On the north side alone can the design be made out with any degree of certainty. That has had an interlacing pattern in double bands of a not uncommon kind, very similar to that on a cross once built into the tower of St. Oswald's church at Durham.¹ Ten sets of circles, similar to those on the Durham

MONK'S STONE, NORTH SIDE AND
WEST FACE.

stone, can be clearly seen, the bands which form them being continued as four sets of knots up to the point where the side is crossed by a line of moulding. Above this, for a space of six inches, the stone is covered with interlaced work.

The south side has, on the lower part, two pairs of creatures whose extremities appear to form groups of knot-work, filling the intervening

¹ *Victoria County History of Durham*, vol. i. pp. 224-225. *Durham and Northumberland Architectural Society*, vol. iv. pp. 281-283.

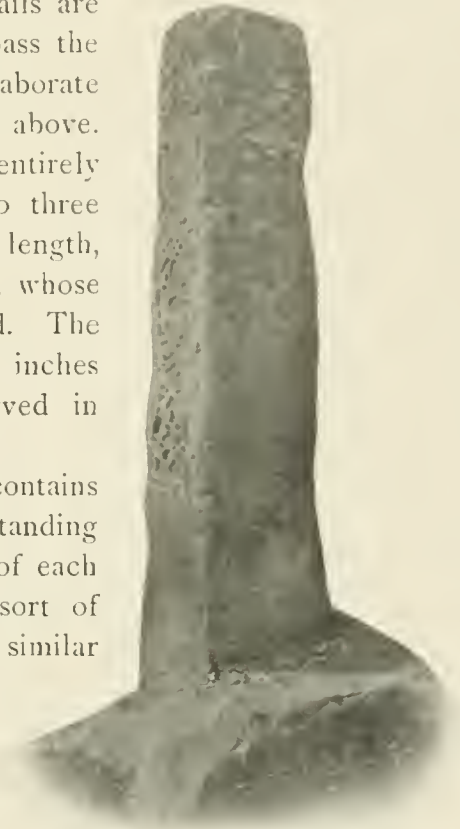
spaces. Above them there seems to have been a quatrefoil flower of conventional design, and, above that again, are apparently two birds, whose long beaks cross each other at the middle of their length. Beading traverses the stone at this point, separating the last mentioned design from two lacertine creatures, whose bodies are placed saltire fashion, the tails being rolled round towards one another. Limbs and tails are continued as bands, which intertwine and compass the bodies. This pattern, though similar, is more elaborate than that on the St. Oswald's cross mentioned above.

The design on the west face has almost entirely perished. It seems to have been divided into three panels. The bottom space, which is 13 inches in length, contained two creatures facing one another, from whose limbs an interlacing design was perhaps evolved. The middle panel is 9 inches long, and the upper 26 inches appear to have been filled by a subject carved in bold relief.

The east face is the most interesting, and contains two human figures, much worn away but still standing out in some degree of relief. Above the head of each figure, the arching branch of a tree forms a sort of canopy. Higher branches of the same tree make similar arches over a pair of animals somewhat like sheep. Other parts of the tree may have branched into interlaced work. The lowest compartment of this face has had upon it a design of interlaced work of a delicate and unusually minute pattern. If a conjecture may be hazarded, the subject perhaps represents our first parents in the Garden of Eden, among the trees and animals with which it was filled.

In addition to the Monk's Stone, portions of four other crosses have been discovered at Tynemouth, and are now preserved at the Black Gate Museum in Newcastle-upon-Tyne.

The first (fig. 1) consists of one limb and the central portion of the head of a cross. It is made of sandstone and is 14 inches high, $9\frac{1}{2}$ inches



MONK'S STONE, SOUTH SIDE AND
EAST FACE.

wide, and $4\frac{1}{2}$ inches thick. In the centre is the not uncommon feature of a round boss, surrounded by a raised circular ring. The limb is occupied by a knot made by a ribbon interlacing at each end, and other knots probably existed in the missing limbs. A similar design occurs on the other side. The sides are plain.

The second (fig. 2) is a single limb of a cross-head, 8 inches in height, $7\frac{1}{2}$ inches in width, and of a thickness diminishing from 6 inches to 5 inches. The sides are plain. An interlacing knot-pattern of a single band occupies both faces.

The third stone¹ is a portion of the shaft of a cross, 14 inches high, the faces tapering from 12 inches to 11 inches, and the sides from 8 inches to $7\frac{1}{2}$ inches. On one face the design has been chiselled off. The remaining face has upon it two series of well sculptured knots of double bands, placed one above the



FIG. 1.

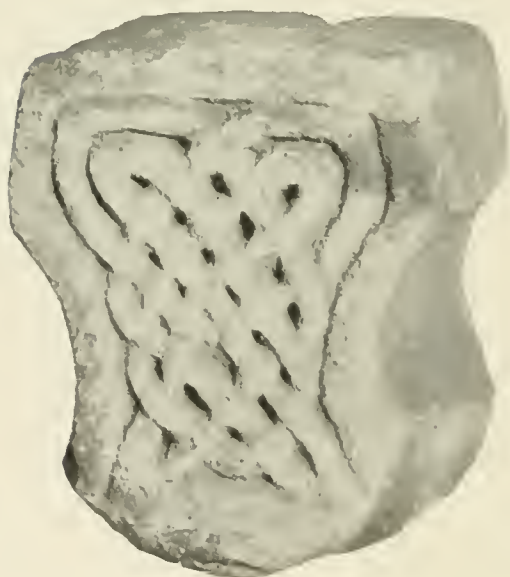


FIG. 2.

other, an effective and beautiful pattern found upon many crosses of Anglian work. The sides have an interlacing knot-pattern of one band.

The last fragment is also part of the shaft of a cross. Though of inferior workmanship to those already described, it is, in regard to the subjects carved upon it, of equal interest to the Monk's Stone. It is 18 inches high, with faces tapering from $11\frac{1}{2}$ to 11 inches, and sides from $9\frac{1}{2}$ to 9 inches. The edges consist of a plain roll-moulding. The faces are divided into panels by a band of broad cable-moulding, bordered on each side by a

¹ An illustration of this stone is given in *Arch. Acl.* 2nd series, vol. xxv. p. 121.

narrow roll-moulding. One face of the fragment is occupied¹ by a draped human figure standing facing. With each hand he holds a book in front of his chest, and he seems to be standing between two trees, which arch over his head. The lower part of the other face (fig. 3) contains an interlacing pattern of three knots placed horizontally. Above is a creature which has been described as a centaur, since, besides having four legs, two appendages like arms proceed from the shoulders. If these are arms, then the creature is holding, poised in its right hand, a long shaft ending in a spear-head at the bottom, and in a round ball at the top. With its left hand it grasps its tail, which seems to be prolonged into an interlacing pattern over its back. A raised ring is placed between its legs.² The creature, which is apparently in motion, has a counterpart upon one of the crosses at Aycliffe³; but while that on the Aycliffe cross resembles a horse, this animal has cloven hoofs, and is more like a lamb. The carved work on one side of the stone has perished; the other side is covered by a double row of knotted cords, placed perpendicularly and connected at the top and bottom.



FIG. 3.

These fragments of sepulchral memorials represent all that remains of the monastery which stood upon the headland in the eighth and ninth centuries. The church in which Saint Oswin's body was discovered, and its tower seen by the soldiers of William I. upon their foray, are gone, and no trace of Anglian masonry is found in the later structure. The monks of St. Alban's apparently began to build a new church about the year 1085, as soon as they had been established at Tynemouth. This building was in course of construction in 1093, when King Malcolm was buried in it, and was sufficiently far advanced in 1110 to receive the body of St. Oswin, translated in that year from the Anglian church, which then fell into disuse.

¹ For a view of this face and an alternative account of the design upon it, see *Arch. Acl. loc. cit.* p. 119-120.

² A similar ring occurs on two of the cross heads from the foundations of the chapter house at Durham, there in connection with the Holy Lamb: *Durham and Northumberland Architectural Society*, vol. iv. p. 129; *Victoria County History of Durham*, vol. i. pp. 226, 228.

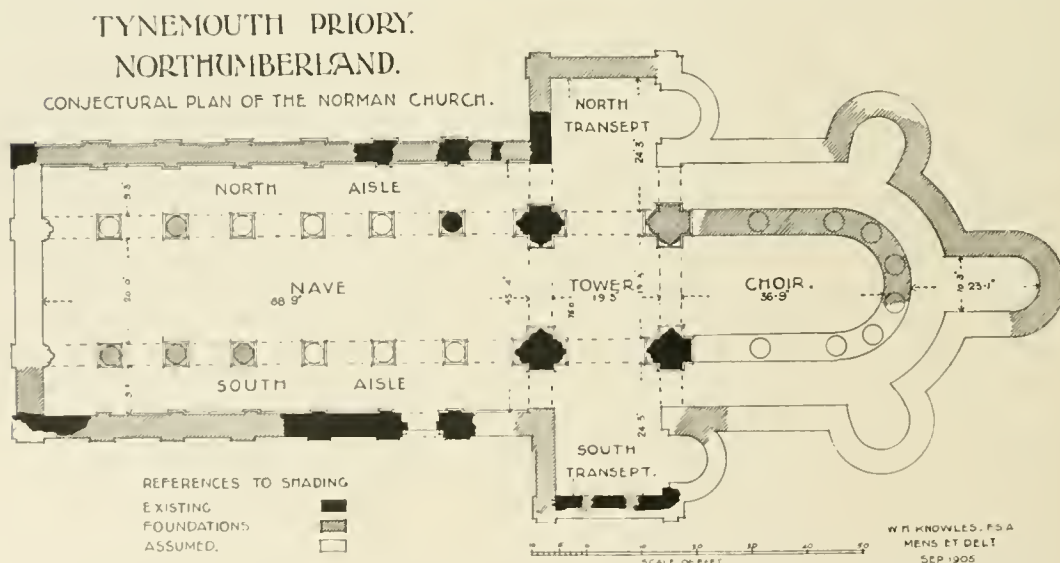
³ *Ibid.* p. 220.

THE CHURCH : TECHNICAL DETAILS.

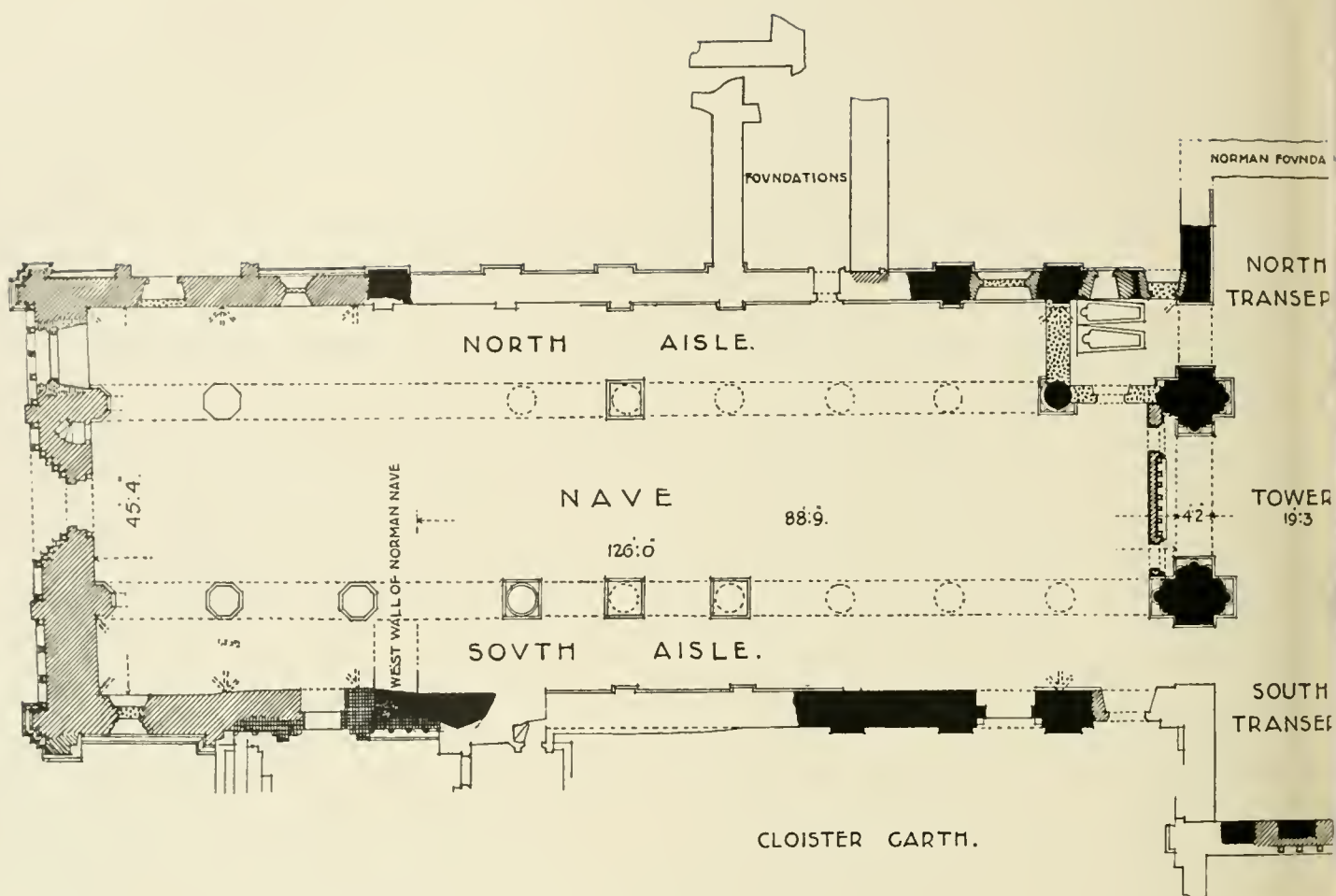
The great monastic churches erected in this country shortly after the Conquest were invariably cruciform, having an eastern arm with aisles and an apsidal end, transepts with eastern chapels, and a nave with aisles. It was not unusual for the eastern terminations to be apsidal internally, and square externally, as at Durham and Lindisfarne; more rarely, as at Worcester, Gloucester, Norwich and Winchester, the aisles continued round the apse, forming an ambulatory. Recent excavations have shown that the priory church of Tynemouth was of the latter and rarer type,¹ differentiated in this case by the addition of three chapels, radiating from the choir, the middle one being the longest. A single eastern chapel is a common feature, and occurs at Winchester; at Canterbury and Gloucester there are side chapels in the crypts, but the design carried out at Tynemouth was most uncommon in the smaller Norman monastic churches, and this example is probably unique in England.

A. The Norman Structure.

The position of the west end of the Norman nave is indicated on Plate VIII., and remains of the bases of the arcade piers and the internal



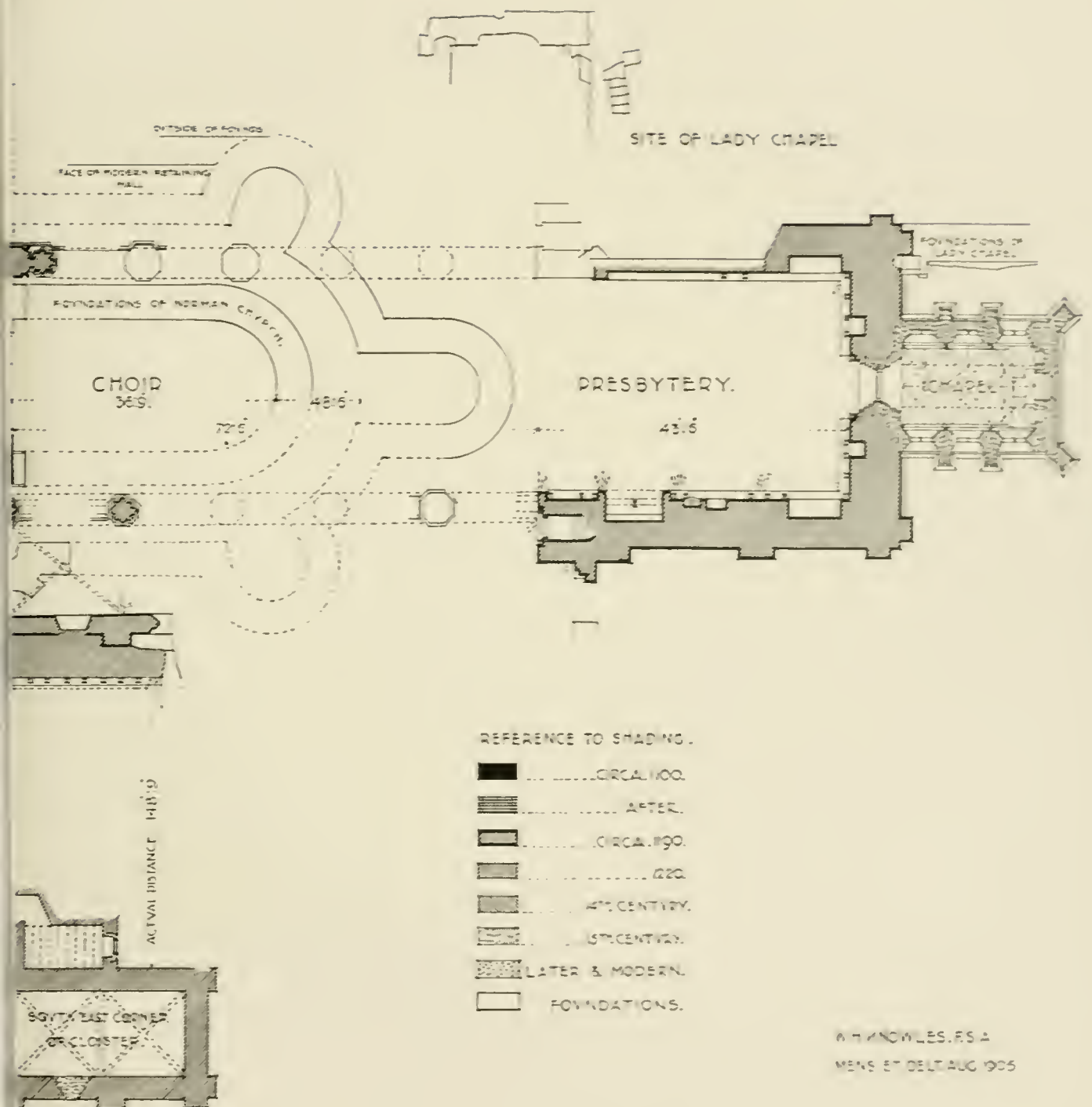
¹ The above plan is developed on evidence afforded by these excavations. The portions in black represent existing walls, the shaded portions foundations or other evidence, and the dotted lines conjectural work.



TYNEMOUTH PRIORY NORTHUMBERLAND.

GROUND PLAN.

10 5 0 10 20 30 40 50
SCALE OF FEET



W. H. KNOWLES, F.S.A.
MEAS. ET DELT. AUG. 1905

and external pilasters of the aisle walls show the nave to have been of seven bays. A central tower surmounted the crossing space. The transepts, as at St. Alban's, were aisleless, with eastern apsidal chapels similar to those at Lindisfarne, Tewkesbury and Romsey. As nothing of the choir remains except foundations, it is not possible to say with certainty how it was subdivided, but its length suggests that it had two bays of the same width as those of the nave, the apse being divided into five bays, as in Norwich cathedral.

The foundation walls of the ambulatory, or apse, which formed the eastern termination of the choir, are in coursed ashlar work; while those of the radiating chapels, at a lower level, are of rough masonry, somewhat coursed, and carried five or six feet down in a sandy soil. There is no indication of the floor level, and the depth of the masonry appears to be due to the insecurity of the foundation. Three of the crossing piers, which carried the central tower, remain, as also the foundations of the fourth. The two western piers have responds composed of triple semi-shafts towards the crossing, transepts and nave, and broad flat pilasters towards the aisles; in the case of the eastern piers there are similar responds towards the transepts and crossing, and pilasters on the sides towards the choir and aisles. The piers have slightly moulded bases on a massive square plinth; their capitals are cushioned with chamfered abaci continued as a string course on each side. Only a few square voussoirs of the outer order of the crossing arch remain. The greater part of the south and east walls of the south transept is standing, the former containing two built-up window-openings with chamfered string-course below the sill level, the latter, which has been pierced in its lower stage by the later choir aisle, retaining portions of two round arches about the level of the clerestory and of an archway below giving access to the ambulatory. In the west wall of the north transept there is a similar semicircular arch opening into the aisle, flat on the soffit and springing from a chamfered impost.

The nave arcades appear to have carried a clerestory. They have all fallen except a single pier at the east end of the north side. This is cylindrical in plan, and the bases of other piers suggest that they were all of the same design. It has a many-sided capital of cushion form, with carving imitative of arcading, and over it is a portion of two square orders of a round arch. The north and south nave walls have chamfered plinth

courses, and are emphasized externally and internally by flat pilasters corresponding with the bays of the arcade. The eastern bay of the north wall contains portions of a semicircular-headed window, of a single light, opening above the level of a chamfered string course. Possibly a similar window occupied each bay between the pilaster buttresses. Opening off the cloister, and in the second bay from the east end of the south wall of the nave, there is a semicircular arched doorway of three orders, each springing from a chamfered impost, with the exception of the middle order, which was supported by a detached nook-shaft.

The construction of the domestic buildings was commenced as soon as the church was completed. Documentary evidence shows that a dormitory, forming part of the eastern range of the cloistral buildings, and probably raised over the monastic parlour, was being erected in 1111. On the opposite side of the cloister a building projected beyond the west end of the nave on its south side, as is shown on Plate VIII. Its lower stage was decorated by a simple arcade on attached semi-shafts resting on a chamfered stone seat.

B. The Early English Development.

The Norman choir lasted for a century and then gave place to the noble eastern arm which dominates the coast, and recalls Whitby in its style and situation. Throughout England, and especially in Northumberland, considerable building operations were proceeding at the commencement of the thirteenth century. At Tynemouth the reconstructed choir was abnormally large, for the separation of the nave for parochial purposes was probably already contemplated. The work may be attributed to Prior Akarius, and was commenced during the last decade of the twelfth century, at the same time that John de Cella, abbot of St. Alban's, was beginning the extension westwards of the mother church. Its magnitude may be understood when it is remembered that the Norman choir extended only about 48 feet eastwards of the crossing, whereas this arm of the Transitional church covered a length of 116 feet. It was larger than the corresponding limb of the priory church of Hexham, and its length, with the addition of the tower, was equal to the total length of Brinkburn. Besides being increased in length, it was made 10 feet wider than the former choir. Its arcade piers occupy the outer alleys or aisles of the Norman church, the new aisle walls being outside those which they

replaced. The demolition of the old choir was therefore not necessary until the completion of its successor, in which it was enclosed, and the work of building did not interrupt the services of the monastic body.

The Transitional choir consisted of five bays with aisles, and was continued eastwards as an aisleless presbytery of four bays. The presbytery and a portion of the south aisle of the choir remain.

The exterior of the east end has an impressive simplicity of design. It is divided into three compartments by buttresses, of flat pilaster shape in the two lower stages, becoming semi-octagonal on the face of the gable. In place of the tiers of triple lancets which occur at Brinkburn and Whitby, the Tynemouth elevation is occupied, on the lower stage, by three tall lancets of two chamfered orders, and, on the second stage, by two small pointed windows in the outer and a vesica in the middle compartment. The gable is more ornate, each division comprising an arcade of three pointed arches on shafts with moulded caps and bases; the arches occupying the side bays are of varying height, following the rake of the original roof line. The middle arch of the centre bay is pierced by a lancet of two orders with banded nook-shafts. Stepped string courses divide the stages, and octagonal turrets originally capped the angle buttresses above the level of the roof. The south wall is pierced by lancets having their sills on the same level as those in the lower stage of the eastern gable, to which they correspond in design. Smaller pointed windows with nook-shafts occur above the lancets, the eaves course above the latter being carried on corbels carved as grotesque heads. A flat pilaster divides the windows of the first and second bay, whilst a buttress of greater projection encloses a staircase formed in the masonry of the fourth bay.

The interior of the presbytery was vaulted. It is finely proportioned and the design is full of resource in its varied form and detail. The space below the level of the window-sill is occupied by a wall arcade of pointed arches on detached shafts with moulded bases and slightly carved capitals with square moulded abaci. The centre of the wall arcade on the east side is pierced by a door giving access to the Percy chapel, and on either side of the door are aumbries. At the east end of the north and south walls the arcade is broken by wide segmental arched recesses, intended to receive effigies, and in the third bay on the south side it is similarly broken by a double sedile with trefoil-headed openings. There is also an aumbry and piscina in the second bay.

Triple clustered shafts or responds divide the bays and the eastern lancets, their bases resting on the string course over the wall arcade. The capitals are carved and have octagonal-shaped abaci, which are continued as a string over the side lancets, but at the east end are at the level of the springing of the lancet arches. Vaulting ribs, moulded and enriched with dog-tooth ornament, spring from the capitals. The window openings are deeply recessed, and their treatment is varied in detail. At the east end the lower lancets have a hood-moulding with dog-tooth, but the openings in the side compartments above them have only a single roll moulding to both jambs and arch, the capitals to the jambs having square abaci continued as strings. The vesica has an enriched hood-moulding with sunk trefoiled circles in the spandrels below. On the sides, the lancet arches are of two moulded orders carried on detached banded nook-shafts, the clerestory lights over them being similar in arrangement but having a hood-moulding with dog-tooth ornament, whilst the same enrichment adorns the angles of the jamb between the shafts. The two westernmost bays contained staircases, and there is a wall gallery at the level of each stage. The south wall of the presbytery has, at the level of the choir triforium, a double pointed arch within a semicircular containing arch. String courses above and below indicate the height and proportion of this member of the choir arcade.

Unfortunately nothing remains of the choir excepting a portion of the aisle at the west end of the south side.¹ That fragment, however, together with the pier plinths and the responds on the side of the presbytery bay containing the staircases, and the drawings of Ralph Waters, made in the middle of the eighteenth century, provide sufficient data for reconstructing this beautiful arm of the church.

The choir comprised a central alley with north and south aisles, and, independently of the aisleless presbytery, measured 73 feet in length and 63 feet in breadth between the aisle walls. An arcade of five bays, with a triforium and clerestory windows above, separated the aisles. Its main arches were of three deeply moulded orders, and sprang from piers formed of a cluster of eight large shafts filleted towards the cardinal points of the compass, the diagonal shafts being pear-shaped. Each pier carried a moulded octagonal capital, and its base, which was also moulded, rested on octagonal plinths with a roll moulding on the edge, continued

¹ See illustration on page 56.



From a Painting

THE CHOIR, TYNEMOUTH PRIORY CHURCH.

By Waters.

on a dwarf wall between the piers. At the east end the arch sprang from a triple-shafted respond supported on a corbel. Similar responds rose from the pier capitals and terminated at the level of the flat ceiling which covered the central portion of the choir, being divided in their height by a string course at the levels of both triforium and clerestory, and by the abacus moulding of the latter. Above the arcade was a triforium of three members, the two outer of single pointed arches, and the inner of two sub-arches within a semicircular containing arch, all supported on clustered and nook shafts. Above that again was a clerestory consisting of three arches to each bay, decorated with carving and supported on detached and nook shafts, with moulded caps and bases, the angles between the arches being ornamented with the dog-tooth flower.

The aisles were vaulted in simple quadripartite form, with moulded transverse and diagonal ribs. These sprang from the aisle walls on triple clustered responds, with moulded octagonal capitals, the abacus moulding being continued as a string between the single lancet windows which occupied each compartment. An arched opening, broken through the east wall of the Norman transept (at the west end of the aisle), was of four orders towards the transept, and supported by nook-shafts in the jambs below.

The division of the church for conventual and parochial uses was effected, as at Wymondham and Binham (also cells of St. Alban's), by assigning the nave to the parish. At Tynemouth that arm of the church was shut off from the rest by a stone screen, built between the western piers of the crossing. This is plain towards the nave, where the high altar of the parish church stood, and is pierced on either side by low doors, between which, on the eastern face of the screen, is an arcade of five pointed arches on detached shafts, standing on a stone seat. A door was inserted in the east bay of the south aisle of the nave in order to give access from the cloister to the conventual church.

After the enlargement of the choir, the next great alteration in the structure of the church was its extension westwards by the removal of the Norman west wall, and the erection of two bays. This was done about the year 1220, a work possibly to be associated with Abbot Trumpington's notable visitation of his cells. It is interesting to observe that this extension appears to have been completed before the removal of the old gable, which accounts for the unusual width of the bay uniting the old and the

new bays. The piers and respond carrying the arcade arches were octagonal in plan, with moulded capitals and bases. The aisles were vaulted, and the chamfered ribs of the vaulting sprang from corbels in the aisle walls. Details in the walling suggest that the work, which included the vaulting of the previously unvaulted aisles, proceeded from west to east.

The west front arrests attention directly the castle gateway is passed, though in height it does not compare with the east end.¹ The elevation is divided into three compartments by flat pilaster buttresses dying into the wall at the eaves level. In the centre is a deeply recessed door of five richly moulded orders with hood, placed on shafted jambs having moulded capitals and bases. The space on either side between the door and the buttress is occupied by a pointed arched recess, the two recesses being of unequal width. Above the doorway was a row of lancets, ornamented on jamb and arch with the dog-tooth moulding. This was afterwards replaced by a large fifteenth century window, which filled the whole width of the nave, and of which the sill and jambs remain. The south compartment is divided into three stages, the lower being filled with an arcade of three pointed and moulded arches on detached shafts with moulded capitals; the middle stage contains two trefoil-headed openings with only a simple roll to both jambs and arch; the upper stage comprised an arcade of four arches stepped to the rake of the aisle roof, and supported by capitals resting on detached shafts. The north compartment, like the centre bay, received in the fifteenth century a window which filled the space. A bold moulded plinth passes round the thirteenth century extension, and on either side is a lancet window. In the west bay on the north side is a doorway which was screened by a porch or gave access to a vestry, whilst on the south side is a mutilated door-opening which originally gave access to a chamber that projected beyond the Norman west end and was afterwards used as a means of communication with the interior of the church.

C. The Lady-chapel.

Before the middle of the thirteenth century the church had reached a length of 261 feet. In interest, variety and beauty it compares well, especially in regard to the choir, with any of its contemporaries. It continued unaltered until about 1336. In that year a Lady-chapel was in course of construction. It was presumably in this chapel that Prior de

¹ See illustration on page 128.

la Mare, about 1347-1349, placed the shrine of St. Oswin, 'so that those who came to it might more quietly, freely and fittingly continue their devotions around the martyr.'¹ The large chapel, shown in an Elizabethan plan of the castle (Plate XII.) as existing on the north side of the presbytery, appears to be the only one of sufficient size to answer the requirements of such a building. Its foundations can still be seen running eastwards in continuation of the north wall of the presbytery, and, as the wall arcade of the latter is intact on this side, access to the chapel must have been from the north aisle of the choir or from its first bay. Its length on the interior was therefore not less than 70 feet. It was larger than the Lady-chapel that Abbot Eversdon had built, some twenty years earlier, at St. Alban's, itself a gem of the decorated period of architecture. Apart from the moulded plinth courses and the plan already mentioned, the only evidence of the work is to be found in a drawing made by Grimm about 1780,² in which is delineated the jambs of a window attached to the north-east angle of the presbytery. Some fragments of traceried work on the site may have belonged to the windows, and there are also some spandril pieces, richly carved with emblems and foliage, which may have formed part of a screen.

D. The Chamber over the Choir.

About the same time, and possibly by the energy of Prior de la Mare, who spent the large sum of £864 upon the church, the presbytery and choir received an additional storey, of which evidence remains in the jambs of windows above the Transitional south walls and the massive masonry over the original roof line of the east gable. This large and important chamber was probably intended to receive relics, muniments, or other church moveables. A similar addition was made at Brinkburn priory (vol. vii. p. 485). It is not a common feature, but is to be found in some parish churches, as at Stewkley and St. Peter's in the East, Oxford, the cathedrals of Canterbury and Lincoln, the chapel of King's College, Cambridge, and it existed in the demolished chapel of Pembroke College, Oxford. About this period the single-light Norman window in the eastern bay of the north aisle of the nave gave place to a double-light ogee window a little to the west of it, and a door of communication between the church and the prior's lodging was inserted in the same bay.

¹ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. p. 379.

² *Brit. Mus. P.R.*, Kaye, vol. iii. p. 118.

E. The Percy Chapel.

The only portion of the church remaining to be noticed is the interesting chapel at the extreme east end, commonly but erroneously known as the Lady-chapel. It was built about the middle of the fifteenth century, when John Langton was prior. From the occurrence of the arms and badge of the Percys upon its walls and vaulted ceiling, it appears to have been erected by that family, possibly, as the heraldry suggests, by the second earl (1417-1455). The interior of this chapel, which measures only 19 feet by 12 feet, is divided into three bays, each containing a double-light traceried window with jamb mouldings, formed of a series of hollows continued across flat-pointed heads. At the east end is a circular window filled with modern tracery, and on either side a niche with a cusped head. Below are square aumbries, and in the south wall is a piscina under an arched recess. Each compartment of the vaulting has a ridge and transverse and diagonal ribs; and, on each side of the centre, the semi-compartment is again divided by longitudinal, transverse and diagonal ribs. At each intersection of the three longitudinal ribs is a large circular boss with representations of the Redeemer and the Apostles, sacred monograms, etc. The subjects, commencing with the central ridge rib and proceeding from the east, are :

Head of Christ with nimbus.

Standing figure of the risen Christ holding a banner in his right hand; at his feet is a small female figure (St. Mary Magdalene); the whole encircled by a label bearing the inscriptions: *RABO . E MAGISTER* and *NOLI ME TANGERE*.

Seated figure ✠ . . *ANDREA* ✠ *ORA p NOB* . .

Seated Majesty between four angels, blowing trumpets. . *N DIE IVDICH LIĒA NOS DO* . . .

Seated figure, staff in left hand, book in right. ✠ *SĒE IACOBE ORA p NOB*!

Standing figure holding a lamb. *SĒE IOHĒS BAPTISTA ORA p NOBIS*.

Agnus Dei with cross and flag surrounded by cable mounting.

On the north side of the central ridge are :

Eagle of St. John; scroll missing.

Sacred monogram, *I H S*, surmounted by crown.

Seated figure with palm leaf in right hand and book in left. *SĒE IOH EVĀGELISTA ORA p NOBIS*.

Monogram of the Virgin, *MP*.

Seated figure, three loaves in right hand, book in left. *SĒE PHILIPPE ORA p NOBIS*.

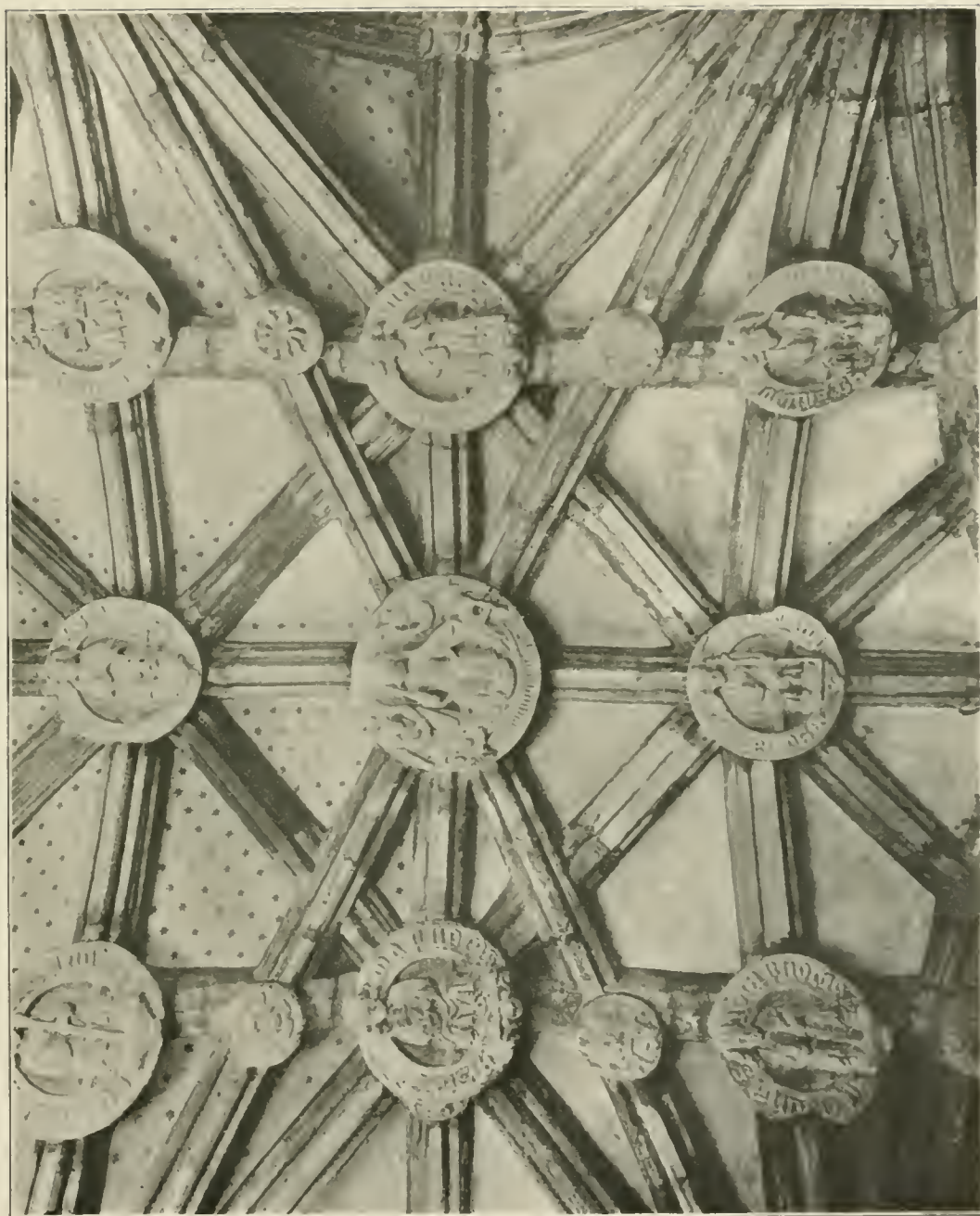
Star with nine waving rays.

Seated figure, a sword in left hand, book in right, the feet on a cushion supported by a human head. ✠ *SĒE PAVLE ORA p NOBIS*.

Sun in splendour; round the edge the inscription ✠ *IHES . MERCY*.

Seated figure holding book in right hand, flaying knife in left. *SĒE BARTHOLOMEE ORA p NOB*!

Percy crescent and shacklebolt on a shield.



CEILING OF THE PERCY CHAPEL, TYNEMOUTH

Seated figure, book in right hand, pillar in left. ✠ SĒE SYMON ORA p NOBIS.

Monogram of Prior John Langton, **EL**

Lion of St. Mark, holding scroll lettered SĒE MARCE ORA p NOB . .

On the south side of the central ridge are :

Cheib of St. Matthew holding scroll ; lettering obliterated.

Square rose of fifteenth century type.

Seated figure holding fuller's bat in left hand and book in right. SĒE IACOBE MINOR ORA p NOBIS.

Emblems of the crucifixion, namely, cross encircled by crown of thorns, and at its foot three nails and a scourge.

Seated figure, book in right hand and spear in left. SĒE THOMA ORA p NOBIS.

Circular rose.

Seated figure with keys in right hand, and book in left, the feet on a cushion supported by a human head. ✠ SĒE PETRE ORA p NOBIS.

Bearded head.

Seated figure, book in right hand and saw in left. SĒE MATHIAS ORA p NOBIS.

Monogram of Prior John Langton repeated.

Seated figure, book in right hand and halberd in left. SĒE THADEE ORA p NOBIS.

Emblem of the five wounds, namely, a cross with central boss, the boss and limbs each pierced with a nail mark, the whole surrounded by a cable mounting.

Bull of St. Luke holding scroll lettered SĒE LVCA ORA p N

On the west wall :

Over the door a crowned figure seated, sceptre in left hand ; at the feet to the right a kneeling figure holding scroll lettered FVNDATOR ; on the base OSWYNE

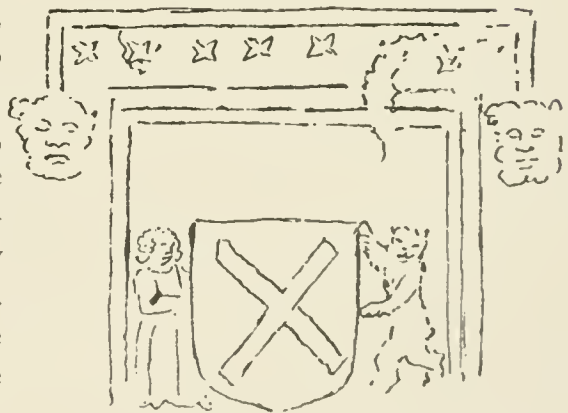
At the terminations of the hood-moulding two shields, that on the south bearing a cross (for St. George ?), that on the north bearing arms of Percy and Lucy quarterly.

On the east wall :

North of window, kneeling figure of an angel.

South of window, standing female figure (the Virgin).

Human heads, angels holding scrolls, and square-shaped roses also enter into the scheme of decoration. On the exterior, the bays were emphasized by buttresses, which still occur placed diagonally at the eastern angles. On either side of the circular window are panels, which formerly contained shields, bearing the arms of St. Alban's and of Tynemouth. Above the window is a third panel containing the sacred monogram, IHS. The hood-moulding over the two side panels, as well as that of the gable, terminates in two portrait-heads, the one that of a bishop or mitred abbot, the other bearded and bare-headed.



ARMS OF ST. ALBAN'S IN PERCY CHAPEL.

SEPULCHRAL REMAINS.

The floor of this chapel was dug up in 1774, 'in the hope of finding the remains of St. Oswin, or some other curiosity,'¹ but the only discovery was of a large matrix of a brass, perhaps that one of which some fragments still remain. A brass or stone effigy once existed in the church, commemorating Prior Whethamstede. Round the border ran the verses :

Quem pax legavit cum se super astra levavit
Pace gregem pavit pius hic prior et saturavit,
Huic grex implores implorandoque perores,
Pacis in Auctore requiescat pacis amore.

At the feet of the effigy was written :

En licet oblita jacet hic sub pulvere trita
Sculpta suis annis Wethamstede ymago Johannis.²

St. Henry of Coquet Island was buried in 1127 in the Norman choir, and, though no memorial marks his grave, his biographer has indicated the exact spot of his interment. He was buried to the south of the shrine of St. Oswin, 'where the wall bows outward,' a description which tallies with the position of the apsidal chapel opening off the choir to the south of the high altar.³

No inscribed stone is now remaining. An effigy of a lady,⁴ clothed in a long garment reticulated over the head and draped in loose flowing robes to the feet, formerly filled the northern arched recess in the presbytery, and is nearly contemporary with that part of the building. The head of the figure rests within a trefoil-arched canopy; the hands appear to have held some object now worn away; and the general effect is dignified and graceful. A second effigy,⁵ of a later date, was found during the excavations of 1905 in the south wall of the nave, where it had been used as a foundation stone. Top and bottom of the stone are missing. The figure is that of a lady, carved in higher relief than that on the earlier effigy, but its features are less well cut. The head rests within a cusped

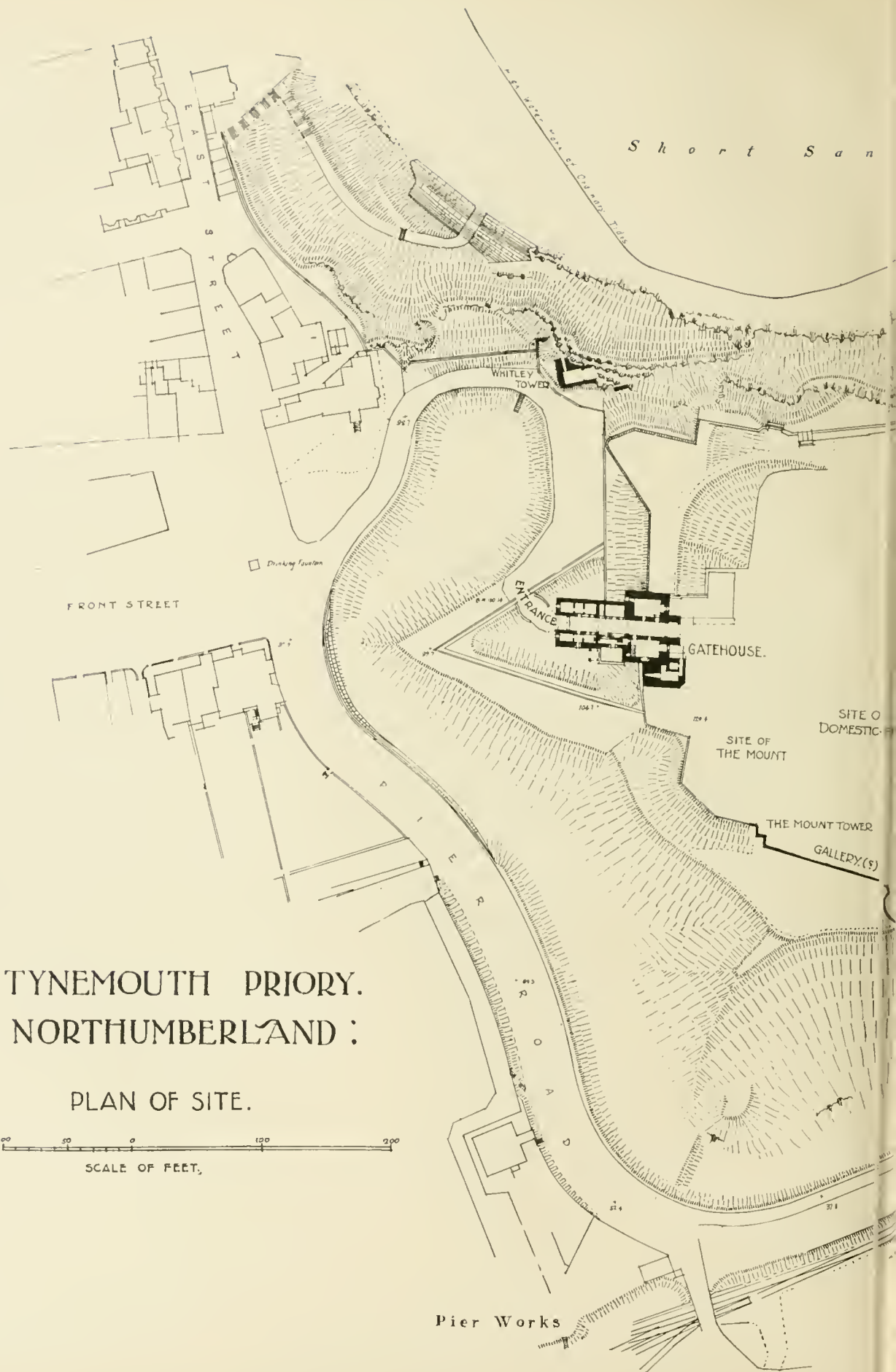
¹ *A Tour in the Northern Counties*, Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

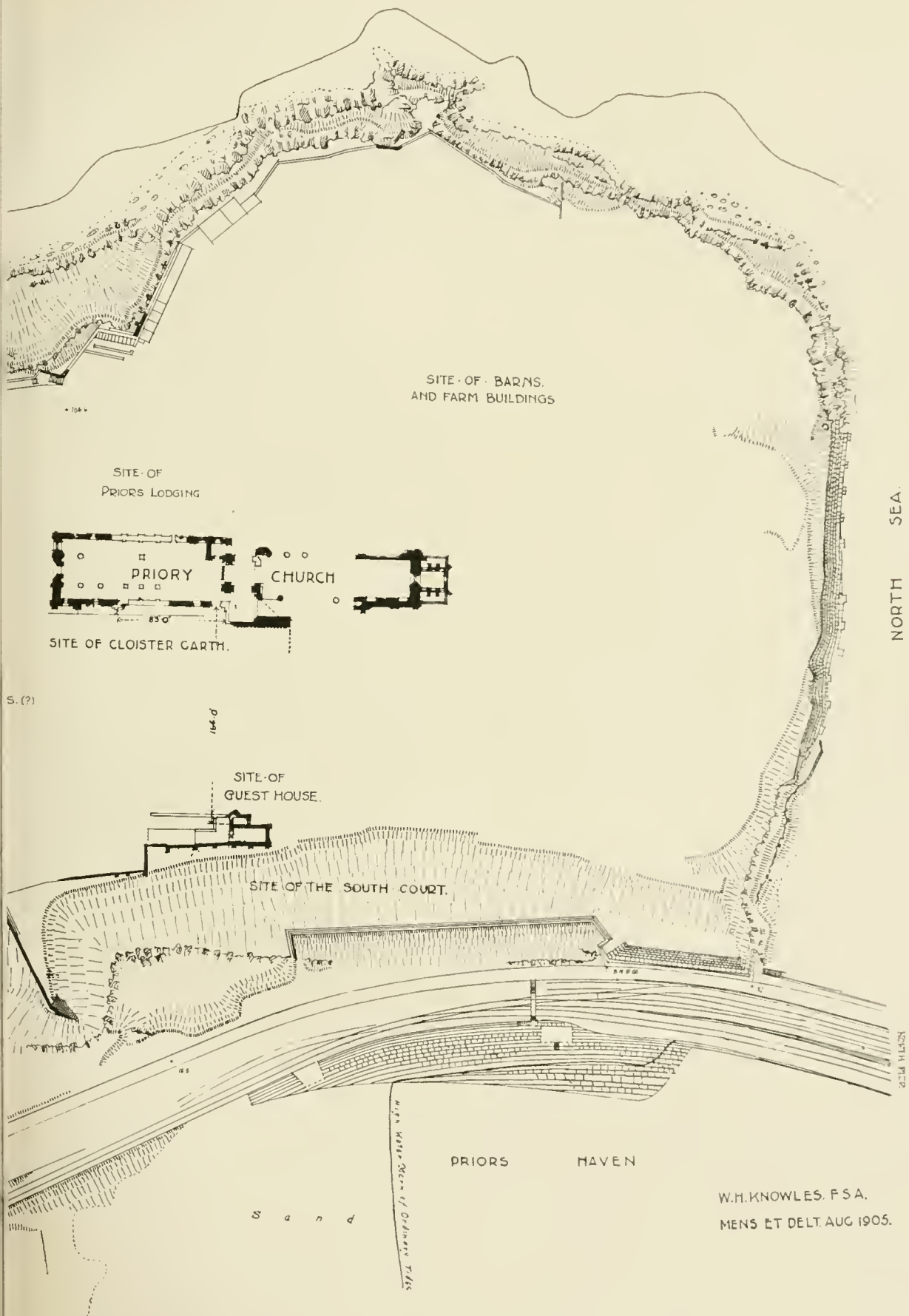
² *Registrum Whethamstede*, vol. ii. p. 441.

³ 'In latere parietis arcuato.' *Acta Sanctorum*, vol. ii. p. 61. The site of the southern apsidal chapel is covered by a high bank of earth in which several modern interments have been made.

⁴ See illustration on p. 51.

⁵ See illustration on p. 75.





W.H.KNOWLES. F.S.A.
MENS ET DELT. AUG 1905.

arch and is covered by a hood falling over the shoulders. The hands are raised in an attitude of prayer. A loose garment covers the figure and reaches to the feet; its sleeves have lappets. Carving imitative of arcading occupied the right edge of the slab.

Four medieval grave-covers have been unearthed. The earliest in point of date bears, in relief, a cross of which the head is in the form of a cross patée. On two other stones the cross is of a design common in the neighbourhood, good instances occurring at St. Helen's Auckland, Barnard Castle, and Chester-le-Street. The shaft of the cross is plain, the head is voided, and the four arms are of the fleur-de-lys type. One of these grave-covers has a chamfered moulding and is carved with a sword in addition to the cross. It is of a smaller size than the others. The fourth is fragmentary and shows a sword and cross-shaft.

A limestone slab, broken in several pieces, contains a portion of a matrix of a brass, probably dating about the middle of the fifteenth century. The indents are the lower quarter of a figure and, on the dexter side of the foot, what seems to be an outline of part of a dog's breast; whilst between the figure and the shafts, which supported a canopy, are the indents of two shields, and an inscription filled the borders.¹

Little evidence is left of the internal arrangement of the church. Besides the high altar there was an altar of St. Alban and St. Amphibalus, and altars in the various chapels. King Edward I. had a private chapel in the church,² and a chantry was founded by Ralph fitz William, lord of Greystoke, in 1315.

THE SITE : CONVENTUAL BUILDINGS.

The church occupies a central position within the twelve acres of ground which form the castle precincts. On its south side were the monastic lodgings and offices, and beyond them again a south court comprised the slopes down to the Prior's Haven. Gardens extended eastward from the church, farm buildings lay to the north of it, and due west a medieval gate-house still stands and affords communication with the town. A curtain-wall, strengthened at intervals by towers, followed the lines of

¹ For a detailed account of monumental stones at Tynemouth, see Mr. S. S. Carr's article on the subject in *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xxv. p. 118.

² Wardrobe Accounts cited by Gibson, vol. ii. p. civ.

the cliffs and contained the whole site. But now, besides the church and the gate-house, only a single chamber and a few isolated fragments of masonry are left of the medieval buildings; graves, cottages and roadways cover the whole site. It is therefore necessary, in order to obtain a picture of the monastery, to supplement architectural evidence by documentary records, of which the chief is a plan of the castle made in the time of Queen Elizabeth,¹ a plan involved and incorrect in its details, but tolerably trustworthy in regard to the disposition of the various buildings.

Though evidence with regard to the conventual buildings is slight, the little that remains points to four periods of construction: (1) the wall arcade at the west end of the south wall of the nave, (2) a similar wall arcade attached to the south transept, (3) the existing building shown on the plan, which stood possibly outside the south-east angle of the cloisters, and (4) the fourteenth century fragments of buildings engrafted on the south-west corner of the nave.

The western arcade marks the position of a range of buildings, probably consisting of the refectory and dormitory of the lay brethren, which enclosed the cloister garth on this side. A chapter-house and a dormitory are shown on the Elizabethan plan as forming the opposite side of the cloister. The early thirteenth century arcade on the south wall of the south transept indicates the position of a building which may be identified with the chapter-house. The dormitory of 1111 was rebuilt by Prior de la Mare in 1347-1349; it stood at the south-east angle of the cloister, and was raised on a substructure, being probably built over a parlour or warming-house, and a 'slype' or passage leading to the monks' cemetery and to the sacristies and vestries adjoining the choir of the conventual church. The chamber shown on Plate VIII., south of the dormitory, is designated 'the lord's lodging' in the Elizabethan plan. It is of thirteenth century date, but has been altered and adapted to modern uses. There are built-up window-openings and recesses in its south and west walls. Its ceiling is vaulted, with chamfered ribs springing from moulded corbels. A narrow space covered with a similarly ribbed segmental vault, and having an opening in the west wall, adjoins it on the north. According to the plan, the lord's lodging formed part of the south side of the cloister garth. If that were so, the cloister was of an anomalous shape, a double

¹ Cotton MSS. Augustus, pt. i. vol. ii. p. 6.



ELIZABETHAN PLAN OF TYNEMOUTH CASTLE.

instead of a single square, measuring 83 feet from east to west and 164 feet from north to south. More probably the range of buildings on the south of the cloister occupied the usual position, but was pulled down before the Elizabethan plan was made. On this supposition, the lord's lodging may have been one of a series of guest-chambers to the south of the cloistral buildings. A refectory existed on the south of the cloisters, as described in the account of the fire which broke out in the time of Prior Ruelendus. Kitchens lay to the west of it.

Already in 1577, 'the ruynes of certeine lodgings abowt the cloyster' were 'all uncovered and defaced.'¹ It is, therefore, not surprising that hardly a vestige of them is now remaining.

The fragments at the south-west corner of the nave belong to a fourteenth century vestibule or open porch added to the earlier chamber which formed the western boundary of the cloister. Its addition necessitated the lowering of an Early English window and the rebuilding of the angle of the nave. Some springer-stones inserted in the wall-arcades of the west gable show that a later structure was attached to the church at this point, perhaps the 'litle towre used for a prison, called the Hye prison,' described in the survey of 1577 as being 'on th'est parte of th'entrye in th'enner court.'²

Upon entering the castle through the gate-house, the great court was reached. The church lay straight in front. On the right a bake-house and brew-house, built by de la Mare, were ranged with other domestic offices round an inner court, which enclosed the space between the gate-house and the cloisters. A malt kiln and a building where the constable lodged were on the left. A passage round the north side of the church led to the prior's lodging, of which the foundations are shown on Plate VIII. To the north of this point there was a large poultry yard and barn yard, containing barns, garners, stables, and a farm pond. All these buildings are shown in the Elizabethan plan, but there is no trace in it of an infirmary. Probably this indispensable adjunct of a monastery was to be found east of the lord's lodging.

¹ Exchequer Special Commissions, No. 1736.

² Hutchinson alludes to 'a gateway of circular arches, comprehending several members inclining inwards, and arising from pilasters' as existing at this point in 1778 and giving access to the cloisters; *History of Northumberland*, vol. ii. p. 344.

THE GREAT GATE-HOUSE.

As at Dunstanburgh, Bywell and Bothal, the strength of the castle lay in its gate-house. Originally the monastery was approached by a raised causeway which led through a narrow entrance cut out of the rock. This was superseded by the great tower, which formed part of the Edwardian defences, and probably dated from 1296, in which year Edward I. gave his licence to crenellate. As it had fallen completely into ruin a century later, Richard II., the duke of Lancaster, and the first earl of Northumberland contributed funds towards constructing a new gate-house on or near the site of the old one, and in 1390 the present group of buildings was erected by Prior John Whethamstede. This comprises an oblong tower with a projecting barbican, similar to those of Alnwick and Prudhoe. The tower has an external measurement of 56 feet by 35 feet, and is four stories in height; the barbican projected 54 feet beyond. The outer portion of the barbican was covered over. It measured $38\frac{1}{2}$ feet by 34 feet. In the survey of 1577 it and the loftier structure behind it are respectively designated the low tower and the gate-house tower.¹ The intervening space of 20 feet originally formed an open courtyard.² Enclosing the south-east angle of the gate-house tower is a building to which the same survey gives the name of the mount chamber.

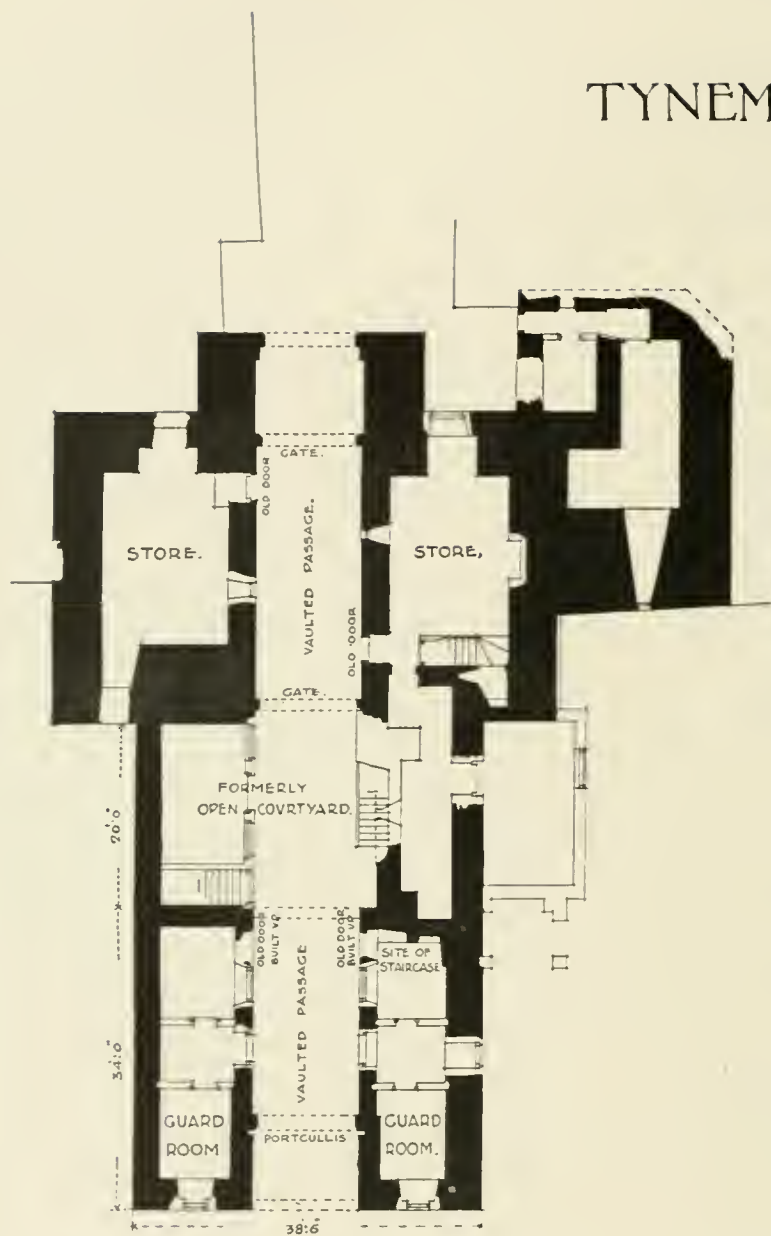
In 1783 the Government fitted up the gate-house for barracks and mess-rooms, removed the turrets and upper portions of the high tower, and added to the barbican, in this way completely altering the old lines of the building and still further concealing them by a coat of stucco. On Plate XIII. is shown the amount of medieval work which has been retained.

The entrance was through an arched opening protected by a portcullis and gates, and was flanked on either side by towers, of which the basements were vaulted and used as guard-rooms, each being twenty-eight feet long

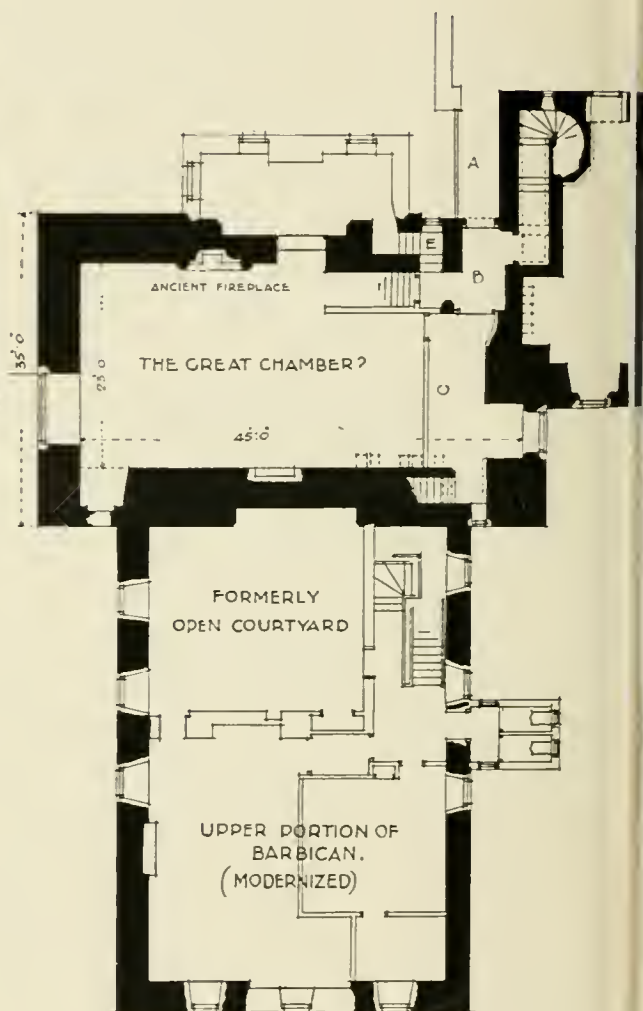
¹ They are the low white hall and the high white hall of an inventory of 1585. 'The white hall or towre is the gatehouse and entrance into the castle, wheare the powder and shott lyeth, and some other neseries of that kinde.' Letter of Sir John Fenwick, April 1st, 1617. Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² 'The tower comprehends an outward and interior gateway, the outer gateway having two gates at the distance of about six feet from each other, the inner of which is defended by a portcullis and an open gallery. The interior gateway is in like manner strengthened by a double gate. The space between the gateways, being a square of about six paces, is open above, to allow those on the top of the tower and battlements to annoy assailants who had gained the first gate.' Hutchinson, *Northumberland*, 1778, vol. II. p. 342.

TYNEMOUTH PRIORY GA

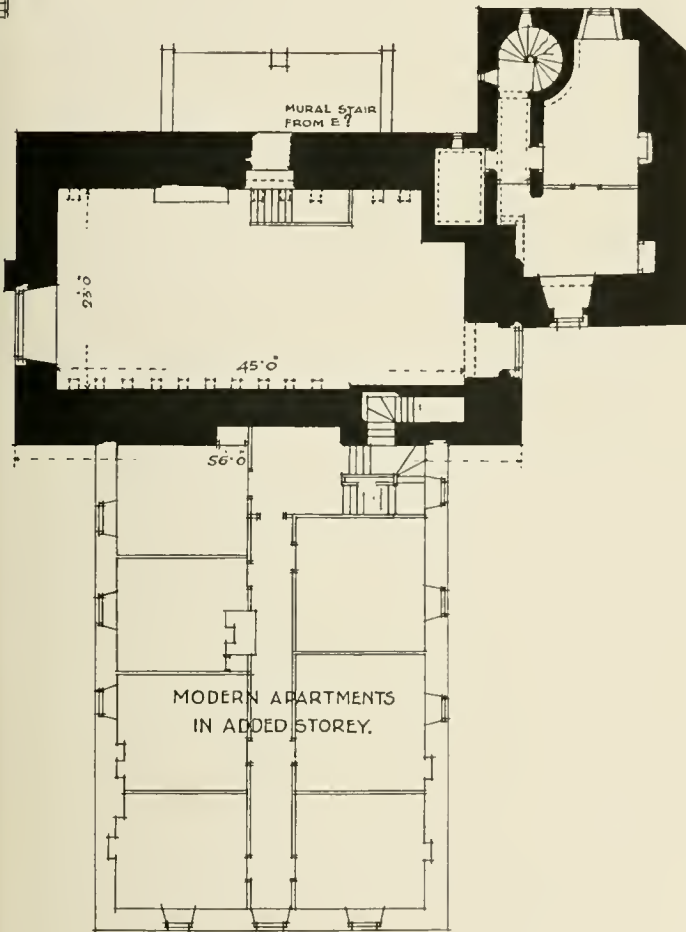
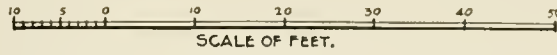


GROUND PLAN.

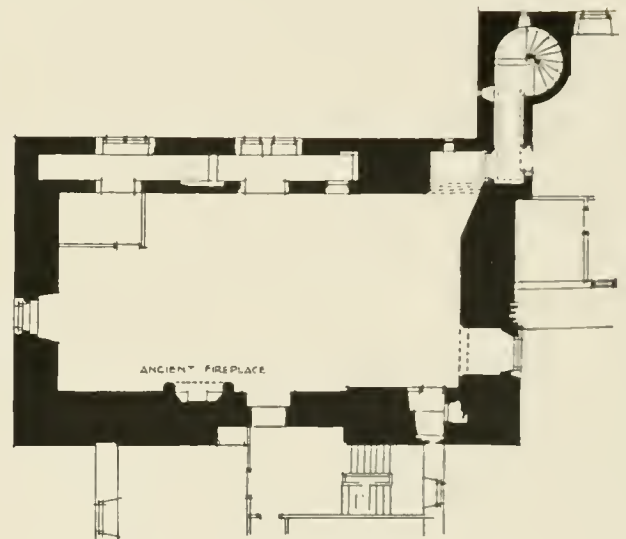


FIRST FLOOR PLAN.

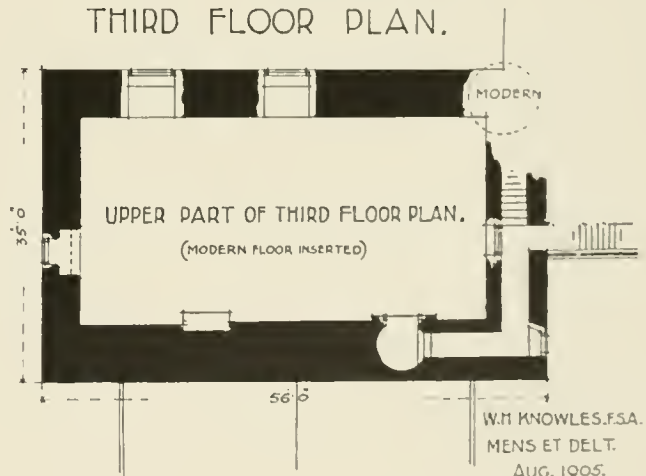
TEHOUSE.



SECOND FLOOR PLAN.



THIRD FLOOR PLAN.



W.H. KNOWLES, F.S.A.
MENS ET DELT.
AUG. 1905.

by eight feet wide. A newel, emphasized by an opening in the vaulting overhead, indicates that a staircase occupied a portion of the south guard-room. Possibly there were chambers, including one for the working of the portcullis, upon an upper floor. A chamfered offset, forming the lower member of the parapet, is visible on the exterior. The roof could be reached from the gate-house tower at the level of the second floor.

On the south side of the small courtyard is a narrow chamber which may have been covered with a lean-to roof, or else was carried up to increase the side walk leading from the tower to the barbican.¹

The middle section of the ground floor of the tower is gated at each end. The massive masonry covering the entrance from the priory precincts appears to have been carried no higher than the ground floor. On either side of the passage is a vaulted store-room, of which the doors and one loophole are ancient. The other openings in these rooms have been enlarged, including one at the west end of each chamber, commanding the sides of the barbican. At the south-east corner are two chambers, accessible from the exterior only. It appears from the name of the 'mount chamber' given to this portion of the gate-house that it adjoined and possibly intruded into a slope which was utilized as an ascent to the first-floor level.

This could only be reached by the existing door (marked A on Plate XIII.) through the vestibule, B, which gave access either directly or through a screen at C to a large room measuring forty-five feet by twenty-three feet. This is probably the great chamber of the castle. It was lighted on all sides by windows since modernized. Some corbels intended to carry the floor joists still remain. In the east wall there is an ancient fireplace, with an arched head supported by corbels carried on chamfered jambs, and the beginning of a mural stair which must originally have served as an approach to the second floor. A staircase in the west wall gave access to the parapets of the barbican, and at the south-east corner a newel stair led up from the outer doorway to the third floor, and so to the tower roof. In this way the great chamber commanded the movements of all the occupants of the gate-house. The ceilings of the passages about the newel staircase are of large flat stones on a chamfered stone cornice. The openings are arched, and the work is generally of a fair character.²

¹ See an imaginary sketch in *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xviii, p. 62.

² See pp. 99 and 110 for illustrations of the newel stair and doors leading to it.

On the second floor the newel stair leads on to a landing which opens on the right into a small chamber, and on the left into one or more apartments which may have been used as kitchens. The stair which starts in the thickness of the east wall of the great chamber probably continued and opened at E into the jamb of the east window of the room above. This room is of the same dimensions as the great chamber, and was once lighted upon three sides.

The third floor was lofty before the modern insertion of an extra floor. It was lighted at either end by a large window, with rear-arches of simple proportions, and had a fireplace similar to that in the great chamber. At the south-west angle there are signs of a mural chamber, possibly used as a garde-robe. Almost the entire length of the east wall is pierced by a passage which was perhaps divided into garde-robes or small chambers, though another purpose is suggested for it in the view of the north-east side of the gate-house, given in Grose's *Antiquities*. There a door is shown, about the level of the third floor, opening on to an external landing corbelled out on the north side of the tower, and it is possible that the mural passage led through this door to the curtain-wall, which may have been high at this point. Similarly, the door leading out from the newel staircase landing may have admitted to the curtain on the south side of the gate-house. These approaches suggest that the third floor was occupied by the garrison.

A staircase led upwards from the south-east angle of the same chamber. The upper portion of its south wall and part of the west wall were also occupied by a passage or stair. Either or both of these staircases may have led to a newel in a turret at the south-east angle of the tower. In Grose's view the tower is shown finished at the four angles by round bartizans, oversailed from the walls below like those at Chipchase castle.¹

THE CURTAIN.

About one hundred and seventy-five feet north of the gate-house, with which it was connected by a curtain wall, a fragment of the Whitley tower clings to the side of the cliff. Its masonry is massive, and indicates three floor levels below the present surface. The basement contains a door leading north into a second chamber lately fallen away, popularly known as Jingling Geordie's Hole. On the south side of the gate-house

¹ See vol. iv. of this work, plate facing p. 332.



TYNEMOUTH CASTLE IN THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY

the curtain wall screened the mount and led to the mount tower, of which a fragment, corbelled out on the first-floor level, can be seen from the Pier Road. The wall immediately beyond it has been largely rebuilt. Probably it was at this point that a gallery, described in the survey of 1577, extended behind the curtain as far as the drum tower, where the inner wall of the south court was reached. At right angles to the latter a considerable length of wall descends rapidly towards the Prior's Haven. It is curved in plan and has some stepped and splayed plinth-courses, but no buttresses.

In an eighteenth century drawing by Waters,¹ as well as in a painting of somewhat earlier date (Plate XIV.), the western wall of the castle is shown terminating in a square tower, having a door towards the Prior's Haven. Over the doorway, at the roof level, the tower is finished with heavily corbelled machicolations. This is probably 'the tower in the madder garth' of the 1577 survey. It stood at the south-western angle of the south court, but has disappeared, together with the wall which ran eastwards from this point to the sea, for the side of the cliff has been quarried away to form the present pier. Midway between the tower in the Madder Garth and the eastern extremity of the wall there once stood the dovecote tower, shown in Waters's drawing as having a door or postern from which steps descended to the haven. The height and precipitous character of the cliffs on the east and north rendered towers unnecessary along the curtain, which pursued a devious course along the edge of the promontory until it reached the Whitley tower.²

¹ Reproduced in *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xviii. p. 80.

² Abstract of inquisition taken at Tynemouth castle, July 15th, 1577:

At the entry of the house towards the west is the gate in 'the low towre,' 12 yards square, 9 yards high. Adjoining the same, with a void place between, is 'a towre called the yate-house towre,' three stories in height, 14 yards square, 15 yards high.

Adjoining the south end of the said tower is another little house called 'the mount chambre,' 10 yards long, 7 yards high.

'The barne called th'ootte barne,' 38 yards long, 10½ yards broad, 4 yards high.

'The barne called the wheat barne,' 53 × 14 × 5 yards.

The wheat garner, 20 × 8 × 5 yards.

The hay barn, 21 × 10 × 4 yards.

'The gate howse betwene the capteyn's stable and the hay barne,' 7 yards long, 5 yards high.

The captain's stable, 24 × 6 × 2½ yards.

The guest stables, 17 × 9 × 4 yards.

'The store-house wher th'artillery lyeth, vawted over with stone, and the gardner above the same,' 37 × 10 × 8 yards.

'The howse at the water stone adjoyninge upon the pound, and the chambres above the same,' 15 × 8 × 4 yards.

TYNEMOUTH CASTLE.

The promontory now occupied by Tynemouth castle being easy of defence, the supplies of the surrounding country were carried thither, at the time of William the Conqueror's inroad of 1070, that they might not fall into the hands of the Norman soldiery.¹ Perhaps defensive works already protected the western side of the rock, where approach was alone possible, and the castle may date from a period earlier than the Conquest. Setting aside the theory of a Roman occupation, there is a tradition that it was made a military base by the Danish invaders.² But there is no certain evidence of a castle here before 1095; it is straining the words of the *Life of St. Oswin* to represent Earl Tostig as having had a

'The water poole or pound lying upon th'est syd of the sayd howse.'

The house called 'the kylne dodd,' 9 yards long, 8 yards broad.

'The malt-house adjoyning upon th'est ende of the sayd kylne,' 21 × 13 × 8 yards.

The plumber's house, 14 × 6 × 4 yards.

The horse-mill, 14 yards long, 10 yards broad.

The bake-house and bolting-house, 16 × 6 × 3 yards.

The brew-house, 15 × 13 × 4 yards.

'On th'est parte of th'entrye in th'enner court is a litle towre used for a prison, called the bye prison,' 10 × 6 × 5 yards.

Adjoyning the same are 'the ruynes of certeine lodgings abowt the cloyster, all uncovered and defaced. A litle within ys th'entrye into the hall, ascendinge upp certeyne steps, which entry is of stone and vawted over.'

The hall, buttery and yellow chamber on the right hand of the entry, 19 × 10 × 7 yards.

Then out of the hall southward is a chapel and a chamber. Adjoyning the same westward, ascending certain steps, is a litle chamber called 'the utter parlour. Next adjoyning thereto is th'inner parlour as a too-full, both adjoyninge together with the gallery end,' 22 × 9 × 5 yards.

Within which parlour is certain chambers and lodgings and a gallery 'placed as in four houses' near to the brew-house, 15 × 6 × 5 yards.

Upon the other side of the entry into the hall is a house called Edmund's chamber, 10 yards square.

Adjoyning thereto is a house called 'th'old kytchinge,' defaced and uncovered. Adjoyning thereto is 'the kytchinge which befor was called 'ewryall,' 17 × 14 × 9 yards.

Another litle house adjoyning, called the steward's chamber.

A tower on the north-west part called 'Whitley towre,' with stone vaulting and battlement, 10 × 10 × 13 yards.

The walls from thence to the gate-house towre south, 62 yards long, 7 yards high.

The mount between the mount towers is 40 yards long, 2½ yards high. 'Th'ester towre,' 5 × 5 × 7 yards; the other, 10 × 6 × 7 yards.

The wall betwixt the gallery and the tower next to the Prior's Haven, 14 yards long, 6 yards high.

The tower in the madder garth, with a litle turret adjoyning, each 5 × 5 × 15 yards.

The walls betwixt the said tower and the 'duckett' tower, with two small towers thereupon, 80 yards long, 6 yards high.

'The dowecoate towre, containing about yt 30 yardes,' 15 yards high.

'The walls from thence and the end next to the Pryour's Haven, being the uttermost part to the sea,' 110 yards long, 5 yards high. Exchequer Special Commissions, No. 1736.

The above is only a partial survey, containing estimates of the cost of repairing those parts of the castle which required restoration; thus it leaves out of account the ruined monastic buildings and the curtain-wall on the east and north. Its measurements, where they can be checked, as in the case of the gate-house, are found only approximately accurate.

¹ *Vita Oswini*, cap. viii. See also p. 43.

² Leland, *Collectanea*, ed. Hearne, 1774. vol. iv. p. 43. See also p. 40.

stronghold here,¹ or even a permanent residence, nor is there reason for connecting his name more closely with Tynemouth than with any other village on his demesnes.

If the castle be not pre-Conquest in its origin, Robert de Mowbray may be regarded as its founder, as he was of the priory within it. In the summer of 1095 William Rufus captured, after a two months' siege, 'Earl Robert's castle which is at the mouth of the river Tyne.'² Seized again by Mowbray, it again fell and the rebel earl was captured within it.

A suggestion that has been made³ that the Norman fortifications were not on the castle promontory, but on the little spit of land afterwards occupied by the Spanish battery, hardly merits consideration, being opposed to the evidence of one who saw the place fifteen years later, and has described the church of St. Mary as being 'within the circuit of Mowbray's castle of Tynemouth.'⁴ They probably did not consist of more than earthen ramparts, surmounted by a wooden stockade. In this connection it is noteworthy that at the present day a sloping bank of earth, some fifteen feet in height, lines the interior of the western wall and stretches across the neck of the promontory. The same slope or 'mount' is mentioned in a survey of 1577⁵ as extending southward from the gateway. As the entrance to the gate-house, built in 1390, is on the first-floor level, it is clear that it was reached, if not by an outside staircase, then by an inclined plane. Similar 'mounts' are known to have existed at Newcastle and other fortified positions where defences were erected shortly after the Conquest, though no stone curtain-walls can be assigned to so early a period. These earthen mounds at Tynemouth are therefore perhaps the work of Mowbray or of one of his predecessors in the Northumbrian earldom, and were incorporated into the later line of defence.⁶

¹ *Vita Oswini*, cap. vii. Cf. C. J. Bates, *Border Holds*, p. 2.

² 'Castellum comitis Rotberti ad ostium Tinae fluminis situm.' Florence of Worcester, *Engl. Hist. Soc.* vol. ii. p. 38. See also p. 52.

³ By the late Professor Freeman, *Reign of William Rufus*, vol. ii. pp. 606-607.

⁴ 'Hic (Robertus de Mulbray) coepit sanctum regem et martyrem Oswinum eximiae devotionis diligentia excolere, et ecclesiam in qua sanctissimum ejus corpus requiescebat, quia infra ambitum castri ejus in Tynemudtha continebatur, fundorum et praediorum copia ditavit.' *Vita Oswini*, cap. iv. p. 15.

⁵ Exchequer Special Commissions, No. 1736.

⁶ 'The motive for erecting mounds amid towers is not obvious: and it is extremely probable that in such works we may often have the sites of the wooden edifices on earthen mounts which preceded the more elaborate fortresses of the later Norman period, and are conspicuous in the Bayeux tapestry.' W. H. D. Longstaffe in *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. iv. p. 74.

On September 5th, 1296, Edward I. granted his licence to the prior and convent of Tynemouth to surround their monastery with a wall of stone and lime, and to hold it without let or hindrance on the part of the king or his officers.¹ The medieval walls and towers still remaining belong, with the exception of the gate-house, to that period. According to the terms of Edward I.'s patent, the Crown had no special rights over the castle. When Edward II., in a time of general confusion, put John de Haustede in charge of it, he first obtained the consent of the abbot of St. Alban's to the appointment.² In the following reign (1346) Ralph de Neville attempted to treat Tynemouth as a royal fortress, but was frustrated by Prior de la Mare, who won from the king a recognition of the right of the prior, for the time being, to exercise sole authority within its walls.³

Prior Richard de Tewing (1315-1340) maintained a garrison of eighty armed men within the monastery,⁴ but a permanent force was probably only necessary during the Scottish wars. In 1380, 1384 and 1390, petitions addressed to the king called attention to the decay of the walls consequent upon the encroachment of the sea.⁵ The gate-house, built in the latter year upon the site of an earlier work, marks the completion of the medieval castle; £666 13s. 4d. was subscribed by the king, the duke of Lancaster and the earl of Northumberland towards its erection.⁶

On January 12th, 1538/9, Prior Blakeney and the convent surrendered their house to the Crown, and, on March 29th following, Henry VIII. granted to Sir Thomas Hilton of Hilton the site of the monastery and of the dissolved hospital of Tynemouth, Tynemouth demesnes, Flatworth, various coal mines, salt pans and mills, and the tithes of the parishes of Tynemouth and Woodhorn, for the term of twenty-one years, to hold at the rent of £163 1s. 5d. yearly.⁷ Hilton had already established a connexion with the place, for he was the leader in the attack on the priory in Thomas Gardiner's time; he had taken steps to keep order there during the Pilgrimage of Grace, and was in receipt of an annuity of two pounds from the house when it was dissolved.⁸ He now took up his

¹ *Cal. Pat. Rolls*, 1292-1301, p. 197. See also p. 83.

² *Ibid.* 1317-1321, p. 140. See also p. 87.

³ *Gesta Abbatum*, vol. ii. p. 379. See also p. 95.

⁴ See p. 86.

⁵ See pp. 97-99.

⁶ See p. 99.

Letters and Papers, Hen. VIII. vol. xiv. pt. i. p. 610. Gibson, vol. i. pp. 216, 217.

⁷ *Ibid.* vol. xi. p. 524. Dugdale, *Monasticon*, vol. iii. p. 308, note 'c.'

residence in the quarters from which the monks had been expelled. Richard Bellasis of Henknowl in the county of Durham, who had previously joined Hilton in attacking the monastery, acted as agent for the Crown in selling the goods and chattels.¹

In April, 1544, the earl of Hertford made Tynemouth a base for the English fleet in his invasion of Scotland. He seems to have realised the importance of converting the dissolved priory into a royal fortress, for in the following January the Privy Council directed Sir Richard Lee to view the state of Tynemouth and to set in hand such works as should be thought necessary for strengthening the same, taking with him Antonio de Bergoma and John Thomas Scala, Italians expert in fortification.² Lee reported that he thought it 'a place so nedeful to be fortified as none within this realme more,' and sent up plans showing what work it was proposed to carry out.³ One of these plans is still in existence, annotated in Italian.⁴ The new fortifications were to include an outwork in front of the gate-house, a battery on the low promontory to the south of the castle but separated from it by the Prior's Haven, and walls connecting the new battery with the priory; while cannon were to be mounted along the old landward wall. Spades, shovels, mattocks, and baskets were to hand, having been stored at Tynemouth for the late expedition into Scotland.

Work was commenced on February 21st, 1545, and continued until July 19th following. A thousand workmen were impressed £2,118 6s. was spent on labourers' wages, and £233 8s. 6d. on the wages of masons and other artizans. As the total expenditure amounted to no more than £2,633 4s. 3d., it is evident that materials were ready to hand. Boards, nails and ironwork were purchased, but stone was to be had for nothing,⁵ the priory church no doubt proving a ready quarry.

The earl of Shrewsbury, lord lieutenant for the northern counties, made arrangements for garrisoning the castle. On April 30th he wrote the following letter to the king :

¹ Gibson, vol. i. p. 211.

² Lodge, *Illustrations of British History*, vol. i. p. 80.

³ *Hamilton Papers*, vol. ii. p. 555.

⁴ Cotton MSS. Augustus 1. ii. 7, being a plan of Tynemouth castle, *temp.* Henry VIII. The plan gives measurements for the fortifications above described, is annotated in Italian, and therefore can be attributed, with a fair measure of certainty, to Sir Richard Lee's engineers in 1545. It has been reproduced in *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xix. to face p. 68.

⁵ Pipe Office, Declared Accounts, No. 3534.

Please it your royall majeste t'undrestand, that presentlie arrived here letters from the lordes and others of your highnes most honorable privie counsaile, addressed to me, th'erle of Shrewesbury, by the whiche I doo perceive that your majeste's pleasure is that I shulde appoynt summe mete personage with 2 or 300 men to lye in garrison at Tynmowthe for the defence and safegarde of your highnes' newe fortifications there: for th'accomplishment wherof, considering that there be at Tynemowthe at this present aboutes a thowsand woorkemen or mo, wherof, as we be infourmed, maye be pyked oute aboutes 400 able and tall men, we have thought mete to take order for the sending thither of harnes and weapon to furnishe a good nomber of them, whiche shall bothe supplie the woorkes, and remayne there as souldiours for defence of the saide fortresse, as the case shall requyer, withoute puttyng your majeste to any further charge then for the wages whiche they have already as woorkemen. And for the better order of them in case of defence, if th'ennemyes shall approche, we have not onelie taken order with oone John Norton of Clydderowe, who is a hardie gentelman and of good experience of the warres, to repayre fourthwith unto Tynmowthe, to reside there and to joyne with John Brende, your majeste's servaunt, who hathe the oversight and ordre of the saide woorkes to be as capitaynes to the saide woorkemen: but also we have appoynted Hughe Boyfelde, master of your majeste's ordinaunce in theis partes, to sende unto Tynmowthe aforesaide from Newcastle a cannon, a saker, 2 fawlcons and 2 slynges, for to be placed for the tyme in suche places of the saide fortresse as shalbe most mete for defence; and also the countrey thereaboutes shalbe in a readines to repayre thither for defence at all tymes as the case shall requyer. This order we have thought best to be taken in this behaulfe, bothe for the avoyding of your majeste's further charge, and also for that victualles be so scarce that there is muche adoo to gett sufficient for the saide woorkemen which be already at Tynmowthe as is aforesaide.¹

Two days later Shrewesbury informed the king that thirteen hundred Spanish troops had arrived at Newcastle, and that the wardens of the east and middle marches intended to divide them up into small bodies and place them at different points along the coast. He suggested that some of them should be placed in garrison at Tynemouth 'for the better defence of his majesty's new fortifications there.'² The suggestion was adopted. A body of mercenaries appears to have been placed in the new outwork, which received from them its name of the Spanish battery.

Sir Francis Leeke, who was also governor of Berwick, was appointed captain of the castle. Some maintenance had to be found for him. It was therefore decided to attach to the office of captain the second and more lucrative post of steward of all the estates of the suppressed monastery. This was in the hands of Sir Thomas Hilton, who was approached with the view of inducing him to sell his interest for 200 marks. He proved so amenable that 'he offered not only his farm and stewardship aforesaid, but all that he hath in the world besides, to be at the king's majesty's pleasure.'³ Accordingly, on January 20th, 1545/6, Leeke was given the

¹ *State Papers*, Hen. VIII. vol. v. p. 441. Cp. vol. i. p. 786. *Letters and Papers*, Hen. VIII. vol. xx. pt. i. p. 294.

² *State Papers*, vol. v. p. 443. *Letters and Papers*, vol. xx. pt. i. p. 289. For the employment of mercenary troops upon the Borders, see vol. ii. of this work, pp. 125-126.

³ *State Papers*, pp. 490, 495. *Acts of the Privy Council*, 1547-1550, p. 100.

office of steward, together with the demesnes, tithes, fisheries and coal pits attached to it. As captain he also received a hundred marks yearly, a sum increased on December 6th, 1547, to £81 14s. 10d., in consideration of his continuing captain for life.¹ He kept fifty men under him, for a larger permanent garrison was found unnecessary. By way of obtaining a reserve 'it was ordered that the footmen within the lordship of Tynemouth should be attendant upon the castle there, and not to assemble with the warden unless it were for resistance of an urgent or dangerous invasion.'² Three culverins and a saker were sent from Newcastle to add to the artillery.³ Leeke did not long continue to hold office, being succeeded on April 5th, 1549, by Sir Thomas Hilton.⁴

Tynemouth had so far remained Crown property, but on December 8th, 1551, the site of the monastery and all its possessions in the parishes of Tynemouth and Woodhorn were granted to John Dudley, earl of Warwick, and afterwards duke of Northumberland, in exchange for lands in the counties of Oxford and Worcester, with the reservation of a fee farm rent of £15 15s. 6d. payable to the Crown. The mistake of letting a national fortress become the private property of an ambitious statesman was rectified by the subsequent exchange (November 8th, 1552) of the castle, site of the monastery and demesnes of Tynemouth, for lands in Wiltshire, Yorkshire and Norfolk.⁵

Hilton appears to have remained in uninterrupted possession of the site of the monastery, and its demesnes were restored to him when Leeke's occupancy ended. His lease was due to expire in 1560. Though he applied for its renewal, that was denied to him, the site of the priory being leased to Thomas, seventh earl of Northumberland, on August 17th, 1557, for twenty-one years, at an annual rent of £53 3s. 4d.⁶ In May, 1559, before the expiration of the first term, Hilton died of a fever, having devised the

¹ Augmentation Office, *Miscellaneous Books*, vol. 236, fol. 121, and vol. 218, fol. 172. *Cal. State Papers, Foreign*, 1559-1560, p. 279.

² Sir Robert Bowes' Survey. Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. iii. vol. ii. p. 245.

³ *Acts of the Privy Council*, 1542-1547, p. 316.

⁴ Augmentation Office, *Miscell. Books*, vol. 220, fol. 181.

⁵ Augmentation Office, *Deeds of Exchange*, box G, No. 30, and box II, No. 8. Gibson, vol. i. pp. 237-238.

⁶ *Acts of the Privy Council*, 1556-1558, p. 205. *Pat. Rolls*, 4 and 5 Philip and Mary, pt. 2. Gibson, vol. i. p. 239.

remainder of his lease to his wife, who survived him.¹ She shortly afterwards married William Bullein, her husband's physician. He was author of several popular treatises upon medicine, including a work upon the 'Governance of Health' which he had dedicated to Sir Thomas Hilton about the time of that knight's fatal illness. A brother of the latter, William Hilton of Biddick, accused Bullein of murdering his patron and brought him to trial before the duke of Norfolk, but failed to prove his charge.²

The post of captain now being vacant, Sir Henry Percy, governor of Norham castle and younger brother of the seventh earl, was appointed to the office through the influence of Sir William Cecil, the future Lord Burleigh.³ Letters patent, dated February 8th, 1561, formally placed him in command,⁴ but he did not find it easy to effect an entrance. Writing to Cecil, he explained :

I have been at Tynemouth, and finding no man save one priest in the house, have left Raulph Lowraunce and twelve of my men to keep it. I demanded of my lady Hilton the delivery of the house and all things of the queen's by right, whereon she sent a servant with me and took a note of the munition and artillery, but would not deliver, as by indenture she received it—saying the indenture was not there—so I took the house only. On Thursday next she has promised her indenture shall be ready. If I took the house as the lady would deliver it, there would be neither door, lock, key, forms or boards, mill, brew-house, or anything except munition and ordnance, for, as she says, Sir Thomas Hilton bought it all.

Hilton's death gave an opportunity for reducing the cost of the garrison, which had been £479 10s. yearly in the time of Henry VIII. Some provision had to be made for Sir Henry Percy, who became a rival with his brother, the earl, for the tithes of Tynemouthshire. Queen Elizabeth decided that these should be 'let to the keeper only of the house from

¹ Will dated November 8th, 1558; Surtees, *Durham*, vol. ii. pp. 32, 33. Inventory of goods taken on April 24th, 1559; *Wills and Inventories*, Surt. Soc. No. 2, pp. 181-184. The inventory details goods and chattels remaining in the kitchen at Tynemouth, the brew-house, the bake-house, the kiln, the salt-garner, the gallery, the closet within the gallery, the cellar, the outer parlour, the buttery, the chapel chamber, the hall, Gilbert Errington chamber, and the mill house. Gilbert Errington's connexion with the monastery throws light upon the circumstances in which the manuscript life of St. Oswin, containing his autograph, may have come into his hands. He was brother-in-law of Richard Bellasis, who had the disposal of the goods and chattels of the dissolved monastery.

² *Dict. Nat. Biog. sub voce* William Bullein. Bullein, *Booke of Simples*, 1576, fol. 79. Flower, *V'sitation of Yorkshire*.

³ *Cal. State Papers, Foreign*, 1558-1559, pp. 338, 359.

⁴ *Pat. Roll*, 3 Eliz. pt. i.

⁵ *Cal. Scottish Papers*, ed. Bain, vol. i. p. 238; letter dated August 4th, 1559. In an inventory taken November 30th, 1558, the following pieces of brass ordnance were found at Tynemouth: one cannon, one demi-cannon, two demi-culverins, two sakers, and four falcons; also one iron demi-culverin, and one iron saker. *State Papers, Borders*, vol. i. No. 16.

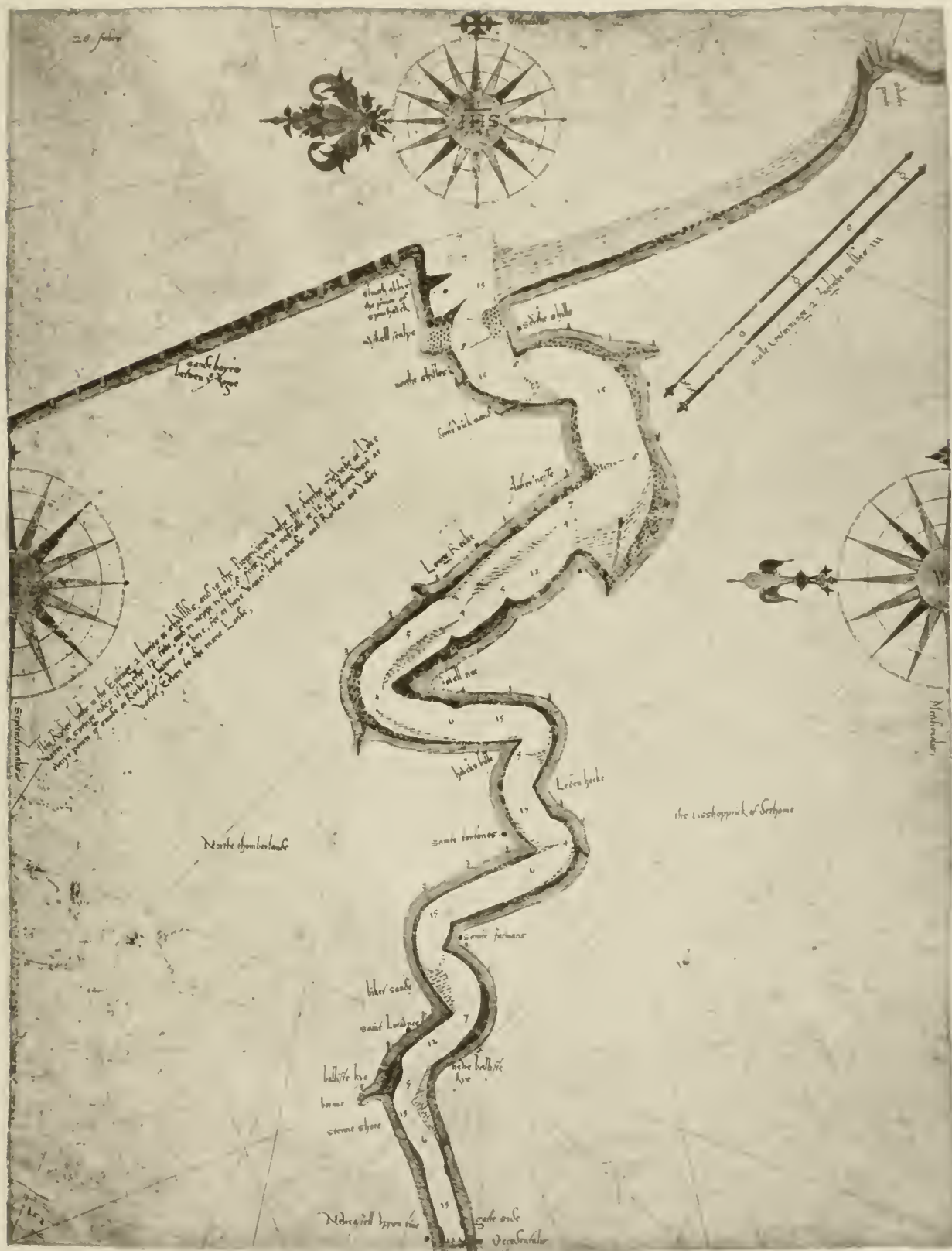


CHART OF THE TYNE TEMP. HENRY VIII.

time to time, and not to be dissevered from the house as it now is; the like also shall be with the demesnes.'¹ This did not content Percy, who wrote on April 30th, 1560, to Cecil :

For my own affairs—I mean Tynemouth—I pray you let me not be burdened with so weighty a piece and so small a commission to rule it: for you know I have kept it this twelve-month almost at my own charges, too sore a burden for a younger brother of my ability.²

Accordingly, the duke of Norfolk was directed to report on the cost of the establishment. He recommended, on August 8th, that the garrison should have one captain with a salary of a hundred pounds a year, a constable and a porter who should receive ten pounds each, four gunners engaged at a shilling a day, and thirty-two soldiers at eightpence a day, an advance of nearly a hundred pounds upon the sum paid in Henry VIII.'s reign, when fifty soldiers were maintained.³ This did not accord with the queen's views. She wrote on October 5th to Sir Richard Lee :

Trusty and welbeloved, we grete yow well. Where as our chardg hath bene lately in the tyme of these late troubles, that waye amongst other thynges, augmented at our howse of Tynemouth, which by advise of our counsell we meane to abridg; our pleasure is that ye, at your retoune from Barwyk, shall view the seate thereof, and consider whyther the same be nedefull to be kept in fortification as it is for the defence and gard of the city of the haven there, or that some other lower place nerer the same haven might be more mete for the same purpooe to be kept and with less chardg, as it hath bene hertofore at other tymes thought, and with small chardg to us might be kept by our towne of Newcastell; wherein we praye yow have as good consideration as to such a case belongethe.⁴

The letter is interesting, as it shows a change coming over the system of national defence. It had been the practice in the middle ages to have strong castles built on sites where nature assisted the engineer in rendering the work of defence easy, castles which provided shelter for the inhabitants of the neighbouring districts until the tide of invasion sank back exhausted from an attack upon impregnable positions. In the sixteenth century the growth of foreign navies, the danger of continental invasion, and the extension of mercantile towns beyond the limit of their neglected walls, made it increasingly necessary to guard coast and estuary. Batteries furnished with good artillery were of more value than the double or triple defences of fourteenth century strongholds. Tynemouth was no longer regarded as an isolated place of refuge, but as the chief of the defences of the Tyne.

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1547-1580, p. 147. Haynes, *State Papers*, p. 220.

² *Cal. Scottish Papers*, vol. i. p. 391.

³ *Cal. State Papers, Foreign*, 1560-1561, p. 217.

⁴ *State Papers, Borders*, vol. iii. No. 346.

Lee could hardly be expected to advocate the demolition of works which he himself had planned. A compromise was effected, by which Sir Henry Percy received £66 13s. 4d. a year for his fee, and an annuity of £33 6s. 8d., an allowance of a shilling a day for a master gunner, and provision for eight gunners at sixpence a day, and for eleven household servants at £6 8s. 4d. yearly, the total sum being £264 11s. 8d. a year, a saving of £215.¹ Certain repairs were carried out upon the castle, which was otherwise left unaltered. Percy experienced difficulty in recouping himself for his outlay, as well as in getting his salary regularly paid.² Stores and munitions were despatched to Tynemouth, as well as to Berwick and Holy Island, in December, 1560, conveyed thither by Sir William Winter on his mission to help the Scottish reformers, then in arms against their regent.³

In the succeeding autumn Mary Stuart returned to Scotland out of France. Her voyage was unopposed by the English government, though plain hints were given of the action which Elizabeth would have liked her subjects to take if occasion offered. Ten days before Mary set sail for her father's kingdom, on August 5th, 1561, the earl of Rutland wrote significantly to Sir Henry Percy:

I require you, upon the entry of any strange ship, especially French or Scottish, into Tynemouth haven or road, to cause some trusty man of yours to search the same. If there be any matter that carrieth with it any manner of suspicion, give orders that the ships be courteously stayed and I speedily advertised. I do understand by special intelligence that there is like to happen such things of importance as, being well forseen and stayed, may highly advance her highness' service. Use diligence and good circumspection in this service, as the same may tend to a good end.⁴

Queen Mary arrived at Leith in safety, without touching at any port on the way. Eighteen months later, in January, 1563, her future husband, the earl of Bothwell, was captured on Holy Island when escaping from confinement in Edinburgh, and was committed to the custody of Sir Henry Percy at Tynemouth. There Bothwell was kept for a year, during which time he captivated his keeper by his 'courteous and honourable behaviour.' Percy told Cecil, 'he is very wise and not the man he was reported to be,' and wrote again after Bothwell's release, 'I doubt not but that this realm will find him a friend for his usage here.'⁵

¹ Haynes, *State Papers*, p. 400.

² *Cal. State Papers, Foreign*, 1561-1562, p. 388; *ibid.* 1562, p. 159.

³ *Ibid.* 1559-1560, pp. 199, 311.

⁴ *Duke of Rutland's MSS.* vol. i. p. 73. Hist. MSS. Com.

⁵ *Cal. State Papers, Foreign*, 1563, pp. 66, 129; *ibid.* 1564-1565, p. 83.

Other important Scottish prisoners, such as Lord Keith, son of the earl marshal of Scotland, and Sir Andrew Ker of Cessford, were detained for a time within the castle walls.¹

Sir Henry Percy refused to join his brother, the earl of Northumberland, in the Rising of the North. He was strongly opposed to that movement, and was considered by so capable an observer as the Spanish ambassador to have contributed largely to its failure. Early in December the news came that the rebels were in retreat, making for the northern fortresses. It was important to bar their way at the Tyne, still more necessary to prevent a royal stronghold like Tynemouth falling into their power. Percy mustered all the men of the shire, and put a garrison of two hundred in the castle; at the same time he sent out twelve hundred horsemen to keep watch along the river between Tynemouth and Newcastle. Sir Valentine Brown, who commanded at Newcastle, 'for the more surety' sent a hundred shot of his old band to join Percy's garrison. Had not Scrope, at Carlisle, been half-hearted in his support, few of those who came out with the earls would have escaped.²

After the rising was over Percy came to court, where he was very well received. His brother, the seventh earl, was attainted; consequently the lease of the site of Tynemouth monastery fell to the Crown, and was on May 3rd, 1570, granted to Sir Henry Percy for life, with remainder to his sons, Henry and Thomas, successively for their lives, at the annual rent of £165 11s. 5d. The offices of captain of the castle and of seneschal of the estates of the dissolved religious house were regranted to Percy with the like reversion.³

Barely a year passed before he was involved in one of the ramifications of the Ridolphi conspiracy. He consented to be party to the escape of the Queen of Scots from her prison at Tutbury, and to convey her into Scotland.⁴ Apparently the scheme was abandoned before its discovery, but none the less a warrant was issued for Percy's arrest. Sir John Forster, warden of the marches, came to Tynemouth to search for him.

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Foreign*, 1564-1565, p. 366; 1566-1568, p. 269. See also vol. v. of this work, p. 66.

² *Ibid.* 1569-1571, p. 162; *Domestic, Addenda*, 1566-1579, p. 154.

³ Gibson, vol. ii. pp. 115-119. *Pat. Rolls*, 12 Eliz. pt. 10.

⁴ 'He said he had a sute at this parliament to be enheritour to his brother, and if that did not take effect, he wold do the best he could for the delivery of the Scots quene; but if it did, he wold not medle, because of his nere children, but he wold loke through his fyngars, if she eskaped away.' Murdin, *State Papers*, pp. 21-22.

He found the porter, John Metcalf, standing at the gates with the keys in his hand. Misliking the man he removed him and added trusted men of his own to the garrison.¹ Percy had already hastened to London to clear himself, and there he was committed to the custody of Sir Ralph Sadler. At the same time Forster was directed by the Privy Council to take with him two justices of the peace 'not holden suspected of any unkindness towards the said Sir Henry,' and with them to view and examine the state of Tynemouth castle. He accordingly went with Sir John Delaval and viewed the ordnance there, which he found 'almost useless for want of stocks, ladles, sponges and wheels.' 'Munition,' he continued, 'is needed, and a master gunner of skill should be assigned, as the castle is destitute of one.'²

Upon the receipt of Forster's report, Sir Henry Percy was thrown into the Tower of London upon a charge of criminal negligence in the queen's service. 'I think,' Queen Elizabeth said to the earl of Leicester, 'his fault is as great as any man's, though it be no high treason.'³ A confession of carelessness was extorted from him; he was brought to trial and condemned to pay a fine of 5,000 marks, and eventually was set at liberty but not allowed to return to the north. He was allowed to retain the captaincy of Tynemouth upon appointing and paying the fees of a deputy, the first man who filled that position being the earl's brother-in-law, Francis Slingsby of Scriven, the keeper of Tynedale.⁴ Sir John Forster was disappointed in his hopes of securing the castle for his son-in-law, Lord Francis Russell, eldest son of the earl of Bedford; otherwise, as Lord Hunsdon told Burleigh, the Rising of the North had been 'a happy rebellion for him.'⁵

The town of Newcastle was also an unsuccessful suitor for Tynemouth, having, in 1574, addressed the following petition to the Crown:

'That it woulde please heyr heighnes, in consideracion of their dutyfull services donne by them and their predysseors to hir majestie and to hir most noble progenitors, as also for the pacyfienge of the greate controvercies which hathe byne of a longe tyme betwixte the officers of the castell of Tynmouthe and the officers of the aforesaid towne of Newcastle, to unitte the said castell with the members of

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, Addenda, 1566-1579, p. 369.

² *Ibid.* p. 374. *Acts of the Privy Council*, 1571-1575, p. 51. There was only one hundredweight of serpentine powder and one hundred shot at this time within the castle. *State Papers, Domestic*, vol. xx. No. 100, pt. ii.

³ Murdin, *State Papers*, p. 229.

⁴ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁵ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, Addenda, 1566-1579, p. 393.

the same as the earle of Northombarland dothe nowe injoye the same by force of his majesties graunte, unto the corporacion of Newcastle aforesaid ; and they shall not onely see the aforesaid castell safelye kepte unto hir majesties use, and paye yearlye unto the earle of Northumberland and his sonne duringe ther patten the some of fower hundreth poundes, but also shall discharge hir majestie and hir successors of the some of fower hundreth markes in monye, which hir majestie dothe nowe yearlye paye for the kepinge of the said forte ; and what debite shalbe appointed by the said towne for the kepinge of the said forte to be allowed at all tymes by hyr majestie and to injoye the same but duringe pleasure.¹

Thomas, seventh earl of Northumberland, had been executed for treason on August 22nd, 1572 ; but it was not until 1576 that Sir Henry Percy was formally recognised as having succeeded to his brother's dignities. Though partially restored to favour, the eighth earl plunged more deeply into conspiracy. Throgmorton's confessions in November, 1583, revealed the preparations made for the invasion of England by the Catholic powers of France and Spain, and disclosed the names of the English leaders, of whom the earl of Northumberland was chief. He was again imprisoned in the Tower. This time he was not allowed to retain the charge of Tynemouth ; Lord Francis Russell was given the post which he had sought to obtain twelve years before. Northumberland refused at first to deliver up the keys of the castle. He represented that his estate was but small to maintain the dignity of an earl, and that the benefit of the office of Tynemouth was a good portion of his living, without which he would not be able to sustain the charge of housekeeping and the education of his children. By holding this office he had been able to maintain twenty of his old servants who had served him ten to thirty years, which he had no other means of doing, and, if they should be displaced, they would be left to beg their bread. Disgrace, he said, would grow to him in his own country by his removal from the office which he tendered as his life.²

His appeal was disregarded. Allan King, the deputy at Tynemouth, was instructed to report on the supplies in his charge, which he did on March 24th, 1583/4. There were then ten pieces of ordnance in the fortress ; each gun had five to nine shot ; ammunition was represented by a single barrel of powder, small-arms by sixteen unserviceable harquebuses. There were no calivers, pikes or bills, no spades, nails, pickaxes or lanterns ; nothing in fact but decayed cannon, insufficient ammunition, and no match

¹ *State Papers, Domestic*, Elizabeth, vol. xcvi. No. 24.

² *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, Addenda, 1580-1625, p. 134.

with which to light it. Even the walls were falling into ruin; their repair was estimated to cost five hundred pounds 'only for workmanship, besides lime and stone whereof they have sufficient store.'¹

Lord Francis Russell came to Tynemouth in April, 1585, to find nothing done. 'Remember that the castle, which is without ordnance and powder, may be furnished,' was the burden of his repeated letters to Walsingham. It was stated that one hundred calivers were necessary and as many pikes and bows, two hundred sheaves of arrows, four barrels of corn powder, eight barrels of serpentine powders, and two hundred shot for each class of ordnance, namely, culverins, demi-culverins, sakers, demi-sakers, falcons and falconets.² 'The time is dangerous,' he wrote on June 22nd, 'and her majesty's house here had need be provided.'³ Danger of foreign invasion was certainly great. Throgmorton's revelations had disclosed but not disarmed conspiracy. Northumberland, released from the Tower, had again begun the work of plotting, and was lodged for the third time in his old prison. The morning before Russell wrote his letter, the earl was found dead in his bed, a bullet in his heart. It was given out that he had died by his own hand, and so Walsingham told Russell, who replied frankly, 'the lord of Northumberland's death will hardly be believed in this country to be as you have written, yet I am fully persuaded, and have persuaded others, that it was not otherwise.'¹

¹ *State Papers, Domestic*, Elizabeth, vol. clxix. No. 32. A more specific inventory, taken a few months later, is here given:

The first daye of July, 1584. This inventory was taken of all the quenes majesties store att Tynmowth castle, viz.:

First there is uppon the mounte heade a saker and two falcons mounted uppon cariages not serviceable; in the store howse a falcon without cariage; a demi-colveryn of brasse mounted uppon unshod cariage; a demi-colveryn of iron mounted uppon unshod cariage; a flanker of iron and fower chambers not serviceable; uppon the back side of the barnes a demi-colveryn of brasse mounted uppon cariage not serviceable; in the church yeirde a saker of brasse mounted uppon decayed cariage; in the mather yeirde a saker of iron mounted uppon decayed cariage; seventene falcon shott of iron; eleven saker shott of iron; sixe and twentie demi-colveryn shott of iron; thre score stone shott; a falcon ladle; a saker ladle; a demi-colveryn ladle; one sponge; one old decayed harquebus of crock; more in the store howse twentie harquebutes, broken and not serviceable; two and twentie olde plates of iron; fower collers and trayces for carte horsse not serviceable; xlviiith sheves of old decayed arrowes not serviceable; two cressett heades; two bill heades; eighte cloven shott for small peces; thre small peces of webbes of leade which were parcell of a sestern; a pece of a strake of iron for a whele; a bowe chest wantinge a coveringe; a bodye of a cart not serviceable; more thre percelles of webbes of leade taken of the steeple; more a broad plate of iron; thre cranes to mounte ordynance not furnyshed nor serviceable; in the church one old salt panne of iron decayed; more twelve sondry peces and a rownde bottom, parcelles of decayed salt pannes of iron; in the hall tenne olde decayed corslates with burgonettes and collers; more in the store howse certeyne peces of tymber which were the whole frame of an old decayed howse taken downe, and some other olde peces of tymber. *Ibid.* vol. clxxii. No. 2.

² *State Papers, Domestic*, vol. clxxxi. No. 79.

³ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, Addenda, 1580-1625, pp. 142, 143, 145.

¹ *Ibid.* p. 145.

A month later there was a day of truce on the marches, and the wardens met at Cocklaw to hear and satisfy complaints. Sir John Forster was there, accompanied by Lord Francis Russell. The Scots were restive; a slight incident, a few beats on a drum, and they were charging, three thousand strong, upon the surprised English. Volleys of shot set Forster and his followers flying, leaving Russell dead on the field.¹

Robert Carey, Lord Hunsdon's son, was appointed to replace Russell at Tynemouth.² He made Robert Delaval of Seaton Delaval his deputy. The inventory of household stuff handed over with the castle is worth quoting :

Ane inventorie of such parcells of howshold stuffe as ar remaninge in Tynemouth castell and belonging to the earle of Northumbreland, being delyvered by Thomas Dickham into the charge of Mr. Roberte Delavale, esqr., constable of the said castell, 14th Octobre, 1585.

Hall. The hall hanged with hangings of wollen, read and blake. Item, one table with a paire of tressells, two formes, two benches.

The utter parlor. Imprimis, a framed table of waynscott, a table with a paire of tressells, three formes and benches, a plate candlesticke, a irone chymney, grèyne hangings, a portall with a dore.

Great chambre. Imprimis, a framed table of waynscott with drawing leves, a square framed table of wainscot in the wyndowe, sixe buffett stowles, a wainded skreyne, a paire of plaing tables without men, a spring locke on the dore. Item, a shelve and a tressell.

. . . . Item, a bedstedd of waynescott, cupbord and lockers of waynescott about the chamber, a table with two tressells, three locks with three keys.

The gallorie hanged with hanging of grene saies.

Read chamber. Imprimis, hangings of redd about ye chamber, a read chaire imbrodered over the back, a cupbord with a folden frame, a iron chymney, a standing bedstedd of walnott tree, a portall with a dore, a locke and key.

The studie howse hanged with hangings of blewe sayes. Item, one cupbord with locke and no key.

The blewe chamber hanged with wollen. Item, a blewe chaire imbrodred on ye backe, a standing bedstedd, a irone chymney, a lock without key, a matted chaire of ease.

The inner chapell chambre hanged with greyde. Item, one irone chymney.

[Three other chambers are mentioned and their contents given. In one 'a ledd spowte for avoyding water,' in another 'one gret banded chist with two locks and one key.' Inventories follow of Edmund's chamber, the cook's chamber, the chamber over Dunc's lodge, the high white-hall, the low white-hall, the porter's lodge, the laundry-house, the inner brewing-house, the outer brewing-house, the baking-house, the buttery, the larder-house, the kitchen, and the paistry.³

Meanwhile an armada was preparing in Spain. It was essential for safety to look to the coast defences. On March 18th, 1588, Lord Hunsdon informed Walsingham that, if a letter were directed to him from the Privy Council, he would take the surveyor of works with him from Berwick and an officer of the ordnance, and so take 'a perfect view' of Tynemouth :

¹ *Cal. Border Papers*, vol. i. p. 138 *et seq.*

² *Ibid.* vol. ii. p. 60.

³ Marquis of Waterford's MSS.

but no letter came.¹ News reached England that the duke of Medina Sidonia had sailed from Lisbon on May 19th. The Privy Council, meeting on June 17th, sent a letter to the earl of Huntingdon, lord president of the north, directing him 'for the better defence of the castle of Tynemouth and that coast,' to repair to Newcastle that he might be the readier to make resistance should the Spaniards send their forces thither.²

Huntingdon sent back word :

I trust your wisdoms will consider how unable I should be to do her majesty fit service, unfurnished as I am of men and munitions. Tynmouth I doubt is defenceless, and there is little in the storehouse at Newcastle. Your lordships give me no direction how many men to take with me. Order must be taken for money, armour, munition, and victual there, *ne forte* Scotland should prove to be a worse neighbour than I hope it will.³

It was of this castle of Tynemouth that Camden had written in the previous year, 'Tynemouth glories in a splendidly fortified castle.'⁴

The danger was great. Writing from Newcastle, Huntingdon told the queen on August 3rd : 'Sure I am, the enemy cannot be ignorant of the weakness of these parts, neither doth he doubt to find some friends here, and yet the same shall little hinder him in anything that he purposeth to do in the south.'⁵ The decisive action had then already been fought, the Armada was in flight, and fear of foreign invasion at an end.

Henry, ninth earl of Northumberland, had given proof of his loyalty by volunteering against the Spanish fleet. He was admitted to the royal favour which his father had lost, and in 1591 was restored to the captaincy of Tynemouth, presumably in consequence of an arrangement with Carey. News of his restoration to his dignities was hailed with joy by the gentry of Northumberland, who came in inconvenient numbers to offer their congratulations. Captain Power, the earl's deputy, explained to his master, 'I cannot let them go without their dinners or suppers, which will grow to some charges in the year ; and yet I cannot devise to be a better husband respecting your lordship's honour and my credit.' Power was fully resolved not to let the castle go again out of the hands of the Percys. In the same letter, dated June 17th, 1592, he wrote :

¹ *Salisbury MSS.* vol. iii. p. 313, *Hist. MSS. Com.*

² *Acts of the Privy Council*, 1588, p. 129.

³ *Cal. Border Papers*, vol. i. p. 325.

⁴ 'Castro magnifico et munito superbit.' Camden, *Britannia*, 1587, p. 543.

⁵ *Cal. Border Papers*, vol. i. p. 327.

Right honorable and my most especiall good lord. It dide please your lordship to writt unto me from the Baythe that all suche thinges as was necessarye I should have with all convenient speed. Her is great want of those weapones which I acquainted your lordship withall, especially if any device should be put in practise for the takinge in againe of the castell, which I will prevent so farr forthe as my bones shall wnesse howe I parte from it befor it gooe. I feare no waye (if they be so minded) but to be surprized, for, lett me have but one hower's warninge, I will make the old walles stronge enough to keepe ther forces out by strengthe of mene. I will have five hundred men in that space, but men cane do lyttle without weapones. Many other ocasioness here will be to use those small store of weapones which I dide writt to your lordship for, besides the cominge in of the contre which shall see the men without furniture.¹

Again and again the attention of the government was called to the dismantled state of the castle. All the artillery upon which the castle had to rely in 1597 was the ordnance pronounced uselesse twenty-six years earlier.² Joshua Delaval, a cadet of the Seaton Delaval family, drew up the following report about 1596 :

Josua Delavale, one of the jurie for enquire of decayes in Tinemouthshire, enformeth as foloweth, viz.: Tinemouth castle, since the decease of the late earle of Northumberland, is fallen into great decay, and, by reason that ye lead is taken of severall lodgings, the timber flores and tymber above the sellers and larder and many other necessarie houses of office are like utterlie to be decayed and waisted if ye rofe be not fourthwith covered againe with sclait or otherwyse. The bakehouse and other houses of office are either pulled downe or suffered to fall downe, and the timber and sclaits theirow conveyed. Also ther is municon ther planted in severall places about the castle, viz.: on the mount one saker of brasse and iii falcons of brasse all lying on ye grass unmounted with their cariadge crushed under them; in the madder garth one saker of iron lying in like case; in the church yearde one saker of brasse in like sort unmounted with her cariadge rotten crushed under her; in the bulewarke in Tinemouth park one saker of brasse lying in like sort; in the store house three sakers of brasse with whole cariadge and one fowler without a cariadge; and not so much as one shot or discharge of powder for any of the foresaid peeces within the castle at this instant if they were mounted. Ther is furniture for soldiers in the armorie but 14 muscetts, bandclers, and rests, tenne petronelles, xx pykes, 19 halberds, but neither powder nor shot at all for the same peeces nor trayning of men for presente service if need required. The decay and naked estate of this house is so comed to passe by reason that the custodie therof haith bene committed unto severall deputies since the late earle of Northumberland deceased, who have rather suffred decay then any way procured reformation, as upon view and inquisition therof had and maid may and will appere. Also Peter Delavale, gentleman, since Candlemas last gardeth the said castle as deputie unto the now earle of Northumberland, and haith severall times since his entry enformed the earle of the decay of municon and want of provision and furniture for defence of the house wherby his honour might move for reformation, which as yet is not had. Ther is in Tinemouth castle of able men attending Peter Delavale, deputy capitaine ther, and his brother Raiphe Delavale, xx^{tie} able men, all which serve the said Peter and haith interteynment ther.³

Even more serious than the decay of the castle was the dearth of yeomen upon whom it had hitherto been dependent for its reserves. Delaval went on in his report to describe how the policy of the neighbouring

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² *Cal. Border Papers*, vol. ii. p. 361.

³ Delaval MSS. in the possession of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries.

landowners in evicting their tenants and in turning their land into pasture, as well as the heavy burden of the 'hall-corn' on the tenants of Tynemouthshire, was driving them perilously near to extinction. Further, so long as the Tyne defences were neglected, Newcastle lay open to hostile attack. 'It is most needful,' says a writer of the time, 'that the ordnance at Tynemouth castle should be mounted and placed for defence of the castle and haven, if there was a sufficient gunner there resident to attend them; there has been no such man in the place of late. I must not omit to advertise how nakedly and dangerously the town of Newcastle is at present, if the queen's enemies intend harm on these coasts.'¹

Toby Matthew, the bishop of Durham, did not mince matters in a letter of February 17th, 1599, in which he described the state of Newcastle. He told Cecil that he had found

The place of more importance than strength; the people of more courage than experience; their provisions rather competent as aforehand than sufficient for a fierce assault; their number not many; their leaders none; Tynemouth castle, a promontory in the mouth of the haven seven miles off, utterly disfurnished; no blockhouse or other piece or platform for defence on the river between that and Newcastle; no shipping among the merchants worth the naming; therefore of themselves, their men being untrained, unable to resist a mean force.²

With a non-resident governor and landlord, and officers whose aim was to serve the interests of their master rather than those of the state, it was not surprising that the castle was neglected, and that the earl of Northumberland was more bent on getting in his rents and tithes than on effecting repairs for which he received no encouragement from Elizabeth's government. Peter Delaval, a younger brother of Joshua Delaval, was invited from London to farm the earl's estates in Tynemouthshire. A cadet of a good Northumbrian family, 'well qualified, sober, discreet, very careful, honest and well experienced,' after ten years of trading in the east countries,³ he had become a London citizen and had settled down to work cloth in Bishopsgate Street. He had a keen eye in matters of business, stood on his rights, carried litigiousness to a fault, did not scruple to make enemies in the performance of his duty, and rose superior to reversals of fortune. Already he and his brother, Ralph Delaval, held the rectory of Tynemouth, and he now took leases from the Crown of coal mines in Bebside, Cowpen and Preston, as well as of salt pans in Bebside, Cowpen and North Shields.

¹ *Cal. Border Papers*, vol. ii. p. 232.

² *Ibid.* p. 589.

³ *Ibid.* p. 6.

He also purchased freeholds in Tynemouth and copyholds in Tynemouth, North Shields and East Chirton. Very soon after coming north he had a violent quarrel with Thomas Power, the captain of the castle. His account of it was as follows :

Thomas Power and I beinge bothe alone in the great chamber in Tynemouthe, he fynding hymselfe discontented, began to charge me that I had wrought hym great injurie over his heade in abridging his libertie within the castle, and sundrye other displeasures to long nowe to troble your lordship withall, wherby he perceived I dyd not love hym. And therefore he challenged me to pytch the feild to feight with hym. My answeere unto hym was that I had a wife and vj children, and great matters I had to discharge as well unto your lordship as unto others, and that all that herde of my appoynting such a match, knowing myne estate and his, woulde condempne me for having the lawe so muche advauntage of me, whiche I woulde prevent.¹

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

DELAVAL OF TYNEMOUTH.

EDWARD DELAVAL (*a*), second son of Sir John Delaval of Seaton Delaval, knight, by Mary Carey, his wife, dead before 31st December, 1571, when his brother, Sir John Delaval, made his will, leaving five children then living (*c*). = Phillis (*a*), daughter of John Ogle of Ogle (*b*); she remarried, secondly, George Cramlington of Cramlington, and, thirdly, John Ogle of Newsham (and Bebside), and made her will at Lemington, 22nd June, 1606 (*d*).

Joshua Delaval (*b*), had River Green by grant of his brother Ralph (*f*); had a rent charge out of Hartley under the will of his uncle, Sir John Delaval (*c*); described in the settlement made, 18th June, 1599, by Sir Robert Delaval, as his cousin german (*e*); will proved 28th September, 1614 (*d*).¹ = Anne, daughter of Robert Raymes (*a*) of Shortflatt, named in her husband's will (*d*). Ralph Delaval (*b*), had a grant of River Green, 27th June, 1583, out of the Court of Exchequer (*f*); was residing at Tynemouth castle in 1599, being then 48 years of age (*Exch. Depos.* 41 Eliz. 19 North.); named in settlement, 18th June, 1599 (*e*); administration of his personal estate, 7th December, 1609 (*d*); buried 22nd July, 1609 (*i*). = Grace, administratrix to her husband's personal estate (*d*); [remarried 4th September, 1627, John Heslop, vicar of Tynemouth (*g*) (*i*)].

Phillis, under age 7th December, 1609 (*d*).

Robert Delaval (*a*), apparently died in his father's lifetime. = Anne, daughter of, Middleton (*a*). William Delaval (*a*), murdered at Hexham, 25th May, 1618 (*e*).² Edward Delaval (*a*) of River Green, buried 26th February, 1654 5 (*g*). Ralph, under age at the date of his father's will (*d*); [query married Ann Smith, 16th August, 1618 (*g*)]. John, under age at the date of his father's will (*d*). James, baptised 27th August, 1599 (*n*). Francis, baptised 11th June, 1601 (*n*). Ann, baptised 26th October, 1598 (*n*).

Robert Delaval (*a*), to whom his grandfather gave his lands at River Green (*d*). =

Robert Delaval, born before 28th August, 1666 (*a*).

Peter Delaval (*b*) of London (*e*), afterwards of Tynemouth, named in the settlement of 18th June, 1599 (*e*); nuncupative will, 8th August, 1611 (*d*); buried 10th August, 1611 (*i*). = Mary, daughter of Thomas Allen of London (*b*). Clement Delaval (*b*), joint lessee with his brother Ralph of Crown lands at Cowpen in 1599 (*Exch. Depos.* 41 Eliz. 19 North.); named in the settlement of 18th June, 1599 (*e*); administration of his personal estate, 16th June, 1607 (*d*). = Lucy (*f*), daughter of Gawen Milburn of Bedlington (*a*). Barbara, married John Watson of Newcastle and Bedlington (*a*).¹

A

B

A	B
John Delaval of Tynemouth, ² to whom (with his mother) his father gave his lands in Tynemouth; died at Tynemouth; buried 27th July, 1632 (<i>i</i>); administration of his personal estate, 17th August, 1632 (<i>d</i>).	Gawen, under age 16th June, 1607 (<i>d</i>). Thomas, under age 16th June, 1607 (<i>d</i>). Ralph, under age 16th June, 1607 (<i>d</i>). Robert, under age 16th June, 1607 (<i>d</i>); living 7th December, 1609 (<i>d</i>). Clement, baptised at Earsdon, 7th April, 1605, as son of Clement Delaval and Lucy his wife (<i>f</i>); living 16th June, 1607 (<i>d</i>). Margaret, under age 16th June, 1607 (<i>d</i>). Dorothy, under age 16th June, 1607 (<i>d</i>). [Lucy, married 10th June, 1635, John Hall (<i>i</i>).]
James, baptised 30th July, 1592 (<i>h</i>). Son, baptised 6th October, 1593 (<i>h</i>). Thomas, baptised 14th December, 1597 (<i>h</i>); apprenticed midsummer, 1614 (<i>m</i>). Mary, married at Tynemouth, 3rd February, 1611/2, Edward Lee of Monkwearmouth (<i>i</i>); died in childbed, 25th May, 1617; Monumental Inscription, Monkwearmouth. Martha, baptised 1st July, 1590 (<i>h</i>). Elizabeth, baptised 15th August, 1591 (<i>h</i>). Catherine, baptised 19th February, 1594/5 (<i>h</i>), [married 15th January, 1610/1, John Hanswell of Preston (<i>i</i>).] Jane, baptised at Tynemouth, 6th August, 1609 (<i>i</i>).	

Ralph Delaval (<i>d</i>), baptised 9th November, 1623 (<i>i</i>). Peter Delaval, baptised 18th November, 1625 (<i>i</i>); dead before 17th August, 1632 (<i>d</i>).	Frances, baptised 10th June, 1618 (<i>i</i>); dead before 17th August, 1632 (<i>d</i>). Mary, baptised 8th July, 1621 (<i>i</i>); living 17th August, 1632 (<i>d</i>). Phillis, baptised 18th November, 1625 (<i>i</i>); called 'daughter and sole heir'; married before 20th August, 1652, George Grey of Newcastle, master and mariner. Sarah (<i>d</i>), living 17th August, 1632 (<i>d</i>).
--	---

(a) Dugdale's *Visitation of Northumberland*, 1666.

(b) Flower's *Visitation of Yorkshire*, 1563-1564.

(c) *Durham Wills and Inventories*, Surt. Soc.

(d) Raine, *Test. Dunelm.*

(e) Marquis of Waterford's MSS.

(f) *Earsdon Register*.

(g) *St. John's Register*, Newcastle.

(h) *Register of St. Helen's*, Bishopsgate.

(i) *Tynemouth Register*.

(k) Cooke's *Visitation of London*, 1568.

(l) Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. ii. vol. ii. p. 23.

(m) *Skinner's Company Apprenticeships, Misc. Gen. et Her.* 3 ser. vol. i. p. 102.

(n) *Berwick Register*.

* Seal of Peter Delaval of London, citizen and clothworker: oval, $\frac{3}{4}$ in. by $\frac{5}{8}$ in., a shield of arms. Quarterly, 1 and 4, barry of six ermine [and vert]. 2. Three eagles displayed, two and one. 3. A lion rampant. Crest: On a helmet, ornamental mantling and wreath, a ram's head attired. *Brit. Mus. Catalogue of Seals*, vol. ii. p. 726.

¹ Note of slaughters committed by inhabitants of the East Wardenry, 1596: John Daglish of Wideopen slain in his own house of Wideopen by Joshua Delaval and others of the Berwick garrison. *Cal. Border Papers*, vol. ii. p. 181. Delaval was subsequently found 'foul' of the said murder. *Ibid.* p. 248. On June 10th, 1598, he occurs as constable of the horse at Berwick. *Ibid.* p. 540. For a further account of Joshua Delaval and his descendants, see Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. ii. vol. ii. p. 23.

² May 26th, 1618. Deposition of Anne Ridley of Westwood, widow. The said Anne Riddley sayeth uppon her oath that yesterdaye, beinge the xxvth of Maye, 1618, she was rydinge toward Westwood one horseback behynd Mr. William Delavale, and in there compenye Mr. Edward Delavale, Joseph Ward, and Thomas Hebourne, servant to the said William Delavale. And as they came to Hexham greane about nyne of the clock in the eveninge, there Edward Delavale gott a fall, wheruppon the said Joseph Ward and Thomas Hebourne went backe to helpe him, and the said William Delavale rydd one with this examynat behynd him. And as soone as they came to the allors at the weste end of Hexham greane, there came south to the allor bushes there a man of middle stature, thick shouldred, brownishe bearded, bigg faced, apperelled with a sadd-cullered cloak under which he carried a drawn sword; which man presently stept before the said William Delavale in the high waye, who asked who he was. The man answered: 'Thou art noe justice of peace to examyne me; and although thou knowe not me, I knowe the,' and presently strook at the said William Delavale with his sword, who instantly fell of horsback therewith, and then gave the said William Delavale one other stroke one the hynder parte of his head, and said to him: 'Thou art Delavale, and I have vowed thy death,' and then went his wayes into the allorr bushies: whom this examynat purseweinge, he said unto her: 'Goe thy waye or els I will thrust my sworde in the.' And theruppon she lost sight of him, and the said William Delavale presently dyed of the said strokes. (From 'A booke of the examynations touchinge William Delavale's death.' Marquis of Waterford's MSS.)

³ Petition of John Delavale to the earl of Northumberland: Humbly shewing unto your lordship that, whereas your suppliant's father, Peter Delavale, dyed greatly indebted unto your lordship, as alsoe to dyverse other persones, in great somes of money, not leaving wherewith fully to discharge the same, being left most indebted unto your lordship, which your said suppliant with much care and endeavour hath payd the most parte of unto your lordship's officers; the paing whereof and other great depetes, with his great charge of his mother and eight children, your said suppliant ys almost undone and not able to pay the same unless yt might please your good lordship to take commiseration of your said suppliant and to geve your said suppliant tyme for the paing of his dept due to your lordship, being xlvjth xiiijth iiiij^d, and the last pament dew to your lordship of his said father's depete, without which he shalbe utterly overthrowen and undone. And he, his mother, and the rest of his fatherles brothers and sisters, wyll pray for the most prosperous estate of your lordship ever to continewe. Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

To prevent further dissension, Northumberland deposed Power and appointed Delaval in his place.¹ The latter assured his position by persnading his master to let him farm the demesnes and mills of Tyne-mouth and the hall-corn of the shire, for the round sum of a thousand pounds yearly.² Military considerations were subordinated to estate management and speculation in coal, salt and agricultural produce. An account of a scuffle in the castle, sent by Delaval to the earl's solicitor in London, lights up the history of these uneventful years :

This daye one widdowe Dymon and one Robert Atcheson hir brother, of Middle Chirton, within the liberties of Tynemouth, complayning unto me that Willm. Fenwick of the Sheele Milnes dyd not onely vihemently threaten to beat them, but in forceable manner tooke away ther corn and were threshing it fourthe to convert to his owne use, and therfore they craved to have justice that the threshing of ther corne might be stayed till ther cause was herde, and that they might have Willm. Fenwick and his man Robert Fenwicke bounde to keepe the peace against them, wherby they, being verie oulde and poore, might lyve in peace. Uppon which complaynt I sent for the threshers of the corne commanding them to remayne in the castle till ther master came to aunswere the poore widdowe's complaynt and hir brother's. Sone after dynner, I being in the great chamber together with my brother Raph Delavale and thre gentlemen of the Fenwicks dyning with me ther and departing, my servaunts being all abrode tything in severall townes in Tynemouthshier and busy about the barnes in the castle, in the meanetyme Willm. Fenwick, against whome the widdowe and hir brother complained, came into the same great chamber in verie sawsye manner, accompayned with towe of his servaunts with swords, daggers and daggs charged and bent together, with one Roger Murton who weares my lord's cloth and servaunt unto Mr. Fenwick of Wallington and Thomas Pore at Flatworth. And at Fenwick's first speche he affirmed unto me that he was wonderfully abused by a peasantly fellowe which he said I maynteigned against him, and swore by God he had much adoo to houlde his hands for beating of hym. I tould Fenwick I was to deale upreightly betwixt hym and those that complained of hym, as with all others under my charge, and he dyd to farr abuse me in that place in charging me to be a maynteigner of any peasant to abuse hym or any other : but I said unto him, 'Heare is towe honest aged folks, a widdowe and hir brother, that earnestly craves the peace against you and your servaunts, and therefore they being sworne you have both bett them dayly, thretneeth them and oppresseth them, so that they stand in doubt of bodely hort to be done by you and your servaunts : and for that cause you must fynde suertie to keepe the peace ere you depart.' Said Fenwick, standing with his hatt on his heade in verie sawsye and scornefull manner, 'Your authoritie will not extend to bynde me to the peace.' I tould him, although I were no justice of peace, yet he should knowe that by my office and prescription of the libertyes of this place, I was a conservator of the peace here, and by vertue of that I shoulde be of such-lyk misdemeanor as he was of by enformacion geven against hym. Said Fenwick unto me, 'If you undertake to quell me, you shall fynde me the unruelyest coult to tayme that ever you undertook to quell in all your lyfe : ' and therwith syngling hymself in the great chamber, unfolding his cloke, and laying his hand uppon his dagger, wylled none come nere hym or touch hym, for, if any dyd, he swore by God he woulde stik. My brother Raph, standing next hym and asking hym if he eather knewe where he was or what hee dyd, and preassing nere Fenwick as he dyd threaten, so in deed he drewe his dagger and assaulted my brother Raph, who also drewe his dagger, having nothing ells about hym, and so closed with Fenwick. The thre Fenwicks ther with me before Wm. Fenwick's coming, and I having nothing but my dagger onely about me, bestiring ourselves to part Fenwick and my brother, who ere we got unclosed, Fenwick's men drawes ther swords and ran uppon my brother and smot hym over the bare heade a grevous wonde, being closed

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² *Ibid.*

with Fenwick. The thre Fenwicks, returning towards William Fenwick's servaunts having ther swords and daggers drawen and ther daggs bent readye to shoot, partlye stayed them; but I, seing my brother spoyled, ran uppon Wm. Fenwick and, being closed with hym, one of the thre Fenwicks and Roger Murton aforesaid allso closing with us, my brother Raph drawing nere me to releve me, Roger Murton caught hym by the dagger and hand and helld hym tyll one of Fenwick's men smot my brother twice over the head agayne deadly wounds suposed. Therwith I having my dagger in Fenwick's chast, and he crying he was slayne, praying to save his lyfe, with that I unclosed with hym, and, felling hymself loose, rann fourth of the great chamber with his men, which when Roger Murton perceived and seing me follow, he stept betwene me at the great chamber dore and helde me untill the ryoters ran away, till I was forced to stik hym ere he would let me pursue, as my sister helld my brother, Murton never offring to hould Fenwick or his men, but still my brother or me. Vett my brother and I, getting weapens in our hands and pursuing the ryoters, overtook them at the gate, which contrary ther expectacions they found shutt by others then the porter; and wee offring ther to assalt them, they yekeld themselves, saying they were allready slayne, and being bluddy shewed ther wounds, whereat I stayed myselfe and brother, and apprehended Fenwick and his men and comitted them to prysone.¹

For seven years Delaval was captain of the castle. His fall was due to pressure brought upon the earl by the authorities of Newcastle. Delaval told the earl that the real reason of his loss of favour was 'som harde information unto your lordship againste me, which, my good lord, hathe beane in plottinge this fyve yeares by thym of Newcastell, who spake thies words in my presents to my fayce, that it should coste fyve thowsant pounds, but that theye woulde crose me.'²

Delaval's successor, William Wycliffe, the earl's receiver-general, was probably no better suited to his new charge, but he was wise enough not to encroach upon the liberties of Newcastle. He soon obtained leave from

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS. Letter of Peter Delaval to John Carville of the Inner Temple, September 17th, 1597.

² *Ibid.* Delaval has elsewhere given a more explicit account of his dismissal.

³ That Willyam Wykelyfe hath beine the cause of my troubles I will prove as followethe:

That first he soughte for my place of Tynemouthe, and to efect the same he unjustly suggested unto my lord of Northumberland that I should be indepted unto his lordship dew £550, whearby he gott a warrant from my lord for my place. Upon the which I repaired presently to London unto his lordship, he then ready within 3 dayes to take his jurnay of travaile beyonde the seaees, and, at my coming to London, moved my lord of my discharge by Willyam Wykelyfe; whearupon my lord replyed that he had reason so to doo, for that he was informed I owghte him £550 long dew; to the which I answered hym I owghte him no monye at all that was dew, but I had paid him £330 thre monethes before my daye. So presentlye his lordship sent for Mr. Francis, his lordship's steward, and Mr. Powlton, his cofferrer, who cold not disprove me. Whereupon my lord apointed me to come the next daye for a warrant to Willm. Wykelyfe for my continewance in Tynemouthe castle as afore. But that very daye Willm. Wykelyfe, contrary his promise and oathes, had written his letters which came to London to my contrary to this effect, that Thomas Wykelyfe, his brother, should presently repaire unto his lordship and geve him to know from hym that, whearas his lordship had appointed him to be his deputie captaine at Tynemouthe, and so the wholl country dyd hould and reputt him, which if his lordship should discharg hym againe of the suddon, yt would no lyttle redound discredytt. Therefore he hoped his lordship would consider the premisses and leve him with as much creadytt as his lordship found he brought with hym. The next day after, according to his lordship's appointment, I repaired to his lordship as he had appointed me, to come for his warrant to Willm. Wykelyfe for the contynewing of my place as before. His lordship tooke me asyde and went into his garding and tould me that so it was, he had refar all things unto Wykelyfe, and, his tyme being short, he could not alter what he had done before. "But," quoth he, "Wykelyfe will deale well with you." Marquis of Waterford's MSS.

his master to resign the command in favour of his brother-in-law, George Whitehead of Boulmer, described by Delaval as 'such a spoighting fellow as is not manye such in all the countre, as I refer me to the generall report of all such as knoweth hym in the countre, what George Whythead is.'¹

Whitehead wrote in 1604 'to remember his lordship for some powder and shot, as also allowance for mounting the ordnance that lie in decay,'² but failed to obtain either. A year later the Gunpowder Plot changed the position of affairs. The earl, who was not always fortunate in his choice of officers, had appointed his kinsman, Thomas Percy, receiver of his rents in the north, and had used his influence to obtain for him a post at court. In the autumn of 1605, Thomas Percy, having collected the earl's rents in Northumberland, came up to London with three thousand pounds which he had gathered in, and on November 4th dined with the earl at Syon House. Next day the news was abroad that a plot for blowing up the king and both houses of parliament had been discovered, and that Thomas Percy was one of the conspirators. Whitehead, on hearing of what had happened, wrote to his master:

I have taken upon me for the better furtherance of your lordship's service to make seasure for your lordship's use of such goodes as could be founde of Mr. Percey's, which was very small, the inventory wherof I send your lordship. I wishe to God he had never bene borne to prove himself a traytor to soe gracious a prince, and false to so honourable a master by whom he did onely live. For I doe muche doute he is much behynd with your lordship in his accompts; for I knowe he gott up towards 300^{li} of me and others at Lammas, saying he must of necessity send it to your lordship; and I hard he neyther came nor sent it to your lordship. Besides, befor I know him to be arreared for Tynemouth last yeare. I pray God send him soone taken, that he may have his desarts. For my chardge heere I take the best course bothe by sea and land for the apprehensione of these traytors; for I kepe wach in the porte every night, and cause every shipe going out or cominge in to be throughly searched both for passengers and lettres. This is all I can doe till I heare your lordship's further directiones.³

Meanwhile suspicion fastened upon the earl. His relations with the Catholic party and his patronage of one of the conspirators gave a colour of probability to the supposition that he had a hand in the plot. There was no direct evidence to prove it, but Cecil boldly ordered his detention and directed Sir Henry Widdrington to seize on the Percy castles of

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS. William Wycliffe was probably brother of John Wycliffe of Offerton, who married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Whitehead of Monkwearmouth and sister of the above-mentioned George Whitehead. Surtees, *Durham*, vol. ii, p. 194. George Whitehead settled at Boulmer in 1608; his family continued to reside there until the close of the eighteenth century. As George Whitehead of Newcastle he made his will on January 22nd, 1625. He was great-nephew of Hugh Whitehead, the last prior of Durham. A pedigree of the family of Whitehead of Monkwearmouth is given in Surtees, *Durham*, vol. ii, p. 8, and of Whitehead of Boulmer in vol. ii. of this work, p. 403.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ *Ibid.* Letter dated November 12th, 1605.

Tynemouth, Alnwick, Prudhoe and Cockermouth.¹ Ten days later King James commanded Widdrington to hand over Tynemouth castle to Sir William Selby, the younger, of Twisell, sheriff of Northumberland in that year, and lately appointed one of the commissioners of the north.² 'Not from any dislike of you,' the royal letter ran, 'but other respects, we think fit to commit the castle of Tynemouth to some other person. We therefore require you to deliver up the said castle with the housing, armour, artillery, munition, etc., to Sir William Selby, whom we have appointed, being sheriff of the county, to take charge thereof until we otherwise dispose.'³

Enquiry was forthwith made into the decayed state of the castle. Various buildings had been destroyed and their materials carried off by unauthorised persons. The kiln had been pulled down and its timber and slate used for the 'repayring and lofting' of the house of the vicar, William Hamilton. The covering and leads were gone from Edmund's chamber; 'the little chamber wherein John Harbotle and John Smyth laye, called by their names,' had been demolished; the bake-house and bolting-house had been pulled down and its timber and slates conveyed into the town of Shields.⁴

After a preliminary examination Northumberland was committed to the Tower. His imprisonment came as a shock to the servants who had never doubted his loyalty. Wycliffe, in a letter of December 28th, wrote sadly to a friend at Essex house :

God send you as much comforth as by your lettres I have had, being contynewallie filled with malicious and slanderous reports of his lordship's doeinges, some such as I did know to be most faulse and untrewes, as the stour of gould and mony found in his howse, haps and fothers above 2000, with many moor such like. I am and ever was confident of his lordship's loyalte, and I beseeche God deliver him of his trowbles with the king's majesty's favor and to his honor; for he shall endure greynes so many to heare the robbing of himself and his tennants by that unfortunat wretch more than almost is credeble.⁵

In the following June, Northumberland was tried in the Star Chamber, found guilty, and ordered to pay a fine of thirty thousand pounds. He was further sentenced to deprivation of all offices held by him from the Crown, and to remain a prisoner in the Tower during his majesty's

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1603-1610, p. 254.

² Sir William Selby was also gentleman-porter at Berwick and thrice represented that place in parliament. He is to be distinguished from his uncle and namesake, also member of parliament for Berwick, to whose property at Igtham in Kent he succeeded in 1611. Raine, *North Durham*, p. 315. A full account of the Selbys of Igtham Mote is given in *Archaeologia Cantiana*, vol. xxvii.

³ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, Addenda, 1580-1625, p. 490. ⁴ Duke of Northumberland's MSS. ⁵ *Ibid.*

pleasure. Under the terms of the sentence the governorship of Tynemouth castle was taken away from him and granted to George Hume, earl of Dunbar, Sir William Selby being allowed to retain his post as captain. The governorship was, however, distinct from Northumberland's other offices as being of the nature of an entailed estate. He explained this to Dunbar, who at once withdrew his claims, thus leaving the castle in the nominal possession of Northumberland, though Selby continued to draw full pay for his charge.

Selby petitioned in 1607 for money for the repair of the castle. His request, forwarded to Northumberland, met with criticism from the earl :

For the importance of the castle, I shall not neede to saie more then thankes be God Scotland is our frende and Dunkerke not our enemye. For the reparacions 5,000^{li} will not make it teneable for 18 men against a verie meane force. What Sir William Selbie may require to make an old monastrie fit for his dwelling, I know not.¹

None the less Selby set to work to repair some of the houses in the castle and to relay the conduit which brought water thither. . He sought out some rusty suits of armour, muskets, pikes, partizans, and halberds from the storehouse at Newcastle, cleaned them and brought them to Tynemouth. Finally, the old cannon which he had found 'in case neither to defend nor offend' were at last mounted on carriages. It cost only £41 8s. to make them serviceable, but the government had delayed for forty years to take this obvious precaution.²

If a prejudiced statement can be trusted, Selby found it convenient to draw his pay without wasting money on maintaining an extensive garrison. Information reached Northumberland that

Sir William Selby hayth had from your lordship thesse seven yeaeres by past these allowances due to your lordship :

Imprimis, the captaine's fee 66^{li} 13^s 4^d

Item for eleaven souldiers and seaven gunners with a master gunner ... 164^{li} 11^s 8^d

For which number of 19 he hayth kept thesse 3 or 4 yeaeres by past but one Nathaniell Orde, his deputie, one Thomas Milles, an olde souldier of Barwicke, and one John Selby, another old soldier who is nowe deade, a pore fellowe to kepe the lightes and to be porter lykwise, and nowe this last yeaere he hayth hyered foure pooer fellowes that woork at the cole pitts and allowes them every one x^{li} by yeaere to attend his deputy to the church one the Sunday, but els never comes within the castle, himself continewinge allways in Kent.

All thesse men have but small allowance, wheras he himself hayth from his majesty, all which belongs your lordship but an encrease fee of 66^{li} 13^s 4^d, the soome of 356^{li} 13^s 4^d.³

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS. Letter to the lords of the council, May 26th, 1607.

² Gibson, vol. ii. pp. 120-122. Devon, *Issues of the Exchequer*, James I. p. 301. *State Papers, Domestic*, James I. vol. xlix. No. 57. Exchequer Special Commissions, No. 4352.

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

An unsatisfactory state of affairs was remedied by the recognition, on the part of the Crown, of Northumberland's right to the governorship, and by appointing Sir John Fenwick of Wallington to be captain during the governor's restraint in the Tower (March, 1616).¹ Fenwick came into a ruinous possession. He and Whitehead and Sir Henry Widdrington reported to the earl that 'the most parte of the houses ar so ruinated that without some present coste they ar not fitt to lodge any person ; and all the platformes ar so gonn to decay that they must be new made.'² The terms of Fenwick's appointment were rather ambiguous. Whitehead told the earl: 'I doe publikely give it out that ther he is by your lordship's choyse and as your deputie, as all other have bene for your lordship, and no otherwise, and, for anythinge I can perceave, he is a right Northumberland man, once in possessione houldes himself better half owener.'³

Fenwick was allowed to retain possession after the earl of Northumberland's release in 1621, and was sent by the latter in November, 1622, to the earl of Middlesex, then lord treasurer, to report to him personally on the decayed state of the castle.⁴ The larger part of the ordnance had been lately removed elsewhere.⁵ So great was the neglect to which the castle was subjected that Fenwick at last, in November, 1625, informed the lord-lieutenants of the north parts that the castle was so 'ruinated' that he could no longer remain there.⁶ Richard Neile, bishop of Durham, joined in advising that Tynemouth haven should be secured. 'Newcastle,' he wrote, 'lies open to the enemy, who, besides the spoil of a great, populous, and very rich town, may burn 200 or 300 ships, for there are oftentimes so many lying in the river.'⁷ The lord-lieutenants laid the matter before the Privy Council, with the result that on December 14th an order was sent out for repair and fortification. An engineer named Cramfield was to be employed in the work.⁸ The government did not, however, undertake the whole expense, but agreed to provide twelve hundred pounds towards it; the town of Newcastle, in whose interests the fortification had been commenced, undertaking to bring it to completion at their own

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS. For Sir John Fenwick see *Dict. Nat. Biog.*, and Welford, *Men of Mark 'twixt Tyne and Tweed*.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ *Ibid.*

⁴ *Earl De la Warr's MSS. Hist. MSS. Com. 4th report, appendix, pp. 278, 315.*

⁵ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic, 1625-1626, p. 129.*

⁶ *Ibid. p. 152.*

⁷ *Ibid. p. 134.*

⁸ *Duke of Devonshire's MSS. Hist. MSS. Com. 3rd report, appendix, p. 40.*

charges.¹ The twelve hundred pounds was to be raised by privy seal within Newcastle and the county of Durham, and to be administered by the bishop of Durham, the mayor of Newcastle, and five other persons appointed by order of council dated April 21st, 1626.

Apparently the original plan of repairing the castle was abandoned in favour of a scheme for building a fort elsewhere. There was delay in commencing work. Bishop Neile wrote to the lord president of the council in August :

Your lordshipp knoweth that the getting and carryeing of the materialls to soe great a worke will require the authoritye of a commission for all sortes of cariages at reasonable prices, especially at this tyme of the yeare when all mens cartes waynes and cattell are necessarily imployed in their harvest, and perhapps there may be need of a commission for workemen, which I must leave to your lordship's consideracion. The setting of many handes upon the worke must recompence the tyme hetherto lost.²

In its turn the modified scheme was dropped on the score of expense. Twelve months afterwards Lord Clifford, lord-lieutenant of the northern counties, visited the ground where they had intended to have erected a fort. He found that advantage could be taken of the Tudor outworks, known as the Spanish battery, that this provided a better situation, and reduced the cost to a quarter of the sum originally proposed. He added :

Surely, my lord, the towne of Newcastell is for the time well provided with armes and powder, but the castell of Tinemouthe hathe not one peece mounted nor any armes within it fitt for use; and therefore I am much importuned by the mayor and the aldermen to moove his majesty for sum ordinance for ther towne (for which they will give money for the one halfe), and that likewise his majesty would be pleased to bestowe sum cost upon Tinemouthe castell, it beeing his majesty's owne house and the key of that towne and cuntry.³

Subsequent events show that Clifford's advice was disregarded. The proposed fortifications were only carried out fifteen years later, and under a different set of circumstances.

In 1632, on November 5th, the ninth earl of Northumberland died. His death determined the Percy tenure of the post of governor of the castle, which had been created by the patent of 1570, for Thomas Percy, a younger brother to whom the office would have reverted, was already dead. Letters patent, issued at the commencement of King James's reign, had renewed the grant of 1570 in favour of the earl's eldest son, Algernon Percy, but they had subsequently been revoked and the governorship given to Robert Carey, who had already held command before Northumberland's

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1625-1626, p. 567.

² *State Papers, Domestic*, Charles I. vol. xxxiii. No. 39.

³ *Ibid.* vol. lxxv. No. 55.

restoration to favour in 1592. A clause in the new patent gave the reversion, upon Robert Carey's death, to Thomas Carey his second son.¹ The father, now earl of Monmouth, consequently succeeded in 1632 to the nominal duties of a governor.

King Charles I. visited Tynemouth on June 5th, 1633, when on his way to Scotland to be crowned, being conveyed thither from Newcastle by the master and brethren of the Trinity House, who took the opportunity of presenting a petition to the king, in which they set forth the damage done to the river by allowing ballast to fall into it.²

The lack of ordnance, to which Clifford had called attention in 1627, met with the serious attention of the Privy Council nine years later. A report was presented to the following effect :

May it please your honors, being informed by the Clarke of the Councell that it was your honors pleasure I should article what ordnance and other munition were fitt for the present supplie of the castle of Tynmouth for the strengthning of the haven there, doth humbly offer theis proposicons following to your honorable consideracon.

That his majesties castle of Tynmouth standeth at the mouth of the said haven, but of such height, that if it were furnished with ordinance and munition would bee to litle or noe purpose for the hindering of shippes to come and goe forth of that harbor, and his majesties daylie charge there ymployed to litle or noe purpose.

That the safest and readiest course wee can conceave to offend and hinder the enemies to enter that harbor in future tymes is to build twoe block howses, one of either side of that haven neere unto a highe water marke, where stone and lyme is to be had at reasonable rates, in either of which block howses thre or fower peeces of good ordinance being placed, with all furniture thereunto belonging, will command any shipp or vessel which shall come or goe foorth of the said haven, ffor the said haven at the entrance of the sea is soe narrowe that with a faire wind there cann come but twoe vessells sydeling together, and if the wyndes doe never soe litle crosse the east or southeast, then they are to make 2, 3, or 4 borders or turnynges before they cann recover the harbor.³

This proposal was taken up by the Lords of the Admiralty, who obtained the royal consent to demolish Tynemouth castle, and in lieu thereof to build a block-house on the river.⁴ There the matter rested for two more years.

In the spring of 1638 the Scottish Covenant was drawn up and signed, and war threatened to break out between the two kingdoms, making it more necessary than ever to strengthen the border fortresses. Once more the abandoned schemes of 1625 and 1636 were revived. At a meeting of the council of war, held on September 10th, it was decided that the

¹ *Letters Patent*, 9 Jas. I. pt. 17.

² *Tynemouth Register*, ed. Couchman, vol. i. p. 235. *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xxi. pp. 85-89.

³ *State Papers, Domestic*, Charles I. vol. cccxli. No. 65. ⁴ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1635-1636, p. 555.

fort of Tynemouth should be 'sighted,' and a fort made half a mile from the same.¹ Only the first half of this design was executed. Sir Jacob Astley, who was sent to secure the north, had his time too well occupied in putting Newcastle into a state of defence, and the erection of a 'sconce' at North Shields,² as being of minor importance, was again postponed. On the other hand the ordnance, carriages and furniture belonging to Tynemouth castle were handed over to the earl of Newport, master of the ordnance.³ It was at first intended that this artillery should be sent up to the Tower of London, but, upon representations made of the defenceless state of Newcastle, Astley was allowed to transfer the guns and military stores to that town.⁴ He informed Secretary Windebank:

As concerning this place (Newcastle), which will be the centre of the war, here must be a train of artillery. I have sent for the brass pieces in the cellar at Tynemouth to be brought here, according to the Lords' order, being six, shooting a bullet of six in the pound and three of three in the pound, and have already bespoken timber and workmen to mount them on carriages. Here are already six iron pieces, shooting a bullet of nine in the pound.⁵

The cannon arrived a few days later, and were mounted on carriages for use in the field.⁶ Astley had previously visited Tynemouth in the company of some of the aldermen of Newcastle, but found that there was no means of fortifying it against a siege,⁷ so the place was vacated and the haven left unguarded.

Astley's prediction that Newcastle would be the centre of the war seemed at first to be unwarranted. The first Bishops' War came to an end without the Scots having crossed the Tweed, but the campaign of 1640 had a different conclusion. On Friday, August 28th, 1640, the rout of Newburn opened the passage of the Tyne to Leslie's Scottish force. Next day Conway, the royalist general, hurriedly evacuated Newcastle, which was entered by Leslie on Sunday. A detachment of the invading army was at once despatched to Tynemouth to occupy that deserted position, and establish communication with Scotland by sea.⁸ So long as they held the port of Tyne the Scots had the northern coal-trade at their mercy, and by that means could exert pressure upon the English government. Tynemouth was re-fortified and supplied with good ordnance.⁹ By an order

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1638-1639, pp. 9, 404.

² *Ibid.* p. 176.

³ *Ibid.* pp. 15, 20.

⁴ *Ibid.* pp. 28, 386.

⁵ *Ibid.* p. 436.

⁶ *Ibid.* pp. 458, 512.

⁷ *Ibid.* p. 349.

⁸ Clarendon, *State Papers*, vol. ii. p. 98. *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1640-1641, p. 28.

⁹ *Ibid.* p. 148. *Diary of John Rous*, Camden Soc. p. 98.

of the committee of estates, dated September 15th, Hugh, Lord Montgomery, was appointed to 'lodge in the castell of Tinmonthe, and to keep watche therein and doe all dewty requisite. Item, to caus assist the searchear there, and to appoint twentie four or moe musquetiers to wait upon him for arresting the ships who will not doe dewty. It is appointed that his lordship sall have two keills and a whery to wait upon his regiment at all ocasioness, and to be at all places where he sall appoint.'¹

Negotiations followed. A treaty was drawn up at Ripon, ratified on August 7th, 1641, and on the 21st the Scottish army evacuated their positions and returned home. Ten months later, on June 20th, 1642, William Cavendish, marquis of Newcastle, received the royal command to take upon himself the government of Newcastle-upon-Tyne and the four northern counties. He at once went to Newcastle and started to fortify that town and to secure the haven. Sir John Marley, in a memorandum of military proceedings in the north between 1641 and 1645, has given the following account of the visit made by the marquis to Tynemouth :

My lord [of Newcastle] ridd downe to Tynemouth castle, and took soome horse and foot with him ; but the puritans had possessed his soldiers with a fear that my lord carryed them that way to shipp them for Ireland or soome other place, which made they ready to mutynie and refuse to goe, but with good words and persuasions they weare appeased. When my lord came to the castle he found it exceding ruianous, and none in it but one Captain Fenwick² and his famylie, who was willing that the castle should be at my lord's commaund ; but, it being then of no valewe untill it weare repared and fortified, which could not sodainely be doone, my lord for the present caused make soom little forts uppon the river on both sides, to kepe the seamen in subjection, least he might receive soome prejudice by them.³

The little forts upon the river were situated, the one near the Low Light house at North Shields, the other upon the opposite shore. Together they commanded the narrow entrance of the river. They were built of baskets filled with sand and mortar, with guns placed between the baskets.⁴ Troops were raised by the marquis, and three companies were sent to Tynemouth. Marley tells that he had been promised the command of that fortress as well as of Newcastle, but now

¹ *Earl of Eglinton's MSS.* Hist. MSS. Com. 10th report, appendix, pt. i. p. 36.

² Henry Fenwick was captain of the castle under Sir John Fenwick in 1634, and the baptisms of several of his children are recorded in the *Tynemouth Register*, 1634-1636. He was now given a command in the army by the marquis of Newcastle, and was slain in Yorkshire, leaving a widow who was living in 1656. *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1656-1657, p. 196.

³ Bodleian Library, Clarendon Papers, No. 2064.

⁴ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 331, note.

My lord, being much intreated and perswaded by frends, told me he must nowe make Sir Thomas Riddell, junior,¹ governor of Tynemouth castle. I must confess I was not well pleased, but, after soome debate, rather then disturbe the service, I yealded the power, which afterwards, I think, proved not much to my lord's content nor to the advance of his majesty's service, but I am sure much to my prejudice.²

The puritan party in Newcastle was thoroughly alarmed. One of its members informed the House of Commons :

We fear a storm and we see it already begun. The earl of Newcastle came here on Friday last, to be governor of Newcastle. . . . Three hundred soldiers is sent down to Tynmouth castle to guard it, and they have all arms given them out of the magazine here in this town. There is great guns going down to them, six pieces. They are casting up trenches as fast as may be. There is a fort making at the haven mouth, that no ships can go in or out without their leave. We never lived in the like fear which we now live in. . . . I was down at Sheeles and saw the trenches myself. . . . They have got engineers out of Germany and gunners for the great guns. . . . The earl is making forts at Sheeles, one on each side. There is divers of the great ordnance removed to the keyside to be sent down. There is here an expectation of some directions from Parliament to countermand them ; and, if speedy course were yet taken, it might reduce all that is done.³

Upon receipt of these letters two ships were sent by order of Parliament to guard the mouth of the Tyne, 'to receive and execute from time to time the directions of the Parliament . . . for the preservation of that place, and prevent the inconveniences that might happen by the fort there in building.'⁴ It was represented that by the fortification of the mouth of the Tyne, 'the whole trade of Newcastle, for coal or otherwise, will be subject to be interrupted whensoever his majesty shall please.'⁵ Lords and Commons therefore petitioned the king to forbear all preparations of war, and particularly to remove the forces from Newcastle, Tynemouth, and other places, to which the king replied that 'when he shall be assured that the same necessity and public good which took Hull from him may not put a garrison into Newcastle to keep the same against him, he will remove his from thence and from Tinmouth ; till when, the example of Hull will not out of his memory.'⁶

King and Parliament were already on the verge of civil war. On August 22nd the royal standard was set up at Nottingham. Men, money, horse and ammunition poured into Newcastle from Holland. An ordinance of Lords and Commons was passed on January 14th, 1643, that 'no ship, ships or barks shall from henceforward make any voyage for the fetching of

¹ Of Fenham ; so styled to distinguish him from his father, Sir Thomas Riddell of Gateshead ; was member of parliament for Newcastle in 1640. For biographies of him see *Dict. Nat. Biog.*, and Welford, *Men of Mark* ; and for a pedigree of the Riddell family see vol. iv. of this work, p. 284.

² Clarendon Papers, No. 2064.

³ *Journals of House of Lords*, vol. v. pp. 170, 171.

⁴ *Journals of House of Commons*, vol. ii. p. 598.

⁵ *Lords Journals*, p. 202.

⁶ *Ibid.* pp. 207, 236.

coals or salt from Newcastle, Sunderland, or Blythe, or carrying of corn or other provision of victual, until that town of Newcastle shall be freed of and from the forces there now raised or maintained against the Parliament.'¹ Meanwhile, the fortifications of Tynemouth were repaired, four pieces of heavy artillery were sent down from Newcastle, and Sir Richard Lee's low stone walls, which formed the Spanish battery, were raised by the addition of a brick superstructure furnished with casemates for guns. Three hundred men were 'in worke making a sconce to command all ships that come in



THE SPANISH BATTERY.

and go out,' with the result that 'ship masters refuse to go in, least their ships be stayed, seeing such strange combustion beginning to arise.'² The forts at the Shields were annexed to the governorship of Tynemouth castle. Neighbouring landowners purchased protection for their property by subscribing funds for the maintenance of the garrisons.³

¹ *Lords Journals*, p. 555.

² Terry, *Life and Campaigns of Alexander Leslie*, p. 172, quoting *Lamentable and Sad Newes from the North*.

³ 'April 15th, 1643. Mrs. Barbara Delaval of Seaton Delaval, widow, paid Sir Thomas Riddell, junior, governor of Tynemouth castle, £100 for his majesty's present service for the maintenance of the garrisons of Tynemouth and Shields, for which she is to be protected in her person, goods and estate.' *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xv. p. 219.

On January 19th, 1644, the Scottish army crossed the Tweed into Northumberland, and on February 3rd appeared before Newcastle. Parliamentarians looked for an immediate success. A certain Colonel Curset wrote on the 12th, 'as for the Shields, they are not yet taken, but, being only but houses, they doe expect that it will bee no great matter to take them; they can doe it when they list. The greatest matter next unto the taking of Newcastle town is Tinmouth castle.' The same writer adds in a postscript that he 'is very confident that Newcastle is before this time in the hands of the Scots, and that they are in the town, after which they intend to take the Shields, and so to fall upon Tinmouth castle, without which there is no passage for ships to bring us coals.'¹

Similar optimistic accounts appear in the London papers:

If the Scots are now besieging Tinmouth castle, while some other forces are diverting the enemy from relieving it, it will be an excellent service, for by taking of the said castle, we shall be master of the sea, and be inabled not only to bring in provision by our ships for the army of Scots, but to send out coale and accommodate the city of London with them, which would be a far better way of merchandize then to transport them as the enemy now doth into Holland, whereby to get mony, arms, and other accommodations for the supporting of this unnaturall warre.

And the said castle of Tinmouth being once taken, the towne of Newcastle would never long be able to hold out. There is a report that Colonell Riddel, governour of Tinmouth castle, hath been summoned by the Scots to surrender it to the Parliament of England, and that the said Colonell hath had a parley, and received propositions from them, but I conceive this report to be very uncertaine, and no great credit to be given to it.²

Leslie, now earl of Leven, the commander of the Scottish army, had an initial success in the capture of Shieldfield fort just outside the walls of Newcastle. Though Sir Marmaduke Langdale inflicted a reverse on Leslie's outposts at Corbridge on February 19th, the loss was made good about the same time at Tynemouth. A number of the garrison of that place, variously estimated at fifty and a hundred musketeers, was sent out to burn and destroy corn in the enemy's quarters.³ The party met with twenty-five Scottish horsemen, commanded by one Montgomery, major to the earl of Eglinton, lost several of their number and had forty-five or fifty taken prisoners. Leven kept two of the prisoners and sent the remainder to

¹ Richardson, *Reprints*, vol. ii.; *A True Relation of the Scots taking of Cocket Island*, pp. 11-13.

² *The Weekly Account*, February 29th to March 6th, 1644.

³ In a schedule of his losses, drawn up in 1651, Ralph Gardner of Chirton stated that the king's party burnt fifteen ricks of corn and eighty loads of hay belonging to him. Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

Newcastle. The marquis of Newcastle, who had thrown himself into the town the day before the arrival of the Scots, thanked Leven for his civility and said that he hoped very shortly to pay the debt with interest.¹

Heavy artillery had been despatched from Scotland and landed on the 6th at Blyth, but the Scots were not prepared to commence a lengthy siege, so on the 22nd they retired, marched up the Tyne, crossed into Durham, and on March 16th appeared before South Shields. Two assaults were delivered, but the fort and Tynemouth castle 'played hotly' on the attackers. They fell back, renewed the attempt on the 20th, and this time met with success, the garrison escaping across the Tyne to Tynemouth.² This event and some operations round Hilton closed the first act of the northern campaign of 1644. The Scots followed the marquis of Newcastle into Yorkshire, leaving garrisons at Morpeth and South Shields, and the centre of interest shifted.

In May the royalists at Newcastle were joined by the marquis of Montrose. Morpeth and South Shields were captured with his help, but the latter place was regained shortly afterwards by the Scots stationed at Sunderland. Even so, the north remained in the hands of the king's party. Upon June 10th, therefore, instructions were issued by the Scottish parliament to the earl of Callander to lead a second army into England. 'You shall,' the order ran, 'be all meanes endeavor to reduce and secure the towne of Newcastell, castell of Tynemouth, and all other places possessed by the enemy.'³ After reducing Morpeth, Hartlepool and Stockton, Callander advanced on July 27th to Gateshead. The victory of Marston Moor and the capitulation of York enabled Leven to join him on August 15th, and the siege of Newcastle commenced.

Tynemouth also was closely blockaded. 'There is no hope of supply from Tynemouth,' a London news-letter announced, 'for all passages and intercourses between the town (of Newcastle) and it are cut off.'⁴ Though in the latter part of September two successful sorties of the royalists in Newcastle caused a temporary withdrawal on the part of its besiegers,⁵ Tynemouth did not long remain free. Early in October the Scots attacked

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1644, p. 42. Richardson, *Reprints*, vol. ii.; *A Faithfull Relation of the late Occurrences and Proceedings of the Scottish Army*, p. 11. Terry, *Life of Alexander Leslie*, p. 192.

² *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. i. p. 213.

³ *Acts of the Parliament of Scotland*, pt. i. vol. vi. p. 112.

⁴ *Diary or Exact Journal*, September 5th to 13th.

⁵ *Mercurius Aulicus*, September 28th to October 5th.

the Low Lights fort at North Shields, carried it by assault, lost it, and recovered it on the same day.¹ Nine Scottish soldiers were killed on this occasion. Five pieces of ordnance, arms, powder, and some prisoners were taken in the fort.² Newcastle itself fell on October 19th, its governor surrendering at discretion two days later. Leven was now able to turn his whole attention to Tynemouth.

A letter from Sir Thomas Riddell to Sir Thomas Glenham, governor of Carlisle, had lately been intercepted, and from it the Scots learned that plague was working havoc with the Tynemouth garrison. Eight of the soldiers had died in one week; sixty more were infected; the chief surgeon was dangerously ill.³ It was said that the chief commanders had already fled.⁴ Leven now sent his troops to Tynemouth,⁵ whither he came in person on the 27th. But plague was more effectually reducing the garrison than the Scottish artillery could have done. 'Though we cannot reach them in that high hill,' a letter-writer of the time reflected, 'yet God can, you see; and indeed it is very wonderful to observe how wonderfully God hath wrought for us in these troubles, without and beyond the help of man.'⁶

There was a short parley. Leven offered easy conditions which were readily accepted. These were as follows:

1.—That every officer, soldier, gentleman and clergyman shall march out with bag and baggage and the officers with their arms; and that such goods as properly belong to them, but which they cannot take with them, shall be kept for them till fit opportunity.

2.—That the National Covenant shall not be enforced either upon officer, soldier, gentleman or clergyman.

3.—That all who stay in their own country shall have protection for their persons and estates, and such as will go to his majesty shall have free pass with a safe convoy.

4.—Oblivion for all things past in this service to be extended to officers, soldiers and gentlemen who will stay at home in their own houses.

5.—That Sir Thomas Riddell shall deliver up the castle this day with a perfect list of all arms, ammunition, cannon and furniture.

6.—It is always provided that those who stay at home and have protection for their persons and estates shall be liable to all ordinances of parliament.⁷

Late that evening the castle was delivered up to Leven, who put his own soldiers in it,⁸ constituting himself governor. 'The royalists were glad

¹ *Arch. Acl.* 2nd series, vol. xxi. p. 200, quoting *Country Messenger*, October 4th to 11th.

² Wallis, *History of Northumberland*, vol. ii. p. 255.

³ Richardson, *Reprints*, vol. iv.; *A True Relation of the Taking of Newcastle*, p. 34.

⁴ *Ibid.*

⁵ *Weekly Account*, October 23rd to 31st.

⁶ *Arch. Acl.* 2nd series, vol. xv. p. 219, quoting *Perfect Occurrences*, No. 11.

⁷ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1645-1647, p. 206.

⁸ *Ibid.* 1644-1645, p. 74.

to yield,' said the historian of the siege of Newcastle, 'the pestilence having been five weeks amongst them with a great mortality.'¹ A schedule taken of the arms found in the castle showed a supply of twenty-nine pieces of ordnance, fifty barrels of powder, five hundred muskets, ball and match.² News of the victory reached London on November 4th.³ The next day had been appointed a day of thanksgiving for the victories of Newbury and Donnington castle. Tynemouth was now added to the number of successes, and the preacher at St. Margaret's, Westminster, received orders from the House of Commons to take notice of it in his sermon.⁴

Riddell might have been less ready to yield had he known that two days before his surrender a resolution had passed the House of Commons that he was to expect no pardon.⁵ On November 19th an order was issued that he and his brother, Sir William Riddell, who had taken part with him in defending Tynemouth castle, should be sent up to London.⁶ Sir Thomas managed to escape in a fishing boat from Berwick, and reached Antwerp, where he died in 1652.⁷ Sir William Riddell, less fortunate, was committed to the Tower.⁸ Representations were made by Prince Rupert that the imprisonment was a violation of the articles of surrender,⁹ but the House of Commons insisted on their right to detain their prisoner.¹⁰ The remainder of the garrison were allowed to scatter themselves over the country, carrying with them the plague, which made its way into Scotland.¹¹

'Now,' was the comment made on the news of the capture of Tynemouth, 'we shall have firing at a reasonable rate.'¹² Trade revived with the rescinding of the order which had prohibited intercourse with Newcastle,¹³ and the price of coals sank in the London market. The Civil War was at an end in the north; the Scots were free to join the English Parliamentary troops.

¹ Lithgow, *Siege of Newcastle*, Newcastle Typographical Society, p. 41.

² *Weekly Account*, October 31st to November 6th. The *Perfect Diurnal*, No. 67, puts the number of pieces of ordnance at thirty-eight.

³ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1644-1645, p. 94.

⁴ *Journals of the House of Commons*, vol. iii. p. 687.

⁵ *Ibid.* p. 676.

⁶ *Ibid.* p. 700.

⁷ Surtees, *Durham*, vol. ii. p. 127.

⁸ *Journals of the House of Commons*, vol. iii. p. 723.

⁹ *Duke of Portland's MSS. Hist. MSS. Com.* vol. i. p. 206.

¹⁰ *Commons Journals*, vol. iv. p. 131. The reason given was 'that since the reddition of Newcastle there have been meetings of dangerous persons and malignants, wearing their arms, whereof Sir William Riddell was one, and that he is a known recusant, and so ought to be liable to the laws of this kingdom.'

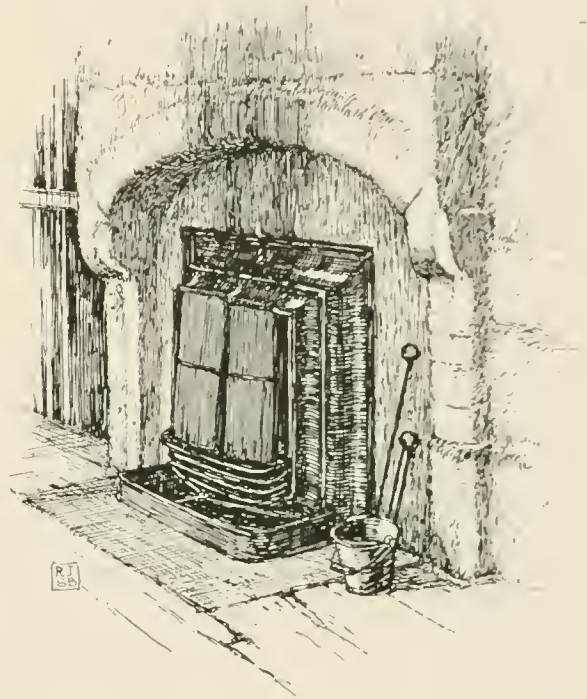
¹¹ Lithgow, *Siege of Newcastle*, p. 41.

¹² *Weekly Account*, October 31st to November 6th.

¹³ *Commons Journals*, vol. iii. p. 694.

With the capture of Newcastle the Scots had obtained a foothold in the north from which they did not intend to be dislodged, for its occupation allowed them to treat advantageously with both political parties, and to assist those who most favoured the Presbyterian order of government. They refused to accede to the thrice-repeated request of the English commissioners that their garrisons in Warkworth, Tynemouth, Newcastle, Hartlepool, Stockton, and Thirlwall should be removed.¹ Instead they began negotiating with the king, who, on May 13th, 1646, entered Newcastle.

Attended by the earls of Lothian and Dumfermline and others, with twenty-four captains to wait on him, the king went on the 21st in a barge to Shields and dined with the governor of Tynemouth castle.² He had a cold reception. 'The most solemnity of his entertainment were three pieces of ordnance fired at the castle, and some fired by the collier ships that rode in the harbour both as his majesty went and returned.'³ Later news was more disquieting to the parliamentarians. The governor of Tynemouth had delivered up the keys of his castle to the king.⁴ A cornet, John Carruth, testified on June 5th :



FIREPLACE IN THE GREAT ROOM OF THE GATE-HOUSE.

At Monkseaton I met with a party coming from Scotland to recruit the garrison of Tynemouth castle. I asked the officers what news in Scotland, who answered that in Scotland they were levying the sixth man. I replied, 'I hope we shall have peace, and then what will be done with those men?' They answered they were to be for his majesty's service, and at his command whenever he would command them.⁵

Again, on September 2nd, the king visited Tynemouth, dined at the castle, and was 'entertained there very gallantly' in 'the great room, richly

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1645-1647, pp. 16, 200, 226.

² *Arch. Ael.* vol. xxi. p. 116, citing *Moderate Intelligencer*, No. 64.

³ *Ibid.* quoting *Kingdom's Weekly Intelligencer*, June 16th to 23rd.

⁴ *Perfect Occurrences*, July 3rd to 10th.

⁵ *Duke of Portland's MSS.* vol. i. p. 360.

hung.’¹ During the remainder of the month he was occupied in conference with commissioners who had arrived from Scotland. The final failure of these negotiations impressed the Scots with the hopelessness of coming to terms with the king, and they consented to evacuate Newcastle. It was agreed that Newcastle, Gateshead, and Tynemouth should be delivered to the Parliament, with all arms and ammunition there.² On December 11th, Major-General Skippon was approved of by the House of Commons to be governor of those places,³ an appointment to which a condition was added in the House of Lords: ‘Provided that this ordinance, nor anything therein contained, shall no way prejudice the earl of Northumberland’s right, title, or interest unto the castle of Tynmouth.’⁴

King Charles had no wish to be left in England after the departure of the Scots, and made his own arrangements for escape. A Dutch man-of-war, sent by his son-in-law, the Prince of Orange, appeared off the Tyne in November. Its captain was met at Tynemouth by persons in the king’s suite, who all were feasted by the governor of the castle, when ‘they drank healths to the king and all his friends.’⁵ There seemed likelihood of the castle turning royalist. A Newcastle letter of December 14th reported :

There are many cavaliers of especiall quality, both captaines, lieutenants and ensignes, latley taken into Tynmouth, and all in capacity of common souldiers; such is the people’s feares, that they think this to purport some new designe. They give out harsh speeches, as that those northern parts, in particular Tynmouth and Newcastle, must once more be in their hands; and, saith the letter, is like to be if not timely prevented.⁶

Escape was planned for Christmas night. The captain of the Dutch ship was prepared to leave the river in face of any opposition which might come from the guns of Tynemouth castle. The ship waited in vain. Charles had failed to make his way out of Newcastle.

Skippon was already on his way north. He reached Newcastle on January 30th, 1647, the Scottish rearguard quitting the town the same afternoon. On the following day he informed the Speaker of the House of Lords:

¹ *Arch. Ael.* vol. xxi. p. 123, quoting *Perfect Occurrences*, September 4th to 11th.

² *Commons Journals*, vol. v. p. 2.

³ *Ibid.* p. 10.

⁴ *Ibid.* p. 22.

⁵ *Arch. Ael.* vol. xxi. p. 133, quoting *Diutinus Britannicus*, November 25th to December 2nd.

⁶ *Ibid.* p. 134, quoting *Moderate Intelligencer*, December 10th to 17th.

I have received an express from him whom I commanded to receive the castle of Tynmouth that the same was fairly and quietly delivered into our possession about six of the clock last night; and I doubt not, through the blessing of God, but that, as things have happily succeeded hitherto between our brethren and us, so there will be such an issue of the same as will be to the good of both kingdoms.¹

Parliament resolved, on March 1st, that a garrison of three hundred foot should be kept in Tynemouth castle and its outworks.² At the end of the month Skippon was called up to London and ordered to depute one in his place to take charge of Tynemouth and Newcastle.³

Parliament was face to face with a discontented and ill-paid army. The soldiers of Skippon's regiment shared in the general feeling, when free from the moderating influence of their general. John Cosyn, a Puritan alderman of Newcastle, writing on June 7th, said of them: 'As yet they come not to doe anything vissible, but certainly as soone as they receive the word, they will secure this towne and the castle of Tynmouth in a moment. For my part I looke for it every day.'⁴

One of the first acts of the House of Commons, when purged of its leading Presbyterian members, was to order one month's pay upon account to the forces at Newcastle and Tynemouth.⁵

Later in the year, Sir Arthur Hesilrige, a staunch Independent, was nominated by Lord Fairfax to be governor of the two northern garrisons, his appointment being ratified by the Commons on December 30th, when thanks were voted to Skippon for his services in that quarter.⁶ Hesilrige had two regiments of foot at Newcastle, from which he drew four companies to garrison Tynemouth. On March 21st, 1648, certain sums of money were allotted by Parliament to be paid over to the mayor of Newcastle for repair of the fortifications about the town of Newcastle and the castle of Tynemouth, in such manner as Sir Arthur Hesilrige should direct.⁷ A month later, as the case was urgent, it was resolved that five thousand pounds should be raised and advanced forthwith for this object.⁸

In the same autumn the second Civil War broke out. Sir Marmaduke Langdale received a commission from the Prince of Wales for recovering the five northern counties for the Royalists. 'I had,' he afterwards narrated, 'intelligence with the governor of Tynemouth castle, who, by means of his majesty's friends in those parts, was persuaded to declare for the king

¹ *Lords Journals*, vol. viii. p. 700.

² *Commons Journals*, vol. v. p. 102.

³ *Ibid.* p. 129.

Clarke Papers, Camden Soc. vol. i. p. 126. Welford, *Men of Mark*, vol. i. p. 630.

⁵ *Commons Journals*, vol. v. p. 215.

⁴ *Ibid.* pp. 410, 411.

⁷ *Ibid.* p. 506.

⁸ *Ibid.* p. 544.

and to accept of a commission from me.'¹ The officer in question was Lieut.-Col. Henry Lilburn, deputy to Hesilrige. His defection was altogether unexpected. 'He was governor of that castle,' Hesilrige said of him, 'before I had command of it. He hath been in the Parliament's service since the beginning of the wars, and under my command near seven years since. He was ever very active and faithful for the Parliament, and known to be a valiant man. He did not give the least suspicion of being a traitor to the Parliament till the day of his revolt.' The story of the loss and recapture is best told in Hesilrige's own words.

Yesterday between 2 and 3 of the clock in the afternoon, Lieut.-Col. Lilburn, being deputy-governor of that castle, commanded most of the officers upon several services out of the castle, and then armed and set at liberty the prisoners, and plucked up the drawbridge, and told the soldiers, that he would pistol every soldier that would not be for himself and King Charles. Whereupon many ran over the works,² and a very honest and faithful corporal, refusing to deliver up his arms to him upon those terms, he thrust him through the body and killed him. And immediately he shot off several pieces of ordnance, declaring that he kept the castle for King Charles, and sent to the Sheels and other adjacent towns, and made proclamation for all that loved him and King Charles to come to the castle for his assistance; and many seamen and others came to him immediately.

So soon as I heard the sad news of his trayterous revolt, I commanded a very considerable body of foot to be drawn out of the regiments in this garrison, under the command of Lieut.-Col. Ashfield, and sent also one hundred dragoons with them. I sent also many ladders down by water and gave orders to storm the castle that night whatsoever hapned.

Between one and two of the clock this morning they drew near to the castle. Lieut.-Col. Lilburn fired four pieces of ordnance upon them as they came up. Major Cobbet led on the forlorn hope. They took no notice at all of the canon, but, when they came within twenty yards of the works, bringing their ladders with them,³ they gave a great shout and fell on. The works are exceeding high, and, though their ladders were long they could not easily get up; the enemy still, as they mounted, with pikes and gunners' ladders pushed them down. Some storming at the gunholes, the enemy were forced to come so high upon the works that our soldiers underneath shot them into the bellies and killed divers of them; but at last ours mounted the works, recovered the castle, and killed many sea-men and others; and, amongst the number that were slain, they found Lieut.-Col. Lilburn.⁴

The castle had been recaptured with the loss of only three wounded and one slain on the side of the attacking party.⁵ Lilburn's head was cut off and set up on the castle, and his property was confiscated.⁶ Hesilrige received a letter of thanks from Parliament for his energy and promptitude.⁷

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1651-1652, p. 388.

² Amongst them was Captain Henry Goodyear (of Auckland in Durham), who carried off eighty soldiers with him to Newcastle and returned to take part in the attack. *Cal. Committee for Advance of Money*, p. 1234.

³ August 21st, 1648. Paid to Captain Rogers, which Lieut.-Col. Ashfield promised the soldiers for carrying ladders to the storming Tynemouth castle, to 33 soldiers, 3s. per man; £4 19s. *State Papers, Domestic*, Commonwealth, Exchequer, Bundle 133.

⁴ Hesilrige's letter, which was printed by order of the House of Commons (*Commons Journals*, vol. v. p. 670), has been republished in *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xv. pp. 221-223.

⁵ Rushworth, *Collections*, pt. iv. vol. ii. p. 1226.

⁶ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1660-1661, p. 250.

⁷ *Ibid.* 1648-1649, p. 244.

'Let this gallantry of Sir Arthur Heslerig and the stormers,' said a pamphleteer of the time, 'never be forgotten. Let London especially remember this, for unlesse so happily regained, no more coles could be expected this year. Treachery was never yet unpunished.'¹

Colonel George Fenwick of Brinkburn was put in command, and four companies of foot were raised to replace Lilburn's soldiers.² The new garrison joined with those of Newcastle, Hartlepool and Holy Island, in a petition presented to Fairfax on November 14th.³ In this they demanded that the king should be speedily called to justice as 'the principal author, contriver, abettor, manager, of all the bloodshed, massacries, devastations, and whatsoever ruines have befallen not only this kingdom but also that of Ireland.' 'All endeavours,' they affirmed, 'for the bringing of other instruments and incendiaries to condign punishment, while the grand delinquent is untouched, are to little purpose, as being not an acceptable sacrifice to the justice of God, to offer him ought else while the Agag is spared.'

Few local records are to be found of the adventurous six years which have just been described in their relation to Tynemouth. During the Scottish occupation Leven held the earl of Northumberland's demesnes and the rent known as 'hall corn' to his own use. The tenants were subjected to quartering of troops. Ralph Gardner of Chirton estimated his losses in this respect at eleven hundred pounds, namely, the royalists five hundred, the Scots four hundred, and the parliamentarians two hundred pounds. Those who were coalowners were compelled to provide the garrison with coal free of charge.⁴ As parishioners they were deprived of the use of their church, which fell completely into ruin, and were forced to bury their dead elsewhere.⁵

On February 16th, 1649, Parliament directed the committee of the army to take into consideration the supply of stores for the garrisons of Newcastle, Tynemouth, Berwick and Carlisle, to settle an establishment for those garrisons, and to consider what lands and revenues had formerly

¹ *A Bloody Fight at Tinnmouth Castle*, reprinted in *Proc. Soc. Ant. Newcastle*, 3rd series, vol. ii. pp. 23-25.

² *State Papers, Domestic*, Commonwealth, Exchequer, Bundle 240.

³ Given in Richardson, *Reprints*, vol. ii., as a separate tract.

⁴ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁵ *Tynemouth Churchwardens' Books*. There is a break in the parish register of marriages and burials extending from January, 1644, to May, 1646.

belonged to them.¹ Among other sums allowed to them was a temporary tax of four shillings per chaldron of coal, payable at Newcastle, and other charges both on imported and exported coal, which were imposed for the supply and fortification of the four castles.² A magazine, under the charge of a storekeeper, was established at Tynemouth,³ which also served as a state prison, several Scottish prisoners being sent thither after Worcester fight.⁴ Upon the appointment of Colonel Fenwick in 1649 to the governorship of Berwick, Captain Robert Blunt succeeded to the Tynemouth command. He received two shillings a day out of the five shillings allowed to Hesilrige as governor of Tynemouth and Newcastle. The usual weekly pay of each of the four companies amounted to £31 14s. 8d.⁵

Various efforts were made by royalist refugees to win over the troops at Tynemouth. A certain William Slade was committed to prison in 1650 for endeavouring to draw the officers into disobedience against their commander.⁶ Nicholas Armorer of Belford suggested to Sir Marmaduke Langdale in 1652 a scheme for seizing Newcastle and Tynemouth with the help of the Dutch.⁷ During the war with Holland then in progress, a fleet was stationed off the Tyne for the protection of the coal-traffic, though that did not prevent De Witt making an attempt to raid a fleet of colliers in April, 1653. Owing to a mistake in a signal given, twenty of his best sail ran in under Tynemouth castle and got off again with difficulty, receiving many shot from the English guns.⁸

During the year 1654 a scheme was hatching for a general royalist rising throughout England. Armorer was again active. He wrote to Sir Edward Hyde that he must have £150 for Tynemouth, 'which will put that place in a good and thriving condition.'⁹ A few days later he reported that 'if anything of man be certain, we shall go near to make Tynemouth do what the king desires.'¹⁰

Major Topping, the commander, appears to have been in ignorance of what was passing. But in February, 1655, information with regard to

¹ *Commons Journals*, vol. vi. p. 144.

² *Ibid.* vol. vi. p. 210.

³ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1651-1652, p. 559; 1659-1660, p. 48.

⁴ *Ibid.* 1651-1652, p. 64. They were released by order of the Council of State, October 31st, 1653. *Ibid.* 1653-1654, p. 224.

⁵ *State Papers, Domestic*, Commonwealth, Exchequer, Bundles 133 and 240. In 1659 the pay of the governor of Tynemouth amounted to 4s. per diem. Harleian MSS. No. 6844.

⁶ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1650, p. 90.

⁷ *Cal. Clarendon Papers*, vol. ii. p. 149.

⁸ *Marquis of Ormonde's MSS.* Kilkenny Castle, new series, Hist. MSS. Com. vol. i. p. 288.

⁹ *Cal. Clarendon Papers*, vol. ii. p. 336.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*

the conspiracy came into the hands of Cromwell and his ministers. Writing on March 8th, the very day on which the insurrection was to break out, Topping told Secretary Thurloe, 'Newcastle men will not believe there is any plot.' Several of the Erringtons and other northern gentry were suspected, but 'nothing can be found by them, they are so secret.' The previous evening, the 'Elizabeth' of Newcastle had come from Antwerp into Shields harbour with a lad of nineteen on board, Robert Marley by name, son of Sir John Marley who had been governor of Newcastle during the siege. Topping had him searched, but found no letters on him, 'only an ould peice of paper with some verses writ, and in four places begune the verse with "God damne me".'¹

A wedding party had been fixed for the 8th at Duddo, in the parish of Stannington, and guests were bidden there 'to wash the bridegroom's head.' They came horsed and armed. With Thomas Carnaby as their leader they were to march on Newcastle that night and enter by the Sandgate. Willoughby and Chohnley had undertaken to seize Gateshead; one of the Delavals was to lead three troops in at the Westgate. News that a fleet of three hundred sail had entered the Tyne came to baffle their design, and the party marched away westward.²

A second party of royalists mustered at Morpeth. Colonel Howard, marching from Berwick with three hundred foot, surprised them there. They confessed to having intended to seize Tynemouth castle, whither ten or eleven of their leaders were promptly sent under escort.³ In a letter of the 17th, directed to Thurloe, Topping described the worn-out state of his soldiers :

Wee have 11 contray gentlemen prisoners, who are suspected persons : and I expect more to be sent in this day. Wee have two companyes into this garrison, consisting of 70 men in a company. Yesterday I sent thirty men, comanded by captain Simpson, to secure the castle, untill 130 men, who are on their march from Barwicke, come to secure the towne alsoe. Wee were on the third night's duty before I sent this party away; and indeed this place is as cold, standing into the sea, as any place I ever came to, which causes our soldiers to falle sicke, and will weaken us muche if the centinells go on every third hour, as nowe they doe. Lord's day last a party of the caveleares, about 60, were in armes neere Morpeth, and yesterday captain Lilburne was upon his march to fall upon a party of caveleares, got together at Barnye-castle. All these things considered, I thought it my duty, to request you inform his highness therewith, that, if it seeme good, a greater number of men may be allowed to secure this place, for here was never soe small a number, untill the yeare 52, in all the late warrs. . . . I am unwilling, yet if I doe not make it knowne, it may redound to my shame: we cannot subsist without a constant supply of

¹ *Thurloe's State Papers*, ed. Birch, vol. iii. p. 207.

² *Ibid.* p. 216.

³ *Clarke Papers*, vol. iii. pp. 27, 29. *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1655, p. 409.

money; our soldiers are 16 weeks pay behinde; and it made us poore, because we live upon one another. I have lent the other company out of my own purse 5*ol.*, and we are in as much want as ever. Barwicke and Carlisle can borrow, or provide otherwise; it is not soe with us. I blesse God, we are all contented; and I heare noe inquietnesse; but want of pay hath begott mutinyes, and I feare the worst.¹

Though considerably reduced in 1652, the cost of maintaining a garrison at Tynemouth was heavy, amounting in July, 1655, to £199 5*s.* 4*d.* per month.² By an order dated August 10th of that year, the establishment was further limited to fifty sentinels.³

The failure of the general rising did not put an end to royalist intrigue. Lady Appolonia Hall, who was employed as an agent by the exiles of the Hague, betrayed her trust in 1656, and disclosed further designs on Tynemouth. According to her statement, the castle was to be betrayed to the use of Charles Stuart; Major Towlehurst had had conference with one Marley for that purpose; Mr. Clavering and Adam Shipperdson were to contrive a way from the coal-pits, about two miles distant, underground into the castle, and so to supply the garrison with provisions in the event of its declaring for the king and having to stand a siege.⁴

At the close of 1659 the military and constitutional parties in the Commonwealth came into conflict. Major-General Lambert, after expelling Parliament from Westminster, marched north in November to Newcastle, that town and the two companies then stationed at Tynemouth immediately declaring for him.⁵ The soldiers of the castle assembled in the old church to sign an engagement to stand by Lambert, when part of the building fell in and killed five or six of them.⁶ The accident seemed ominous. November and December passed in fruitless negotiation between Lambert and General Monk, who placed his veteran army upon the Scottish border, ready, when the time came, to enforce parliamentary supremacy by the sword. On New Year's Day, 1660, Monk crossed the Tweed at Coldstream, and Lambert's men at once fell away from their leader, who escaped south.

As soon as the news of Monk's action reached Durham, pistols, swords, bandealers, pikes and muskets were despatched from that castle to Tyne-

¹ *Thurloe's State Papers*, vol. iii. p. 262. ² *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1655, p. 239. ³ *Ibid.* p. 279.

⁴ *Thurloe's State Papers*, vol. v. p. 572. The information was certainly inaccurate; Major Towlehurst was governor of Carlisle and not of Tynemouth.

⁵ *Clarke Papers*, vol. iv. p. 118.

⁶ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 118, quoting *Mercurius Britannicus*, December 23rd, 1659, to January 3rd, 1660.

mouth,¹ but they were not needed, for on the same day (Monday, January 2nd), Major Topping and the officers under him declared for Monk and the Parliament, their example being followed the next day by the rank and file.² Monk meanwhile advanced to Wooler on Monday, and sent forward Colonel Knight, with three troops of horse to Newcastle, which they entered at six o'clock on Tuesday morning. Knight was able to announce that Tynemouth had declared for the Parliament, his letter reaching Monk at Morpeth on Wednesday. The general requested his subordinate to get the soldiers to march out of the castle at once, and he would appoint quarters for them in the country.³ On Thursday, the 5th, Monk was in Newcastle, quitting it on Friday for Durham. Apparently there were rumours that Topping's surrender was insincere, for, on the 6th, Monk received two letters, one from the inhabitants of Newcastle, praying that Tynemouth castle, 'the key of the trade of that place,' might be committed to an approved commander; the other from the soldiers at Tynemouth castle, denying the report that their governor was about to revolt from his obedience to the Parliament.⁴

Monk's march south to London led directly to the restoration of monarchy and the return of Charles II. The position of parties was reversed. Hesilrige was brought to trial with the other regicides and found guilty. Only Monk's interposition, and the fact that he had stood aloof from Lambert at a time when 'his conjunction with him might have hazarded the hope of all,' saved him from the penalty of death.⁵ Algernon, tenth earl of Northumberland, and his son Joscelin, Lord Percy, received a grant of the office of captain of Tynemouth castle;⁶ the post of governor, to which alone real duties were attached, being allotted to Colonel Edward Villiers, nephew of the first duke of Buckingham. Two companies of foot were raised to form a garrison, and the monthly sum of £261 6s. 8d. was appointed to be paid to them.⁷

¹ *Bishop Cosin's Correspondence*, Surt. Soc. No. 55, p. 89. *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1661-1662, p. 271.

² *Duke of Portland's MSS.* Hist. MSS. Com. vol. i. p. 692. Letter of John Topping and others to William Lenthall, January 5th, 1660. This corrects Gumble's statement (*Life of General Monk*, 1671, p. 205) that the soldiers of Tynemouth castle secured the governor and other officers and brought them to the general.

³ *Sir Wm. Fitzherbert's MSS.* Hist. MSS. Com. 13th report, appendix, pt. vi. p. 3. Letter of General Monk to Colonel Knight, January 4th, 1660. Cp. *Clarke Papers*, vol. iv. p. 238.

⁴ *Mr. Leyborne-Popham's MSS.* Hist. MSS. Com. p. 139.

⁵ *Clarke Papers*, vol. iv. p. 302.

⁶ *Pat. Rolls*, January 19th, 1661. *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1660-1661, p. 497.

⁷ *Privy Seal*, January 15th, 12 Chas. II. *Arch. Acl.* 2nd series, vol. xviii. p. 74.

The disbanded forces which lay about Newcastle, the sectarians and the Tyneside merchants who had risen to power during the Commonwealth, furnished elements for future conflagration on which, as William Delaval told a London friend, 'the pulpit blew sparks.'¹ There were rumours in July, 1662, of an intended general rising in the north, and Lord Fauconberg ordered Sir John Marley to have an eye to Tynemouth, for Captain Thomas Love, the deputy-governor there, was keeping the old chaplain and many of the soldiers of the Commonwealth army.² Sporadic risings took place in October, 1663, but were easily suppressed. Captain Leving, one of the rebels, confessed that Love had been tampered with and would betray the place for gain.³

A traveller to Tynemouth, Marmaduke Rawdon of York, has described the castle as he saw it on September 13th, 1664 :

A large and stronge place itt is, situated upon a rock over the sea, att the very mouth of the river Tine. Itt is well fortified, haith very good guns, and a good guard of soldiers that doe constantly keepe itt, of which was then captain a worthy gentleman, captain Guillims, who was of thosse that killed Ascham, Oliver's ambassador in Madrid. Ther is within itt a prettie faire church gon much to decay, but since, I heare, repaired. Itt haith a bowlinge greene and convenient howses for thosse that live theirin. Itt haith a faire watch-tower lately built, where every night all the yeare longe their is a greate coale fire made to be a guide to ships that saile into that port. One Collonel Moyer, a greate sticler in Oliver's time, was here prisner.⁴

Various sums were paid to Colonel Villiers in 1663 for repairs effected on the castle.⁵ In May, 1665, the king requested the citizens of Newcastle to contribute towards the cost of repairing and fortifying the castle, for the security of their town and trade during the war with Holland, and thus to relieve him of an expense not convenient in the great and pressing occasions of the war.⁶ Two hundred pounds was accordingly voted by the Common Council.⁷

There was danger of the Dutch joining hands with the malcontents at home. Sir John Marley informed Clarendon in September that the ill-affected party at Newcastle were high and vigilant. 'If things fall out

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1660-1661, p. 470.

² *Ibid.* 1661-1662, p. 441.

³ *Ibid.* 1663-1664, p. 615. The plot was known under many names, and in Durham was celebrated as the Muggleswick Plot, for an account of which see Surtees, *Durham*, vol. ii. pp. 389-392, and *Depositions from York Castle*, Surt. Soc. No. 40.

⁴ *Life of Marmaduke Rawdon*, Camden Soc. p. 143.

⁵ *Cal. Treasury Books*, 1660-1667, p. 532. *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1663-1664, pp. 100, 146.

⁶ *Ibid.* 1664-1665, p. 384.

⁷ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 119, citing Common Council Books, June 28th, 1665.

otherwise,' he said, 'nothing but a governor and a strong garrison can prevent Newcastle being delivered into the enemy's hands.'¹ A fortnight later it was rumoured that a plot was forming among the garrisons of Berwick and Tynemouth.² 'The fanatics at Shields, where there is a nest of them,' said another letter-writer, 'pray and hope for deliverance by the Dutch and French.'³ As the war proceeded, men's nerves were on the tension. An Ipswich mariner, sailing to the north of Shields, saw 'appearances in the heavens of ships, first one or two, then three or four, which vanished; then the hull of a great ship without masts, and at last a fleet of ships, one of which was a very great ship, with hull, masts, yards, vanes, etc., all discernible;' the apparition was 'much credited, but most among the fanatics.'⁴ Orders were sent to the governors of the seaside forts, including Tynemouth, to have their works repaired and victualled for two months, and to fill up the allotted number of soldiers, in face of a coming invasion.⁵ Meanwhile round about Newcastle 'quakers and other sectaries met often, and in greater numbers than formerly, and little care was taken to hinder them.'⁶

Upon June 12th, 1667, the Dutch sailed up the Medway and burned three men-of-war lying anchored in the river. For a few days England was in a state of panic. 'People are distracted and at their wits' end with the sad news,' Richard Forster wrote from Newcastle: 'the people generally give up the place for lost, and daily apprehend the enemy's landing; they cry that all is lost for want of care.'⁷ Fortunately a battery, recently completed at Tynemouth, gave some protection to the shipping at Shields, and Colonel Villiers and Sir Ralph Delaval got the shipmasters to man six Newcastle shallops and some long boats. Three hundred volunteer horsemen were raised in the county, of whom Villiers remarked that 'they may do good service in frightening an enemy at a distance.'⁸

At the end of the month the earl of Carlisle reached Tynemouth, having been appointed lieutenant-general of all militia forces and of all towns and garrisons in the four northern counties." Thither came also the

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1664-1665, p. 547.

² Hist. MSS. Com. 12th report, appendix, pt. vii. p. 38.

³ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1665-1666, p. 270.

⁴ *Ibid.* 1666-1667, p. 116.

⁵ *Ibid.* p. 583.

⁶ *Ibid.* p. 461.

⁷ *Ibid.* 1667, p. 205.

⁸ *Ibid.* p. 220. The battery is perhaps the half-moon battery, which was to the east of the lord's lodging and is traditionally supposed to have been erected in the civil wars.

⁹ *Ibid.* p. 208.

earl of Ogle, governor of Newcastle, and Lord Widdrington, governor of Berwick, with a volunteer troop of a hundred or a hundred and twenty horse, 'most of them the best gentry in the county.'¹ Four companies of guards marched from Berwick to Tynemouth castle.² Lord Ogle was busy raising a regiment and found no difficulty in getting volunteers. Villiers reported, 'the number could easily have been doubled, that being the best part of England for raising foot.'³ 'Men are so willing,' Forster wrote, 'to serve against a proud insulting enemy like the Dutch.'⁴ On July 1st, the regiment was mustered upon Killingworth moor.⁵ The earl of Carlisle actively proceeded with the defence of the Tyne. Ships were ready to be sunk if needful, and two fireships and other guardships were anchored at the harbour mouth. On July 4th he was able to announce that no attempt by water need be feared.⁶

All at Newcastle were 'mad for peace.'⁷ The news that reached England on July 26th that peace had actually been concluded was received everywhere with enthusiasm.

Joscelin, eleventh earl of Northumberland, dying on May 21st, 1670, the captaincy of Tynemouth castle was granted, by warrant dated June 16th, to Colonel Villiers.⁸ A second warrant, issued on June 28th, abolished the office but continued to Villiers his present fees.⁹

The third Dutch war (1672-1674) provided no such exciting incidents as the second war had done. When it broke out Villiers was appointed lieutenant-governor of Newcastle, with powers to command all ships and seamen in the river, and, if necessary, to sink ships for security.¹⁰ A new fort just completed at Shields, and named after Lord Clifford of Cabal fame, added to the security of the Tyne. The garrison at Tynemouth was temporarily increased to three companies by the addition of a company from Carlisle.¹¹

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1667, p. 242. The officers in Lord Widdrington's troop were: captain, Lord Widdrington; lieutenant, Sir Wm. Blakeston; cornet, Jo. Thornton; quartermaster, Ralph Read. *Ibid.* p. 182.

² *Ibid.* p. 241.

³ *Ibid.* p. 255.

⁴ *Ibid.* p. 289.

⁵ Its officers were: colonel, earl of Ogle; lieutenant-colonel, Edw. Villiers; major, Wm. Strother; captains, earl of Ogle, Edw. Villiers, Wm. Strother, Robt. Delaval, Jo. Strother, Thos. Haggerston, Sir Jo. Swinburne, Roger Widdrington, Jo. Digby, Fr. Sandys; lieutenants, Rob. Anderson, Jo. Price, Lance. Ord, Mich. Whitehead, Rob. Marley, Jo. Grey, Ralph Rutherford, Jo. Forster, Rob. Sutton, Edw. Tourney; ensigns, W. Errington, Rog. Mollineux, Wm. Armorer, Fr. Read, Edw. Widdrington, Lance Errington, Allan Swinborne, Ralph Widdrington, Jo. Walker, Geo. Sandys. *Ibid.* p. 180.

⁶ *Ibid.* p. 266.

⁷ *Ibid.* p. 286.

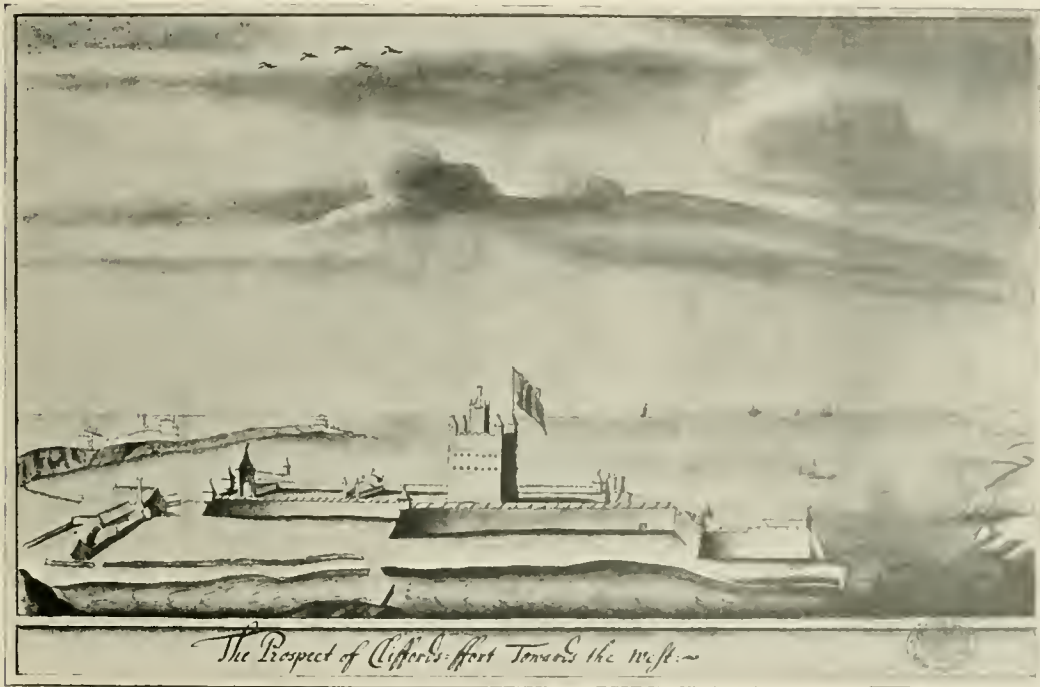
⁸ *Ibid.* 1660-1670, pp. 280, 406.

⁹ *Ibid.* p. 302.

¹⁰ *Ibid.* 1671-1672, p. 252.

¹¹ *Ibid.* 1672, pp. 408, 669.

On May 2nd, 1674, a warrant was issued for a grant to Colonel Villiers, for ninety-nine years at the yearly rent of five shillings, of the ground adjoining to the lighthouse erected by him within the castle, whereon he had built a house at the cost of eleven hundred pounds, the better to enable him and his heirs to maintain the lighthouse in order, and also of the waste ground within the castle, whereon he had begun the rebuilding of an old ruined church, which he had promised to finish at his own charge; with a proviso that he should not by his building prejudice the



CLIFFORD'S FORT, FROM A SKETCH TAKEN ABOUT 1680.

fortifications of the soldiers' quarters.¹ The governor's house, then built, stood on the north-east side of the priory church and was demolished in 1902. Above the gateway were the Villiers arms, *argent on a cross gules five escallops of the field*, and crest, *a lion rampant*, and the date 1676 appeared on the waterspouts.²

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1673-1675, p. 238.

² Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 119, note. The governor's house and lighthouse, as they stood in 1784, are shown in an engraving by Byrne in Hearne's *Pictorial Antiquities*, vol. i. See also *Proc. Soc. Ant. Newcastle*, 2nd series, vol. x. p. 274.

VILLIERS OF TYNEMOUTH CASTLE.

SIR EDWARD VILLIERS, knight, of Brookesby-hall (son of Sir Edward Villiers, half-brother of George, first duke of Buckingham), born 15th April, 1620; governor of Tynemouth castle, 1660-1689; obtained a grant of Tynemouth lighthouse, 13th June, 1665; knighted 7th April, 1680; buried in Westminster Abbey, 2nd July, 1689; will dated 8th May, 1685; proved at the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 8th July, 1689.

= Frances, daughter of Theophilus, earl of Suffolk.

Sir Edward Villiers, knight, son and heir, created Baron Villiers, 20th March, 1690/1, and earl of Jersey, 13th October, 1697.

Barbara, daughter and heir of William Chaffinch, Keeper of the Closet of Charles II.; articles before marriage, 19th and 20th December, 1681.

Henry Villiers, governor of Tynemouth castle 1689-1707, and colonel of foot, acquired his brother Edward's right in Tynemouth lighthouse by purchase, 14th June, 1695; died 11th, buried at Tynemouth priory, 22nd August, 1707, aged 49 (a) (b).

= Ann, to whom administration of her husband's personal estate was granted, 25th April, 1709 (c).

Elizabeth, married George Hamilton, first earl of Orkney.

Catherine, married first, Marquis de Puissars, and second, William Villiers.

Barbara, married John, Viscount Fitz Harding.

Ann, married William, first earl of Portland.

Henrietta, married John, second earl of Breadalbane.

Mary, married William, third earl of Inchequin.

..... wife of Colonel Macdonell (f).

Arabella, daughter of John Rossiter of Sowerby, Lincolnshire; married 13th February, 1726/7 (g); died 13th October, 1733 (c).

= Henry Villiers, lieutenant-governor of Tynemouth, died 29th May, 1753, aged 60, seised of Tynemouth lighthouse; 'happy himself, his family, friends and acquaintances were happy in him' (d).

= Mary Lockey, sister of Thomas Fawk, Lieutenant-General; married 5th February, 1736/7 (g); died 7th January, 1767 (d); will dated 22nd October, 1766.

William, baptised 14th June, 1691 (a).
Edward, baptised 20th July, 1693 (a).
James, baptised 20th July, 1703 (a); buried 26th February, 1703/4 (a).

Mary, baptised 20th May, 1685 (a); buried 13th November, 1688 (a).

Barbara, baptised 12th May, 1686 (a).

Charlotte, baptised 24th June, 1692; buried 19th January, 1703/4 (a).

Catherine, married 17th January, 1726/7, John Craster of Craster (g), and died 1st October, 1772; will dated 30th September, 1772.

(a) *Tynemouth Register*.

(b) Monumental Inscription, Tynemouth Priory.

(c) *Gent's Mag.* 1733, p. 550.

(d) Monumental Inscription, Taplow, Bucks.

(e) Raine, *Test. Dunelm.*

(f) Hist. MSS. Com. 15th Report, appendix, pt. i. p. 124.

(g) *Registers of Christ Church, Newgate Street*; Harl. Soc. *Registers*, vol. xxi.

Though there are other references to the rebuilding of the church at this period,¹ nothing in the existing ruins points to any reconstruction. Tradition has represented Colonel Villiers in a worse light than that of a restorer, for he is said to have pulled down much of the monastic building to erect barracks, the lighthouse, the governor's house and other edifices, and to have stripped off the lead which till then had covered the church.²

¹ Brand, *ibid.* p. 120, note, states that Bishop Cosin was petitioned to grant his licence to pull down the east end of the old church, that a less chapel at the west end might be fitted up for the service of the garrison.

² Grose, *Antiquities of England and Wales*, new edition, vol. iv. p. 151.

Ralph Thoresby, visiting the castle in 1681, found it 'almost ruined and maintained by a slender garrison.'¹ Repairs appear to have been undertaken in the following year.²

On November 5th, 1688, William of Orange landed at Torbay. The close connection between his family and the Stuarts rendered Villiers naturally loyal to the reigning house, and two companies, one of foot, the other of grenadiers, marched south from Tynemouth to oppose the Dutch, but were captured by the earl of Danby at York.³ A few days later, on December 14th, Captain Love wrote to Danby from Tynemouth, informing him of the condition of the castle and garrison, and offering to procure a surrender. Philip Bickerstaffe of Chirton wrote to the same effect, and on the 18th, Henry Villiers, son of Colonel (now Sir Edward) Villiers, informed Danby that there was not a Roman Catholic in the garrison, that they were for protecting the Protestant religion and for a free parliament. Next day Tynemouth castle was summoned and surrendered. Carlisle had surrendered on the 15th and Berwick on the 16th, leaving the king no stronghold in the north.⁴ Tynemouth was temporarily entrusted to the mayor of Newcastle, but the Villiers family were restored to favour upon their submission to William III. Sir Edward Villiers died in 1689 and was buried in Westminster abbey, being succeeded as governor by his second son, Henry. The connection of the Villiers family with the castle lasted for three generations, ending with the death in 1753 of a second Henry Villiers, lieutenant-governor.⁵

The revolution of 1688 set at rest the religious and constitutional questions which had for so long agitated the country. Administration has become centralized, rendering local politics of less national importance; and the later history of Tynemouth castle is of less interest than the century and a half of plot, insurrection and invasion which began with the Pilgrimage of Grace and closed with the 'Glorious Revolution.' Many of the old features have disappeared. In 1784 the gate-house was modernised and nearly all the remaining monastic buildings were destroyed. During

¹ Richardson, *Reprints*, vol. vi., *W'ayfarings of Ralph Thoresby*, p. 15.

² *Earl of Dartmouth's MSS.* Hist. MSS. Com. 11th report, appendix, pt. v. p. 75.

³ *Earl of Lindsey's MSS.* *ibid.* 14th report, appendix, pt. ix. p. 450.

⁴ *Duke of Leeds' MSS.* *ibid.* 11th report, appendix, pt. vii. pp. 28-29.

⁵ Mr. H. A. Adamson has given an account of the Villiers family as governors of Tynemouth castle in *Arch. Ael.* second series, vol. xx. pp. 15-26.

the earlier part of the nineteenth century the floor of the chapter-house was dug up, and the interments within it scattered, to make cellars for a regimental canteen. In 1863 the foundations of the claustral buildings were removed without record taken of their position. Since then the old Spanish battery, the half-moon battery, the governor's house and the lighthouse have given way to the exigencies of military defence, and a trench excavated on the landward side of the castle in 1856 has altered the character of the approach. On the other hand the work of demolition has resulted in the discovery of various Roman and Anglian stones. The ruins were handed over by the War Department in 1904 to the care of His Majesty's Office of Works, as the authority, under the Ancient Monuments Acts, for the care and protection of ancient monuments and historic buildings in Great Britain; and, with the sanction of that office and the permission of the military authorities, careful plans have been made of the medieval gate-house and excavations have laid bare the foundations of the Norman church. Much more may be done towards the elucidation of the history of the castle rock, especially for the pre-Conquest period, if only exact records are kept of fresh discoveries.

CAPTAINS OF TYNEMOUTH CASTLE.

- 1545/6, January 20th. Sir Francis Leeke, knt.
 1549, April 5th. Sir Thomas Hilton of Hilton Castle, knt., died May, 1559.
 1560/1, February 8th. Sir Henry Percy, knt., afterwards eighth earl of Northumberland, died June 21st, 1585.
 1585. Henry, ninth earl of Northumberland, on the death of his father, under terms of grant, dated May 3rd, 1570; died November 5th, 1632.
 1632. Robert Carey, first earl of Monmouth, by grant dated March 2nd, 1611/2; died April 12th, 1639.
 1661/2, January 19th. Algernon, tenth earl of Northumberland, died October 13th, 1668.
 1668. Joscelin, eleventh earl of Northumberland, under the terms of his father's patent; died May 21st, 1670.
 1670, June 16th. Edward Villiers. Office abolished on the 28th of the same month.

GOVERNORS OF TYNEMOUTH CASTLE AND CLIFFORD'S FORT.

1670. Edward (afterwards Sir Edward) Villiers.
 1702, July 2nd. Henry Villiers, his son.
 1707/8, February 20th. Thomas Meredith.
 1714/5, January 11th. Algernon, earl of Hertford, afterwards seventh duke of Somerset.
 1749/50, February 13th. Sir Andrew Agnew of Lochnow, co. Wigtoun, bart.
 1771, August 28th. Hon. Alexander Mackay, afterwards commander-in-chief of the forces in Scotland.
 1778, April 4th. Lord Adam Gordon.
 1796, November 2nd. Charles Raineford.
 1807, May 27th. General David Wemyss, upon whose death, in September, 1839, the office was allowed to lapse.

THE LIGHTHOUSE.

In a letter from the Privy Council to the mayor of Newcastle, dated January 17th, 1581/2, reference is made to 'a certaine order established for the kepinge of a continuall light in the night season at the easte ende of the church of Tinmouthe castle, as in former times had ben, for the more safegarde of such shippes as should passe by that coast.'¹ The light was maintained by Henry, eighth earl of Northumberland (captain of the castle, 1561-1585), with whom the master and mariners of the Trinity House at Newcastle compounded to pay yearly, during the life of the said earl, four pence upon every English ship and twelve pence upon every stranger ship coming within the river. These tolls were collected for the earl at the custom house of Newcastle and went to defray the charges of maintaining the light.² It was a fire made of coals, burnt probably in an open brazier upon the top of one of the two turrets flanking the east end of the presbytery of the priory church.³ It does not seem to have burned continually through the night but to have been lighted every half-tide, when the water in the river had become deep enough for vessels to venture over the flats and shoals which studded the Tyne between its mouth and Newcastle. In 1608 the fire was said to have been established thirty years before, and the tolls were estimated as amounting to forty pounds yearly.⁴

This arrangement continued until 1659, the profits of the light usually going to those who had the charge of the castle; but about Martinmas of that year the stairs leading up to the top of the turret fell down. In the following May representations were made by the master and brethren of the Trinity House at Newcastle of the 'great necessity of having a new light high-placed, either in the east end of the castle wall, or else a new one built upon the ground a little way east from the said castle'; and this was followed up by a petition from many masters of ships using the port of Newcastle.⁵ Consequently, upon September 14th, a warrant was issued to the mayor of Newcastle, the governor of Tyne-

¹ *Acts of the Privy Council*, 1581-1582, p. 306.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ 'Upon an old steeple.' *Trinity House Letter-book*.

⁴ *Land Revenue Misc. Books*, 223, fol. 294. The estimate was low; for example, between Michaelmas, 1604, and Michaelmas, 1605, 1,983 English ships and 346 strangers paid duty, and the profits were therefore £50 7s. Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁵ *Trinity House Letter-book*.

mouth castle, the master of the Trinity House and others, to have the charge of erecting the light. It was only proposed to repair the stair in the turret, and the collector of customs at Newcastle was ordered to pay a hundred pounds towards this.¹

There was delay in executing the work, of which Colonel Villiers, then governor of the castle, took advantage and negotiated with the ship-masters of Newcastle and Sunderland for the raising of the former toll from fourpence to twelpence per ship on every English ship and from one to three shillings on every foreign vessel. This he obtained, as well as a grant from the Crown of the said toll to him and his heirs to hold at a yearly rent of twenty marks,² and then proceeded to build a new lighthouse at the north-east corner of the castle promontory. It was completed before September, 1664. An early painting (Plate XIV.) shows it to have been a stepped tower carrying a conical roof. Like the former light it burned coals. Though complaints were made that the old one was much better, Villiers was probably justified in claiming superiority for his new tower, as it threw out light on both sides and not forward only.³

The new light proved costly. 'Some lights,' to quote Villiers' words, 'are low candle lights. These cost little building and less maintaining; but your high fire lights, where coals burn in cradles, waste coals excessively, and put the owners to great charge in repairing the iron works, insomuch that one of these cost more building and keeping than four others.' Finding that the toll did not pay the interest on the money which he had expended on building the tower, he petitioned the king in 1681 for an alteration of the charge from twelpence per ship to a farthing per ton, arguing that it was fair that ships of great burden should pay proportionably more than smaller craft. His demand met with strong opposition from the Trinity House of Deptford, which offered to repay him his principal expended in the erection of the light and to reimburse him for his past expense in keeping it, and so to maintain the same without any further increase of charge upon navigators. Sir Edward Villiers abandoned his claim but retained the lighthouse.⁴

¹ *Cal. Treasury Books*, 1660-1667, p. 278.

² *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1661-1662, p. 383; 1664-1665, p. 283. Letters Patent, June 30th, 1665.

³ Exchequer Depositions, Easter, 23 Chas. II. No. 32. *Trinity House Letter-book*.

⁴ Bodleian Library, *Rawlinson MSS. A*, vols. 178, 183 and 190. Other correspondence relating to the dispute is to be found among the manuscripts of the Trinity House at Tower Hill, London. *Hist. MSS. Com.* 8th report, appendix i. pp. 257-259.

His grandson, Henry Villiers, attempted in 1728 to obtain a toll of a penny per chaldron of exported coals towards the erection of a new light at Tynemouth, but the construction was held to be unnecessary.¹ Mary Villiers, his widow, devised her freehold estate in the lighthouse to her nephew William Fowke. About 1775 the old tower was taken down and rebuilt. Further alterations were made in 1802, when William Fowke added a copper lantern and substituted for the old coal light an oil lamp with silver-plated reflectors and a revolving machine, obtaining for so doing a further toll of a farthing upon every chaldron of coal exported by river.² By Act of Parliament, August 13th, 1836, the lighthouse was transferred to the London Trinity House, by whom it was purchased from Mr. Fowke's representatives in 1840 for £125,678.³ It was demolished in 1898 (when nearly two hundred carved stones from the priory ruins were found to have been built up into its structure), its further continuance having been rendered unnecessary by the erection of new lighthouses upon St. Mary's Island and Souther Point. There are also lights at the end of the north and south piers in the hands of the Tyne Commissioners.⁴

TYNEMOUTHSHIRE.

THE LIBERTY.

The term 'shire' is capable of several interpretations. Primarily it means an office. In a secondary sense it is used to signify a district 'ashired' or severed for certain purposes from other districts, and, in its usual acceptance, is identical with the county, the unit of royal administration. In Northumberland, however, as in Yorkshire, shires exist within the county. Sometimes the name is applied to a division of the county, namely, a hundred or wapentake, and this is perhaps the origin of Bamburghshire.⁵ It is equally applicable to an outlying portion of a regality, such as Islandshire, Norhamshire and Bedlingtonshire, all formerly portions

¹ *Trinity House Letter-book.*

² 'An Act for improving the Tynmouth Castle Lighthouse and Light, and for authorizing additional Light Duties in respect of such improvement,' 42 Geo. III. cap. 43.

³ 'An Act for vesting Lighthouses, Lights and Sea Marks in the care of Trinity House of Deptford Strand,' 6 and 7 Wm. IV. cap. 79. *Statutes at Large*, vol. lxxvi. pp. 445-474.

⁴ For further particulars see Mr. H. A. Adamson's article on 'The Villiers Family' in *Arch. Ael.*, 2nd series, vol. xx. pp. 15-26.

⁵ See vol. i. p. 1.

of the county palatine of Durham. Finally, a shire may itself be a regality, withdrawn from the sheriff's jurisdiction, having its own court in which justice is administered without reference to the courts of county and hundred. Examples in Northumberland are to be found in the cases of Hexhamshire¹ and Tynemouthshire.

A regality was not necessarily limited to a contiguous area, and the liberty of Tynemouth comprised all the scattered manors and townships held in free alms by the prior and convent. A charter accorded to the monastery by Richard I. in 1189,² while it prefaced a grant of liberties by an enumeration of the temporal possessions of the convent, was worded with sufficient vagueness to allow of the inclusion of later territorial acquisitions within the liberty. It was probably from fear of prejudicing his successors by a limitation of their franchise that, in the course of judicial proceedings taken in 1291, Prior Walden refused to state what townships were included within it.³ In 1381 the following townships had their contributions towards the expenses of the knights of the shire for Northumberland remitted as being in the liberty of the prior of Tynemouth: Tynemouth, Milneton with Shields, Preston, East Chirton, Middle Chirton, West Chirton, Flatworth, Murton, Whitley, Monkseaton, Earsdon, Backworth, Seghill, Wolsington, Dissington, Elswick, Wylam, Welton, Hartford, Cowpen, Bebside, Hauxley, Amble, Eglingham, Bewick, and Lilburn.⁴ West Denton and Benwell, acquired by the monastery at a later date, came to be included within the liberty.

A theory has been put forward⁵ to account for the origin of the Northumbrian palatinates, which, as far as Tynemouth is concerned, may be taken as representing the probable course of events. 'The regality of the Northumbrian kings,' according to Mr. Page, 'was continued in the person of the earl, who exercised *jura regalia* over all his lands

¹ For an account of the regality of Hexham, see vol. iii. pp. 20-65.

² See p. 67.

³ 'Ut attrahere possit libertati suae terras extra libertatem suam, libertatem predictam elargando et super coronam occupando.' Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. ii. p. lxxvii.

⁴ Wallis, *History of Northumberland*, vol. i. appendix i. A similar list is given in an inquisition held at Tynemouth on May 31st, 1428, before commissioners appointed to levy and collect a subsidy of 6s. 8d. on every knight's fee. Shields and Milneton are, however, omitted in this later list, as is Wolsington; Dissington, Hartford and Lilburn are defined as South Dissington, West Hartford and East Lilburn; and the prior is stated to hold only half the townships of Cowpen and Bebside. *Lay Subsidy Roll*, 13th 4th.

⁵ By Mr. Wm. Page in *Archaeologia*, 2nd series, vol. i. pp. 143-155, 'Some Remarks on the Northumbrian Palatinates and Regalities.' Mr. Hodgson Hinde had already pointed out that all *jura regalia* in Northumberland were in the hands of the earl and not of the king. Hodgson Hinde, *History of Northumberland*, p. 245.

north of the Humber,' and the rights subsequently enjoyed within the liberty of Tynemouth had their origin in this regality. After the resumption of the earldom in 1095, upon Robert de Mowbray's forfeiture, William II. granted to the monks of Tynemouth a court with soc and sac, toll and theam and infangenetheof, to hold as freely and fully as the king himself then held it.¹ In three charters issued in or about 1108, Henry I., with slight verbal differences, confirmed to St. Oswin and to the monks of Tynemouth their court and their customs, 'to hold in as full a manner as ever Earl Robert held the same in my brother's time before he forfeited to him.'²

The fact that later royal charters contain grants of special privileges is not inconsistent with the supposition that in theory all *jura regalia* passed under the charters of William II. and of Henry I., and that the court and customs of Robert de Mowbray contained the potentiality of a fully-developed palatinate. Royal recognition was accorded to established custom; royal charters gave form to the practices which developed independently of them. A charter of Henry I. gave the monks free warren,³ and their men enjoyed exemption from royal tolls in the reign of the same sovereign.⁴ By a charter of King Stephen (1136) they were freed from work on the royal castles in Northumberland.⁵ Two charters of Earl Henry (1147) released their free tenants and villeins from the obligation of the fyrd.⁶ Henry II., by a charter given in 1158, conferred upon the monks immunity from all existing forms of royal taxation.⁷ But the keystone of their liberties lay in a charter which Richard I. accorded to them in 1189.⁸ In this their right was recognised to deal with pleas of the crown, including in that category cases of larceny (infan-

¹ See above, pp. 52-53.

² 'Sicut unquam Robertus comes melius habuit tempore fratris mei antequam ei forisfactus esset,' p. 55 (3). 'Sicut unquam melius habuit Robertus comes tempore fratris mei,' *ibid.* (5). 'Quemadmodum rex Willelmus frater meus dederat eis,' *ibid.* (4). A tradition current at Tynemouth in 1293 derived the customs and liberties of that monastery, not from the charters of William II. and of Henry I., but from an earlier grant made to the monks there by Mowbray before his forfeiture. 'Monachi sancti Albani habuerunt in aqua de Tyne et alibi libertates et consuetudines quas dictus comes habuerunt, ex quo in dono quod dictis monachis donaverat, nihil sibi retinuit, et super hoc, ut dicitur, cartam eis fecerat.' *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 77 b. Whichever view is correct, whether the creation of the liberty occurred before or after Mowbray forfeited his earldom, the rights afterwards exercised by the prior and convent were those which had previously belonged to the earl. The Tynemouth tradition implies that Mowbray had the right of creating regalities within his earldom.

³ *Ibid.* (16). ⁴ See above, p. 58, note 2 (5). ⁵ *Ibid.* (4). ⁶ See above, p. 59, note 2 (5) and (8).

⁷ See above, p. 62, note (1). 'Quieta et soluta de omni geldo et scoto et adjutorio, et ab omnibus consuetudinibus et operibus et auxiliis et aliis querelis.'

⁸ See above, p. 67.

genetheof and uthfangenetheof), breach of the peace (grith-breche), burglary (ham-soen), murder (murdrum), premeditated assault (forstal),¹ and outlawry (flymena-frith). Yet more important was the complete exclusion from the liberty of the sheriff and of the royal justices. 'We will that no man,' the charter runs, 'either French or English, in any way have to do with their lands or with their men, but only they themselves and their officers to whom they will give commission. . . . We forbid the placing of any officer in their lands or houses contrary to their will and assent, either in our time or in the time of our successors, by direction of any prince or justice, upon any occasion whatsoever.'

Before the close of the thirteenth century the prior of Tynemouth had come into the possession of an extensive franchise, based in part upon royal charters and in part upon prescriptive right. He had the 'return of writs.' All pleas of the crown, as well as common pleas touching his men or lands and tenements within the liberty, were heard in the prior's court² and before his own justices, to whom he granted commissions of assize, oyer and terminer, and gaol delivery. On the other hand the supremacy of the Crown was marked by the customs of craving court and petitioning for pleas of the crown. When a civil action came before the royal courts and cognizance of the plea lay with the prior, the bailiff of the liberty appeared before the king's justices and asked leave to transfer the plea to the prior's court. When the royal justices itinerant came to hold assize in Northumberland, the prior or his bailiff met them 'at the well called Chille at the head of Gateshead' if they came from Durham, or at Fourstones if they came from Cumberland, and requested to have his liberties. On this being granted, he asked for a copy of the articles of the eyre for execution within the franchise, and the prior then issued a similar commission to two of his justices, to whom the justices itinerant assigned a third.³ An assize was then held by the three within the liberty, the usual place for it being the field of Elswick, outside the walls of the

¹ In 1291 Prior Walden based on this grant of forstal the right of forstalling the market of Newcastle by the purchase of goods bound for that market at his own port of Shields. The king's advocate gave the true interpretation of the term. 'Hoc verbum *forstallum* interpretari debet et intelligi ad impediendum aliquem vel insultandum in regia strata, et non alio modo, sicut praedictus prior illud intelligit.' *Rotuli Parliamentarii*, Record Com. vol. i. p. 28.

² *Three Northumbrian Assize Rolls*, Surt. Soc. No. 88, p. 54. Cp. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 51 b and 58 b; 'Consuetudo antiqua fuit quod nullus viscinus portaret aliquod breve regis ad implacitandum viscinum suum, nisi prius breve directum priori ad placitandum in curia sua propria.' The practice was already obsolete at the date of this entry (late fourteenth century).

³ *Registrum Palatinum Dunelmense*, vol. iii. pp. 49-50.

preaching friars of Newcastle.¹ Appeal lay from the prior's court to the king, and, if it was found that a miscarriage of justice had occurred, the case was brought up to the royal courts by a writ of *certiorari*.² A consideration of the special forest jurisdiction exercised by the lords of the liberty is reserved for the account of Bewick township.

Besides a regular staff of justices, the prior had his own coroner. He had at Tynemouth a prison,³ gallows, tumbrel, and pillory, and a gallows and tumbrel at Bewick.⁴ He held an assize of bread and ale, and punished by fine or pillory for breach of the assize.⁵ The royal casualties of waif, estray, treasure trove and wreck of the sea were his, as well as all mines of coal within the liberty, except perhaps the mines under freehold land. He had free warren. The profits of jurisdiction went to him, namely the fines and amercements of his men,⁶ deodands, and the goods of murderers and felons.

The right of sanctuary was another important privilege possessed by the priory from an early date. Tynemouth had its *grith* or special peace, of which the boundaries, marked by crosses where roads intersected them, probably extended a mile around the priory,⁷ and it is not impossible that the Monk's Stone near the junction of the roads leading from Tynemouth to Whitley and to Monkseaton, is a memorial cross removed from the Anglian cemetery to serve in post-Conquest times as a grith-

¹ The following two rubrics from the Assize Rolls illustrate the procedure: 'Assisa capta extra muros fratrum predicatorum apud Novum Castrum super Tynam infra libertatem prioris de Tynemuth, die martis proxima post festum apostolorum Petri et Pauli, anno regni regis Edwardi sexto, coram Johanne de Reygar et Willelmo de Northbury, justiciariis assignatis, et Willelmo de Middleton quem sibi associaverunt.' Roll 1239, m. 14 d. 'Placita de juratis et assis apud Elstewyk in crastino Epiphanie, anno regni regis Edwardi undecimo, coram Johanne de Farneakers et Radulfo de Essenden, justiciariis domini prioris de Tynemuth, et Roberto Bertram assignato per dominum regem.' Roll 1254, m. 7.

² For an instance of this in 1284 see *Abbreviatio Placitorum*, Record Com. p. 276.

³ (Prior) dicit quod sicut prisona domini regis Novi Castri super Tynam hucusque deliberata extitit per breve domini regis et ejus justiciarios, ita prisonam suam de Tynemue hucusque deliberari fecit sine breve regis per justiciarios et coronatores suos quos idem prior ad hoc constituit. Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. ii. p. lxxiv.

⁴ *Placita de quo warranto*, Record Com. p. 593; Hodgson, *Northumberland*, part iii. vol. i. p. 149.

⁵ Memorandum quod in crastino apostolorum Petri et Pauli, A.D. 1307, frater S[imon], prior de Tynemuth, per consilium amicorum levare fecit in villa de Tynemuth collistrigium, hoc est pillori, eo quod tale judicium pertinet ad assisam panis et cervisie quam dictus prior et predecessores sui habuerunt sicut communiter dicitur a tempore quo non extat memoria, per libertates concessas in cartis regum Angliae; sed tali judicio, hoc est pillori, per suam negligenciam usi non fuerunt usque ad terminum apostolorum Petri et Pauli supradictum. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 191 b. At an assize held in Newcastle in 1279 the jurors presented that the prior of Tynemouth had had a gallows and had kept the assize of bread and ale since the time of Henry I. *Three Northumbrian Assize Rolls*, p. 54.

⁶ Memorandum quod preceptum fuit xvij die Aprilis, anno regis Henrici undecimo, per commune consilium regni, quod abbas de Sancto Albano habeat amerciamenta hominum suorum de Tynemuth. et quod ea de cetero capiat ad scaccarium. *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 97 b. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 207.

⁷ As in the case of Hexham, for which see vol. iii. p. 242.

cross.¹ Suspected or convicted felons who crossed the bounds of the grith escaped the penalties of life and limb. To these the prior gave his protection, as in the case of Thomas de Carliol, for whom the mayor and good men of Newcastle asked permission to live in his hired house at Tynemouth, as he had been guilty of an assault.² A lawless population of grith-men grew up within the limits of sanctuary, whose services were occasionally useful in Scottish wars. In 1342 Edward Baliol was empowered to array the grith-men of Tynemouth and other northern sanctuaries, if they were willing to serve at their own expense upon a pardon being granted to them.³ Occasionally prisoners in Newcastle succeeded in breaking prison and found a safe asylum at Tynemouth, their escape, on at least one occasion, being attributed to the miraculous agency of St. Oswin.⁴

In grave cases, as where a murder had been committed within the liberty, the guilty person might insure himself against loss of life or limb by taking refuge in the priory church, where he confessed to his deed before the coroner and abjured the realm.⁵ A late instance of the use of sanctuary occurred in 1523, when one Robert Lambert, having taken part in the murder of Christopher Ratcliffe at Sherston in Durham, fled to Tynemouth priory for refuge. Cardinal Wolsey, upon that occasion, requested Lord Dacre, warden of the marches, 'by all means and politic ways which ye can devise,' to secure Lambert's apprehension.⁶

The liberty of Tynemouth had its financial as well as its judicial side. The prior and his men enjoyed freedom from tolls and customs,⁷ and by a

¹ In 1294 the abbot of St. Alban's and the prior of Tynemouth were summoned to shew 'quo warranto clamant receptare omnes homines felones venientes infra gritheros de Tynemuth.' *Placita de quo warranto*, p. 593; Hodgson, *Northumberland*, part iii. vol. i. p. 149.

² Viro religioso et discreto ac amico suo, si placet, specialissimo, domino p[ri]ori de T[ynemuthe], sui devoti major et probi homines de Novo Castro, salutem in domino sempiternam, cum omni reverencia et honore. Noverit eminens discrecio vestra quod Thomas de Karl, lator presencium, noster fidelis comburgensis est et laudabiliter inter nos conversatus, cujus famam testamur bonam et probabilem, nisi tantum quod verberavit quendam hominem et inde satisfecit dicto homini, unde amici facti sunt. Quare, propter discrecionem vestram, omni qua possumus affectione attente et devote exoramus quatinus dictum Thomam et suos, si placet, manuteneatis, protegatis et defendatis, non inferentes eidem nec inferri permittentes injuriam, molestiam, dampnum aut gravamen, sed potius ipsum in domo sua conducta in villa vestra de T[ynemuthe] pacifice remanere permittatis; ita quod preces nostras scenciat valituras et vobis et vestris ad codignas teneamus gratiarum acciones. Valete in domino. Bodleian Library, *Digby Codices*, 20, fol. 125 b.

³ *Rotuli Scotiae*, Record Com. vol. i. p. 629.

⁴ *Vita Oswini*, Surt. Soc. No. 6, cap. xlii.

⁵ This practice explains the anonymous monk's panegyric upon St. Oswin (quoted on p. 72), 'cujus munimine muniuntur profugi et exules a propria patria propter homicidia furta vel sediciones contra regem et regni statuta nequiter perpetrata.'

⁶ *Cal. Letters and Papers*, Henry VIII. vol. iii. p. 1299; Hearne, *Otterburn*, vol. ii. p. 579.

⁷ Writ of Henry II. given in 1158: 'Precipio quod omnes res sancti Oswyni et monachorum de Tynemutha, quas homines sui poterunt affidare suas esse proprias, [sint] quiete de theoloneo et passagio et de omni consuetudine.' See p. 62, note (3).

charter of Henry III. they were immune from the murage paid on merchandise brought into walled towns.¹ It has even been asserted that the prior had a mint at Tynemouth.² Sheriffs took nothing from within his liberty. He and his men were exempt from most forms of royal taxation, including danegeld, tallage, and cornage.³ The monks were liable, as clergy, to contribute to all clerical aids and subsidies. Compulsory loans were exacted from them,⁴ and the king's purveyors enforced them to levy supplies and to provide horses and carts for military campaigns.⁵ Otherwise the only taxes paid into the royal exchequer by the men of the shire were lay subsidies. Upon the receipt of the sheriff's writ, officers were elected in the prior's court to carry out the unpopular task of assessment and collection.⁶

Though the prior and convent were released in 1204 from the obligation of paying cornage to the Crown, they continued to collect it from holdings within the liberty. Cornage had ceased to be forensic, it continued to be an intrinsic service. A portion, amounting to £2 5s. 10³/₄d., was paid to the abbot of St. Alban's on the feast of St. Peter and St. Paul, and went by the name of abbot-scoth; 7s. 5³/₄d. was paid at Michaelmas to the prior of Tynemouth. Assuming that these figures, which are given in a document of the fourteenth century,⁷ correspond with the sums paid before 1204,

¹ 'Concedimus quod ipsi et homines eorum per totum regnum et potestatem nostram in perpetuum de muragio sint quieti.' Charter of April 22nd, 1271; Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. ii. appendix, No. lxxxvi.

² Horsley wrote in 1729/30 that he had seen a piece of money coined at Tynemouth, *Inedited Contributions to the History of Northumberland*, p. 23. It is much more probable that what he saw was a token, similar to those engraved in Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 164.

³ See p. 69.

⁴ Rymer, *Foedera*, Record Com. vol. iii. pars i. pp. 116, 132.

⁵ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 214 b. *Rotuli Scotiae*, vol. i. p. 122.

⁶ Edwardus, Dei gratia rex Angliae, etc., vicecomiti Northumbriae, salutem. Cum . . . dilecti et fideles nostri, Johannes de Haulton et Simon de Creppyng, taxatores quintedecime in comitatu predicto, per breve suum ballivis libertatis predictae mandassent quod de comitatu dictae libertatis certos homines ad taxandum bona omnium hominum ejusdem libertatis eligi et eos coram prefatis Johanne et Simone super hoc praestandum venire facerent; ac insuper iidem ballivi averia Walteri Scot de Welteden et Adae de Selby, duorum hominum de libertate predicta ad hoc electorum, pro eo quod coram eis venire et hujusmodi sacramentum facere contempserunt, cepissent prout ad ipsos pertinuit ratione libertatis predictae; dictus Walterus et Adam averia sua, ea ratione capta, sibi per te repligiari maliciose procurarunt, et ipsum priorem et ballivos suos inde implacitant coram te in comitatu tuo, per quod taxatio quintedecime nostre infra libertatem predictam nimiam cepit dilationem, in nostrum dampnum et predicti prioris et libertatis sue prejudicium manifestum; et te nolumus predictum priorem vel ballivos suos occasione districtionis predictae, si pro contemptu predicto et non alia de tum facta sit, per hujusmodi placitum vexari; tibi precipimus quod, si ita est, tunc placito isti nominato supersedeas, et predicto priori averia predictorum Walteri et Adae pro contemptu predictorum capta retournari facias, quousque sacramentum predictum praestiterint, et officium per taxatores predictos eis mihi motum fecerint in hac parte. Teste meipso, etc., 22^{do} Maii, anno quarto [May 22, 1276]. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 215 b.

⁷ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 67, printed by Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 79. Hodgson Hinde (*Northumberland*, p. 261) adduces a similar instance in the barony of Appleby. The origin of this rent has been discussed by Professor Maitland in the *English Historical Review*, vol. v. pp. 625-632. See also Dr. Lapsley's treatment of the subject in *Victoria County History of Durham*, vol. i. p. 272 *et seq.*, and authorities there cited.

when twenty-four shillings was yearly demanded by the Crown, it follows that less than half of the sum exacted from the tenants found its way into the national exchequer. Cornage was imposed alike on free and on customary tenements, but not all the lands held of the prior in any one township were liable to it, and some townships, including those of Eglington, Bewick and Lilburn, paid no cornage. It is not easy to discover the principle of the assessment. Possibly each township was assessed at a certain figure, averaging 3s. 4d., and certain holdings were then made responsible for its payment.

Castle ward was another source of profit. The whole township of West Chirton was paying a quarter of a mark yearly to the monastery for castle ward in 1295,¹ though the monks of Tynemouth made no corresponding contribution to the defence of Newcastle.

Certain military obligations were incumbent upon the prior and his men, but here too the liberty had its privileges. As the lands of the monastery were held in frankalmoin, they were free from the feudal obligations of military service. On the other hand the prior maintained the castle of Tynemouth at his own cost, and so contributed to the work of national defence. His men were not required to go out with the fyrd, except in cases of actual invasion of the earldom.² They were released from work upon Newcastle and other castles in Northumberland (the *burh-bot* of the *trinoda necessitas*) by a charter given to them in 1136 by King Stephen.³ With the use of commissions of array, the liberty lost much of its exceptional character, but its men formed a separate levy under their own commander,⁴ and as such they were present at the battle of Flodden when they 'fled at the first shot of the Scottish guns.'⁵

¹ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 40. Castle ward occurs only as an incident of military tenure, and its payment by West Chirton is accounted for by the fact that the township had been held by military service until 1256, when it was acquired in frankalmoin. Yet the payment continued to be collected. Upon the subject of castle ward see Hodgson Hinde, *Northumberland*, pp. 261-263, and *Arch. Acl.* 1st series, vol. iv. p. 285.

² See above, p. 59, note 2 (5) and (8).

³ See above, p. 58, note (4).

⁴ John de Segrave, tenaunt le lieu nostre seigneur le roi en le parties de North', au baillif de la franchise l'abbe de seynt Alban de Tynemuth, salutz. Pur ceo que nous serroms a Rokesburgh le demeynge proscheyn devant le quaresme, prenant ove tot le poer que nous porroms purchacer auxi bien des parties avant dites com de aillours pur reboter les enemys le roi en Escoce, sicom est acorde entre nous et la dite communalte, vous maundons de par le roi sur quant que vous poetz forfaire, que, veues cestes lettres, facetz eslyre deynz la dite franchise centz hommes a pee et un centener vigrous et defensable, issynt que vous le cietz as ditz joi et a lieu sauntz nul defaute. . . . Et sachez que, si vous n'eietz mesmes le gentz as ditz jour et lieu, vous encurretz que est ordeyne com celuy q'est desobeiteant au roi. Don a Bamburgh, le disme jour de Fev', l'an du regne le roi Edward xxxj [February 10th, 1303/4]. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 214.

⁵ *Cal. Letters and Papers*, Henry VIII. vol. i. p. 687.

Like other seaports, Tynemouth was called upon in time of war to provide its quota of ships to the royal navy. Orders for the impressment of vessels were directed to the bailiff.

The officers of the liberty included a staff of justices, a bailiff and a coroner. The bailiff held a position within the liberty corresponding in almost every respect with that of the sheriff outside it; he was the chief executive officer. By an arrangement uncommon in palatinates the coroner was elected in the free court.¹ A grand jury or standing committee of twelve (*juratores coronae*) existed for the purpose of making presentments in the court of the liberty.² There was a receiver general of rents, and a seneschal who held the manorial courts. The post of seneschal afterwards lost its ministerial character and came, in the later days of the priory, to be an honorary office conferred upon noblemen.³ The castle was under

¹ Willermus Stiward . . . dicit quod est coronator intromittens se de his quae pertinent ad coronam domini regis. . . . Requisitus per quem factus est coronator, dicit quod electus est et factus per ballivum et liberam curiam praedicti prioris et non per breve domini regis. . . . Et dicit quod multotiens exercuit officia coronalia, faciendo visum de hominibus occisis, oppressis, et submersis. Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. ii. p. lxxv.

² In the subsidy roll of 1295 (Lay Subsidies P.R.O. No. 158/1) the jurors of the liberty are given under a separate heading, and their names consequently do not appear under the townships to which they respectively belong. The entry was as follows:

		£	s.	d.		s.	d.
Summa bonorum	Willelmi de Welteden	...	2	7	0	unde regi	4 3 ¹ / ₄
"	Radulphi servientis de Seyton	...	4	13	8	"	8 6 ¹ / ₄
"	Willelmi de Seyton	...	2	11	9	"	4 7 ¹ / ₄
"	Roberti filii Gilberti	...	1	10	4	"	2 9 ¹ / ₄
"	Alani de Hertlaw	...	0	13	3	"	1 2 ¹ / ₄
"	Willelmi clerici de Welteden	...	0	18	0	"	1 7 ¹ / ₄
"	Roberti de Prudhow	...	3	19	4	"	7 2 ¹ / ₄
"	Willelmi de Chirton	...	0	12	8	"	1 1 ¹ / ₄
"	Johannis de Copun	...	0	15	0	"	1 4 ¹ / ₄
"	Willelmi Gray	...	3	2	4	"	5 8
"	Johannis de Wytteley	...	3	15	6	"	6 10 ¹ / ₄
"	Roberti de Chirton	...	2	11	4	"	4 8
Summa hujus duodenae		£27 10s. 2d., unde regi		£2 10 0 ¹ / ₄ d.			

³ As deeds drawn up in the prior's court were often dated simply by the stewardship of the presiding officer, it is as well to give a list of such seneschals as have their names recorded in the *Tynemouth Chartulary*, the *St. Alban's Register*, and early charters:

1256. Hugh le Moyner.	1302. John de Dudden.	1351. William de Heppescotes.
1264. John de Middleton.	1312 (<i>circa</i>). Thomas de Fishburn.	1392. John le Ormford.
1276. Thomas de Clyveden.	1319-1320. Henry de Harden.	1421. William de Mitford.
1291. William de Heslerig.	1325. Thomas de Raynton.	1426-1434. Robert Whelpington.
1294/5. Nicholas le Vigrus.	1333-1344. Robert de Soreys.	1530 (<i>circa</i>). Lord Rochford.

After the dissolution the office of chief steward of the lands of the dissolved monastery and of the courts there was held by Sir Cuthbert Ratcliff; Sir Francis Leeke, January 20th, 1545/6 (Augmentation Office, *Misc. Books*, vol. 236, fol. 121); Sir Thomas Hilton, April 6th, 1549 (*ibid.* vol. 220, fol. 181); Sir Henry Percy, afterwards eighth earl of Northumberland, February 8th, 1561; Henry, ninth earl of Northumberland, on the death of his father in 1585, under terms of patent dated May 3rd, 1570.

The court rolls of the manor give the names of the following persons who have held office since 1685: Thomas Boath, 1685; William Coles, 1707; Thomas Elder and Henry Simon, 1725; Thomas Elder, 1735; James Scott, 1756; Richard Grieve, 1760; Collingwood Forster, 1761; Henry Collingwood Selby, 1775; Jonathan Raine, 1796; Christopher Cookson, 1831; Cresswell Cresswell, 1832; Sir Walter Buchanan Riddell, bart., 1842; Cuthbert Umfreville Laws, 1870; Edward Leadbitter, 1882; William Hall Ryott, 1894. Since 1735 the title of steward has superseded that of seneschal.

the rule of a constable.¹ Chief among the lay officers of the prior's household was the *dapifer* or server, whose duties became a grand serjeantry by which the manor of Seghill was held.

There is some slight evidence for the existence of a council or advisory body, composed partly of the chief tenants, partly of officers of state, in receipt of salaries and liveries from the prior. It was upon the advice of his council that Prior Walden erected a pillory at Tynemouth in 1307.²

In 1291 the liberty of Tynemouth was forfeited to the Crown under the following circumstances.³ At noon on October 29th, 1290, according to the plaintiff's statement, John de Whitley, lord of the manor of Whitley, Gilbert Andre, and William de Cowpen, came to the house of Walter fitz Nicholas in Whitley, broke through the east door of the house with an axe, and concealed themselves in a chamber within till midnight, when they forced open a chest and a strong-box, and took thence two women's cloaks, one green and the other blue, valued at two marcs; two pieces of Rheims tapestry, worth one marc; forty ells of linen cloth worth ten shillings, and two kerchiefs and four sleeves valued at twenty shillings. Next morning, finding his house rifled and the burglars fled, Walter fitz Nicholas, as soon as he was able, raised hue and cry after them, and followed them, until they were caught and attached at his suit. William Stiward, coroner for the liberty, took pledges from fitz Nicholas for his appeal, and, on November 11th, threw the defendants into prison to await their trial.

Late on the 28th of the same month, a letter from the sheriff of Northumberland was given into the hands of the bailiff of the liberty, informing him that next morning William Heron and two other of the king's justices were coming to Tynemouth to hold a gaol delivery, and ordering him to have the prisoners and a jury ready to appear. According to a statement subsequently made by Prior Walden, there was no time to summon the

¹ Anthony Mitford, who held the office of constable at the dissolution, had a fee of £5 yearly. Dugdale, *Monasticon*, vol. iii. p. 308.

² 'Per consilium amicorum'; *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 191 b. The *St. Alban's Register* (fol. 129 b.) gives a list of officers receiving salaries about 1306. 'Isti accipiunt pensiones de Tynemuth per priorem. Thomas de Fisburn, 40s.; Ricardus de Cokeshe, 40s.; Galfridus de Herterpol, 40s.; Johannes de Insula, 100s.; Johannes Gray, robam et . . . ; dominus Walterus de Cambou, 20s.; Johannes de Horton, 20s.; Adam de Benton, robam et . . . '

³ The record of these proceedings is given in the *Coram Rege Rolls*, No. 130, printed by Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. ii. appendix, No. xci. and, with some additional details, in the *St. Alban's Register*, fols. 150 b to 152 b, and the *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 180-183.

jury, but, more probably, the prior and his officers regarded the holding of a gaol delivery by the king's officers as a violation of their privilege. On the following morning the justices came and sat down in the prior's great hall and there read the warrant to the bailiffs, whom they ordered in the king's name to bring their prisoners before them; but the bailiffs replied that the place in which they sat was within the precincts of the church, and that they must not bring any prisoners before them there. Then the justices went to the door of the prison, where the same demand met with the same response. Finally they proceeded to the market cross which stood in the village outside the monastery,¹ and, sitting upon its steps, the justices read their warrant for the third time; whereupon the bailiffs made answer that they had never seen any of the king's justices come there to make delivery of the prior's prison, and that they would not bring any prisoners before them. So Heron and his companions returned without effecting their purpose.

Afterwards, upon January 6th, 1291, William de Heslerig, the prior's seneschal, issued a summons for a court at Preston on the 20th, and made public proclamation that a gaol delivery would be held on that day. The court met, the three prisoners were brought before it, and Walter fitz Nicholas made appeal against them. They pleaded a variation from the original indictment, and asked that this should be read. Steward produced his coroner's roll, which, upon examination, was found to contain the indictment in the form of an inquest, and not of an appeal, and that too was without the twelve attestations necessary to render it valid. The appeal was therefore rejected by the court. The prisoners were then asked how they wished to purge themselves of the charge of robbery and breach of the peace. They replied that they would put themselves on their country and craved a jury; but the bailiffs refused to hold the inquisition at the same court, though there were sufficient suitors there to impanel a jury, and sent the three defendants back to prison, to remain there till the next meeting of the court on the 30th of the month. At that court the bailiffs stated that the appeal had been illegal; no precedent could be adduced for the hearing of appeals in the prior's court without a writ and special order from the king; and John de Whitley was sent back to

¹ A cross is shown at the head of the village street, near the gate-house of the priory, in the plan of Tynemouth castle made in 1545. *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xix. plan facing p. 68.

the prior's prison with his two companions pending the arrival of the justices itinerant at Newcastle upon their next assize, when the case was to be recommenced.

The three were detained in prison for three months, and then were released upon the king's writ. They had suffered such hardships during their confinement that William de Cowpen died on the day after his release. Letters of oyer and terminer were issued by the king at Newcastle on April 25th, directing certain of his justices to hear the appeal. Two days afterwards the justices came to Tynemouth to carry out their commission. Prior Walden met them by claiming his old liberty of jurisdiction. As they were not prepared to decide so large a subject as the legality of the franchise, the whole case was referred to the king and his council at Norham, where proceedings recommenced on May 13th. Walden took his stand on the charter of Richard I.,¹ but could not bring any evidence to show that pleas of the crown or common pleas were heard in his court before 1235. He produced a king's writ given in that year, and several from 1255 onwards, which had been delivered to him by justices of the king's bench, justices of oyer and terminer, and justices in eyre, showing that his court had latterly practised a civil and a criminal jurisdiction. But, as proof of continuity of seisin since 1189 was not forthcoming, the king in council pronounced the liberty claimed by the prior to be not consonant with the law of the realm, and on this ground, and because various illegalities had been committed in the course of the proceedings against John de Whitley, the franchise was, on June 24th, declared to be forfeited and annexed to the Crown.

Though forfeited by the prior, the liberty continued to have an independent existence. Its criminal jurisdiction is illustrated by a record of the pleas of the crown taken by the king's itinerant justices in 1293.²

Pleas of the crown of the liberty of the prior of Tynemouth at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, before H. de Cressingham and his companions, justices itinerant, on the Tuesday next after Ascension Day, in the twenty-first year of the reign of King Edward [May 12th, 1293].

Jurors. Gilbert Andrew, bailiff; Nicholas de Morton, Nicholas Faukes of Backworth, Alan de Hertlawe, electors; John le Clerk of Coupoun, Robert de bracina, Roger de Morton, Richard de Hereford, Peter de Backworth, William Russel, Roger de Tynemuth, Robert Acorne, Hugh de Backworth.

¹ *Requisitus si predictam libertatem clamet alio modo vel per aliud quam per predictam cartam, dicit quod non.*

² *Assize Rolls*, No. 651, m. 23.

From the whole liberty because it does not share in the geldable land,¹ by way of fine for false judgment and other trespass, 20 marks.

These were coroners since the last *iter*: Adam de Pykering, who is dead, William Styward and Roger Mandut, who are alive and make answer. And Adam has no heir or executor to answer for the rolls, for before his death he enfeofed the prior of Tynemouth of his lands and tenements. Order to the sheriff to make the prior appear. The prior came in the person of Nicholas Vigerus, his attorney, and made fine of 40s.

Thomas Bridock and Nicholas Leker were crushed to death in the field of Elswick in a pit which fell in on them; verdict, misfortune. Adam de Pykering, who is dead, has no heir or executor to answer for him on that plaint, for he died destitute. Recourse had to the prior of Tynemouth, the then lord of the liberty.

Agnes, who was wife of Nicholas Belle of Newcastle, was found dead from exhaustion in the field of Elswick. Nicholas Belle, who first found her, did not appear; neither he nor anyone else is suspected; verdict, misfortune. Nicholas was attached by Robert, son of the said Agnes, and Walter de Halywell of Newcastle, who now have him not, therefore fined. The townships of Amble and Hauxley did not come to the inquest, therefore fined.

Richard de Ryton dug for coals in the field of Elswick and the earth fell in on him and crushed him.

An unknown man was found dead in the field of Monkseaton, in a place called Wellepeth. The townships of Hertford, Welton, Eglingham and Cowpen did not present that plaint at the next county court, therefore fined.

Christiana, wife of Laurence the tailor of Tynemouth, was found dead from cold in the field of West Chirton.

William Gut, son of Robert de Roncestre, fell into a pit in Elswick moor and was dashed to pieces.

Roger de Mykeley, wishing to cross the Tyne, was drowned.

An unknown man was found in Wylam wood, killed by malefactors unknown. It was not known who they were or what became of them.

Roger Horlyne and Robert Fundelyng made away for corn stolen from the prior of Tynemouth. Sentenced to exile and outlawry. They have no chattels.

Of wine sold contrary to the assize. They state that Peter Mareys of Bewick sold three jars of wine, Roger de Tynemouth, clerk, six jars, and Richard Prat of Tynemouth three jars, contrary to the assize; therefore fined.

Thomas, servant of William de Hameldon, killed Adam Langthong in the town of Tynemouth in the daytime, and at once after the deed was done he fled to Tynemouth church; and there before Roger Maudut the coroner he confessed the deed and abjured the realm; value of his chattels, five shillings.

John le Flemyng fell out of a boat in the Tyne and was drowned. Misfortune. Price of the boat, two shillings.

Of unjust distrains. They state that the prior of Tynemouth and his bailiffs do not allow the free men of Tynemouth to herd their cattle in the king's highway between Tynemouth and East Chirton, nor between Tynemouth and Tynemouth wind-mill, as they were wont; but whenever they wish to cross there with their cattle, the prior sends his bailiffs to impark the said cattle and detain them till they have made fine for them. And the prior, in the person of his attorney, questioned as to this, says that he never sent his bailiffs to impark the cattle of the free men in the king's highway nor prevented them from herding them there; but he says that there is in that place a certain pasture near the road which is his severalty, of which he found his church seised, and if it happens that their cattle cross the road into the pasture and do damage, then he imparks them as he lawfully may, and not otherwise. And as to this he puts himself on his country. And the jurors state on their oath that the said pasture is the prior's severalty, namely, from Tynemouth to the bridge of the hospital of St. Leonard, and that the prior has not prevented the free men from herding or driving their cattle on the king's highway. Therefore the prior is quit, and the twelve jurors are fined for false presentment.

¹ 'Quare non participat cum geldabili.'

Of lands alienated contrary to the Statute of Mortmain. They state that the prior of Tynemouth acquired an acre of land from Adam le Vacher and one acre of land from William de Wytton since the statute. The sheriff ordered to make the prior appear.

Walter, son of Nicholas de Tynemouth, appealed in the court of the prior of Tynemouth, John de Whitley, Gilbert Andreu, and William de Coupoun who is dead, for robbery, burglary and breaking the king's peace. And the appeal was carried before the king, and there terminated as the jurors testify. And upon this came the aforesaid John and Gilbert and state likewise that the appeal was there terminated and that they were acquitted of it, etc.

The jurors present that William de Chirton of Tynemouth was distrained by the township of Tynemouth of a cow, for eightpence, which he owed towards the charges of the four and of the reeve of Tynemouth coming before the justices at Newcastle. And after the cow was imparked, William took the cow out of the park without licence. Therefore the sheriff is ordered to make him appear. And he comes and denies the whole and says that he did not take the cow out of the park, but that a boy of six years old, to whom the cow had belonged, took it out of the park. Judgment given by jurors against William, who is fined half a mark.

Of those who fish with 'kidell and starkell.' They state that Simon Post of Suthloges, John Scot of the same, John, son of Arnold, Roger Nelle, Liolf, son of John, and Patrick Gobyclif fish with fine-meshed nets in the Tyne in common through the whole year, as well in the close season as in the open. And they catch salmon, contrary to the statute. Order to the sheriff to arrest them. They also state that Patrick de Sheles catches salmon in the Tyne in the close season. Order to the sheriff to arrest him, and to summon Thomas de Milleburn and Robert de Throckelawe, conservators of the said river. And Patrick now says that he has not fished for salmon with fine-meshed nets. The jury find him not guilty, therefore he is quit. Afterwards the sheriff announces that Symon and the others have not been found in his bailiwick, nor have they anything by which they may be attached. The jury bear witness that they have twice contravened the statute. Order to the sheriff to arrest them if they are found in his bailiwick, and to imprison them for three months according to the statute.¹

The jurors present that one Michael de Flaundres killed Geoffrey le Messor of Tynemouth in the daytime with an axe in the field of Tynemouth, and he was at once caught and imprisoned in the prior of Tynemouth's prison, and was guarded there by the township of Tynemouth. And afterwards he escaped from prison and put himself in the priory church, and there, before Adam de Pykering, the coroner, who is dead, he confessed the deed and abjured the realm. He had no chattels. The said township put on its trial for allowing the escape, for they had guard of the prison. And the twelve jurors concealed that felony in their verdict, therefore they are put on their trial.

Of Hugh Gobyon, sheriff, for the forfeited chattels of an unknown woman who sought sanctuary at Tynemouth, because she did not confess before the coroner that she had any chattels; fourteen shillings.

The jurors present that William de Coupon was arrested for robbery committed upon Walter, son of Nicholas de Whiteley, of which the latter brought an appeal against him in the court of the prior of Tynemouth, and he was placed in the stocks at the order of William Styward, coroner, and guarded there for three months and more by one William Glede and John, son of Christiana de Tynemouth, who so wickedly kept the said William in duress of prison in the said stocks during that time, that he died in consequence of the imprisonment on the day after his release. This was done at the order of William Styward, coroner, and of Henry de Harden, clerk to the prior of Tynemouth. Therefore let them be arrested. Afterwards William Styward and John, son of Christiana, came and made fine for postponement at one mark. Bail found for them. Afterwards it was announced by the sheriff that the said William Glede had not been found, but had made away, and is suspect. Therefore he is exiled and outlawed. He has no chattels. Then William Styward, Henry de Hardenn and John, son of Christiana, came and were asked how they would acquit themselves of the death of the said William. They plead not guilty, and put themselves wholly upon the country. And the jurors state on their oath that none of them is guilty of the said William's death; therefore they are all quit.

Entry of payment of two marks by the twelve jurors for concealment and other trespasses.

¹ For regulations respecting salmon fisheries on the Tyne, see *Cal. Doc. Rel. Scot.* vol. i. p. 512.

Six years later, upon the petition of the prior and convent of Tyne-mouth,¹ on February 20th, 1299, Edward I. restored to them all their former privileges,² which were afterwards specifically confirmed to them by a charter of Edward IV., dated March 19th, 1463.³ The civil jurisdiction of the priory does not seem to have outlasted the fourteenth century. The difficulty of enforcing royal prerogatives, which had outlasted their usefulness, led to a practical extinction of the franchise long before the dissolution; but, for that very reason, the liberty was never, and has never been formally abolished.

THE MANOR.

As stated above, there was one court (*libera curia*) for the whole liberty, held every three weeks and attended by all the free tenants of the monastery. It was usually convened in the prior's great hall at Tyne-mouth, but might be held in any part of the liberty. It was at once seignorial and feudal, and combined the functions of a court leet with those of a court baron.

The franchise was not, however, devoid of a manorial organization, though the manor was rather an economic than a jurisdictional unit. An assessment-roll of 1292 enumerates the ten manors of Tynemouth, Preston, Monkseaton, Backworth, Flatworth, Bebside, Elswick, Wylam, Amble, and Bewick.⁴ On a tour through the liberty made by Abbot Norton in 1264, courts were held at Tynemouth and at the five places last named.⁵ Though Preston, Monkseaton, Backworth, and Flatworth do not appear in the record of 1264, corroborative evidence of their manorial character is found in their possessing halls, while Flatworth, Backworth, and Monkseaton had separate demesnes, though Preston and Tynemouth had their demesnes in common. It may be inferred that the liberty was parcelled into manors, and that courts were retained in the outlying districts, though

¹ *Ancient Petitions*, P.R.O. No. 3761. . . . Petunt etiam quod si dominus rex ob amorem Dei et reverenciam sancti Oswyni velit reddere dictam libertatem prefate ecclesie de Tynemuth, ut possint habere illam ex speciali dono suo, sicut illam habuerunt ex speciali dono regis Ricardi antecessoris sui. Et ubi dicitur in carta dicta regis Ricardi *omnes homines et omnes terras*, etc., quod ipse velit specificare villas et loca, si placet, et qualiter debeant amodo justiciarios et coronatores suos creare. Ista petunt prior et conventus ut dominus rex concedat eis, si placet, ex sua clemencia et pro sancti Oswyni reverencia, et quod capiat de eis pro tali gracia juxta facultatem domus eorum ita quod habeant rationabiles terminos de solutione sine depressione domus sue. Et sciat dominus rex quod dicti prior et conventus non petunt aliqua de quibus dominus rex dampnum vel jacturam habere poterit. Et hoc scire poterit pro certo, si placeat jubere ut rei veritas per fidedignos inquiretur.

² Dugdale, *Monasticon*, vol. iii. p. 318.

³ Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. ii. appendix, No. cxxxvii.

⁴ Dugdale, *Monasticon*, vol. iii. p. 315.

⁵ *Registrum Whethamstede*, Rolls Series, vol. ii. pp. 319-324.

round the monastery itself, and under the shadow of its great hall, there was no scope for their development. The free court of the whole liberty was also the court of the adjacent manors.

In this inner group a distinction arises at the outset between Tynemouth (with its later offshoots of North Shields and Cullercoats) and the remaining townships. Not only had Tynemouth its own mills, while its neighbours did suit to the mill at Flatworth, but it had a separate pasture, the other villis intercommoning upon the Shire Moor. In this connexion it is significant that Tynemouth did not contribute to the cornage rent imposed on the rest of the district.¹ It is undoubtedly an older settlement, less distinctly pastoral in its origin, while the presence of a fishing and seafaring population prevented it from becoming a purely agricultural community. It contained numerous small freeholds. The bondage system, which formed the basis of the agricultural system of other villis, was absent here. Racial difference may account in part for its individuality, for there are traces of a marked Danish element in the population¹ of the sea-bord.

The greater part of each township was arable, and, besides the *demesne*, comprised free land and land held by base and customary services. The customary land was divided up into a number of bondage-holdings (*bondagia*) of equal size, having equal rights of common and meadow appurtenant to each. A mensuration taken by Prior Adam de Tewing at Christmas, 1295,² shows the method of division. An estimate was made of the whole of the land within the township held by bondage tenure, and the total was then divided into holdings comprising two bovates or thirty-six acres. Each holding consisted of a number of acre or half-acre strips scattered over the common fields, and was farmed by a single person of unfree status, termed a bond or huse-bond (husband).³ The remaining acres—the odd fraction in the division sum—were portioned out among

¹ There is a total absence of the *burr*, or uvular pronunciation of the letter 'r', in the speech of the old inhabitants of North Shields, of the seafaring communities of Tynemouth and Cullercoats, and of the fishing population along the coast. For the bearing of this on the racial origin of the population, see Mr. R. O. Heslop's article on 'The Permian People of North Durham,' *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. x.

² *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 7 b to 8.

³ The terms 'villain' and 'villainage' never found currency in Northumberland, their meaning being expressed by 'bond' and 'bondage.' The old Norse word 'bonde' first finds place in the English language in the laws of court, and became anglicised as 'bonda' or 'bunda.' Cp. *Vita Oswini*, cap. xxiv. p. 38. 'Ut moris est provinciae, servi ecclesiae, quos *bundos* vocant lingua materna, de jure operis sibi impositi, annonam in plaustis suis ad coeptam metam advehunt, et eam in brevi ex messis allatae abundantia insurgere compellunt.' This passage, written in the first half of the twelfth century, contains an early description of the carriage-work in harvest-time, known a century and a half later as *inlade*, and shows that *bond* had already degenerated from its original signification of a free ceorl. The term *husebondi* occurs once in the custumal of 1295; *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 40.

the bonds and formed a surplusage to their holdings for which they paid rent.¹ For their two bovates they performed, each of them, similar services, all carefully set out in a custumal drawn up in or about the year 1295. John Miller of Preston serves as a model for the rest.

John Miller holds a toft and 36 acres of land as bond, and pays in pence, 8d.; for Merdeffen-penies, 2s.; for heth-penies, 6d.; for Hertenes-penies, 3d.; for abbote-scoth at the Nativity of St. John the Baptist, 3½d. Sum total in pence, 3s. 8½d., excepting conevais-silver. He pays at the feast of St. Oswin in the autumn one cock and one hen, and at Easter 60 eggs.

He shall cart two cartloads for his inlad, doing service anywhere, if so ordered, and for this carting he shall not have lade-bund. When he carts as part of his work from the field of Tynemouth north of Kenewaldes-den, on the west of the dene leading to the hospital, he shall cart four loads;² and between Kenewaldes-den and the town and the dene leading to the hospital and to the town, he shall cart six loads; and from all the closes round about the town, he shall cart eight loads. When he carts tithes from Whiteley, Preston, from the three Chirtounes, and from Milneton, he shall cart three loads; and from Erdesdon, Seton, Moerton, and Flatford, he shall cart two loads in the course of the day; and he shall do this for all the corn that has to be carted. When he carts from Hertelawe, Haliwell, North Seton, Neusom, Seighale and Bacworthe, he shall cart once in the course of the day. For all the above-mentioned cartings, except for his inlad, he shall have lade-bund. When he carts turves, and when he mows Segrestan-leche, then he shall cart two loads; when he does not mow, then three loads in the course of the day. Item, when he mows Wymber-leche, he shall cart two loads in the course of the day. Moreover, when it is necessary, he shall mow and he shall do anything else at the will of the prior, wheresoever the prior or his servant wills, or else he shall do it as part of his work. When he carts from Hertlawe and from Haliwell to Seton Monachorum he shall cart twice and shall have lade-bund. When he carts from Seton to Tynemouth, he shall cart three loads and shall have lade-bund.

From the feast of St. Martin to the feast of the Purification of the Blessed Mary, he shall thresh daily one thrave of wheat or winter-wheat; moreover at other times one thrave and eight sheaves of wheat or mesline, and of barley or of oats always two thraves, and of beans or peas as well after the feast of St. Martin as before. The said John shall reap in the autumn two days with two men in each week, and those two men shall each day have three 'bilmynges'³ and six herrings with pottage. And he shall do the great auth-rep with the whole family of his house except the house-wife; and he shall bring out with him fifteen 'kakes' as food for the reapers, which he shall hand over to the servant or to the reeve to distribute on the prior's behalf; and he shall have on the same day, together with another given him as a messmate, three 'bilmynges' or six 'kakes,' and pottage and meat and cheese and beer. And it is to be understood that when the bonds mow the prior's pasture, they shall have three sheep by way of custom.

The said John shall give every year 5½ quarters of malt on the feast of St. Martin, and one quarter of conevais-ates at Christmas. And it is to be understood that the bonds of Preston shall give every year for conevei-silver 7s. 7½d., and the said bonds shall retain in their hand one quarter of malt and one quarter of conevais-ates.

The said John shall do every week in the year two days' work without food, excepting the feasts of Easter and Christmas and Whitsuntide. He shall plough and harrow one acre of the prior's land when he is given notice, and he shall sow the same with the prior's seed, without food. He shall do one boen-ere and shall have food, to wit two 'bilmynges' and one 'swayn-laf,' six herrings, and one dish of peas, and beer in plenty. He shall cart three loads from Merdeffen.⁴

¹ West Chirton; sunt ibidem xv bondi, et debent habere cccxv acras, scilicet quilibet xxv acras; et inveniuntur ibi cccxxvij acras, scilicet xij acras plus, quarum vj acras debent habere quinque bondi, et alias vj decem homines. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 7 b to 8.

² The name of Kenewaldes-den survives in the corrupted form of Kennersdean. The hospital was that dedicated to St. Leonard; its ruins are visible in the Northumberland Park at Tynemouth.

³ Probably some kind of scone or bannock.

⁴ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 36 b to 37.

Week-work is the characteristic trait of the bond's tenure. At Martinmas he has to plough and harrow an acre of the prior's demesne, and then to sow it with the prior's seed. When called upon he has to put in an extra day, with his plough (*bon-ere*), and a day with his horse and harrow (*bon-harrowe*), receiving three or four loaves, six herrings, a dish of peas and beer in plenty for the ploughing, but providing himself with food at the harrowing. During the time of harvest he has to join in the reaping two days each week, and to bring two other labourers to work with him. The whole population of the manor turns out into the harvest-field for the prior's great boon-work (*magnum auth-repe*), and then John Miller and the other bonds bring each of them fifteen cakes for the reapers. They fare well upon loaves and pottage, meat, cheese, and beer, provided at the prior's cost. Then the harvest has to be carted to the manorial grange, and for each cartload the bond receives his sheaf (*lade-bund*). At the close of the harvest, all the prior's tenants, bond and free, join in the harvest-home. Each has a specified number of 'thraves' to cart, and on this day they have no *lade-bund*. Other cartings, such as the bringing of tithes from Newsham (*Neusum-lade*) and turves from Mason, are carefully regulated. From Martinmas until the feast of the Purification the bond has to thresh wheat daily in the prior's barn, and there is threshing to be done at other times.

At the feast of St. Oswin he has to render a cock and hen, and sixty eggs at Easter, the latter payment being perhaps the 'egge-brod' for which all the bonds of the whole parish received each of them a 'swayn-laf.' There are also various forms of customary rent paid by him, namely 8d. on Palm Sunday for 'yevel-penies' (that is, *gafol* or rent in the strict sense, as distinct from payments in commutation of services); at Whitsuntide a shilling in lieu of carting turves from Mason (*Merdeffen-penies*), and the like at Michaelmas; sixpence on Ascension Day as *chevage* or poll-tax (*hed-penies*); upon St. John the Baptist's Day a sum varying from 3d. to 4¼d. for abbot's cornage (*abbote-scoth*); three pence at Michaelmas as commutation for bringing in tithes from Hertness (*Hertnes-penies*); and upon St. Andrew's Day 11½d. in place of provender-rents (*conevais-penies* or *conevais-silver*).

The 'conevais' is in practice, if not in name, identical with the 'cum-feorm,' or duty of feeding strangers, mentioned in Anglo-Saxon charters of

the ninth century.¹ In its fully-developed form it appears as the chief incident of the drengage tenures of Whitley and Backworth in the fourteenth century. There at Christmastide the tenants of each of these two townships had to entertain the prior and his household, his servants, horses and dogs, for two days and two nights, and to find them food and shelter. The bonds of other townships had to give five or five and a half quarters of barley-malt at Martinmas, and a quarter of oats (conevais-ates) at Christmas. 'Scat' malt and 'scat' oats occur as distinct payments. In Earsdon the bonds who gave scat-malt were to be remitted twopence of their 'conevais-penies.'

Recognition had to be made for the right of pannage in the prior's woods² and of herbage upon his waste. Suit to the manorial mill was obligatory. Finally, above and beyond all customary services, the bond could be tallaged 'high and low.' In 1294 the prior and convent collected as much as £78 9s. 8d. by tallage from their bondage tenants.³ The fact that some paid a mark, while others were excused all payment on the score of poverty, shows that equality of holdings by no means implied equality of wealth. Their tenure was precarious; they held by the will of the lord, and had no fixity of holding.

Customary services were also owed by various classes of free men. The name of drengage is not met with in the customals of this period, but the tenure exists, and three townships, namely, Seghill, Whitley, and Backworth, are so held of the prior. Graffard's charter of enfeoffment for Seghill stipulates that he shall go with the host and perform riding services, do suit of court, answer for his men, and do all other things incumbent on men of his status. In the case of Whitley the customs are more specifically set out. They comprise the service called 'conveys' already mentioned, the payment of a money rent, as well as cornage and the composition rent known as 'Hertnes-penyes,' and suit to the prior's court from three weeks to three weeks. There are various services connected with the manorial mill, namely suit to the mill, the payment of multure, the reparation of the mill and mill-pond, and the carting of grind-stones. Agricultural services include the boon-ere, boon harrow and autumn works (auth-reps), which

¹ Thorpe, *Diplomatarium*, p. 102.

² At the dissolution two pence was paid by each tenant in husbandry for pannage or 'swine-tack.'

³ *St. Alban's Register*, fols. 109-111. The tallage was presumably levied as a means of paying Edward I.'s taxation of the same year.

were also incumbent upon bondage-tenants, and carting from Newsham and from Seaton Delaval. Finally, by a curious jumble of incidents of free and unfree tenure, the lord of Whitley pays aids to the prior, gives fine upon the marriage of his daughter (merchet), and yet the prior claims the feudal rights of marriage and wardship.

A second group, found in East and in Middle Chirton, is marked by the payment of five shillings from each holding as 'rad-mal' or composition for riding-services. The holdings vary in size from eighteen to forty-five acres. The agricultural services owed by them are similar to those in Whitley, namely, boon works and the cartings termed Neusum-lade and in-lade. They also render provender-rents of oat and malt, pay 1½d. upon the feast of St. Peter and St. Paul as 'miln-silver' in lieu of carting mill-stones, and pay rent.

In the third class of free holdings no rad-mal is paid. On the other hand cornage is due to the abbot or the prior, and in some cases, a toll called 'abbot's welcome,' payable when a new abbot of St. Alban's came on his first visit to Tynemouth. Special duties are annexed to some of these tenements, such as the guarding of the prior's prison or the herding of the cattle taken by him by way of distraint. The tenants give merchet and 'layre-wite' (fine for incontinency). In other respects, both as to services and as to the extent of the holding, there is little to distinguish this class from that of which the payment of rad-mal is the characteristic feature.¹

All these classes of customary free holdings are hereditary. Son succeeds father upon payment of a fine or relief amounting to two years' rent. Widows have their free-bench. The holding or any part of it may be alienated upon fine made in the prior's court, to which the tenants owe suit from three weeks to three weeks.

In other cases labour-services are for the most part wanting, and a money-rent is the chief or the sole burden. These form a miscellaneous

¹ Thus at Cowpen in 1323 'Johannes Flane tenet j toftum et croftum, j cotagium, xx acras et j rodam terre hereditarie, et reddit per annum domino priori iij. viij^d et welcum abbatis et merchetum pro filiabus. Filius suus post obitum patris releuiabit terram patris sui, et talliabitur per priorem, et dabitur pro ancillis et filiabus suis layrewyt cum advenit, et dabit cornagium abbatis, et mulier dotabitur post obitum viri.' *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 33. His services stand as a type for all free land within the township. At Preston it is laid down in 1295 that all the free tenants shall do suit to the prior's mill at the thirteenth dish; also they shall do suit to the prior's court (hal); and they shall give merchet and leirwyt for their daughters; also they shall cart millstones from Slawlee (that is, Slaley) to all the prior's mills along with their peers within the liberty of Tynemouth. *Ibid.* fol. 37 b.

group of land held in common socage, burgage tenements, intakes, leaseholds, and cottage holdings. Parcels of the demesne and vacant bondage lands are often leased out for a term of years or for life, the terms of the lease, which admit of considerable variety, being enrolled on the court roll.¹ The cotman or cottager has a cottage and one bovaté of land or less, and pays rent. He appears to be distinct from the selfode, whose holding includes a cottage, for which he pays rent, and a small plot of land, varying in size from half an acre to four acres, for which three days' work are due in the autumn.²

It is not possible to obtain more than a few glimpses of the change of system in progress during the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. The year 1295 found agriculture in Northumberland on the crest of a wave. It witnessed the first of a long series of Scottish raids. A survey of Cowpen taken in 1323, in a brief interval of truce, shows that war had already driven the bonds there out of existence. All bondage holdings within the township were, at the taking of the survey, in the prior's hands for want of tenants. In 1377 things had gone from bad to worse. In Monkseaton, where in 1295 fifteen bonds had cultivated as many arable holdings, only ten tenements remain; and, of these ten, four render no labour services and are in the prior's hand, while the remaining six have lain waste since the Black Death for want of tenants. Within the township of Middle Chirton there were twelve bondage holdings in 1295, eleven cultivated by bonds and one by Roger de Wylam, a free man. In 1377 John de Wylam was farming seven out of the twelve tenements; the other five, having no tenants, were leased out for a rent of malt. The townships of Preston, East and Middle Chirton, Monkseaton, and Earsdon, contained sixty bonds in 1295 and twenty-three in 1377.

In 1539 the greater part of the arable land in each township was still divided into customary holdings of equal size, though, in consequence of a diminution of population during the long period of border warfare, accompanied by a rise in the standard of living, their number had diminished and their size increased.

¹ 'Walterus filius Uctredi tenuit viij acras de bondagio prioris per rotulum curie et reddidit xld., que servicia in manu prioris propter guerram.' Survey of Cowpen, 1323; *ibid.* fol. 33.

² In a survey of Woodhorn taken in 1271, selfodes are glossed as 'redditarii.' *Cal. Doc. Rel. Scot.* vol. i. p. 532.

Township.	Number of Holdings.		Number of Acres of Arable to each Holding.	
	In 1294.	In 1539.	In 1294.	In 1539.
Preston ...	7 $\frac{1}{2}$	5	36	45
East Chirton ...	8	5	36	45
Middle Chirton ...	11	3	36	40
Whitley ...	—	5	—	40
Monkseaton ...	15 $\frac{1}{2}$	10	36	36
Murton ...	—	4	—	42
Earsdon ...	17	8	36	26
Backworth ...	—	10	—	36

There has been strikingly little change in appellation ; bondage holdings have become husbandry holdings, and husebondi have turned into husbands, whose tenure is still nominally at the will of the lord. On the other hand the tenants have attained freedom and become suitors at the manorial court. Their services equate with those rendered in 1295, by the 'liber homo' and not with those of the bond. Merchet and layrewrite, chevage and tallage are no longer paid. The servile badge of week-work has gone, leaving money rents, provender-rents, boon-works, autumn-work, carriage work, and suit to the lord's mills¹ still due from the tenant. Owing to the loss of the court rolls, it is impossible to speak positively of the certainty of the tenure, but the fact is to be noticed that many of the same family-names recur in successive rentals, and there is a case of testamentary disposition of a husbandry holding as early as 1570.² It is highly probable, and evidence quoted later supports the assumption, that a nominally precarious tenure had acquired fixity, and that the right of the son to succeed the father was recognised by the manorial officers, though the amount of the fine payable upon succession had not yet become fixed by custom. A curious story was told in 1511 before the Council of the North, of how one of the later priors of Tynemouth would not grant a tenant a copy of his father's tenement in Amble 'untill he was content to give so many nobles as there were dores about his house, and there were found xiiij dores' (an improbable number) ; and then, upon the said tenant giving satisfaction to the prior, he had his copy according to custom.³

In a trial held in the Court of Exchequer in 1609 it was stated that the copyholders were bound to present their corn to be ground at the lord's mills, unless wind or water did not serve to grind their grain in reasonable time. Freeholders were not bound to do suit, neither were tenants dwelling in newly erected houses and having no corn growing within the manor. *Exchequer Depositions*, Mich. 7 Jas. I. No. 9.

² By will dated February 2nd, 1569/70, Robert Cutter of Earsdon devises his farmhold to Alice, his wife ; 'and she to pay £10 to Thomas Cutter my father.' Bequests of this nature were, however, without legal validity, and depended for their execution upon the good will of the steward of the manor.

³ See vol. v. of this work, p. 279.

Arable demesne lands no longer existed at the dissolution except in Tynemouth and Preston townships. The original demesnes, enlarged by freehold land of which large quantities were acquired by the monastery during the fourteenth century, as well as by bondage holdings which had fallen into the lord's hand and had never been granted out again for lack of tenants, had been turned into pasture, and appropriated by the customary tenants, so that each husbandry holding had now extensive rights of common appurtenant to it. Several townships, from being almost entirely arable, had become mainly pastoral, and every tenant in husbandry had now common of pasture for six oxen, six to twelve cattle, twenty to forty sheep, and two to four horses.

Money-rents, now distinguished as 'shire-rents,'¹ show a very large increase, the average rent for a holding of thirty-six acres of arable being twenty shillings. Six quarters of corn, consisting of oats and barley in varying proportions, is paid yearly out of each tenement. The payment is known as 'hall-corn' and is estimated to be of equal value to the money-rent, whence the name of 'half-corn' sometimes applied to it. At first sight the identification of the six quarters of barley and oats rendered in 1539 with the six or six and a half quarters of barley-malt and oats rendered in 1295 may seem obvious, but this point will require further examination. For the present it may be noticed that the term of payment of the hall-corn, namely, St. Andrew's Day, coincides with that for the payment of 'coneveis-penies' in the thirteenth century, 'coneveis-penies' being a commutation of provender-rents.

Township.	Money Rent.		Corn Rent.	
	In 1294. s. d.	In 1539. s. d.	In 1294.	In 1539.
Preston	4 8 $\frac{1}{4}$	26 8	5 $\frac{1}{2}$ qrs. barley-malt and 1 qr. oats.	4 qrs. barley and 2 qrs. oats.
East Chirton	4 8 $\frac{1}{4}$	37 4	5 $\frac{1}{2}$ qrs. barley-malt and 1 qr. oats.	3 qrs. barley and 3 qrs. oats.
Middle Chirton	4 4 $\frac{1}{2}$	44 6	5 $\frac{1}{2}$ qrs. barley-malt and 1 qr. oats.	None.
Whitley	—	33 4	—	4 qrs. barley and 2 qrs. oats.
Monkseaton	4 1 $\frac{3}{4}$	20 0	5 $\frac{1}{2}$ qrs. barley-malt and 1 qr. oats.	4 qrs. barley and 2 qrs. oats.
Murton	—	22 0	—	4 qrs. oats.
Earsdon	5 2 $\frac{1}{4}$	20 0	5 qrs. barley-malt and 1 qr. oats.	4 qrs. barley and 2 qrs. oats.
Backworth	—	20 0	—	2 $\frac{1}{2}$ qrs. wheat and [1 qr. oats].

¹ The shire-rent is clearly an assize-rent and not, as has been suggested, an acknowledgment for the privilege of depasturing on the common and open lands within the manor.

Meadow-closes and the garth of the manor-hall are farmed in common by the tenants of each respective township for a separate money-rent ; and as the few remaining freeholds are usually annexed to some customary tenement, it follows that almost the whole of the land within the township is already in the hands of husbandry tenants.

By deed of surrender, dated January 12th, 1538/9, all the possessions of the monastery of Tynemouth were made over to the Crown. During the succeeding century the lordship of Tynemouth, in which expression were included the townships of Preston, East Chirton, Whitley, Monkseaton, Murton, Earsdon and Backworth, was let out on successive leases of twenty-one years each, at a yearly rent of £105 7s., renewable upon the payment of a fine of double that amount. The lessees were John Banester, February 12th, 1545/6 ;¹ Thomas Ray, November 6th, 1558 ;² Henry, eighth earl of Northumberland, December 12th, 1580 ;³ Henry, ninth earl of Northumberland, November 23rd, 1596.⁴ The office of seneschal, the demesnes of Tynemouth and Flatworth, and certain mills and coal mines within the liberty went with the governorship of Tynemouth castle.

A change of custom was introduced by Sir Thomas Hilton, the first lessee of the demesnes after the dissolution, who substituted a money-rent for the various labour-services. This was termed boon days or day-work rent, and is still payable. A survey taken at the close of the century states :

Ther is besides the dayworkes of the tennantes of every of these townes following, that is to say, Ersden, Moreton, Munckseaton, Whitley, Preston, Est Chirton and Middle Chirton. Every tennant of these townes did lead to the castle in the prior's tyme one load of hay, mow three severall dayes work of hay, rake one day worke, and sheare three severall dayes worke in the corne in harvest every yeare, which dayes worke Sir Thomas Hilton, knight, in his tyme immediately after the suppression, turned into money : that is, every tennant of these towns abovesaid paid for the said day workes at Michaelmas onely 2s. 4d., and 2d. for hempe and line, which made upp 2s. 6d. a man ; besides every of them two fudder of whynnes at Mayday yearely ; yett the captaine of the castle saith that they ow every of them a fudder at Michaelmas allso yearely, wheruppon some of the tennantes stand and most part pay.

Ther is allso two shearing day workes dew by every cottinger of every of these townes aforesaid and of the husbandes and cottingers in Tynemouth besides. All which were also in Sir Thomas Hilton's tyme turned into money ; that is, every husbandman in Tynemouth for day workes, hempe and line paid 10d. a peice, and every cottinger ther and in the townes above named 8d. a peice, wedow and others.⁵

¹ Augmentation Office, *Miscell. Books*, vol. 217, fols. 25-28 and 89.

² *Patent Roll*, 5 and 6 Philip and Mary, part 3.

³ *Ibid.* 23 Eliz. part 3.

⁴ *Ibid.* 39 Eliz. part 8. The lease was renewed to him on October 18th, 1617.

⁵ Early seventeenth century survey of Tynemouthshire ; Duke of Northumberland's MSS. Carriage-work remained uncommuted. 'The tennants of Tynemouthshier have alwayes ben accustomed since I served thier to bring in two further of whynes every of them, one in somer and th' other in wynter, comonly after St. Eline Day and Michelmas ; to lead every of them, if nead required, one wayne load of

The various payments, and particularly the hall-corn, proved a heavy burden upon the inhabitants of the shire. At a muster of the middle marches held in 1580, the tenants of Backworth, Murton, Earsdon, Preston, Monkseaton, Whitley, East and Middle Chirton, Hauxley, Amble, Denton, Benwell and Elswick were not able to furnish more than six horsemen. The inhabitants of Benwell and Elswick said that they could not serve as they did before the monastery was suppressed. Those of Hauxley and Amble were so exacted by the queen's officers that they were ready to give up their holdings. Those of Tynemouthshire were not able, by reason that their corn, which they called the hall-corn and paid yearly, did so undo them, paying as they did 24 bowls (6 quarters) of corn for 20 shillings of rent, and some 10 bowls of wheat for 20 shillings of rent. The tenants of Amble and Hauxley, it was stated, were accustomed to pay partly money and partly corn. At the audit the custom was that the price of the rent-corn should be delayed until the audit twelve months after, 'and then of curtesie of th'officers it ys set at a grote in a bowll under the price of the markett at Newcastle.'¹

Considerable light is thrown on the payment of hall-corn by the records of a suit in the Court of Exchequer in 1597 between Edmund Milbanke and other tenants of the seven towns of Tynemouthshire and Peter Delaval, farmer of the hall-corn under the ninth earl of Northumberland. The plaintiffs by their bill complained that, whereas they and their ancestors had been customary tenants of the prior of Tynemouth and afterwards of her majesty, paying rent and doing services on the borders and in defence of Tynemouth castle at their own charges, and by reason of the scarcity of money the prior was wont to allow them to pay half their rent in corn according to the Winchester measure, eight gallons to the bushel; the defendants would have their corn in Newcastle market measure, which was bigger than the other by two and a half pecks in every bushel of oats and barley, and one peck in every bushel of wheat,

hay from Flatworth or the closes of Preston Brok close or Tynemouth park, and the coales to serve the howse, besides ijs. vjd. for ther daye work. Some casement of this service ther was in the time that my lord of Northumbreland kept his drawght, that the tennants were not altogether charged so wholly, but after Richard Dawson occupyed the fourth part of the demayne that his lordship had in occupation, then his lordship charged the tennants as befor with the service aforsaid.' 1575. Delaval MSS. in the possession of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries. 'Kept his drawght'—'had his team of plough-oxen; had the demesnes in his own hand.'

¹ *Cal. Border Papers*, vol. i. p. 22.

'and by reason of this exaccion, the spoyles they susteyned by night-rides, and the great dearth in the countrey' they were so impoverished that they could not do her majesty their due service.¹

In a letter written to the earl of Northumberland on October 31st, 1595, Delaval informed his master

That the tennants of half-corne yesterday served proces uppon me, and this day they brought to the castle everye man towne bushells of corne, offering to delyver it by a bushell brought by them conteyning as they said Wynchester measure. My brother Raphe, being ther ready to receive ther corne by the accustomed measure due to your lordshipp, they would delyver none but with that measure they brought with them; which bushell my brother Raphe required might remayne ther in the castle untill it were known to be the true half-corne bushell ther, the which they utterly denied to leve behynde them. But my brother Raphe, thinking it fytt to kepe the bushell wherwith they offred to delyver ther corne, being not half so much in quantatie as your lordship's antient bushel, they snatching the bushell from my brother Raphe in forceable manner to go awaie withall, he in truth gave one of them being most busy a bob of the lypps till he bled, for that they most bytterly exclamed you beggered them and that they were the quen's tennants and ought you no service. The rest, being about xvj or xx persones, all bent themselves to carry away the bushell, but my brother Raphe kept the bushell contrarie ther myndes, and remaynes in the castle till further order be taken in that matter.²

The tenants followed up their action by petitioning the earl of Huntingdon, lord lieutenant for the north. Bennet Watson and Thomas Otway, on behalf of seven townships to the number of eight hundred persons in Tynemouthshire, set out their case, adding:

By reason of sundrie cominge in sithence the dissolution under her majestie, the measure is so muche encroched upon as it is nowe come to double the measurs, so as by enforcinge that measure your suppliants ar become so poore as where a great parte of the countrie's strengthe consisted in the said townships, nowe they ar not able with horse, furniture and geare to serve as there ancestors have done, as it appeared upon the late muster, but ar extreeme poore, not able to releve themselves and there families, whereupon there humble sute is nowe in tryall before the lord treasurer and barons of the exchequer.³

A commission to hear the case was directed, on June 25th, 1596, to Robert Delaval of Seaton Delaval, Thomas Hilton of Hilton, Thomas Bradford of Bradford, and John Featherstonhaugh of Stanhope, and lengthy depositions were taken before them.

Depositions taken in the church of St. Nicholas at Newcastle, on behalf of plaintiffs, before the said commissioners, on Tuesday, August 24th, 38 Eliz. (1596).

Robert Baylif of East Chirton, yeoman, aged 80, deposes:

1. That he knows the parties, and the seven towns within the manor of Tynemouth, namely, Chirton, Preston, Whitley, Monkseaton, Earsdon, Murton and Backworth. 2. The said towns 'stande on the seacoste and are subjecte to forren invasion and rides, and are bounde to serve bothe by lande and sea when they shalbe charged by hir majestie or hir officers.'³ 3. In the times before the dissolution of the

¹ *Exchequer Decrees and Orders*, vol. 23, fol. 179.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ Marquis of Waterford's MSS.

monastery there was great plenty of corn and scarcity of money : hence rents were partially paid in corn. 5. There was a measure kept in the priors' time for rent-corn, which was less than the Newcastle measure by a great deal. 13. The value of the corn now paid for every tenement amounts to nearly half the value of the tenement ; the tenants are hardly able to make husbandry and do her majesty's service with the other moiety and to maintain their families.

Robert Helme of Tynemouth, yeoman, aged 64, deposes :

3. That in the priors' time the tenants did sue to deliver corn for half their rent, to wit, after the rate of 12d. for a bowl of bigg and 6d. for a bowl of oats : therefore for a 40s. farmhold they paid 16 bowls of bigg, 8 bowls of oats, and 20s. in money. 4. He has seen an account of the time of a survey taken after the dissolution, showing that the tenants paid half their rent in corn. In those days it was easier to them so, bigg being then 3s. a quarter and oats 2s. a quarter. 7. King Henry VIII.'s receiver accepted the rent-corn in money, sometimes at one rate, sometimes another, as the market ruled. 9. Wheat is now 16s. a bowl, bigg 10s., oats 10s., and so to pay the same amount of rent-corn as in the priors' time doth now amount to much more than then ; thus in Backworth, which delivereth 10 bowls of wheat (£5 at least), besides the 20s. paid in money, for a 40s. farmhold ; Earsdon, Monkseaton, Whitley and Preston deliver 16 bowls of bigg and 8 bowls of oats (£8 at least), over the 20s. paid in money ; and every farmhold in East Chirton delivereth 12 bowls of bigg and 12 bowls of oats (£8 10s.), besides 18s. in money ; every farmhold in Murton payeth 16 bowls of oats for 8s. rent, which is £6 12s. at least above what they paid in the priors' time, besides 22s. in money. 11. This examine hath received the said rent-corn for thirteen years, and since Thomas Dacham and others of the earl of Northumberland's officers received it for eighteen years, by the same measure which the defendant now claimeth. 12. He hath seen an order from the Exchequer, dated June 27th, 1556, on behalf of Bannester. 15. Some part of the said hall-corn has always remained unpaid, except the very first year that he was receiving. 16. The said rent-corn now amounts yearly to £100 above the rent reserved to her majesty. 19. At Newcastle all kind of grain is straike ; at Tynemouth they heap bigg and oats and straike wheat for the hall-corn.

Richard Cutter of Earsdon, yeoman, aged 80, deposes :

1. That there are about eighty householders in the seven towns. 2. The most inland of the seven is within four miles of the sea : the inhabitants are charged with much service upon the borders, and have to supply men and furniture. 4. In Prior Blakeney's time he sold oats by the market measure, which was much greater than the hall-corn measure, at 10d. a bowl, wheat at 2s. a bowl ; the corn at that time was of no more value than half the rent. 6. In the priors' time there dwelt in Backworth, where every tenant pays 10 bowls of wheat, one Raphe Wheldon and one Thomas Bowmaker, who came and told the prior they had no corn to bring : who allowed each to bring 10 capons instead. The change from rent in money to rent in kind was originally made for the benefit of the tenants, not for the profit of the priors. 'Hath harde his ancestors saie that money was so scante then that coyned leather wente bargaininge betwene man and man.' 7. For two years after the dissolution King Henry accepted the rent in money only. 8. Bannester, farmer of the manor and of the seven towns in Queen Mary's time, insisted on having half the rent in corn, for his own benefit, because the price had gone up. Mr. Rookbye, Mr. Bellasis of Henknowle, and their assigns, to wit, Mr. Farewell and John Payne, his servant, received the said rent in money. 10. Of late the defendants demanded the rent-corn by the Newcastle measure, which is greater than the Winchester measure by half in half, and two gallons more in the bushel. The Newcastle measure hath been very often increased within his remembrance. 11. It is forty years since Bannester enhanced the rent by the measure by which the defendant now claimeth. David Wynyarde, the cooper who made the measure, dwelt at the corner of the Sandhill in Newcastle. Before that, there was an old measure at Tynemouth called the hall-corn measure, less than the Newcastle measure by half in half : whereupon the neighbours finding fault were sued to answer in the Exchequer at London, and divers of them went to London, of whom this deponent was one. 12. There was a suit in the Exchequer in the time of Philip and Mary, between Bannester and the tenants of the seven towns for the rent-corn according to a new exacted measure. Of the two neighbours who should have gone to prosecute, one fell sick, and the other not appearing, Banister

procured an order that the said hall-corn should [not?] be paid by the old measure. 13. In some years, when the seed-corn is sown and the hall-corn is paid, the rest of the corn growing upon the tenement will not find the house. 14. The tenants are so impoverished that they cannot do service upon the borders with horse and man as they were wont, by reason of payment of hall-corn, stealing, and these unseasonable times. 15. 'The payinge of the hall-corne rente and the exaction of the oulde measure to the newe greater measure is the speciall cause of their impoverishinge.' 17. My lord of Northumberland's officers were wont to let the tenants have their corn for £5 for the rent-corn of every tenant which paid hall-corn for 20s. rent, rather than sell it to strangers. Defendants have declined to let the tenants have any part of their corn except on payment of market price. 18. Defendant demanded, for the rent of a 40s. tenement, half of which was to be paid in corn, £12, but was content to take £10, to wit, of Edmund Meelbanke, John Smith, Thomas Owtwaie, Robert Hall, Robert Dowe and George Errington, and drove their distresses for the same. The tenants offered him £5 for each 40s. tenement for the last year's corn, or the corn after the old measure.

Benedict Watson of Earsdon, yeoman, aged 70, deposes :

9. That wheat is now worth 16s. a bowl, bigg 10s., and oats 7s. or 8s. 11. Some of the tenants have paid for thirty years by the measure by which defendants now claim : some have never paid corn at all, but always money. The old measure kept at Tynemouth and called the hall-corn measure was committed to one William Hodshon of Whitley to keep.

Thomas Dacham of Gateshead, county Durham, gentleman, aged 60, deposes :

1. That in the seven towns there are forty-seven farmers or tenants, besides cottagers. 2. If the captain of Tynemouth castle go to serve on the borders, then the tenants have to serve for fourteen days at their own charges. 13. He holds a tenement in Backworth for which he pays 10 bowls of wheat (£3 6s. 8d.) for hall-corn, and 21s. in money : proffering to let it at 'a racked rente was offered onelye fortie shillinges for the same and discharge the saide hall-corne rente and money due to the lorde oute of the said tenemente.' 16. He computes yearly value of hall-corn now as £120 over reserved rent. 17. My lord's officers let them pay in money or kind as they chose.

Oswald Ogle of Shilvington, gentleman, aged 82, examined September 16th, deposes :

3. That in Prior Gardner's time, the second prior before the dissolution, the tenants of the seven towns paid hall-corn for half their rent by the London bushel, eight gallons to the bushel. 4. At that time wheat was 12d. the bushel, bigg 6d., oats 3d. 5. 'Att that tyme their was a brassen bushell containing London measure kepte in the said prior's storehowse at Tynemouth for the said hall-corne.' He was servant to the said Prior Gardner for eight years before his death. 9. A bushel of wheat is now worth 8s., bigg 6s., oats 4s.

Edward Dinnande of Newcastle, yeoman, aged 100, deposes :

3. That he was servant to Prior Gardner when the tenants asked him to be allowed to pay their rent in corn : the prior did not wish it and would rather have had the same in money, saying, 'you will repente it another daie ;' but yielded as to half the rent. This deponent was servant to Mr. Anthony Mitforde, constable of Tynemouth, and received weckly of the 'bowsser'¹ of the said house a bowl of oats by the hall-corn (or London) measure for the said Anthony Mitforde's horses. 9. Wheat is now 20s. a bowl, then 12d. ; bigg now 13s. 4d., then 8d. or 9d. ; oats now 10s., then 4d.

William Cutter of Newcastle, cooper, aged 67, deposes :

10. That the Newcastle bushel for hard corn (wheat, rye and peas) contains 12 gallons, the London or Winchester bushel 8 gallons ; Newcastle water measure contains 11 gallons. Newcastle market measure for bigg and oats contains 18 gallons the bushel ; and the oatmeal measure at Newcastle 16 gallons the bushel. Within his remembrance the market measure of Newcastle hath been twice changed.

Depositions on behalf of defendant taken at St. Nicholas's, Newcastle, Tuesday, August 24th, 38 Eliz. (1596).

Robert Helme deposes :

2. That the queen is seised in her demesne as of fee of the manor of Tynemouth, and of five tenements in Preston, five in East Chirton, five in Whitley, ten in Monkseaton, four in Murton, eight in

¹ 'Bowsser' = burser.

Earsdon, and ten in Backworth, and of the parcel of ground adjoining to Preston called Welflatt; all customary lands of Tynmouth; except Welflatt as to which he is uncertain. 4. Two bushels of corn make a 'bowle,' four bowls a quarter, four quarters a chalder. 5. The queen, in the 23rd year of her reign, leased the tenements in the seven towns to Sir Henry Percy, then earl of Northumberland, and the now earl rightfully holds them. 6. Thomas Deckam, Edward Scott, and Richard Rawe have for twenty years received the rent-corn for Sir Henry Percy. After the dissolution of the monastery, 'one Medcalfe that had but one hand' received it for the use of Banister and Bowser, farmers there. The said corn was paid to the prior before. 8. There are two measures in Tynmouth castle sealed with the seal of the town of Newcastle. Thirty-two years ago, by command of Sir Henry Percy, this examinee fetched the same from Newcastle from David Winyarde, cooper, who kept them in Banister's and Bowser's times: one is the boll for hard corn to be straiked, the other for bigg and oats upheaped. 10. Being both straiked, the two measures hold the same, within less than a pint. 11. They are 'much less than the land measures or cawsey measures of Newcastle,' agreeing with the water measure at Newcastle. 13. These measures are greater than two bushels of the statute measure called Winchester or London measure by seven gallons and one quart in each bowl. 14. Newcastle is the nearest market town, and the tenants buy and sell among themselves by the Newcastle land measure. 15. At St. Martin's last past a boll or two bushels of wheat was sold in Newcastle market for 14s., bigg 10s., oats 7s.

William Darneton of North Shields, yeoman, aged 57, deposes:

8. That in Bowser's time David Winyard kept the said two measures, but had to bring them yearly at Martinmas to Tynmouth castle for measuring the hall-corn.

Robert Dowe, examined September 16th, 1596, deposes:

7. That when they paid money instead of corn, the tenants of Preston, Whitley, Monkseaton, and Earsdon paid £5 yearly, those of East Chirton £4 10s., those of Murton 40s.

Michaell Hutton of Newcastle, cooper, aged 42, deposes:

This day he saw an old measure, which Ralph Delavale, gent., Edmund Mylbanck, John Smythe and John Hall, customary tenants in Tynmouthshire, called the hall or half-corn bowl or measure of Tynmouth, sealed with the seal of Newcastle, and marked with David Winyarde's mark, this deponent's master's master. This deponent measured it with the brasen gallon of Newcastle, and it contained twenty-two of the said gallons, straiked, which is equal with Newcastle market measure upon the water. He has also seen the other hall-corn bowl, which is of like measure.¹

The plaintiffs were considered to have established the truth of their bill. It was therefore ordered, on April 14th, 1597, that the tenants of the seven towns should deliver their hall-corn by the Winchester or London measure, containing eight gallons to the bushel.²

The depositions leave no doubt that hall-corn was a commutation for half of the money-rent of the holding, made by agreement between Prior Gardiner (1528-1536) and his tenants, and that the change was made in consequence of the scarcity of coin of the realm. On the other hand, the practice of paying part of the rent in corn was one for which precedent existed in much earlier times, as is shown by the custumal of 1295. The new corn-rent took on the character of the old. Just as the bishop of Durham's tenants of Heighington paid their corn 'by the hall-measure'

¹ *Exchequer Depositions*, Mich. 38-39 Eliz. No. 28, Northumberland.

² *Decrees and Orders*, vol. 23, fol. 179.

in 1183,¹ so in the sixteenth century the men of Tynemouthshire meted out their produce by a 'hall-corn measure,' kept in the lord's store-house; and at Amble, another of the manors of the prior of Tynemouth, the copyholders came yearly with their corn, almost within living memory, to the ruined hall, and there poured it out in the presence of the officers of the lord of the manor.²

Since Prior Gardiner's time money had become cheaper. The debasement of the coinage caused a general rise in prices which was not checked by Queen Elizabeth's efforts to improve the standard. This alone would not have seriously affected the tenants of Tynemouthshire. The rise in the price of corn had not, however, been equalled by the rise in wages and the cost of living. Moreover, a fixed payment in corn proved especially burdensome after a poor harvest, and left the farmer with proportionately less grain to sell in the market, so that he was deprived of the advantages which high prices would otherwise have afforded. The steady rise had been suddenly accelerated by a succession of bad harvests, and the year 1596 was one of serious famine. In little more than half a century wheat had risen from eight to seventy-six shillings a quarter, barley from three or four shillings to forty or forty-eight shillings, and oats from two shillings to two pounds.

The payment of hall-corn long continued to be a source of discontent among the tenantry. Ralph Gardner of Chirton characteristically met a demand for rent in 1651 by answering plainly that 'he would not pay one corn nor anything else.'³ It is now no longer paid in kind, and the rents are calculated on the average price of the corn or grain obtained in Newcastle market on the Saturday previous to and the Saturday next after November 30th, that being St. Andrew's Day, when such payment accrued.

Not long after the hall-corn measure had been settled, the tenants were engaged in a new struggle over the form of their tenure. As stated above, the farming class in Tynemouthshire at the dissolution consisted of tenants in husbandry, holding at the will of the lord. Though possessed of customs, their condition was in most respects similar to that of other customary tenants in Northumberland, border-service forming the characteristic feature of their tenure. 'The customary tenants upon the borders of

¹ 'Ad mensuram aulae.' *Bolton Book*, Surt. Soc. No. 25, p. 20.

² Vol. v. of this work, p. 278.

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

Scotland,' Coke wrote, 'who have the name of tenants, were meer tenants at will; and though they keep the customes inviolated, yet the lord might, *sans controll*, eject them.'¹

Custom, however, was a more potent factor on the estates of an ecclesiastical corporation than within the manor of a lay lord. The earliest extant copies (1575 and later years) admit the tenant 'according to the custom of husbandry of the manor,' the *habendum* being to him and to his heirs (or assigns) or, in rare cases, for life only. Lord Ellenborough, commenting upon the phrase in the case of *Brown v. Rawlins*, expressed his opinion: 'The words *according to the custom of husbandry of the manor* may have different interpretations. They may, though not properly for the present purpose, refer to a known course of husbandry in the manor, regulating the culture of the tenants' estates, or they may mean that the tenants hold as husbandmen of the lord, in like manner as the villeins of the lord formerly were employed in the culture of the lord's lands, and as distinguished from an holding by military service properly so called, etc., etc.'²

That the custom of husbandry was no novelty is shown by a letter written in 1605 to the earl of Northumberland by Robert Helme, one of his officers. 'Ther was,' Helme wrote, 'in the late pryor's tyme emongest the tennants of the pryor an old and auntyent custom called in the copy *secundum consuetudinem husbandriae*, which custom was to the man only and not to the woman, but only at will.'³ George Whitehead, another of the earl's officers, also upheld the view that females were altogether excluded from the inheritance, and traced back the custom to the fourteenth century, asserting that it 'haythe for thre hundred yeares continewed only to heires male.'⁴

Though there is no authoritative presentment of the customs of the manor in the sixteenth century, the law of descent is set out in a bill in Chancery dated April 28th, 1596. The suit related to lands in Elswick, parcel of the manor of Tynemouth; and the plaintiff's assertions were not traversed so far as they related to manorial custom. These were:

¹ *Complete Copyholder*, sect. 32.

² *Brown v. Rawlins*; 7 East, at p. 433.

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁴ *Ibid.* The obvious reason for the exclusion of females is given in the case of *Newton v. Shafto* (1 Siderfin, at pp. 267-268). 'Si tiel general custome ne serra allow, uncore serra bone ley *ratione loci* car tiel mannor est bordering sur Scotland, et les escotes en temps pass ont usualment invadé le terre; et par cela serra safe pur seigneurs de provide eux-mesme de tiels tenants qui poent eux aid et defend, scilicet homes et nemy femes; et cela tend al safety de tout ceo roialme.'

It hath been accustomed that such person so admitted tenant shall have only estate therein for life ; and at his death the tenant-right therein falleth to his son if he leave a son, or to his next heir, provided such heir or one in his name come in at the first or second manor court holden after the death of the said tenant to demand the same, and be admitted tenant thereof for life ; and if such person do not so come, then he loseth his tenant-right, and the queen's officer may of his free will grant the premises to any other person for life, and such grant hath always been reputed lawful according to the custom of the manor.¹

So far as evidence is forthcoming, it appears that copyholds in Tyne-mouthshire were for life, with a tenant-right of renewal to the heirs male. ' But to support such a custom,' to quote the leading authority upon copyholds, ' the tenant must prove a constant usage of renewal upon payment of a fixed fine.'² The tenants asserted the certainty of their fines ; the earl denied it, and endeavoured to induce the tenants, not only in Tynemouthshire but on all other his copyhold estates, to exchange their copies for leases of twenty-one years.³ The policy is apparent from the letters of the earl's officers during the first ten years of King James's reign ; for instance Robert Delaval informed the earl on June 13th, 1609 :

It hath put the fermours of the sayd tennements in such feare, I acquanteinge them withall with the laett order in Chansarye sensured against the ladye of Cumberland's tennents, that noe coppye houlder lyable to a fine at the death of lord and tennent can have any state of inheritance at all. And therfor all there humble sutts are your lordship wylbe pleased to grante them leases for xxj yeares, and they wyll paye in lew of there fyne duple rent for everye farme. Some moe coppye houlders I have gotton to be wyllinge to take leases, which by a note hearen inclosed your lordship maye understand, humbly intreating your lordship wylbe pleased to send them all leases, which I doubt not but wylbe a good begineinge to make all your land in this cuntrye that's in coppye and tennent-right leassers.⁴

In the same year Robert Anderson, Peter Riddell, Robert Shaftoe, Henry Bowes, Anthony Errington, Thomas Dectham, and other of the king's customary and copyhold tenants within the manor of Tynemouth exhibited a petition to the king, in which they affirmed that they were copyholders of inheritance within the said manor, and that they had been severally seised of several estates of inheritance according to the custom of the manor ; that there were certain ancient customs for the payment

¹ *Chancery Proceedings*, Eliz. Ff. 1, No. 46, m. 1.

² Elton, *Law of Copyholds*, p. 43.

³ The fate of the Northumbrian customary tenants stands in curious contrast with the history of the peasant class in the rest of England. Their tenure was not consolidated as copyhold of inheritance, although at the start it was more advantageous than the ordinary villain tenure which developed into copyhold. Compare Savine in *Political Science Quarterly*, 1905, and the instances given in this work, vol. i. pp. 314-316, and vol. ii. pp. 334-336, 427-428, 432-434. Welsh tenant-right followed a similar course. The reason of the deviation seems to have been that the interests of the lords were exceptionally favoured in the marches. *Ex inf.* Professor Vinogradoff.

⁴ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

of fines for admittance to customary lands held by copy of court roll *secundum consuetudinem husbandrie* of his majesty's manor of Tynemouth, namely, that every tenant, holding by copy of court roll lands in the townships of Monkseaton, Preston, Backworth, East Chirton, Whitley, Murton and Earsdon, paid on every admittance, if upon descent, £2, and, upon alienation, £4 for a fine; and that every tenant holding by copy of court roll lands in the townships of Elswick, Benwell, South Dissington, Wylam, Hauxley, and Middle Chirton, paid on admittance, if upon descent, one year's rent, and, if otherwise, two years' rent; and so in the case of the township of Amble.

The petitioners were summoned before the Court of Exchequer, and there confessed that there had lately been differences in the forms of surrenders and the assessing of fines. The ancient court rolls, and other evidences for proof of the estates of inheritance and of the certainty of the fines, had been lost and were nowhere to be found. They therefore craved to receive confirmation of their estate and of their customs. Upon the examination of copies of court rolls and other evidences it appeared to the court that the copyholders were copyholders of inheritance. It was therefore decreed, on April 26th, 1610, 'that the said copyholders are and always have been copyholders of inheritance, and so from henceforth shall be,' that the continuance of their ancient rights and customs was just, and that the forms of surrenders and admittances should be such as were commonly used before the twentieth year of Queen Elizabeth. The petitioners, on their part, agreed to pay the sum of £789 13s. 4d. into the king's receipt.¹

In a letter written about the year 1615, Whitehead reported to the earl 'that heare ar letters coomed downe by the kinge's auditor to sell all the coppinghold estates in Tynemouthshire to the tennantes in fee farme, and to dissolve the kepinge of courtes ther.' This, however, was not done, the freehold remaining vested in the Crown until 1633. On May 16th in that year the seven copyhold townships, together with the township of Middle Chirton, the fee farm rent of Seghill, and land in Seghill and Hartley, were granted to William Scriven and Philip Eden, to hold in free socage, subject to the yearly rent of £126 13s. 4d. Scriven

¹ *L.T.R. Memoranda Rolls*, No. 142. The decree secured validity from Act of Parliament, 7 Jac. I. cap. 21 (an Act for confirmation of decrees hereafter to be made in the Exchequer Chamber and Duchy Court, concerning customary or copyhold lands and tenements), for which see *Statutes of the Realm*, vol. iv. pp. 1180-1181, and received special confirmation by letters patent dated May 1st, 1610.

and Eden, on August 2nd following, conveyed their estate to Henry Taylor and Thomas Cartwright, who made a similar conveyance on March 16th, 1640, to Algernon, tenth earl of Northumberland. The same earl had already acquired the town of North Shields in 1635, and the lordship of Tynemouth in 1637. These several estates have descended to the present duke of Northumberland.¹

The property which then passed from the Crown to the Percy family comprised that portion of the manor of Tynemouth known as the 'inshire.' The various townships forming the 'outshire' were also sold off during the reign of James I. and the early years of his successor. From that time their dependence upon the manor court of Tynemouth became merely nominal. Within the inshire there was a distinction between the freehold and the copyhold townships, or, as they were usually termed, the town and the country. The town included Tynemouth, with its offshoot of Cullercoats, and North Shields; the country was made up of the seven copyhold townships.

From the following extracts from the earlier court rolls, some idea may be had of the working of the manorial court. The earliest complete roll is undated but may be assigned to the year 1620. A consecutive series does not commence until 1650, and admission books and surrender books begin in 1681.

EXTRACTS FROM TYNEMOUTH MANORIAL COURT ROLLS.

October, 1562. *Nomina juratorum.*

Robert Bartram, gent.	Arthur Lee.	Christopher Barker.
Henry Anderson, gent.	Thos. Thomson.	Mark Corneth.
George Wilkinson.	Wm. Browne.	Robert Denand.
Robert Pattison.	John Mould.	Thos. Spearman.
John Read.	Cuthbert Blithman.	Thos. Winsoppe.
Anthony Errington.	Thos. Otway.	George Denand.
Nicholas Ritson.	Jo. Hills.	Win. Raye.
Thos. Bitleston.	Thos. Doves (<i>sic</i>).	John Matlyne.
Thos. Errington.	Nicholas Pearson.	Thos. Mills.

October, 1609. Fines imposed on the tenants dwelling outside Westgate for non-appearance, on all the tenants in Benwell for overloading the common, and on the tenants of Fenham for destroying hedges and ditches of the tenants of Benwell.²

April, 1610. Richard Fenwick, bailiff, ordered to levy 39s. of Thomas Humble for diverting the course of Stanley burn to the hurt of the tenants of Wylam.³

Circa 1620. Names of the two constables and two ale-tasters of Tynemouth, and of the four constables and two ale-tasters of Shields. Names of the jury of the inshire, of the jury of Tynemouth and Shields, and of the jury of the outshire. Surrenders made of lands in Benwell and Amble. Officers appointed for Benwell, Elswick, Westgate and Cowpen.

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² *Court Rolls*, P.R.O. 115.

³ *Ibid*.

April, 1623. Mr. Anthony Swinburne presented for building houses in the king's street, and working of slate or flag-stone in the king's highway, and sinking of pits to the hurt of the same way and hindrance of the way of the king's subjects.

April, 1649. Sir Nicholas Tempest, Lady Melton, Mr. Ralph Gardner, and Mr. George Milburne presented for not making a free passage for the water that comes from the coal pits, to the annoyance of the highway to Newcastle.

October, 1651. Names of the jury for the country, and of the jury for the town and manor of Tynemouth. The town of North Shields presented for the want of a pair of stocks, to the neglect of the execution of justice. John Nicholson and others presented for building and erecting houses on the common of Tynemouth, without the approbation of the lord of the manor or of the inhabitants or tenants of the same. Elizabeth Fenwick and others presented for not keeping gates in their hedges where they have been accustomed, to the great damage of the tenants, who have no liberty of grassing their geese in the common lanes.

April, 1652. James Ramsey presented for keeping, and hunting with, a greyhound contrary to the statute.

October, 1652. William Peterson of the North Shields presented for being drunk upon the Lord's Day, and for swearing and cursing fearfully upon the same day. Gawen Forster presented for building up the common passage to the ferry boat in the North Shields. Thomas Hall presented for ploughing his high close without lease or satisfaction.

April, 1653. Richard Saborne presents the inhabitants of Monkseaton for not repairing the roadway to Newcastle, and for drawing it so narrow and strait that carts and wains cannot pass along it, to the damage of the neighbouring towns.

October, 1653. Backworth; the condition amongst our neighbours is that every beast that is put in our stint is 4d. a beast. The township of Murton presents Ralph Wilson for the bad grinding of their corn.

October, 1654. The tenants of Cowpen and Elswick presented for making default.

October, 1655. Robert Clark presented for keeping his geese in Backworth pasture and living in Earsdon.

April, 1656. The town of Tynemouth, for want of a common pinfold, is amerced.

April, 1659. It is found that there are no butts either in Shields or Tynemouth; that the highway betwixt Tynemouth and Shields is not repaired, and likewise the common lonings are fallen in by means of the coal pits.

October, 1659. A presentment against Stephen Bowes for suing out of my lord's court to the county court.

October, 1662. Thomas Barker, for refusing to be sworn as constable, is therefore amerced three pounds.

October, 1663. The jury present that the farmers and inhabitants of East Chirton ought to keep up a gate in the place called the Blaw Pit between East Chirton, for the preservation of the pasture of Preston and the corn of Chirton, but they have not done so.

April, 1668. On an inquiry whether the town of Whitley ought to pay a horse's grass yearly to Mardon Mill, it is found that there is no horse's grass in the town-fields of Whitley belonging to Mardon Mill.

March 10th, 1685/6. Nomina juratorum.

Thos. Ottway, gen.	Christopher Barker.	John Mills.
Henry Archbold.	Anthony Hyndmarsh.	Thos. Hall.
Henry Barker.	John Rotherford.	Mark Corneath.
Wm. Reay.	George Rutter.	Luke Winshopp.
Edw. Spearman.	Robert Dining.	Jeremiah Lowe.

The said jury being charged to inquire what the particular customes belonging to the mannor of Tynemouth are, and what duties, rents and services are or ought to be paid to the lord of the mannor of Tynemouth for their copyhold farmes in the severall touns within the mannor of Tynemouth.

Imprimis. Wee finde that all the copyhold estates within the mannor of Tynemouth are copyhold estates of inheritance according to the custome of the mannor ; and if any copyholder dye seized of any copyhold estate, having a wife, that she shall enjoy such copyhold estate durement her widdowhood only, by vertue of her husband's copy, without paying any fine to the lord on taking any admittance.

And that after the death or marriage of the widow, the said copyhold estate shall descend and come to the eldest sonn of the said copyholder, and to take a copy thereof att the next court held for the said mannor ; upon such admittance by descent to pay to the lord 40s. for a whole farme, twenty shillings for a halfe farme, and tenn shillings for a quarter of a farme. If he dye without issue, the second sonn to take a copy, and pay such fine as before mentioned, and so from sonn to sonn. And for lack of sons, to the eldest daughter of such copyholder for life only, paying four pounds for a fine of a whole farme, and so proportionably ; and soe to descend and come to the next heire male in succession.

Wee finde that upon any voluntary surrender or alienation of any copyhold farme and admission thereupon, there is due to the lord for a fine four pounds upon such surrender, and soe in proportion for a quarter or halfe a farme.

Wee finde that if any copyholder surrender a close or any parcell of ground belonging to his copyhold estate, though it do not amount to a quarter of a farme, yet by the custome of the mannor, he shall pay to the lord for a full quarter for a fine and one shilling increased rent. And if the surrender compriseth more than a quarter, then he shall pay for his fine for halfe a farme. And if the surrender amounts to above halfe a farme, he shall pay for a fine for a whole farme.

And if any copyholder surrender any cottage or other house, part and parcell of his customary tenement, he shall pay to the lord yearly one shilling increased rent over and above his rent for the tenement, and a fine to the lord as much as though it were a full quarter of a farme. But if the surrender be only a mortgage, and the same be surrendered back againe to the mortgagor or his heires, then the said increased rent to cease, because the full rent of the farme is preserved to the lord, and the lord can have no prejudice thereby.

Wee finde that by the custome of the mannor, if any copyholder surrender upon mortgage part or parcell of his farme, that the same ought to be specified, and endorsed by a memorandum under or upon the back of the surrender expressing the condition upon which the same is surrendered.

Wee finde that all surrenders passed of copyhold estates ought out of court to be passed before and in the presence of two of the homagers or customary tenants of the said mannor.

Wee finde that the copyholders by the custome of the mannor may lett to farme their copyhold lands to any tenant by indenture of lease for three yeares without lycence ; and if for the terme of twenty or one and twenty yeares, then such copyholder ought to have lycence from the lord's steward paying his fee, without paying any fine to the lord for the same.

Wee finde that all surrenders of copyhold farmes ought to be presented att the next court after the making thereof, otherwise such surrender is void according to the custome of the mannor.¹

The most striking of the manorial customs, here recited, is the provision that, in default of male issue, a copyholder's eldest daughter shall have a life interest in her father's tenement. This was extended, by a decision in the case of *Newton v. Shafto*, to include the eldest surviving daughter.² The custom was apparently of recent origin, forming no part of the ancient custom of husbandry, which 'was to the man only and never to the woman.'

Fines are reckoned at so much a 'farm.' 'Farms' also formerly served as units for the assessment of poor rate and church rate. The meaning of the term and its relation to the ancient husbandland has been a matter

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² 1 Siderfin, at p. 267.

of controversy. A Chancery suit (*Attorney-General v. Trevelyan*), instituted in 1710, was revived in 1832 by Mr. William Woodman, as solicitor for the master of the Morpeth Grammar School, and copious evidence was collected as to the meaning of the term 'farm' in Netherwiton and other townships in Northumberland. The theory advanced by the plaintiffs was that a farm was 'an aliquot portion of the value of an entire township.' It may be safely admitted that, while the suit has led to a more thorough examination of the history of agricultural holdings, the proposition then advanced was untenable and failed to account for the facts adduced to support it.

The evidence in the Netherwiton case formed the foundation of papers by the late Bishop Creighton in the *Archæological Journal* (1884)¹ and by Mr. F. W. Dendy in *Archæologia Aeliiana* (1892).² A paper read in 1894 by the present duke of Northumberland before the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries³ brought the evidence of sixteenth and seventeenth century surveys to bear upon the question, whether the farms which formed the basis of rating in the eighteenth century were identical with the ancient husbandlands. The conclusions there set forth were based on a study of townships in the parishes of Warkworth and Lesbury, but are equally applicable to Tynemouthshire and may be accepted with little modification.

When we reflect how often the number of husbandlands is the same as that of the more modern farms; how in many cases there are indications pointing to a relation between them, though at this stage of the enquiry not a very explicable one, it appears highly probable that they were identical. But if the ancient farms be the same as the husbandlands, nothing can be more certain than that they were not aliquot parts of the whole township, of which they covered but a portion. They did not even include in many cases the whole of the land under cultivation, for in addition to them there were frequently freeholds, leaseholds, cottage lands, etc. Nor were they equal *inter se*, at anyrate in the sixteenth century, for they differed in acreage, in rental, in the number of cottages held with them, in the amount of multure paid to the mill; in short, in every particular incident to an agricultural holding.

At the date, probably very remote, when the plan of rating by farms was inaugurated, whatever the nature, variety or complexity of the tenures under which the land was held might be, a sharp line was drawn between that portion of the township which was composed of demesne land, and that portion which was not. The latter alone was rateable.

Originally that portion of a township which was not demesne, that is to say, which did not form a part of what has been sometimes described as the home farm of the lord, was divided into husbandlands of equal area, paying an equal 'ferme.' Within this rateable area there might or might not be a certain number of 'cotingers and cotterels,' holding directly of the lord. Whether they were rated or not we cannot tell. The main part of the burden indubitably fell on the husbandlands.

In course of years parts of the demesnes were granted to freeholders or leaseholders, but these having once been demesne, remained exempt from local taxation. Similarly, as time went on, some of

¹ *Archæological Journal*, vol. xlii.

² *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xvi.

³ *Ibid.* vol. xvii.

the land which was not demesne fell into the hands of the lord by escheat, forfeiture, etc., and might be granted by him to freeholders or leaseholders, but, having been part of the rateable area, it continued to be subject to that liability.

Probably, from the very commencement of this plan of rating, the husbandlands had constantly tended to become more and more unequal, and thus to deviate from the theory of their existence. From time to time some of the more enterprising of the inhabitants would break up small portions of the moor, with or without the consent of the authorities. They annexed, more or less intentionally, portions of the demesne to their holdings,¹ and again exchanged these strips with those of other tenants, so that there was a constant accretion on the part of some, and an increasing discrepancy between the size of the various farms.

By the commencement of the sixteenth century the meaning of the word 'farm' had undergone an important modification. It had ceased to be applied to the payment incident to the holding, and had become applicable to the holding itself.

At length the day arrived when there was a very general conversion of copyholds into leaseholds.² The process was not popular, but the practical change which it introduced into the economy of the manor may be easily overrated. Numbers of the old tenants and their descendants continued for very many years to occupy the same holdings after they had accepted leases. The tenants who already had land in the township were very ready to take up any farms that might fall vacant. This tendency had shown itself freely long before the extinction of the copyholds and it gradually led to a larger number of farms being held together than before.

But now a much more important and radical change took place, namely, the abolition of the common fields, and the inauguration of the modern system of several husbandry.³ Let us suppose a township consisting partly of leasehold farms, partly of demesne lands, partly of cottage holdings, and partly of common or waste. The leasehold farms were practically the old husbandlands. The demesnes had become almost entirely merged in them. When the copyholds had finally disappeared there was no object in keeping up the distinction between the demesnes and the husbandlands, and, as the same individuals held both, all trace of the former tended rapidly to disappear. But the land of which the husbandlands originally consisted, as well as large portions of that which had been demesne, lay scattered over the whole township. A held 200 acres in $5\frac{1}{2}$ farms, B 120 acres in $3\frac{1}{2}$ farms, C 120 acres in $3\frac{1}{4}$ farms, and so on.

The first difficulty that would arise would be found in the varying character of the land of the district. The 120 acres which B would receive in severalty might be the worst land in the township, while the same amount allotted to C might be the best. The arbitrator would therefore be obliged in fairness to add a few acres to B or to deduct a few from C. Thus there would be a further inroad into the small amount of equality which may still have existed between the farms.

Either now or at a later date the common would be divided.⁴ How was the arbitrator to allot the

¹ The extinction of the lord's rights over particular portions of the township is probably due quite as much to actual agreement as it is to gradual encroachment on the part of the tenants. Communal action on the part of the township in leasing the demesne, the lord's pasture and the garth of the manorial hall, should not be overlooked. Partition of the demesne among the customary tenants of the township probably took place in many townships during the late fourteenth or fifteenth centuries, though direct evidence of the fact is rare. 'It is to be noted,' says a survey of Long Houghton taken in 1567, 'that before the partition of this towne, every tennant had besyd his husband-lande certayne parte of the demayne lands. Every husband-lande was at the yearly rent of xxij'; the rent that any tenant paid more was for the parcell of demayne lande laid to his tenement which was vij^s by yeare.' See vol. ii. of this work, p. 370.

² This took effect in the townships of Tynemouth and North Shields. Copyhold survived in the seven towns of Tynemouthshire, but not without a struggle.

³ The north and south fields of Tynemouth, two-thirds of Preston, and the whole of the common fields of Earsdon were enclosed in 1649. Six-tenths of Backworth township was enclosed in 1654.

⁴ Shire Moor was divided among the freeholders and copyholders of Tynemouthshire in 1788. Most of the commons lying within the various townships had been enclosed much earlier, though Whitley links still remain unenclosed. George Whitehead, in or about the year 1613, advised the ninth earl of

common? A with his five and a half farms of 200 acres would have as much land as he could conveniently manage, while B and C on the contrary might be glad to take a little more. And thus the actual extent of a holding would, after the division, bear no relation whatever to the number of 'farms' at which it was assessed. This method of allotment would go to increase the size of the holdings in proportion to the ability of the tenant to cultivate it, not with relation to the number of 'farms' he held, and thus gradually the 'farms' would extend, in some cases, over the whole township. In such instances there would be no difficulty in rating the township by farms, but it was a different matter where there were cottage holdings and leaseholds not liable under the ancient system to a rate. Sometimes also there were small parts of the demesnes which had not been merged in the farms. One of these was the lord's mill. If these hitherto unrated portions of the township were few, it seems that they were ignored, upon the principle 'de minimis non curat lex.' But where they collectively embraced a considerable area, it would be felt to be unfair that they should contribute nothing to the rate. The course pursued in these cases was probably different in different places, and at different times in the same place. At Longhoughton it is said that four, and at Rennington three cottages were accounted equal to one farm.

So far as the data at present in our possession go, they seem to point to the following conclusions: First, that the farms which formed the basis of assessment at the end of the last and the commencement of the present century are the descendants and representatives of the ancient husbandlands; secondly, that it is highly probable, if not certain, that originally these husbandlands were, generally speaking, of equal value within the limits of the same township; thirdly, that they constantly tended to lose this equality, and that in the sixteenth century, if not long before, their inequality had become very marked; fourthly, that, notwithstanding, they continued to be regarded as equal bases of assessment; fifthly, that they were never coterminous with the township, save in cases in which the lord of the manor was the sole proprietor, and the husbandlands contained the only cultivated land within it. In this event they would indeed cover the whole area after the common had been divided, but even then the proportion of common added to each holding depended on other considerations than those of mere equality of value.¹

A 'farm' is not and never has been an aliquot part of the value of the whole township. At most it is an aliquot part of the rateable value.² The farm, which was taken as a convenient unit for assessment of church-rates in nearly a hundred townships in the county,³ originated in the

Northumberland: 'That your lordship take soome course that all your commons that ar already surveighed be, with what convenient speade to your lordship's best lykinge, lett by lease in parcellis as may be best improved, the tenants havinge sufficient left. My reasone is, the nature of the people is that, yf any busines be deferd, they thinke it is prolonged onely bycause your lordship cannot doe it, and soe growe headestronge. In all thesse affaires I shall upon my credit provide your lordship's best profit and take leases at reasonable rates, and inclosse and sufficiently fence and hedge them, which after the first lease will much advance your lordship's revenewes, havinge made choyse of good tennantes that ar good husbandes and men able to bestowe chardge of the enclosure of the same; which course must be especially observed in all your demises,—the choyse of sufficient men to be your lordship's tennantes.' Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

¹ Abridged from Earl Percy's paper on the 'Ancient Farms of Northumberland,' *Arch. Acl.* 2nd series, vol. xvii. pp. 22-35.

² Professor Vinogradoff has pointed out that the Early English township may best be regarded as a community of shareholders, its members holding equal shares known as husbandlands, virgates, bovates, etc. The shareholders were 'in scot and lot,' and the taxes or tribute imposed upon the township were equally partitioned among them. On the other hand manorial development brought with it the formation of 'inland' or demesne, which was omitted from the system of taxation. Demesne-land was outside the *geldable* area, and stood superior to the dependent holdings. See *The Growth of the Manor*, book ii. chapters 3, 4, 6. This finds its counterpart in the medieval rating-system.

³ See appendix A to Mr. F. W. Dendy's paper on the 'Ancient Farms of Northumberland,' in *Arch. Acl.* 2nd series, vol. xvi. pp. 152-154.

husbandland or two-bovate holding of arable in the common fields held by customary services. Later accretions gathered round it; there was a tendency for farms to increase in unequal proportions; but the intention of equality remained.

Had it not been for the church-rate, the farm system would have long ago disappeared and left little trace behind it. Farms survived as fiscal units after they had ceased to exist as separate agricultural holdings, for the church-rate stereotyped the economic system of the period when it was first imposed. No definite date can be fixed for the introduction of the rating system. The earliest known reference in English history to what was afterwards known as the church-rate occurs in the year-book of the forty-fourth year of Edward III., when it is mentioned as a custom in a single parish.¹ Probably it became general before the close of the fifteenth century. The 'farms' of the churchwardens' books in Tynemouth parish correspond with the husbandry holdings of 1538 but not with those of 1377.

With the abolition of church-rates there was no longer any need, in the majority of cases, to preserve the fiction of equal holdings. Copyhold, however, engenders conservatism, and in the manor court of Tynemouth the land included in any surrender or admittance is always stated to consist of so many farms or fractional parts of a farm. Fines, shire-rents, hall-corn rents, and boon-day rents are calculated upon the same principle.

¹ Gneist, *History of the English Constitution*, vol. ii. p. 200.

THE BOROUGH OF TYNEMOUTH.

The townships of Tynemouth, North Shields, Chirton, Preston, and Cullercoats were, by the Reform Act of 1832, constituted a parliamentary borough under the name of the Borough of Tynemouth; and by an order in council issued on August 6th, 1849, and confirmed by the statute 13 and 14 Victoria, chapter 43, they were incorporated under the same name as a borough for municipal purposes. Before dealing with the history of the modern municipality, some account may be given of the five distinct townships included within it.

TYNEMOUTH TOWNSHIP.

The township of Tynemouth is bounded by the sea upon the east and by the river Tyne upon the south. Its northern limit is the dry water-course of the Marden burn; while on the west it runs up to Preston, Chirton, and North Shields. It has an acreage of 1,347 acres.¹ The population is rapidly increasing, and in 1901 numbered 24,881.² This is mainly due to the fact that the greater part of the modern town of North Shields lies within the limits of Tynemouth township.

Until 1690 Cullercoats formed part of Tynemouth, and in earlier times the township even included North Shields, that town being built upon the prior's demesne. On the other hand it has swallowed up the tiny township of Milneton, of which the insignificance may be gauged by the entry against it of 4d. for cornage, the average assessment of the neighbouring townships being ten times that amount.³ Milneton lay near North Shields, and perhaps took its name from Tynemouth windmill on the

¹ The tithe-commutation map of 1843 specifies the acreage of the township as follows:

	a.	r.	p.
Arable	785	2	9
Meadow and pasture	161	1	11
Woodland	1	2	0
Buildings, lanes, churchyard, etc.	120	3	38
Rocks and sand to low-water mark	83	3	26
Roads, waggon-ways and waste	66	1	14

Total 1,219 2 18

² The Census Returns are: 1801, 3,856; 1811, 5,834; 1821, 9,454; 1831, 10,182; 1841, 11,854; 1851, 14,650; 1861, 16,560; 1871, 19,326; 1881, 22,548; 1891, 23,678; 1901, 24,881.

³ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 67.

eastern bank of the Spital dene.¹ A steep, wooded slope led down from the mill to the Pow burn, and eastward the mill field extended as far as the village of Tynemouth. Hugh de Milneton did fealty to the abbot of St. Alban's for this holding in 1264, as did his son, William de Milneton, in 1291. In 1306 the owner of Milneton was excused payment of relief on the score of poverty.² The prior and convent of Tynemouth acquired two messuages and eighteen acres here in 1325,³ and more land in 1348. In 1377 they were in receipt of 4s. yearly as rent of assize out of Milneton, and of 14s. yearly rent from lands in the prior's hand.⁴

There can be little doubt that Tynemouth formed part of the original endowment of Mowbray's monastery. It was mainly an agricultural settlement, though, even in the twelfth century, fishing played an important part in the life of the villagers. The population, English in the main, had a large leavening of Danes. Peculiarly Danish names, such as Orm, testified to the origin of those who bore them.⁵ Orm was a poor villager whose only daughter was a paralytic, and lay all night in prayer before St. Oswin's tomb, until, in the early morning hours, while the brethren were chanting matins, she felt life come back to her crippled limbs, and, rising, she walked, and laid her crutch as a thank-offering upon the altar.⁶

There is an early rental of the township, assignable to the close of the twelfth or the commencement of the thirteenth century.⁷ Amongst purely Teutonic names, such as Milo, Edulph, Algar, Wlryk, Archil, and Edrike,⁸ are found names that are evidently of Scandinavian origin ;

¹ The mill was burned down in 1805, and in 1837 a mariners' asylum was erected on its site by the Master Mariners' Association, a society founded in North Shields in 1829 for the purpose of supporting aged, infirm, or decayed master mariners of the port of Newcastle. The organization has since been reconstituted as the Tyne Mariners' Institute. The name of Mill field is still applied to the land between the Spital dene and Tynemouth village.

² *St. Alban's Register*, fols. 62 b, 111 b, 153 b, 164.

³ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 86 b to 87. The deeds there set out are :

(i.) Grant from Robert de Middleton, chaplain, to Robert Carter of Earsdon, of all his land and his two tofts in Milneton, 'juxta les Sheles.' Hiis testibus, Johanne de Bacworth, Johanne de Plescies, Henrico Faucus, Roberto de Rihille, Johanne de Morton, Alano de Castro, Henrico de Harden, tunc senescalco de Tynem', et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, December 23rd, 1319.

(ii.) Grant of the premises from Robert Carter to Thomas de Raynton. Hiis testibus, Johanne de Bacworth, Johanne de Plescies, Henrico Faukes, Roberto de Ryhill, Johanne de Morton, Alano de Castro, Thoma de Hidewyn, Roberto Sauvage de Tynemouth, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, August 12th, 1324.

(iii.) Grant of these and other lands from Thomas de Raynton to the prior and convent of Tynemouth. Dated August 5th, 1325. See Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 138.

⁴ *Ibid.* fols. 51 b and 58 b.

⁵ Old Danish, *Orm* ; old Norse, *Ormr*.

⁶ *Vita Oswini*, cap. xxxiii.

⁷ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 1 b to 2.

⁸ The names Edulph, Algar, and Wlryk represent the commoner forms, Eadwulf, Ælfgar, and Wulfric.

such are Svan, Hedne, Hother, and perhaps Heftin.¹ Thirteen persons are entered as paying rent for holdings of a toft and two bovates apiece, the annual sum paid varying from two to three shillings, probably according to the size of the toft. There is one holding of a single bovat, one of twelve acres, one of eight acres, three of four acres each, and one of three acres. The majority of the inhabitants hold single tofts with no land in the common fields. A few rents are partly paid in corn. Sixty-six names in all are recorded, the total of the rent being £5 6s. 4d. and ten 'cendra' of barley-malt. Milo, whose name heads the list, had, besides his two bovates, half an acre of land on the road to Whitley and the land formerly held by the porter of Tynemouth. He may be identified with the Milo, son of Hubert, who attests several charters of the period, and with the father of Simon, son of Milo, whose claim to two monk's corrodies from the priory led to Prior Gubiun's resignation.²

In an account of homages and fealties rendered to Abbot Norton in 1264, it is recorded that there were fifteen chief tenants, whose names are given.³ A similar entry for 1291 again gives fifteen names, some of which are identical with those in the earlier list.⁴ Light is thrown on the character of this group by a memorandum drawn up by Thomas de Rainton, who was seneschal about the year 1325 :

In the town of Tynemouth there were some fifteen tenants, of whom some held twenty-four acres, some twenty-six, some thirty. William, son of Alan, held one land by doing at the prior's maintenance one bon-er, and one bon-harowe without food, and one in-lad (namely, three thraves of wheat, four thraves of barley, and four thraves of barley) without food ; and by doing one Neusum-lad, and then he shall have food ; and by doing three boon-works in autumn, namely two, and a third which is called the great boon-work, at the prior's maintenance. And four sworn men of Tynemouth shall be reapers at the great boon-work. And each of the aforesaid fifteen tenants does and shall do the same services as the aforesaid William, son of Alan, used and ought to do.⁵

¹ *Svan* : old Danish, *Sven* : old Norwegian, *Sveinn*. *Hedne* : old Danish, *Hithin* : old Norwegian, *Hedhim*. *Hother*, used as a proper name, is exclusively Danish, and in old Danish is written *Hothir* and *Höthir*. *Heftin* is perhaps *Hefne*, a name exclusively old Danish.

² See p. 70. In 1213, Ralph, son of Ralph, paid a mark for having an assize in the king's court between himself and Simon, son of Milo of Tynemouth, defendant, for two carucates in 'Elfinton' and forty acres in Tynemouth. *Five Rolls*, 15 John, m. 7.

³ *St. Alban's Register*, fols. 62 and 111. The names of the tenants were : Walterus filius Alani cementarii, Radulfus filius Gregorii, Nicholas filius Radulfi, Gilbertus serviens, Robertus filius Baldewyni, Galfridus filius Henrici, Gilbertus filius Roberti, Rogerus Bolt, Willelmus filius Alexandri sutoris, Walterus de sartrino, Galfridus de molendino, Rogerus Fairman, Willelmus filius Rogeri de Wottone, Willelmus Hendele, et Robertus Poyen.

⁴ *Ibid.* fol. 153b. This list gives the following names : Willelmus filius Alani, Petrus filius Radulfi, Johannes filius Richardi Bercar, Robertus del breuhos, Robertus filius Baldewini, Galfridus filius Henrici, Radulfus filius Gilberti, Petrus de Bakworth, Willelmus filius Alexandri, Johannes de Redinges, Galfridus de molendino, Adam de coquina, Willelmus filius Rogeri de Wittone, Thomas filius Germani, et Alanus de Hertlawe.

⁵ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 71 b.

These services are borne out by a fuller custumal of the township, known only from fourteenth-century transcripts, but probably drawn up about the year 1200.¹ A distinction is there drawn between (1) the holders of lands who do boon-ere and boon-harrow, (2) the holders of lands and tofts who also do three boon-works and the great auth-rep, (3) the fifteen tenants who perform the additional services of in-lade and Neusum-lade.² 'Selfodes' do three boon-works in the autumn. The men of Tynemouth are keepers of the prior's prisons and pay £8 for every escape. The fifteen tenants pay 40s. as abbot's-welcome on the first visit made to Tynemouth by a new abbot of St. Alban's.

Rights of common are set out in detail. After the harvest is over, the fifteen tenants have common of pasture in the town fields for all their live stock except swine. On the other hand the Midhope and the Howes form a pasture held in severalty by the prior as lord of the manor, and here the prior has exclusive grazing rights, as well as on all the balks in the open fields. He may also, at will, enclose a portion of the land lying temporarily fallow, and depasture his cattle there, though the communal rights of the townsmen are recognised by permission afforded to them of turning into this enclosure the plough-oxen with which they do the boon-ere or tillage of the lord's demesne. Cottagers have no pastoral rights within the township; they must go with their beasts to the shire moor.

There is no trace of any base service except the payment of merchet and layrewite, and in the north that custom was never a mark of unfree status. The fifteen possess all the characteristics of customary freeholders. When a tenant dies, the next heir of the blood succeeds upon paying double the first year's rent. They may alienate their holdings in whole or in part, subject to the payment of a fine in court. They do fealty and suit of court from three weeks to three weeks. Other customs include

¹ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 1, 51 b, and 58 b; printed by Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 594. The custumal is repeated on fol. 71 b, with verbal differences. Neusum-lade, or the carting of two loads from Seaton Delaval, is there described as a service to which all the fifteen tenants were liable, 'preter terram Ulryg et Roberti filii Wolrik, qui duo carriabunt unam carectatam.' Robert, son of Ulryk, reappears in the early rental already quoted as tenant of a single bovat, a fact that accounts for his performing only half the carriage-service incumbent on the two-bovat holdings. Ulryg's land is not mentioned there probably because it was then in the prior's hand; but the specification of only fourteen in place of fifteen tenements leads to the surmise that Ulryg's land was the fifteenth. Thus the institution of fifteen chief tenants is carried back into the twelfth century, and the custumal is found to synchronise with the rental, though allowance must be made for insertion into the custumal of later additions, such as the note of Philip of Marsden's exemption from merchet.

² See above, p. 224, for an explanation of these terms.

the payment of multure at the thirteenth dish, the prohibition against carting the harvest until the prior has begun to cart, and the payment of eight shillings as amend for bloodshed.

Regulations are given for the holding of assize of bread and ale. Toll is mentioned as being paid on strong ale and small beer before the liquor was exposed for sale. In the fourteenth century the toll on ale (*tolnctum cervisie*) for the township was usually farmed out at a yearly rent of 15s. to 20s.,¹ and after the suppression of the monastery the Crown continued to receive annually the sum of 26s. 8d. from the tenants as the farm of this assize.²

A survey made in 1292 shows that the yearly money-rent due from Tynemouth amounted to £5 os. 10d., and that nine quarters of barley-malt were paid in, and valued at 2s. 6d. each. The demesne consisted of four carucates of arable, the annual net return from a carucate being £1 7s. The pasture-land was stocked with 14 cows and 124 sheep, and a yearly profit of 10d. was made from each cow, and of 4d. from each sheep. Coal mines brought by estimation £3 1s. 4d.; the perquisites of the court amounted to £1 8s. There were six mills, valued, by general estimation, at four marcs each per annum. The total yield was £34 13s. 7d.³

Two years later the demesnes were measured. Those of Tynemouth and of Preston appear to have lain in common. Their extent is given as 533 acres 10 perches, which corresponds roughly with the estimate of four carucates in Tynemouth and two carucates in Preston. The demesnes are specified as follows⁴:

	a.	r.	p.		a.	r.	p.
The close on the south side of the town of Tynemouth	9	0	0	The Flores	15	0	20
Gilberdesacres	13	1	0	Stanylawe	30	2	0
The buttes on the north side of Gilberdesacres	11	0	0	Wytley gate	22	2	0
The mill field	30	2	0	Belhow flat	27	0	20
The close called the Brokes	6	2	20	North-wel flat	51	2	30
The same	15	3	0	Est-den-side	23	0	0
Aver-acres	47	2	0	West-den-side	24	3	20
On the north side of the town of Tynemouth	32	0	20	Tunstal dyke	24	2	30
Merden flat	14	1	0	Buttes near the park	4	2	20
The Brokes near Merden	28	1	0	Crumbe flat	21	1	0
				Ploumen landes	8	3	0
				Wel flat	35	2	30
				Burdestan flat	34	0	0

¹ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 161, 165, 169 b, 172, 176 b.

² Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol i. p. 220.

³ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 591, citing *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 54.

⁴ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 4.

The subsidy-roll of 1296 gives the following names of residents who then paid subsidy:

TYNEMOUTH SUBSIDY ROLL.

			£	s.	d.		s.	d.
Summa bonorum	Ricardi de pistrina ...	...	2	6	8	unde regi	4	3
"	Galfridi de bricina ...	...	1	13	10	"	3	1
"	Roberti Scot ...	...	1	19	10	"	3	7½
"	Willelmi de Wylom ...	...	1	14	9	"	3	2
"	Johannis de Reding ...	...	1	8	4	"	2	7
"	Roberti Turnur ...	...	1	1	4	"	1	11¼
"	Philippi de Merston ...	...	1	13	9	"	3	0¾
"	Juliane Treuelove ...	...	0	15	8	"	1	5
"	Rogeri Brun ...	...	1	6	2	"	2	4½
"	Tunnok Boyt ...	...	0	16	6	"	1	6
"	Ade Burward ...	...	1	1	11	"	2	0
"	Willelmi Dabber ...	...	0	15	3	"	1	4¾
"	Nicholi del Hay ...	...	0	11	10	"	1	1
"	Willelmi Rakedul ...	...	0	14	5	"	1	3¾
"	Petri de Bakeworth ...	...	1	2	6	"	2	0½

Probatur. Summa hujus ville, £19 2s. 9d.; unde regi, £1 14s. 9½d.¹

By an inquisition taken in 1275, it was found that the prior had lately begun to hold markets at Tynemouth on Sundays.² This encroachment on the royal rights formed one of the charges brought against Prior Walden in 1290; and it was then urged in addition that he held assize of bread and ale without warrant, and that in the year 1279 he had built four common bake-houses at Tynemouth. These bake-houses were farmed by William Savage, William Barbitonsor, Robert de Bruerne, and Alan le Taliour, common bakers, at a yearly rent of eight marks. The tenants came there to bake their bread, paying furnage for the use of the ovens; and there the prior brought his own flour to be baked into loaves which were then taken down to the shore at Shields and sold to the sailors and merchants who put in at that port. Newcastle merchants, hitherto secure in their monopoly of victualling and provisioning foreign vessels, found in the priory a dangerous rival.

Walden denied holding a regular market. He had a tumbrel by grant from Richard I., and this implied the assize of bread and ale. He admitted having bakers, brewers, and fishermen in his employ. The presence of stalls, booths, and shambles testified to the sale of meat and drink, and men met and chattered on Sundays in St. Oswin's church. But he argued that

¹ *Lay Subsidy Roll*, Northumberland, 1152.

² *Rotuli Hundredorum*, Record Com. vol. ii. p. 18.

there was no fixed market-day ; he took no market-tolls ; and he pointed, as justification for his own practice, to the informal retail trade carried on in every country village. His plea was not held good. For taking furnage and amends for bread and ale he was fined five marks, and all signs of a market were ordered to be removed.¹

In 1304 the monks took advantage of a visit paid to them by Edward I. and his queen to petition for a grant of an annual fair. Queen Margaret used her influence with her husband, who on September 17th accorded licence to hold a fair at Tynemouth every year upon the eve of St. Oswin's Day, and the fortnight following. A protest from the burgesses of Newcastle followed upon this act, with the result that the charter was recalled in deference to their wishes.²

William Savage, who was one of Prior Walden's four bakers in 1298, was the founder of a mercantile family of some note. Robert Savage, whose name occurs on several occasions in the *Tynemouth Chartulary*, was a householder in Tynemouth in 1336.³ A second William Savage, settled in York as a merchant, was admitted as a freeman of that city in 1336/7, and filled the post of bailiff in 1356.⁴ In 1366 he successfully claimed a toft and twenty acres of land in Tynemouth as nephew and heir of William Gaclut, whose property had been seized for supposed adherence to the king of France.⁵ He became mayor of York in 1369, and died during his year of office, having by will devised all his lands and tenements in York, upon the death of his wife Constance, to his nephew Robert Savage and his heirs, and, for default of heirs, to the prior and convent of Tynemouth.⁶ Robert Savage the younger was a merchant like his uncle. He was admitted as a freeman of York in 1364, became chamberlain in 1370, and was thrice mayor (1384, 1391, 1392).⁷ His son, William Savage, succeeded on his father's death to lands in Tynemouth, Preston, and East Chirton, of which he enfeoffed William de Mitford and William de Haliwell by

¹ Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. ii. appendix, No. lxxxviii-xc.

² *Ibid.* No. ciii-cv ; *Memoranda de Parlamento*, 1303, Rolls Series, pp. 96-97 ; *Inq. ad quod damnum*, 33 Edw. I. File 55, No. 1.

³ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 14, 15, 18.

⁴ *Freemen of York*, Surt. Soc. No. 96, p. 31 ; Drake, *Eboracum*, ed. 1788, vol. ii. pp. 118-119.

⁵ *Coram Rege Rolls*, No. 424, m. 24.

⁶ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 218.

⁷ *Freemen of York*, pp. 59, 67, 80, 89, 90. The will of Robert Savage of York, merchant, dated August 1st, 1391, and proved March 21st, 1398/9, is printed in *Testamenta Eboracensia*, Surt. Soc. vol. i. p. 157.

deed dated January 8th, 1399/1400.¹ Another Robert Savage was a tenant and baker in North Shields in 1447.² The Savages continued to reside at York into the sixteenth century, and on several occasions held civic offices. Archbishop Savage came of a different stock.

In spite of its struggles with Newcastle, Tynemouth must have benefited by the increased commercial prosperity of its rival. The Newcastle trade brought many merchants and skilled artisans to the sea-board town. A family of Goldsmiths living in Tynemouth probably practised the art that named them. In 1333 a commission of oyer and terminer was issued upon the complaint of Robert Jouyn, Robert de Chastelon, and their fellows, merchants of Montivilliers in Normandy, that certain merchants of Hull, Raven-ness, Lynn, and Yarmouth, had entered their ship, the Saint Martin, when stranded near Tynemouth, assaulted the mariners and carried away the cargo.³ Wrecks were frequent on the shoals of the un-buoyed and un-charted Tyne. Where there were survivors, the prior bought up the wreck,⁴ and, where there were none, he seized it as lord of the manor.

The destruction of Hexham priory by the Scots in 1296 came as the first intimation of the storm that threatened every quarter of the county, and drove the inhabitants of Tynemouth to take shelter within the newly fortified castle.⁵ In 1315 a Scottish army advanced to the very walls of the priory, destroying the prior's coal-workings at Marden and maliciously setting fire to Sir Walter de Selby's house in Tynemouth.⁶ A year or two later, Gilbert de Middleton occupied the town, and kept the monks closely besieged.⁷ Evidence of these attacks is to be found in a survey of Tynemouth taken in 1336.⁸

¹ *Assize Rolls*, P.R.O. No. 1517, m. 40 d. In 1407-1408 William de Haliwell and Agnes his wife sold their land in Tynemouth, Preston, East and Middle Chirton, and Milneton, to Robert Hornsee of North Shields for 100 marks. *Feet of Fines*, 9 Henry IV. No. 5. It comprised seven messuages and forty acres, an estimate which helps to identify it with the lands held at the dissolution by the Dacres of Gilsland, and subsequently by the Howards of Carlisle.

² Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 572.

³ *Cal. Pat. Rolls*, 1330-1334, p. 445.

⁴ The *Tynemouth Chartulary* (fol. 163) contains three such agreements drawn up on March 27th, 1332, between the prior of Tynemouth and the masters of wrecked vessels. A single example suffices to show their nature: Pateat universis per presentes quod ego, Petrus Grif de Whitsand, nauta et dominus cujusdam navis de Whitsand vocate navis sancti Johannis, fracte tempestate maris in mari apud Tynemuth, die veneris proximo post festum annunciacionis beate Marie, anno regni Edwardi tercii sexto, pro quadam summa pecunie mihi pre manibus soluta, vendidi priori et conventui de Tynemuth omninodum maeremium proveniens de predicta navi, cum anchoris, velo, et omnibus cordibus et omnibus aliis utensilibus, appendiciis, et omnibus aliis rebus quocumque nomine nominantur [?], mihi et predictae navi pertinentibus seu inde aliquo modo provenientes, ad quorumcumque manus devenerint et ubicumque inveniantur, etc. Quibus sigillum meum est appositum, cum sigillo Willelmi Hering, Johannis de Grete-vill, et Johannis de Ainewyk, burgensis ville Novi Castri super Tynam. Datum apud Tynemuth, die et anno supradictis.

⁵ See above, p. 83.

⁶ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 168, 12; see also above, p. 86.

⁷ See above, p. 87.

⁸ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 11-24.

The town then consisted of four long streets running east and west, carried at one end up to the priory gate. There were 117 houses in the town, having most of them plots of land attached. On the north side was the vicarage, in which John of Tynemouth may, a few years previously, have projected or composed his *Golden History* and his collection of the lives of English saints. The total rental of the town was £6 9s. 10d. The majority of the houses were hereditary and capable of alienation, but some were the freehold of the prior and convent, by whom they were leased for life or for a term of years. As the survey is too long for quotation, a few extracts from it must suffice to show its character:

Farms, rents, customs and services of the house of Tynemouth, written in the month of March, A.D. 1336.

In the first place there is a plot (placea) of waste ground next to the gate of Tynemouth priory, on the south side. When it was built upon, it used to pay 1s. 8d. per annum; but, when the houses built upon this plot had been pulled down by the prior of Tynemouth, and, as need was, demolished, that the shavaldores and other barons in time of war and shavaldry might not be received and hidden in the said houses, to the destruction and capture of Tynemouth priory, then Robert de Slikborne surrendered this plot to the said prior; but up to now it lies waste in the prior's hand and pays nothing. Memorandum that the aforesaid houses were built on different plots, namely, on a plot which Nicholas del Hay once held, and on another plot which Alice de Thorkelawe once held.

* * * *

Item, William Alcock had a plot, and Geoffrey Alcock had another plot, which they sold to Richard Strangale, who built a house upon them, paying 1s. 6d. rent. But when the house had been pulled down by the prior, like Robert de Slikborn's houses, Richard surrendered the said plot to the prior for a sum of money in which he was bound to the prior. William Alcock had nine acres of land in Tynemouth field, of which the almoner bought four, and he now holds them and pays 8d. rent; and the remainder are in the hands of divers tenants, who pay 10d. rent for them. This is one of the lands of the fifteen.

* * * *

Item, there is another plot, on which was a house burned by the Scots. Sir Walter de Selby now holds it. It used to pay 1s. rent.

Item, there is standing a messuage which belonged to Robert de Whiteley, and he gave it to Nicholas le Granger and to Alice his wife, in perpetuity. Afterwards John Defte acquired it from them and paid 1s. rent. Afterwards the said John gave it to the prior of Tynemouth in perpetuity.

* * * *

Item, John de Tewyng holds for a term of years a messuage which belonged to John Shephird, and now it belongs to Emma Shephird, sister of the said John Shephird, whom John Fesefoul of Wylam, the prior's serf, married. [] acres of land in Tynemouth field belong to it and are in the hands of diverse tenants. It is one of the lands of the fifteen.

* * * *

John de Stiford, who married Agnes, daughter of Laurence le Lader, holds and has a third part of a tenement formerly belonging to Gilbert Baldwyne. He pays 1d. rent and 2d. for a third part of a croft-land let to Robert de Hertlawe for life while he was still alive.

Item, Simon Mazon holds two parts of the last-mentioned messuage, and pays 3s. 4d. rent for these two parts and for land in Tynemouth field in the hands of diverse tenants; and, as the land is in the hands of diverse tenants, Roger le Tollere, who is one of these tenants, is assigned by the other tenants to collect and levy the said sum and to pay it to the prior's bailiff.

Item, the said Simon holds a piece of the prior's croft on the south side of the town of Tynemouth, which Richard, prior of Tynemouth, leased to Robert de Hertlawe without writing and without enrolment, for the term of the said Robert's life, at 4d. per annum. Though Robert is now dead, the prior allows the said Simon to hold the plot at the aforesaid rent.

* * * *

Item, John, son of John de Horsley, who married a daughter of William Russel of Dissington, and Richard le Myrie, who married his other daughter, hold a toft upon which they intended to build, paying 1d. rent; but it now lies waste.

* * * *

Item, Ranulph le Taillour holds a messuage with land in the field which belonged to Geoffrey Dabbere, and pays 3s. rent. Ranulph gives yearly, on St. Michael's Day, $\frac{3}{4}$ d. for 'Hertnes-penies'; and he is one of the fifteen, and pays 2d. for having ingress and egress to and from his grange at the head of the town of Tynemouth on the south.

* * * *

Item, William, son of Robert, son of William, holds by inheritance a messuage with land in the field, and pays 4d. rent.

* * * *

Item, from the house which, with land in the field, belonged to William le Sclatere, 2s. 2d. The said William conferred this house on the prior and convent to the use of the chapel of St. Mary.

* * * *

Here ends the South-Rawe and the Cauce begins.

* * * *

Here ends the Cauce, and the South Middle Rawe begins at the west end of the town of Tynemouth.

There is a plot in the prior's hand which Roger Gray once held; it was once built upon and used to pay 1s. rent. Item, there is another plot in the prior's hand, which Nicholas the goldsmith once held, and it used to pay 1s. rent. Item, there is another plot in the prior's hand which Gilbert Pape once held; it used to pay 2s. 3d. and now is let out at the prior's will for 6d. rent.

Item, William, son of Roger Mazon, holds a plot, which William de Bebeset once held. Walter Mazon bought the plot from the daughter and heir of William de Bebeset. It pays 2d. rent.

John de Slikborn, who married the daughter of Ralph le Barkere, the prior's serf, holds a messuage and an acre of land in Tynemouth field on the south side of the town of Preston, both once held by the said Ralph; he pays 3s. rent.

Item, Alice de Whiteley holds of the prior for a term of years a messuage which belonged to Walter Crok. Upon Walter Crok's death, his son and heir surrendered this tenement to the prior. It used to pay 3s. rent and two days' work in the autumn.

* * * *

Item, John, son of John de Horton, holds a messuage and land in Tynemouth field which formerly belonged to John de Redyng, and pays 2s. 8d. rent. He is one of the fifteen. William Bacon, who married Maud, daughter and heir of John de Redyng, holds a third part of the said messuage and land; and they two pay $\frac{3}{4}$ d. at Michaelmas for 'Hertnes-penyes.'

* * * *

Item, there is a plot in the prior's hand which belonged to Robert de Slikborn. This Robert surrendered it to the prior. It used to pay 7d. rent. The prior assigned it to the new chapel of St. Mary, reserving to himself the rent of 7d.

* * * *

Item, Christiana, widow of William de Neuborn holds a messuage which her husband once held, and pays a third of the rent to the refectorar, and 6d. as new rent to the prior. It is not known whether it was leased for a life-term, therefore let inquiry be made.

* * * *

Matilda, widow of John Litel, holds a messuage leased to her for the term of her life, and pays 6d. rent; but Prior Richard de Tewyng has remitted her the rent so long as he shall have the care of the monastery.

Here ends the South Midel Rawe, and the North Midel Rawe begins.

Simon Sutor held a messuage next to the gate of Tynemouth priory, on the north side, which used to pay twelve horse-shoes and nails for the same. It has now been wholly pulled down and can never be rebuilt, because of the new part of the priory.

* * * *

Gilbert de Whiteley holds a messuage which he bought from John Stobhard. It once belonged to William de Chirtone. He pays nothing to the prior except [] days' work in autumn, because William, son of Robert son of William, pays 8s. 4d. rent for that tenement and for others which he holds in Tynemouth.

* * * *

Roger Walys holds a messuage of the prior for a term of years, and pays 2s. 6d. rent. The lane on the west side of this messuage is the prior's severalty, and none but the prior and his successors have right of way.

* * * *

The warden of the chapel of the blessed Mary holds a messuage which Roger Turnour once held, and pays 6d. rent.

* * * *

Here ends the North Midel Rawe, and the North Rawe begins.

* * * *

William de Copon, the prior's chief carter, holds a cottage which William de Stiklawe once held, and pays 6d. rent.

* * * *

John Clerk of Sheles holds a plot upon which part of the vicarage has been built, and pays 4d. rent.

* * * *

In this survey the fifteen tenants are again prominent. Before the close of the century one of their lands had been acquired by the chamberlain. Four had fallen out of the economic system, being two of them farmed out for three quarters of barley-malt yearly, and two for six bowls of barley-malt.¹ Ten holdings were left, and it was at ten 'farms' that the township came to be assessed for church rates.

From time to time the prior and convent added new lands to their demesne. Besides land of unspecified amount acquired in 1345, 1348, 1354, 1380, and 1392, they had royal licence to receive the following parcels of property in the course of the fourteenth century :

Extent of Property.							Grantor.	Date.
4 acres	...	...	...	...	...	...	William, son of Alan le Machun	1307
1 acre	...	...	...	...	...	...	Adam le Vacher	"
1 acre	...	...	...	...	...	...	William de Kenneslawe	"
1 messuage	...	...	...	...	...	...	John Deste	1337
3 tofts and 14 acres	...	...	...	...	...	...	John de Wheteley and Alan Whitheved	1360 ²
2 tofts and 10 acres	...	...	...	...	...	...	Alan Whitheved	" ³
1 messuage, 1 acre, and a yearly rent of 3s. from a tenement	...	...	...	...	...	...	Thomas de Walton and Alan Whitheved	1392

¹ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 71 b.

² *Ibid.* fol. 110 b. Deed dated at Tynemouth, June 10th, 1360. *Hiis testibus*, Willelmo de la Vale, Gilberto de Whitley, Roberto de Tewing, Johanne de Murton, Adam Fauconer, Willelmo del Kylene, Roberto Gub, Johanne Clerk, Johanne de Thornton, Willelmo de Heppescotes, et aliis.

³ *Ibid.* fol. 111 b. Deed dated at Tynemouth, June 3rd, 1360, in the presence of the same set of witnesses (except Fauconer).

There were several small freeholds in the township, owing fee farm rents to the prior but subject to no customary service. One of these was the property of the Savages, to whom allusion has been made above. Two series of charters illustrate the descent of other estates.¹ Gilbert Wilkinson, son of William Robinson of Tynemouth, who held one of these freeholds in the second part of the fourteenth century, was chaplain of the Greystoke chantry in the priory church.² His sister Agnes married William de Hepescotes of Hepscot near Morpeth.³ He entailed his property upon a nephew, Gilbert Webster,⁴ who in 1413 parted with it to Robert de Harbottle of Preston.⁵ A younger branch of the Harbottle family appears to have settled at Tynemouth and to have held land here until the year 1579.⁶ The second series relate to land in Tynemouth, Preston, and East and

¹ See Appendix II.

² See p. 85, note 1.

³ Hec indentura testatur quod Gilbertus de Tinemuth capellanus concessit et ad feodi firmam dimisit Agneti relicte Willelmi de Episcotys sorori sue unam partem tenementi sui in villa de Tinemuth ex parte australi dicte ville, in latitudine inter tenementum Willelmi de Seton ex parte occidentali et tenementum Roberti Savage ex parte orientali, scilicet aulam cum selario et solario ex parte occidentali dicte aule, duo selaria ex parte orientali dicte aule, et unum gardinum modicum intra aulam et grangium, cum una domo pistrin[e] et brascine, cum libero introitu et exitu dicto Gilberto capellano ad alias domus suas congruis temporibus pro suo com[m]odo faciendo in aliis partibus dicti tenementi sui, habendam et tenendam, etc., usque ad terminum vite dicte Agnetis, reddendo inde annuatim pro primis tresdecim annis unam rosam in festo nativitatis sancti Johannis Baptiste si petatur, et post tresdecim annos, etc., reddet decem solidos argenti ad duos anni terminos, etc. Hiis testibus, Alano Whiteheved perpetuo vicario de Tenemuth, Roberto de Fenrother, Willelmo de Chevington, Willelmo , Roberto de Bynham, Willelmo del Kylne, et aliis. Data apud villam de Tinemuth in festo pentecoste A.D. 1381. Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁴ Hec carta indentata testatur quod Willelmus de Heppiscotes dedit, etc., Gilberto de Tynemouth omnia terras et tenementa sua, etc., que idem Willelmus nuper habuit ex dono et feofamento predicti Gilberti in villis et territoriis de Tynemuth et Preston, habenda et tenenda, etc., predicto Gilberto ad totam vitam ipsius Gilberti, etc., ita quod post mortem predicti Gilberti omnia predicta terre et tenementa, etc., integre remaneant Agneti sorori ejusdem Gilberti tenenda sibi et heredibus de corpore suo, etc., et si contingat quod predicta Agnes obierit sine herede, etc., quod tunc omnia terre et tenementa, etc., remaneant Gilberto filio Petri Webster et heredibus, etc., et si contingat quod predictus Gilbertus obierit sine herede, etc., tunc omnia terre et tenementa, etc., remaneant heredibus Gilberti de Tynemuth, etc. Hiis testibus Johanne de Murton, Willelmo de Kylne, Roberto Gubbe, Willelmo Bacon, Johanne Clerk, Johanne de Preston, Roberto Maymond, Johanne de Thornton, et aliis. Datum apud Tynemouth die dominice proximo ante festum Sancti Georgii, A.D. 1363. Seal: *an old man in dress of the period; in front of him a shield charged with a chevron engrailed, two crescents in chief.* S. WILL. DE HEPPISCOTIS. *Ibid.*

⁵ November 20th, 1413. Gilbert de Tynemouth, *alias* Gilbert, son of Peter Webster, gives power of attorney to John Wilkynson and William Davy of Tynemouth to give seisin to Robert de Harbotell of all his lands and tenements in Tynemouth and Preston. *Dodsworth MSS.* vol. xxxii. fol. 125.

⁶ In 1477 John Harbottle of Tynemouth sold a house in Framwellgate, in the city of Durham (*Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. ii. p. 31). He is perhaps to be identified with John Harbottle of Swarland, who appears in 1466 as a trustee for his kinsman, Bertram Harbottle of Preston. Compare the charters dated respectively January 20th, 1465/6, and June 1st, 1478, given in *Hist. MSS. Com.* 11th report, appendix, pt. vii. p. 73. He died August 27th, 1485, seised of the manor of Bekley Hall and other lands in the county of Durham. John Harbottle, aged eighteen years, was found his son and heir. *Deputy Keeper's Reports*, vol. xlv. p. 413. On November 2nd, 1492, John Harbottle, junior, released to Sir Ralph Harbottle of Preston all interest, under a settlement made in 1466, to lands in Yorkshire, Nottinghamshire, and Suffolk, late the inheritance of Bertram Harbottle. *Dodsworth MSS.* vol. xxxix. fol. 108. He died *circa* 1524 (inquisition taken October 17th, 1524), leaving a son and heir, John Harbottle, aged thirty. *Deputy Keeper's Reports*, vol. xlv. p. 420. For further information as to cadets of the Harbottle family, see vol. ii. of this work, pp. 324-326, and Surtees, *Durham*, vol. ii. p. 223.

Middle Chirton held by John de Tewing (1333-1351), and afterwards by John Horsley of Shields. John Horsley of Richmond, goldsmith, son of the latter, and his kinsman Thomas Horsley of Benwell,¹ conveyed their land in 1426 to John Cartington. A deed dated December 16th, 1445, records a grant made by Cartington of a yearly rent of 6d. for the maintenance of a light before the high altar of the priory church.² His estates descended to the Radcliffes of Dilston.

The Spital demesne was attached to the little-known hospital of St. Leonard. Allusion is made in an assize-roll of 1293 to the bridge by St. Leonard's hospital, a precursor of the modern Spital dene bridge. There was at that time no other passage across the Pow burn, for the present Tynemouth road to Newcastle stopped short at Tynemouth mill, turning south from that point down the eastern side of the dene.³ On the farther side of the bridge, between two branches of the burn, the foundations of a medieval building were discovered in 1885, though the excavations were not carried far enough to disclose its plan. The building appears to have been of a considerable size. Its chambers were paved with stone, and the few mouldings that remained were of an Early English character. Some fragments of flowing window-tracery, the base of a cross, and the matrix of a brass, were also found on the spot.

The matrix is a plain limestone slab, measuring 5 feet 9 inches in length by 2 feet 7 inches in breadth.⁴ It has contained the brass of a

¹ In 1432/3 Thomas Horsley of Benwell had pardon of outlawry from the bishop of Durham. *Deputy Keeper's Reports*, vol. xxiv. p. 137.

² Omnibus Christi fidelibus ad quos presens scriptum indentatum pervenerit, Johannes Cartington de Cartington salutem in domino. Noveritis me, prefatum Johannem, dedisse, etc., Deo et ecclesie sancti Oswini de Tynemouth ac sacriste ejusdem ecclesie pro tempore existenti, in puram et perpetuam elemosinam, pro salute anime mee et animarum antecessorum et successorum meorum, ad sustentacionem luminaris coram summo altari ejusdem ecclesie circa corpus Christi ibidem ardentis, quendam annualem redditum sex denariorum argenti, percipiendum et habendum annuatim de tenemento meo cum suis pertinenciis, modo in tenuta Emmote Badby, situato in le Middelrawe ville de Tynemouth, ad finem orientalem ejusdem Middelrawe, videlicet propinquiorem castro de Tynemouth, prefato sacriste pro tempore existenti imperpetuum, ad terminos Pentecoste et sancti Martini in yeme equis porcionibus, etc. Hiis testibus, Henrico Gray, ballivo libertatis de Tynemouth, Henrico Lancastre, constabulario castri de Tynemouth, Johanne Robynson, Willelmo Peresson, Willelmo White, et aliis. Datum apud Tynemouth predictum, sextodecimo die Decembris, anno regni regis Henrici sexti vicesimo sexto. *Greenwich Hospital Deeds*, bundle 100, Tynemouth, No. 2.

³ John Archer, the elder, of North Shields, by will dated December 2nd, 1562, left 40s. for the reparation of the church and the Pow bridge; Canon Raine's collections from Durham Probate Registry. At quarter sessions held at Michaelmas, 1718, it was ordered that the bridge called the Spittle bridge, leading from Tynemouth to Flatworth in the parish of Tynemouth, should be repaired by the said parish. *Sessions Order Books*, vol. v. p. 444. Evidence of the track down from the mill to the river at Low Lights is to be found in a charter dated July 1st, 1331, by which John de Horton granted to the prior and convent of Tynemouth a right-of-way over his land 'que jacet in longitudine in le Pol-side, ex parte orientali del Spitel-den.' *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 91; Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 143.

⁴ This matrix is figured in *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xxv. p. 131.

layman and his wife, connected by an inscription-fillet. Below the two principal figures are five smaller indents for the brasses of their daughter and four sons. The male figures stood on mounds, and seem to have worn long tunics with loose sleeves. The lady and her daughter had similar costumes; their hair is curled at the side, and each of them had a head-dress covered by a kerchief. A date between 1400 and 1420 may be assigned for the execution of the work. Though the slab is not *in situ*, there can be no doubt that interments were made upon the spot. Two stone coffins were unearthed in the course of the excavations. In the sixteenth century the priory church and the Spital appear to have been alternative burial-grounds, for, in 1603, William Milbank of North Shields left his body to be buried at either of these two places at the discretion of his executors.¹ Many persons were buried here during the Civil War, when access to the parish church was restricted. The latest date of an interment at the Spital is January 6th, 1707/8.²

The endowment of the hospital was small. It contributed 6s. 8d. to the subsidy of a fifteenth imposed in 1314.³ In a terrier of 1649 the extent of the hospital demesne is given as 13 acres, 3 roods, 5 perches, lying in forty-six rigs and various corners of land in Tynemouth and Preston, as well as certain lands in Chirton.⁴ There is no record of the character of this foundation. Probably it was dependent upon the priory, though certain facts suggest a connection with the Benedictine nunnery of St. Bartholomew in Newcastle. Prior Germanus (*circa* 1141) granted to the nuns of St. Bartholomew an annual dole of eight quarters of wheat out of his granary;⁵ the prioress of St. Bartholomew held or claimed to hold property in Tynemouth in 1293 and again in 1326/7;⁶ and a contemporary list of monasteries suppressed in 1536, as having incomes under £200 per annum, contains the name of the nuns of Tynemouth.⁷

During the fourteenth century the town increased in size and importance, and on several occasions furnished its contingent of vessels to the

¹ Raine, *Test. Ebor.*

² See also Mr. H. A. Adamson's account of the hospital in *Proc. Soc. Ant. Newcastle*, 2nd series, vol. iii. p. 35-36.

³ *Reg. Pal. Dun.* Rolls Series, vol. i. p. 499.

⁴ *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xii. pp. 173-174.

⁵ Augmentation Office, *Cartae Antiquae*, B. 81; Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 82.

⁶ *Assize Roll*, 21 Edw. I.; *Pat. Rolls*, 20 Edw. II. m. 29 d.

⁷ *Letters and Papers*, Henry VIII. vol. x. p. 516.

royal navy during the Scottish wars. Though never formally constituted a borough it acquired something of a corporate character. A royal writ, requiring the favourable treatment of Flemings, was addressed on April 15th, 1325, to the bailiffs and *communitas* of the town;¹ and on December 13th, 1326, the bailiffs were commanded to send three or four men to an informal parliament at Norwich, to treat of affairs concerning the naval defence of the realm.² The prior's rental nearly doubled, amounting in 1377 to £9 12s. 4½d.;³ but twelve years later the town was destroyed by fire in a Scottish invasion,⁴ a disaster from which it failed to recover.

On January 12th, 1539, the prior and convent of Tynemouth surrendered their monastery and all their possessions to the Crown. The site of the monastery and various lands and revenues formerly belonging to it were leased on March 9th following for twenty-one years to Sir Thomas Hilton. The demesne or home farm passed under this grant, and is described as containing:

Description.	Character.	Acreage.	Rent. £ s. d.
New Close or Broke Close	... pasture ...	30 ...	1 13 4
Preston Park ...	... meadow ...	15 ...	1 13 4
New Park ...	... pasture ...	30 ...	2 13 4
Heugh Close ...	... pasture ...	4 ...	0 10 0
Land in the common fields	... arable ...	286 ...	4 15 4
Land in West Spytell Dean	... arable ...	20 selions and 6 butts ...	0 2 1
Land in the Lord's Marsh	... pasture ...	6 acres ...	0 10 0
The Spytel House ...	...	—	0 10 0
The Spytel Close ...	... arable ...	4 ...	0 10 0
Land in the fields there	... arable ...	4 ...	0 4 0
Pinfold Garth ...	... pasture ...	2 ...	0 4 0

Hilton also received the 'day's work in harvest' due from the tenants and inhabitants of the town, a coal mine in Tynemouth worth £2 6s. 8d. a year, and the windmill called Tynemouth mill and the water-mill called Marden mill, both in the tenure of Robert Dove and John Dove and paying £9 os. 8d. rent yearly.⁵

In the first account of the township presented after the suppression, covering the year Michaelmas 1538 to Michaelmas 1539, Hilton accounted for rent paid for the lands demised to him, and also for rents of free tenants and tenants in husbandry and rents for herbage.

¹ *Cal. Close Rolls*, 1323-1327, p. 367.

² *Rotuli Scotiae*, vol. i. p. 475. Writs were also sent, on this occasion, to Newbiggin and to Alnmouth.

³ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 51 b and 58 b. ⁴ See above, p. 98. ⁵ Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. pp. 216-217.

RENTAL OF TYNEMOUTH, 1539.

Free rents. The heirs of Volensbye and Henry Madeson, £1 11s. 1½d. Sir Cuthbert Ratcliff, knight, 7s. 3½d. The heirs of Christopher Bell, 10s. 10½d. Sir Thomas Dacres, knight, lord Dacres of Gillisland, 9s. 10d. The heirs of Christopher Welden, 2s. Christopher Mitforth, 3s. Thomas Sheldon, 1s. The heirs of Midelton, 1s. 3d.¹ The wardens of the parish church, 1s. Thomas Watson, 3d. Thomas Wydall, 8d. Sir Wigiott Harbottell, 8s. 10d. Thomas Smith, 8d. Total, £3 17s. 10d.

Rents of farms of husbandry and cottages. Edmund Richardson, £2 13s. 4d. John Sainebraine, £2 16s. 8d. William Hucheson, £2 6s. 8d. Robert Johnson and Thomas Michellson, £2 13s. 4d. Robert Doewaye, £2 13s. 4d. Thomas Pate, £1 10s. Thomas Hall, £1 2s. Thomas Dunne, 13s. Fulk Acone, 13s. 4d. John Otway, 8s. . . . Wydewe, 13s. 4d. Anthony Mitfurth, 13s. 4d. John Tailour, 5s. Robert Shelton for a cottage, 6s. 8d. Margaret Pate, 10s. Robert Dove for a garden, 6d. Fifteen cottages, £4. Rent for Stonylawes and the Towne Merche, paid by all the tenants, £2 2s. Total, £26 os. 6d.

Rents of herbage.² Over Spittell Deane, 13s. 4d. The West Lonynge, 1s. 4d. South Lonynge, 8d. Stobbe Close, 2s. Parke Dike, 6d. Dunstane Garth, 1s. Well Bancke, 1s. Nether Spittell Deane, 16s. 4d. Spittell Crosse Corner, 6s. 8d. Akehope Hewgh, 3s. 4d. Charte Dick, 1s. Skater Deane,³ 1s. 4d. Spittell Brugge, 1s. 5d. A parcel of land on the left side of the Spittell, 1s. A parcell of land in North Well, 1s. A parcel of land called Nether Marden, in the tenure of Robert Shelton, 2s. A parcel of land called Upper Marden, 2s. Total, £2 15s. 11d.

Fines on assize of bread and ale, due from the tenants of the town by ancient custom on Christmas Day, £1 6s. 8d. Pannage or take of swine received yearly from the tenants of husbandry in the town, namely 4d. from every tenant, payable at Martinmas, 3s. 4d.

Sum total, £34 4s. 3d.⁴

Further particulars regarding the various freeholds are given in a survey taken in 1608.⁵

TYNEMOUTH FREEHOLDS, 1608.

Tenant.	Former tenant.	Holding.	Rent. £ s. d.	Pannage. s. d.	Hall-corn. s. d.
Peter Delavale	Sheldon ...	Lands ...	0 1 0	—	—
"	Thomas Smith ...	" ...	0 0 8	—	—
"	—	1 cottage and 3 riggs ...	0 0 8	—	—
"	—	2 tenements ...	nil	—	—
William, Lord Howard	(Lord Dacre of Gilsland)	1 messuage, 6 cottages, and 40 acres in the fields, and 1 cottage and 12 acres in Preston	0 9 9	0 4	—
Robert Dowe ⁶	Christopher Metforde	1 cottage and 2 acres ...	0 3 0	—	—

¹ This land was formerly the property of Sir Allan de Heton of Lowick, who died in 1388, and passed to the Middleton family through the marriage of Margaret, daughter and coheir of Sir Henry de Heton, to Thomas Middleton of Silksworth in the county of Durham. See *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xxv. pp. 69, 77.

² The herbage are also described as 'land-ends' or 'quillets' of demesne, of which the herbage or catage was farmed by all the tenants of the township acting in common.

³ Skatter or Slater Dean is identified in some surveys with the Dagger Letch, properly Dacre's Letch, a runner which followed the course of Bedford Street, and fell into the Tyne near the present Low Dock in North Shields.

⁴ Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. pp. 218-220; *Rentals and Surveys*, Augmentation Office, bundle 121, Northumberland, 30-31 Henry VIII.

⁵ Land Revenue, *Miscell. Books*, vol. 223, fols. 281-282.

⁶ Acquired by feof of fine, Mich. 36 Eliz. (1594) from Henry Mitford and Barbara his wife.

TYNEMOUTH FREEHOLDS, 1608 (*continued*).

Tenant.	Former tenant.	Holding.	Rent.			Pannage.			Hall-corn.		
			£	s.	d.	s.	d.	s.	d.	s.	d.
Robert Dowe ¹ ...	Ratcliffe ...	1 messuage, 2 cottages, 24 acres	0	10	0	0	4	1	4		
The churchwardens	(Churchwardens)	1 cottage and garth ...	0	1	0						
Robert Helme and Robert Dowe ²	Ralph Harbottle, knt.	1 messuage and 18 acres	0	8	10	0	4				
Peter Delavale, John Bowe, and James Robinson	(Heirs of Volensbye and Henry Madeson)	1 messuage and 9 cottages in Tynemouth, Monkscaton and Murton	1	11	13	0	4	5	0		
Roger Morton ...	(Thomas Watson)	1 waste burgage and 2 acres ...	0	0	3						
Robert Spereman and Thomas Otway	Bell ...	1 messuage and 6 cottages in Tynemouth, 1 cottage in Preston, and 32 acres in the fields of Tynemouth and Preston	0	10	10 ³	0	2				
Thomas Otway ...	Edward Robinson ³	1 cottage and 3 acres ...	0	1	3						
Robert Dowe of Whitley	Symon Welden ...	2 cottages and 1 acre ...	0	2	0						
Peter Delavale and Robert Helme	(Thomas Wydall)	2 cottages ...	0	0	8						
"	Matthew Welden	2 tenements and 4 acres ...	0	5	0						

The heirs of Volensbye hold certain lands and pay yearly 1 quarter of malt, rated at 8s. The heirs of Cuthbert Ratcliffe hold certain lands, and pay yearly 1 ounce of malt, rated at 1s. Sum total, £5 1s. 2½d.

On August 2nd, 1610, Tynemouth and Marden mills were granted to Edward Ferrers and Francis Phillips of London, to hold of the Crown in free socage⁴ All the copyhold lands in Tynemouth, excepting two tenements formerly in the tenure of Fulk Acon and of James Doune, were similarly granted on March 13th, 1623/4, to Henry, ninth earl of Northumberland.⁵ Finally, on December 8th, 1631, the manor and town of Tynemouth, the two tenements previously excepted, and all the lands and

¹ On February 14th, 1559/60, George Radcliffe of Dilston, knight, in return for a payment of £10, conveyed to Christopher Mitford, merchant and alderman of Newcastle, his tenement and cottage in Tynemouth, subject to a perpetual rent-charge of 26s. 8d. *Greenwich Hospital Deeds*, Bundle 100, M, No. 1. The same tenement was confirmed by Francis Radcliffe and Edward, his son, on November 20th, 1614, to Ralph Dowe of Tynemouth. *Ibid.* Nos. 2 and 3.

² Acquired by feet of fine, Mich. 21 Eliz. (1579) from John Harbottle.

³ By indenture dated June 12th, 1570, Richard Rnthall, heir and representative of Thomas Middleton, granted to Edward Robinson, to hold at the will of the lord for 21 years at the yearly rent of 5s., one cottage, a garth containing half an acre, and 5 acres of arable held in 3 distinct strips in the north field of Tynemouth. Robinson was also to have common of pasture in the common fields for all his beasts without stint after harvest was over. Marquis of Waterford's MSS.

⁴ *Pat. Rolls*, 4 Jas. 1. The two mills were purchased on July 18th, 1659, by Algernon, tenth earl of Northumberland, from Catherine, Lady Vanlore, *alias* Pelham. Duke of Northumberland's MSS. A fee farm rent of £9 os. 8d. reserved upon them is payable to the Colston almshouses in Bristol.

⁵ *Pat. Rolls*, 21 Jas. 1. pt. 5.

rights in Tynemouth leased to Sir Thomas Hilton in 1539 (reserving the site of the monastery) were, in consideration of £13,545 15s. 10d. paid into the Exchequer by Sir William Russel, granted to William Collins and Edward Fenn of London, to hold in free socage at a yearly rent of £45 14s. 7½d.¹ Collins and Fenn, on the 21st of the same month, conveyed their estate to Henry Taylor and John Melton, who, on April 30th, 1637, transferred it to Algernon, tenth earl of Northumberland.² In this way all the demesne and copyhold land within the township became vested in the Percy family.

Various attempts, not at first successful, were made to induce the tenants to come to an agreement for the division of the common fields. Whitehead informed the earl on December 10th, 1602 :

I doe presume to send unto your lordship herinclosed an agrement of the tennants and freholders of Tynemouth under ther hands for the division of Tynemouth,³ wherby your lordship may se in what forwardnes it was brought and sudaynely quasht, by what meanes I knowe not. But nowe agayne I have revived it and have all ther consents save one or two trooblesome fellows that ar unwilling, because they make a pray of the grasse of your lordship's demaynes, which is and wilbe a cause of your lordship's disprofit and decay of the rent that nowe is payed for the demaynes. The reason is that all ther winter grasse which should releive ther goods in winter befor the fyne of September is by the tennants eaten up.⁴

On April 18th, 1631, the freeholders and the earl came to terms for the appointment of two surveyors to measure out and divide the lands of both parties. The copyholders were persuaded to surrender their copies in exchange for leases of seven years at an advanced rent, to be renewed so as to make up the term to twenty-one years, if they should, within the term then granted, come to an agreement and enclose. A terrier was prepared in 1649, and lands were allotted to the several tenants in proportion to their original holdings, in spite of the protest of certain freeholders, who feared that any change meant increased poverty, stating that 'about 7 years since, their houses have bene pulled downe to their severall damages of £500 a yeare, the burthen of cess and billet soe greate as noe man hath for that tyme made anything of all his estate.'⁵ The terrier is valuable in setting out the various holdings with some detail, as may be seen from the following abstract⁶ :

¹ *Pat. Rolls*, 7 Chas. I. pt. 15.

² *Land Revenue Enrolments*, vol. 202, fol. 129 d.

³ Agreement dated April 5th, 1598.

⁴ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁵ *Ibid.*

⁶ The terrier has been printed in full, with explanatory notes, by Mr. H. A. Adamson, in *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xii. pp. 172-190.

FREEHOLDS, 1649.

Tenant.					Number of strips.	Acreage.			Area allotted.		
						a.	r.	p.	a.	r.	p.
Lord Howard	...	...	...	...	157 rigs, 1 headland, 7 butts, and 1 dale of meadow	48	2	29	50	0	0
Robert Otway	...	...	...	...	19 rigs and 1 butt	6	1	9	6	2	9
Robert Spearman	...	...	...	...	21½ rigs	6	2	20	6	2	10
John Carruth ¹	...	...	...	...	59 rigs, 2 butts, 1½ headlands, and a meadow spot	20	2	36	20	2	36
William Collinson ²	...	...	...	...	21 rigs, 2 butts, and 2 headlands	8	2	27	8	2	27
Robert Dove	...	...	...	...	88 rigs, 2 butts, 3 headlands, and 1 butt of meadow	28	2	11	29	2	11
John Morton of Tynemouth	...	...	...	...	8 rigs	4	3	30	4	3	30
John Morton of Willington	...	...	...	...	3 rigs	1	0	32	1	0	32
George Robinson and John Bowes	...	...	...	...	108 rigs, 2 butts, and 4 headlands	33	1	13	33	1	13

LEASEHOLDS, 1649.

Tenant.					Holding.	Area allotted.			Tenant in 1538. ³
						a.	r.	p.	
John Bowe	...	...	...	...	1¾ farms	70	1	28	Edmund Richardson and Thomas Pate.
Katherine Ogle	...	...	...	...	1 farm	40	1	1	John Sainebrain.
Robert Spearman	...	...	...	...	1 farm	40	2	5	William Hutcheson.
John Morton	...	...	...	...	1 farm	40	1	1	Robert Johnson and Thomas Michellson.
Gilbert Otway	...	...	...	...	1 farm	40	1	1	Robert Doeway.
Lieut. (John) Dove	...	...	...	...	1 tenement	12	0	0	Thomas Hall.
Robert Otway	...	...	...	...	Farm lands	9	3	30	John Otway.
William Collinson	...	...	...	...	1 markland	7	2	32	Fulk Acon.
John Carruth	...	...	...	...	1 markland	7	2	32	—
John Morton	...	...	...	...	1 markland	7	2	32	—
Richard Pryor	...	...	...	...	Farm lands	3	3	35	—
John Sutton	...	...	...	...	Farm lands	0	2	24	—
Robert Rotherford	...	...	...	...	Farm lands	0	0	28	—

Prior to the division, the arable lands of the township had lain in three large fields. It seems that the middle field had already been allotted to the earl of Northumberland, farmer of the demesne, in lieu of the 286 acres of unenclosed demesne land. The north field, totalling 258 acres, and the south field having an area of 188 acres, were now divided among the freeholders and leaseholders. With certain exceptions, the whole of the south field, south of the Spital dene road, went to the

¹ John Carruth purchased these lands, August 20th, 1652, from George Gray of Newcastle, master and mariner, husband of Phillis, who was daughter and sole heiress of John Delaval and granddaughter of Peter Delaval. See the pedigree of Delaval of Tynemouth, p. 171.

² These lands represent the moiety of Harbottle's lands held in 1608 by Robert Helme. They were sold, circa 1652, to Captain William Collinson, an officer stationed at Tynemouth castle. *Tynemouth Court Rolls*. Collinson also bought Aydon castle. See pedigree of Collinson of Aydon castle in vol. vi. of this work, p. 136.

³ Taken from counterparts of leases in the possession of the duke of Northumberland.

freeholders, and the whole of the north field, north of Kennersdean, was assigned to the other tenants.¹ The practice of granting twenty-one-year leases was continued until 1755, and was then abandoned in favour of shorter terms.²

A comparison of the terrier of 1649 with the ministers' accounts of 1539 shows that the ten farms, at which the township was assessed for pannage and for church rate, had diminished in number to five and three-quarters, that their average size was 40 acres 1 rood 1 perch, and that the usual rent was four marks (£2 13s. 4d.). Besides the complete farms, there were other farm-lands of varying extent and three 'mark-lands' or quarters of a farm, paying a mark rent yearly.

The later history of the township is largely connected with the development of the freeholds in the south field.

The fifty acres allotted to Lord Howard in 1649 remained in possession of his family until 1796, when Frederick, fifth earl of Carlisle, by indenture dated August 30th, 1796, sold his lands in Tynemouth to John Wright of North Shields. The latter made his will on June 30th, 1806, leaving his freehold property to be divided equally between his two sons, William Wright of North Shields, and John Bowes Wright of Lincoln's Inn. John Wright and his two sons laid out Northumberland Square and Howard Street upon this estate, which extended from Norfolk Street on the east to Newcastle Street and Little Bedford Street, the township boundaries, upon the west.³ Coal was worked upon the Howard property as late as the eighteenth century, and there was a shaft at the top of the Shields bank, at the south-west corner of Howard Street.⁴ A building on this site was afterwards used for the detention of prisoners taken during the French wars, and was replaced by the North Shields theatre, opened in 1789 and destroyed by fire in December, 1851.⁵

¹ Spearman had a freehold assigned to him in the Brocks which his son, Robert Spearman of Durham, sold, together with copyhold land in Chirton, to Henry Walker of Whitby. The lands assigned to Robert Otway were in the north field, and were termed Otway's Holes. His grandson, John Dove of the Low Lights, left the estate, by will dated June 28th, 1704, to his sister, Susanna Walker, for whom see the account of Dove's freehold. *Durham Probate Registry*.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ Mr. H. A. Adamson's collections.

⁴ In 1757 Sir Ralph Milbanke, bart., and others petitioned Hugh, earl of Northumberland, for licence for a waggon-way to the Tyne, from North Shields colliery on the earl of Carlisle's lands. *Ibid.*

⁵ The theatre was rebuilt in 1852, and in 1876 it was converted into an assembly-room and shops. The first theatre in North Shields stood on the Ropery Banks.

MITCALFE OF TYNEMOUTH-HOUSE AND NORTH SHIELDS.

WILLIAM MITCALFE of North Shields, buried in Tynemouth church, 12th February, 1628 9 (*a*).

William Mitcalfe, senior, of North Shields, buried 11th March, 1694 5 (*a*). =

William Mitcalfe of North Shields, baptised 7th August, 1650 (*a*); buried 1st October, 1734 (*a*).

John Mitcalfe of Tyne- mouth, baptised 1st September, 1684 (<i>a</i>); died 24th January, 1765, aged 81 (<i>a</i>) (<i>c</i>).	= Dorothy Reed, married 15th July, 1707 (<i>a</i>); died 9th Janu- ary, 1762, aged 77 (<i>c</i>).	William = Dorothy Mitcalfe. Forster.	Henry Mitcalfe of North Shields,* = Barbara baptised 29th April, 1702 (<i>a</i>); died 24th Dec- 9th October, 1768 (<i>c</i>); will dated cember, 1761, 20th March, 1767; proved at aged 63 (<i>c</i>). Durham (<i>b</i>).
---	--	---	--

Mitcalfe of Murton-house.

John, bapt. 4th Aug., 1718 (<i>a</i>); buried 7th February, 1723/4 (<i>a</i>).	William Mitcalfe = of Tynemouth, baptised 6th March, 1720/1 (<i>a</i>); died 3rd Nov., 1806, aged 86 (<i>b</i>) (<i>c</i>) (<i>e</i>).	Susanna, daughter of Brodrick, married 16th Janu- ary, 1746 (<i>b</i>); died 5th January, 1764, aged 38 (<i>a</i>) (<i>c</i>).	John, bap- tised 1724 (<i>a</i>), buried 1727 (<i>a</i>). Other issue.	Henry Mitcalfe of Preston, = Dorothy Anderson, baptised 13th Decemler, married 30th 1726 (<i>a</i>); died 5th Dec., July, 1765 (<i>a</i>); 1802, aged 77 (<i>a</i>) (<i>c</i>). died 25th April, s.p.; will dated 16th 1795, aged 79 December, 1801; proved (<i>a</i>) (<i>c</i>). 29th December, 1802 (<i>d</i>).
---	--	--	--	--

Lockwood, bap- tised 7th October, 1746 (<i>a</i>); buried 25th Novem- ber, 1747 (<i>a</i>).	John Mitcalfe, = baptised 15th March, 1747/8 (<i>a</i>); died 5th October, 1779 (<i>c</i>).	Mary Atkin- son, married 17th Feb., 1772 (<i>a</i>); died 15th June, 1789, aged 54 (<i>c</i>).	William Mitcalfe of Dockwray = Margaret, widow of John Square, North Shields, baptised Kelso, and daughter of 15th January, 1751 (<i>a</i>); purchased Stephen Wright of Dock- Tynemouth-house; died 13th wray Square, married 12th June, 1827, aged 77 (<i>a</i>) (<i>c</i>) (<i>f</i>); August, 1776 (<i>a</i>) (<i>b</i>); died will dated 19th December, 1821; 30th November, 1828, aged proved 20th July, 1827 (<i>d</i>). 77 (<i>a</i>) (<i>c</i>) (<i>f</i>).
--	--	--	--

Lockwood, born 18th May, 1753 (*b*); buried 28th May, 1753 (*a*).
Henry, born 1st May, 1760; died young (*b*).
Elisha, born 16th March, 1763; died young (*b*).

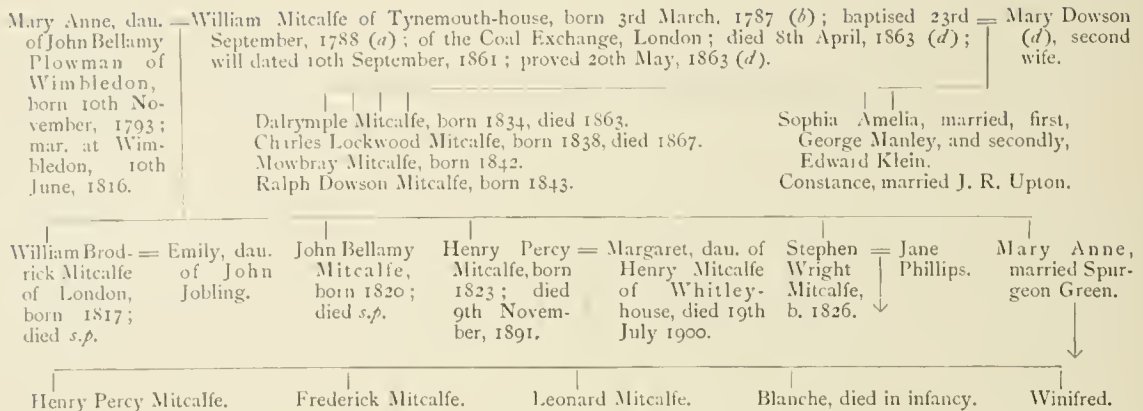
Anne, baptised 31st July, 1749 (*a*); died young (*b*).
Dorothy, baptised 21st June, 1756; married,
January, 1779, Shallett Dale of Newcastle.

William, baptised 5th Feb., 1781 (<i>a</i>); died young (<i>b</i>).	Mary Anne, dau. of J. B. Plowman of Wimbledon, married 10th June, 1816 (<i>d</i>).	William Mitcalfe of Tynemouth-house, born 3rd = Mary, daughter of March, 1787 (<i>b</i>); baptised 23rd September, 1788 Dowson (<i>d</i>), (<i>a</i>); of the Coal Exchange, London; died 8th 2nd wife. April, 1863 (<i>d</i>); will dated 10th September, 1861; proved 20th May, 1863 (<i>d</i>).
---	--	--

Henry Mitcalfe of Whit- ley-house, born 28th November, 1788 (<i>a</i>); baptised 30th Novem- ber, 1788 (<i>a</i>); M.P. for Tynemouth, 1841- 1847; died 4th June, 1853, aged 64 (<i>f</i>).	= Theodosia, daughter of Edward Drury, married 4th Feb- ruary, 1813; died at Little Anglesea, Hants, 31st July, 1848, aged 59 (<i>c</i>).	John, baptised 12th Aug., 1790 (<i>a</i>); died 22nd Feb., 1808, aged 18 (<i>c</i>). Thomas, baptised 23rd October, 1792 (<i>a</i>); died young (<i>b</i>).	Susanna, baptised 25th March, 1778 (<i>a</i>); married 21st April, 1803, Cuthbert Smith Fenwick (<i>a</i>). Margaret, baptised 5th July, 1781 (<i>a</i>); married 14th November, 1801, William Redhead (<i>a</i>) of Newcastle. Anne, baptised 28th July, 1782 (<i>a</i>); married 30th March, 1824, Edward Jackson of Gateshead (<i>a</i>). Dorothy, baptised 28th April, 1784 (<i>a</i>); married 1st September, 1807, James Methold Goble (<i>a</i>) of Brighton. Isabella, baptised 23rd September, 1788 (<i>a</i>); married 7th March, 1800, John Dale (<i>a</i>). Jane, baptised 25th January, 1795 (<i>a</i>); married 7th April, 1825, Daniel Edward Stephens of North Shields (<i>a</i>).
--	--	--	---

Henry Theodosius
Mitcalfe, died
May, 1856, aged
55 (*c*) (*f*).
Edward.

Margaret, married her cousin, Henry Percy Mitcalfe.
Anne Emma, married 27th February, 1840, John
Fenwick of Preston.
Isabella Catherine, married Major-General John
Henry Francklyn, C.B.
Theodosia, died unmarried (*f*) 15th December, 1882.



(a) *Tynemouth Register*.

(b) Genealogical table of the Mitcalfe family, compiled by Mr. John B. Dale in 1875, from information communicated by Mr. H. A. Adamson.

(c) Monumental Inscriptions, Tynemouth Priory.

(d) Documents with Mr. H. A. Adamson.

(e) Matthew Forster's Obituary.

(f) Monumental Inscriptions, Christ Church, Tynemouth.

* Henry Mitcalfe (1) of North Shields, by Barbara, his wife, had issue, with other children, Henry Mitcalfe (2) of Murton-house, baptised 19th May, 1729; married 22nd March, 1755, Elizabeth, daughter of Isaac Bell of North Shields, by whom he had issue Henry Mitcalfe (3) of Murton-house, attorney-at-law. Henry Mitcalfe (3), baptised 20th June, 1758, married, first, at Bishopwearmouth, 8th March, 1790, Anne Bird, and secondly, at Bath, 4th June, 1802, Eliza, widow of Colonel de la Beche of Halse-hall, in Jamaica. He resided, in the latter part of his life, at Clifton and at Bath. Henry Mitcalfe (3), by his first marriage, had a son, Henry Bird Mitcalfe (who died unmarried in his father's lifetime), and a daughter, Anne Bird Mitcalfe, who became her father's sole heiress, and was married at Clifton, 13th June, 1808, to Levi Ames of Rodney-place, Clifton.

Robert Mitcalfe, a cadet of this family, died in 1812 at the age of 56, leaving issue, by Catherine Stanley, his wife (whom he married in 1780), a son, Robert Stanley Mitcalfe, born in 1786, the father of the present Mr. John Stanley Mitcalfe of Tynemouth.

Collinson's land lay to the east of the Howard estate. Henry Collinson of Aydon castle, son and heir of Captain William Collinson, sold his estate to Ambrose Hambleton of Tynemouth. Hambleton left two daughters and coheirs: Hannah, wife of William Williams of North Shields, and Sarah, who married John Atkinson.¹ About the year 1714, Atkinson's share was purchased by Edward Stewart of North Shields, and the land was then divided, Stewart taking the eastern moiety and Williams the western. There were roperies or 'rope-walks' on both properties, extending from the Tynemouth road to the bank head. Williams' land afterwards came to the Stephenson family,² and at a later date became the property of the

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² John Stephenson of Earsdon and North Shields, rope-maker, son of Robert Stephenson of North Shields, rope-maker, married Elizabeth Hall, by whom he left issue John Stephenson the younger, and Elizabeth, who married James Perrin of Newcastle. He died September 16th, 1752, having by his will, dated November 22nd, 1751, devised his freehold property in North Shields to his daughter. His son, John Stephenson of Dockwray Square, married Mary, daughter of Francis Gowland of Scarborough, but left no surviving male issue. He died July 12th, 1801. Mr. H. A. Adamson's collections, and monumental inscription at Christ Church.

Mitcalfes of Tynemouth house. The Stewart estate came, in 1768, into the hands of William Linskill, afterwards of Tynemouth lodge. Stephenson Street and Linskill Street perpetuate the names of these former owners.¹

Proceeding eastward, John Carruth's freehold is reached. Carruth sold his land on October 1st, 1667, to Edward Toll of North Shields, formerly captain-lieutenant in Sir Arthur Hesilrige's regiment.

I. Edward Toll, purchased lands in Cowpen, October 1st, 1679, from Cuthbert Turner of the Middle Temple. He was buried in the chancel of Christ Church, January 1st, 1680¹, having by will devised his lands in Tynemouth, known as the High Lighthouse Closes, to Edward Toll, his son and heir. By his wife, Elizabeth Knowles, he left issue: (1) Edward Toll, above mentioned, who died without issue; (2) Thomas Toll (II.).

II. Thomas Toll, of North Shields, draper and mercer, by his will, dated May 2nd, 1704, devised the High Lighthouse Closes and his lands at Cowpen to Edward Toll, his son and heir. He married Ursula Airey, by whom, amongst many other children, he had two sons: (1) Edward Toll, who died without issue in May, 1713; (2) Thomas Toll (III.).

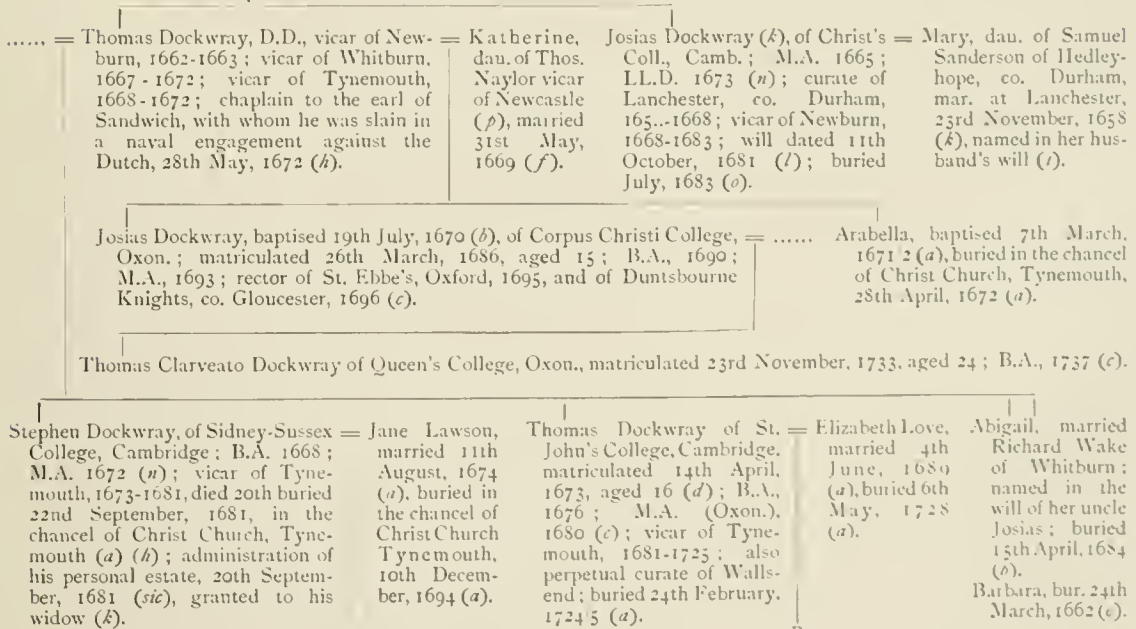
III. Thomas Toll of London, master and mariner, and subsequently of Wolviston in the county of Durham, by his will, April 16th, 1744, left his Tynemouth property to his sister, Elizabeth, wife of Josias Dockwray of Wolviston and North Shields.²

¹ Mr. H. A. Adamson's collections.

² Based on the duke of Northumberland's MSS., Mr. H. A. Adamson's collections, and wills in the Durham Probate Registry.

DOCKWRAY OF TYNEMOUTH, ETC.

STEPHEN DOCKWRAY, minister of St. Andrew's, Newcastle, 1647-1660; buried there 11th August, 1660 (c).



Thomas Dockwray, baptised 14th April, 1676 (*a*), buried in the chancel of Christ Church, Tynemouth, 16th April, 1676 (*a*).

Barbara, baptised 1st December, 1681 (*a*), daughter and heir; married Thomas Davison and was living in possession of a tenement at North Shields in 1707 (*m*).

Mary Grey, —
bond of marriage, 5th May, 1729.]

Thomas Dockwray, baptised 1st April, 1690 (*a*); = of St. John's College, Cambridge; matriculated 23rd May, 1706, aged 16 (*d*); B.A., 1709; M.A., 1713 (*n*); lecturer of St. Nicholas', Newcastle, 1724-1752; perpetual curate of Wallsend, 17...-1760; died 15th May, 1760, aged 70; Monumental Inscription, St. Nicholas' (*i*); will dated 11th May, 1759; proved 1760 (*l*).

Mary Maynard, —
bond of mar., 23rd October, 1732; married 26th October, 1732 (*f*).

Stephen, baptised 9th August, 1692 (*a*); buried 24th January, 1692/3 (*a*).

John, baptised 11th January, 1693/4 (*a*); buried 18th April, 1696 (*a*).

Francis [a son], baptised 21st January, 1695/6 (*a*); buried 14th December, 1696 (*a*).

Mary, baptised 1st May, 1734 (*f*); died in her father's lifetime.

Josias Dockwray of Wolviston, co. Durham, baptised 26th August, 1697 (*a*); afterwards of North Shields salt offices; buried, 3rd November, 1745 (*a*).

Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Toll of North Shields, and sister and devisee of Thomas Toll of the same place; bond of marriage, 22nd September, 1724; was living a widow at Newcastle, 27th October, 1756 (*g*); named in her son's will (*l*); buried 29th February, 1792, aged 98 (*a*).

Elizabeth, baptised 14th April, 1691 (*a*); married 18th September, 1723, Lieutenant John Pedie (*a*); died *s.p.* before 11th May, 1759 (*l*).

Martha, bapt. 13th Dec., 1698 (*a*); bur. 14th Feb., 1688/9 (*a*). Barbara, baptised 2nd February, 1699/1700 (*a*); buried 9th of the same month (*a*).

Frances, baptised 8th May, 1701 (*a*); buried 16th July, 1701 (*a*).

Thomas Dockwray, son and heir (*g*). = of St. John's College, Cambridge; matriculated 30th April, 1744, aged 18 (*d*); B.A., 1747; M.A., 1751; D.D., 1766 (*n*); lecturer of St. Nicholas', Newcastle, 1753-1783; vicar of Stamfordham, 1761 until his death, 14th Dec., 1783 (*i*); will dated 18th June, 1782 (*l*).

Hannah, daughter of Robert Ellison of Otterburn, married, 12th February, 1757 (*f*); she married, secondly, 13th Dec., 1787, John Barker, D.D. (*f*), of Christ College, Cambridge.

Josias, baptised 23rd April, 1734 (*a*).

Margaret, baptised 9th May, 1727 (*a*).

Elizabeth, bapt. 1st July, 1729 (*a*); mar. *cir ca* 1754, William Harbottle of Newcastle; named in her brother's will.

Mary, baptised 23rd February, 1730/1 (*a*); married William Charlton of Newcastle; named in her brother's will.

Ursula, baptised 21st November, 1732 (*a*).

Martha, living unmarried at the date of her brother's will; will dated 22nd May, 1799 (*g*).

(*a*) *Tynemouth Registers*.

(*b*) *Whitburn Registers*.

(*c*) Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses*.

(*d*) Scott, *Admissions to St. John's College, Cambridge*.

(*e*) Welford, *Men of Mark*.

(*f*) *Registers of St. John's, Newcastle*.

(*g*) Schedule of deeds in the possession of Mr. H. A. Adamson.

(*h*) Monumental Inscription, Christ Church, Tynemouth.

(*i*) Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. i. pp. 286, 315.

(*k*) Surtees, *Durham*, vol. ii. pp. 316, 343.

(*l*) *Durham Probate Registry*.

(*m*) The Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

(*n*) Luard, *Graduati Cantabrigienses*.

(*o*) *Newburn Registers*.

(*p*) *Cal. State Papers Domestic*, 1672, p. 223.

EVIDENCES TO DOCKWRAY PEDIGREE.

December 17th, 1666. The king to the University of Cambridge. Requires them to admit Thomas Dockwray, vicar of Newburn, Northumberland, to the degree of Doctor in Divinity, without the customary exercises, in reward of faithful service as chaplain in the fleet, for which some ecclesiastical preferment is to be bestowed on him. *Cal. State Papers Domestic*, 1666-1667, p. 351.

June 15th, 1668. The king to the bishop of Durham. Dr. Thomas Triplett, who has for many years been legally possessed of the rectory of Whitburn, in his diocese, has lately been dispossessed by Dr. Dockwray, on pretence of Triplett not subscribing to the declaration enjoined by the late Act of Uniformity, and of Dockwray having obtained a letter of recommendation from us. We never wished our letter to prejudice a person so deserving as Dr. Triplett, and wish him to be restored to the rectory, and not henceforth disquieted. We hope to have no further cause to resent the usage of a person most particularly recommended. *Ibid.* 1667-1668, p. 439.

June 3rd, 1672. Col. Edward Villiers to Williamson. I have written to Lord Arlington on behalf of the bearer, Dr. Dockwray's son, whom I found here supplying his father's place. It would be a great charity to procure him to succeed his father in the parsonage of Whitburn, having a brother and two sisters to provide for, and it would much conduce to the service to have it known that such care was taken for orphans whose fathers died so honourably in the king's service. I have a particular obligation to promote it all I can, for I was the means of his father being with the earl of Sandwich. The duke had taken him into his ship, had he not before been engaged, so well this good doctor was known in former engagements at sea. *Ibid.* 1672, p. 143. See also pp. 215, 223, 408 and 612.

Thomas Dockwray, vicar of Stamfordham, the eventual owner of this property, may be regarded as in some respects the founder of the modern town of North Shields. The old town had hardly extended beyond the narrow and crowded Low Street at the river side, when Dr. Dockwray commenced building squares and streets upon his land at the top of the bank. Dockwray Square was begun in 1763, Toll Square soon followed, and, after his death, his representatives, upon September 2nd, 1784, conveyed the whole of the Toll inheritance to trustees upon trust to sell the same for building purposes.¹ Their example was quickly followed by the other freeholders, with the result that nearly the whole of what was once the south field of Tynemouth township has been swallowed up in North Shields.

The land east of Carruth's freehold, as far as the Pow burn, was allotted in 1649 to Robert Dove of Tynemouth. His son, also named Robert, married Anne, daughter of Robert Otway of Preston, by whom he had a son, Robert Dove of the Low Lights. This last-named Robert Dove, by will dated December 21st, 1704, devised his two messuages called the Pow bank, and the parcel of land called the Dean, to his sister, Susanna Walker.² For more than a century the estate remained in the Walker family, who built Walker Place and other streets upon it. A portion of it was eventually sold to the Tynemouth Corporation by John Kerrich of Geldestone Hall in Suffolk (son of John Kerrich of Harleston by Elizabeth, daughter and heir of John Walker of Wallsend³), and now forms part of the Northumberland Park.⁴ The southern end of the dean, known as the Low Lights, was once a level flat of swampy ground called 'salt-grass,' covered at high spring-tides, though now reclaimed and busy with factories and warehouses. Thither came in 1766 a quaker, John Richardson, a member of a Whitby family, and set up a tan-yard, draining the soil and raising it.⁵ Another family of quakers, the Tyzacks,⁶ descendants of huguenots in Lorraine, who had established glass-works at Gateshead and Newcastle, also came to the Low Lights, and there started an iron foundry on land acquired

¹ Mr. H. A. Adamson's collections.

Ibid.

² John Walker of Dockwray Square and Wallsend, who died in January, 1822, by his will, dated May 16th, 1818, devised his estate at the Low Lights to his son, John Walker, for life, with reversion to testator's grandson, John Kerrich. John Walker the younger died unmarried, August 25th, 1833. *Ibid.*

³ The park was formed in 1885, land being made over to the corporation for the purpose by the duke of Northumberland.

⁴ Boyce, *Annals of a Quaker Family: The Richardsons of Cleveland*, p. 66.

⁵ An account of this family is given by Grazebrook, *Families of Henzey, Tyttery and Tyzack*.

in 1632 by George Milbourne of Chirton.¹ Prosperous shipowners built their residences there, and several of these large brick houses, with their wide fore-courts, still remain.

LINSKILL OF TYNEMOUTH LODGE.

WILLIAM LINSKILL of Whithy, N.R.Y., and of North Shields, died at = Jane, daughter and heiress of Anthony Chirton, 20th April, 1783, aged 57 (*b*); will dated 24th April, 1779; Pearson of North Shields, married 13th October, 1754 (*a*).
proved 1783 (*d*).

Robert Linskill of Whithy, son and heir, born 9th June, 1757 (<i>f</i>); named in the will of his maternal grandfather; administration of his personal estate, 29th September, 1790 (<i>d</i>).	Anthony, born 15th November, 1758 (<i>f</i>). John, born 21st Aug., 1760 (<i>f</i>). Anthony, born 29th July, 1761 (<i>f</i>).	William Linskill of North Shields, = Elizabeth Mary, dau. of Ralph William Grey of Backworth, married at Earsdon, 1st August, 1805; died 21st Sept., 1841 (<i>c</i>); buried at Ruddington (<i>c</i>). born 18th October, 1766 (<i>f</i>); built Tynemouth Lodge <i>circa</i> 1790; high sheriff of Northumberland, 1806; died at Humberstone, Leicestershire, 13th May, 1845; buried at Ruddington, Notts.
---	--	--

Abigail, born 14th September, 1755 (*f*); died in infancy.
Margaret, born 15th August, 1756 (*f*); married 7th September, 1784, John Blackburn (*f*), and died 1818.
Jane, born 25th October, 1759 (*f*); married 26th November, 1784, Henry Coward of Preston (*f*).
Hannah, born 30th July, 1762 (*f*).

Abigail, born 21st June, 1764 (*f*).
Esther, born 13th October, 1767 (*f*).
Maria Antonia, born 7th January, 1771 (*f*); married 26th November, 1795, John Mansell, captain 3rd Dragoon Guards, and died 25th January, 1843 (*f*).

William Linskill of Tynemouth Lodge, born 28th August, 1807 (<i>f</i>); entered 28th Foot; captain 5th Dragoon Guards (<i>c</i>); three times Mayor of Tynemouth; purchased and sold Morwick; died 17th March, 1901; buried at Cambridge (<i>c</i>).	Frances A. C. Annesley, daughter of Arthur, Viscount Valentia, married at Bletchington, Oxon., 17th October, 1853; died at Cambridge, 13th May, 1904.	John Anthony Pearson Linskill, born 28th July, 1812 (<i>f</i>); buried at Beaudesert, Warwickshire (<i>c</i>).	Elizabeth, born 27th March, 1808 (<i>f</i>); buried at West Linton (<i>c</i>). Mary Jane, born 25th April, 1810 (<i>f</i>). Frances Sarah, born 17th May, 1811 (<i>f</i>). Charlotte Antonia, born 19th October, 1813 (<i>f</i>); died 1885; buried at Weymouth (<i>c</i>).
--	---	--	--

William Thomas Linskill of St. Andrews, N.B., born at Tynemouth Lodge, 25th June, 1855. = Jessie Monro, daughter of James Stewart, married at Edinburgh, 7th March, 1881 (*c*).

Violet Frances, born 30th December, 1881 (*c*).

Mary Seton, born 10th March, 1883; died 5th September of same year (*c*).

Nora Douglas, born 6th November, 1886 (*c*).

(*a*) *Tynemouth Registers*.

(*b*) Monumental Inscription, Tynemouth Priory.

(*c*) *Ex mf.* Mr. W. T. Linskill.

(*d*) Raine, *Test. Ebor.*

(*e*) Matthew Forster's obituary.

(*f*) *Ex* family bibles and communicated by Mr. H. A. Adamson.

To the north of Dove's freehold, on the other side of the Tynemouth road, thirty-three acres were allotted to Gerrard Robinson and John Bowes. This land was purchased from their representatives by James Stewart, son of Edward Stewart mentioned above. James Stewart died childless. By his will, May 31st, 1743, he left his lands in North Shields, Tynemouth, the parish of Ponteland, Tweedmouth and Spittle, and Callerton, to his

¹ Mr. H. A. Adamson's collections.

CLARK OF BLYTH, CHOPPINGTON, NORTH SHIELDS, AND BELFORD.

JOHN CLARK of Long Houghton, =

William Clark of Long Houghton, baptised 20th June, 1711 (*a*); died 1797, = Ann died May, 1742. Other issue.
aged 86 (*b*). aged 30 (*b*).

John Clark of Blyth, afterwards of Bel-side, = Elizabeth Fair- William Clark of Dockwray = Elizabeth Thomp-
born at Long Houghton (*b*); voted at lam, daughter son, mar. 20th
the election of knights of the shire in 1774 of George Mar- Square, North Shields (*f*), a
for a freehold at Blyth (*g*); owner of a shall of Blyth, native of Long Houghton;
moiety of Long Houghton tithes; pur- mar. 18th May, 1773 (*c*); died at the election of knights
chased Choppington in 1803; died 29th of the shire in 1774 for a free- hold at North Shields (*g*); died
May, 1809, aged 73 (*b*) (*c*); will dated 1st Newcastle, Feb- 16th August, 1810, aged 69
September, 1804 (*d*). ruary, 1825. (*b*) (*e*). 1788, aged 46 (*e*).
Other issue.

John Clark, baptised 30th June, 1774 (*c*); of Little Tower Jane, baptised 20th October, 1775 (*c*); married, 4th April,
Street, London. 1799, John North of London (*d*) (*r*).
William Clark, baptised 13th October, 1777 (*c*); buried 16th Elizabeth, baptised 1st November, 1778 (*c*); died unmar-
November, 1798 (*c*). ried; buried 17th May, 1804 (*c*).
Robert Clark, baptised 9th January, 1781 (*c*); of St. Mary- Ann, baptised 8th November, 1779 (*c*); died at Bel-side;
at-Hill, London, and of Choppington. buried 31st October, 1806 (*c*).
George Clark, baptised 29th April, 1783 (*c*); of London and Harriet, baptised 15th April, 1784 (*c*); named in her
and of Sheepwash. father's will (*d*).
Charles Taylor Clark, baptised 22nd July, 1785 (*c*); of Maria, baptised 18th September, 1788 (*r*).
Cowpen Quay, shipbuilder. Sophia Isabella, baptised 18th September, 1788 (*r*).
Selby Clark, baptised 20th October, 1786 (*r*); named in his Maria Isabella, baptised 11th August, 1799 (*r*); married
father's will. Joseph Ferguson of Carlisle.

Anne, dau. of James Hut- = William Clark of Tynemouth, = Mary, daughter of = Margaret, widow = Samuel Clark, died
chinson of Tynemouth (*f*), afterwards of Long Benton, of William Brown unmar-
married 23rd Sept., 1793 purchased Belford in 1811; of Long Benton, married 14th Feb- married in
(*h*); died 23rd Sept., 1802, high sheriff of Northumber- ruary, 1805 (*f*); London, Aug.
aged 32 (*c*), first wife. land, 1820; died 10th June, 1837, aged 72 (*c*). died 1792, aged 21
(*f*).
Anne Elizabeth, died 26th December, 1847 (*c*). Lydia, married
Mary Elizabeth, mar. Wm. Clark King, clerk in orders (*f*). 10th June, 1795;
Elizabeth Sarah (*f*). John Wright of
Wallsend (*h*).

William Brown Clark of = Eleanor, dau. of John Dixon Clark, born = Anne, dau. of Jane Margaret, mar. 2nd
Belford, born 12th Nov., Addison Fenwick 10th January, 1812; of Addison Fen- July, 1833, William
1807; of University Col- of Bishopwear- University College, Oxon.; matric. 30th June, 1820, Wick, married William
lege, Oxon.; matriculated 11th June, 1833; she matric. 30th June, 1820, 8th June, 1843; died at Atkinson (*f*), clerk in
15th June, 1825, aged 17; B.A., 1829; M.A., 1832; admitted to Gray's Inn, March, 1847, Sir orders, incumbent of
1st May, 1826; died 9th Edw. Bracken- died s.p.m. 1st Sept., 1870. 1847, aged Gateshead Fell; suc-
November, 1840. bury, bart. 33. 1878. ceeded her brother and
assumed the additional
name of Clark; died
1878.

Emily Anne, married Francis Swan, clerk in orders, rector of Aswardby, co. Lincoln. Ann Elizabeth, married 21st June,
Julia Mary, married 20th August, 1863, George M. Murray, clerk in orders, vicar of 1864, John V. D. Butler, afterwards
Shrivenham, Berks. earl of Lanesborough.

- (*a*) Long Houghton Registers.
- (*b*) Monumental Inscription, Long Houghton.
- (*c*) Earsdon Registers.
- (*d*) Abstract of Title to Choppington.
- (*e*) Monumental Inscription, Tynemouth Priory.

- (*f*) Bell Collection, Portfolio 309.
- (*g*) Poll Books.
- (*h*) Tynemouth Registers.
- (*r*) Horton Registers.

nephews, Edward Clarke and James Stewart Clarke, subject to their taking the name of Stewart. They sold their Tynemouth property in 1763 and 1767 to Anthony Pearson, a rope-maker in North Shields, who, on February 26th, 1768, devised all his real estate, including freehold property in Whitby, to his son-in-law, William Linskill. Mr. Linskill built Tynemouth lodge upon this land about the year 1790.¹ The house has since been demolished, and its grounds are covered with new streets. Linskill Terrace (formerly Squire's Walk), Washington Terrace, and the Tynemouth road, mark the boundaries of this property.

Beyond the Pow burn, and between it and the deep cut called the Howlings, where the priors of Tynemouth had once their fish-ponds, lands were assigned to John Morton of Tynemouth² and to John Morton of Willington, partly as freehold, partly as copyhold. The whole is now the property of the duke of Northumberland and of various owners. On the cliff here, above the Mussel scarp, barracks for four hundred men were erected in 1758 by the board of ordnance. These buildings, known as Percy Square, ceased to be used as barracks upon the conclusion of the Napoleonic wars.³ Many of the picturesque cottages forming the square have been carried away by landslips in the boulder clay of the cliffs.

CLIFFORD'S FORT AND THE LIGHTHOUSES.

In the year 1536, on September 21st, King Henry VIII. gave licence to Richard Grey and other masters and mariners of Newcastle-upon-Tyne to found a fraternity or guild of sailors and other persons in honour of the Holy Trinity. The guild was to have a master and four wardens, who, with their brethren and sisters, might make laws for the navigation of the port of Tynemouth, for the preservation of order among masters, pilots, governors of ships, and mariners, and for the maintenance and continuance of the port. They were empowered to build and embattle two stone towers, the one on the north side of Shields, at the entry of the port, and the other upon a hill there. The towers were to be adapted for 'signals, metes, and

¹ Mr. H. A. Adamson's collections.

² John Morton of Tynemouth was son of Roger Morton of Tynemouth by Bridget, daughter of Ralph Holme of Monkwearmouth. Leighton, *Family of Goodchild of Pallion Hall*, p. 31.

³ An Act of Parliament to enable his majesty to grant the inheritance of certain lands, tenements, etc., in North Scotland Yard, in exchange for the inheritance of certain buildings, barracks, etc., contiguous to Tynemouth castle, belonging to the duke of Northumberland, and also to empower the said duke to make out exchange; 25 Geo. III. The exchange was never carried into effect.

bounds,' for the safe and sure keeping of the town and fort, and for burning lights perpetually through the night; and all vessels coming into port were to pay fourpence if foreign, and twopence if English, for the maintenance of the towers, port and light. A few days later, on October 5th, the Trinity House of Newcastle received the charter of its foundation.¹

Three years elapsed before the building of the towers was taken in hand. The low light was the first to be set up, a site being found for it at the mouth of the Pow burn, on the left bank of that stream. Here, at the point called 'the Narrows,' the Tyne is not more than a hundred and twenty yards broad, but immediately to the east its two shores diverge, and, as the towers were intended for defence as much as for illumination, there was wisdom in choosing a point where a fort could, even more effectively than Tynemouth castle, command the entrance to the river. The erection of the low light and the purchase of a house at Shields cost £8 5s. 9d. The second tower, known as the high light, was built at the top of the bank on the other side of the burn, and both were completed in 1540.²

A single tallow candle was kept burning in each tower from quarter and half-quarter flood to half ebb, the lights being in the charge of an attendant who received a yearly wage of twenty shillings.³ In 1606 the Trinity House had a new charter given to it containing a clause for the raising of lightage to fourpence for English, and to a shilling for foreign vessels.⁴ This was again increased, by order of council, October 9th, 1613, to the sums of sixpence and 1s. 4d. respectively, upon the erection of two new turrets on the summits of the lighthouses, each turret to contain two candles.⁵ There was a constant expense involved in keeping the lights in repair, and in 1658/9 the old stone towers appear to have been taken down and rebuilt in timber.⁶ Combined forts and lighthouses were coming to be out of date. It was advantageous to have moveable structures which might also serve as sea-marks, and as the shoals in the river were frequently shifting, the lights were as often moved from place to place. An advertisement was issued on October 26th, 1667, to masters and seamen trading to

¹ *Letters and Papers*, Henry VIII. vol. xi. p. 376. Welford, *Newcastle and Gateshead*, vol. ii. pp. 151-154.

² *Ibid.* pp. 197, 201. *Trinity House MSS.* Books of Payment.

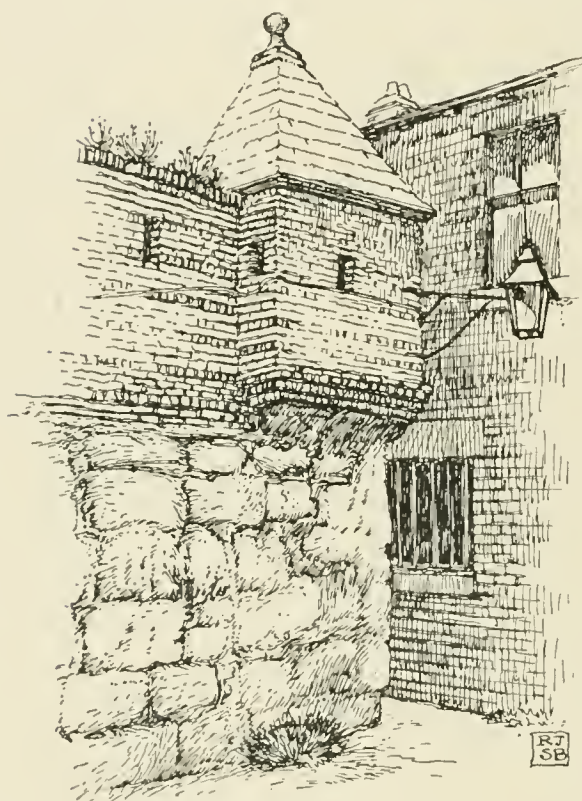
³ Welford, *Newcastle and Gateshead*, pp. 211, 251.

⁴ *Ibid.* vol. iii. p. 174. Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. pp. 696-702.

⁵ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 326. Welford, *Newcastle and Gateshead*, vol. iii. p. 199. The toll levied on English vessels was increased by a subsequent charter (July 26th, 1687) to eightpence. Brand, vol. ii. pp. 709-717.

⁶ *Trinity House MSS.* Books of Payments.

Newcastle, informing them that the upper lighthouse had been removed more northward, and now directed to the best channel into the port; also that there was a point of sand striking over from the Herd within the bar, directly northward, almost to the place called the Black Middings, whereof they were desired to take care.¹ Sands shifted so quickly that in the following April it was again found necessary to move the house.²



CORNER TURRET IN CLIFFORD'S FORT.

It was on a spit of sand close to the low lighthouse that the marquis of Newcastle erected, in 1642, one of the two blockhouses that were to guard 'the Narrows.'³ The capture of this fort two years later by the Scots has been described above, as well as the building of Clifford's fort near the same spot in 1672. The low light was included within the circuit of the new fort, of which some walls remain, though its keep has been demolished.⁴ Drawings made of the fort soon after its construction show the keep as a three-storey building with a central turret. It was fortified with thirty culverins and ten demi-culverins,⁶ on the east and south sides, trained so as to command the river, and was placed under the command of the governor of Tynemouth castle. At

the present time it is garrisoned by a company of volunteer submarine engineers.

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1667, p. 547.

² *Trinity House MSS. Order Books*.

³ Its foundations were laid bare and washed away by a heavy sea in October, 1811. There was also 'a fort raised between the Uplight and the town,' which was destroyed by Sir Thomas Riddell in January, 1643/4. *Duke of Portland's MSS. Hist. MSS. Com. vol. i. p. 167. Compare Various Collections, Hist. MSS. Com. vol. ii. p. 258.*

⁴ See above, pp. 187, 200, and *Cal. State Papers Domestic*, 1671-1672, pp. 399, 439.

⁵ *Brit. Mus. King's Library*, xxxiii. 23 g, reproduced on p. 201 of this volume. These drawings are by Sir Martin Beckmann, chief engineer of Charles II., who appears to have designed the work. See also plate in Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 36.

⁶ Richardson, *Reprints*, vol. ii. Biog. Div.: *Wayfarings of Ralph Thoresby*, 1681, p. 16.

In 1686 the Trinity House of Newcastle petitioned for an increase of the duties imposed on vessels entering the Tyne. Both lighthouses were inefficiently lighted and required to be rebuilt. It was stated that the high light was too low and had become ruinous, and that the low light had been rendered inefficient by its want of elevation and in consequence of the obstruction caused by the garrison buildings lately erected. 'The light at Tinnmouth,' according to this petition, 'receives for its mainteynance for every English ship 12d., and for every forraigner 3s., whereas there are two lights at Sheilds, which, although butt candle-lights, yett each light consists of two candles in the pound; each of which lights is as chargeable to mainteyne as that of Tinnmouth, although it bee a fire light; and two men are alwaies employed to looke after those lights at Sheilds, who, besides their candles, firing and house free, receive thirty pound per annum sallary from the Trinity House.'¹ New lighthouses were erected in 1727, and these are still



THE OLD LOW LIGHT.

standing. Tallow candles were still in use, but three were now burnt in each tower in place of two.² Copper reflectors were introduced in 1736, and oil lamps were ordered to be substituted for candles at the end of 1773.³ Lightage dues were remodelled in 1801, and graduated

¹ *Trinity House MSS.*² *Ibid.*³ Mackenzie, *Hist. Newcastle*, p. 684.

according to the register tonnage of the vessel.¹ In their turn the lighthouses of 1727 were superseded by other lights built in 1806-1808 under powers granted to the Trinity House of Newcastle, by Act of Parliament.² The old lighthouses were subsequently converted into almshouses, the lantern-turret being removed from the old low light to make way for an additional storey. Additional almshouses were built in 1887 adjoining to the old high light in Beacon Street.³

NOTE ON ROMAN ARMOUR FOUND ON TYNEMOUTH BAR.

By F. HAVERFIELD.

Two interesting pieces of Roman armour have been found in the Tyne: the boss and ornament from a shield, and the cheek-piece from a helmet. They are said to have been dredged up at or near the bar across the mouth of the river, more than thirty years ago, and they appear to have been discovered together, or at least in proximity. But the actual circumstances of the discovery have not been recorded, nor did even the name of the finder transpire at the time. The shield-boss was bought by Canon Greenwell and, after long forming part of his collection, was recently acquired by the British Museum. The cheek-piece came into the hands of Dr. Stephens of North Shields, and is now in the possession of his son, the Rev. Thomas Stephens of Horsley in Redesdale.

(1) The shield-boss is a metal plate, rectangular in shape, 10½ inches in width and 11¾ inches in height, and slightly curved, so as to fit on to one of those oblong shields, curved to cover the body, which may be seen figured, for example, on the column of Trajan. It occupied the centre of such a shield, and was attached by eight nails, the holes for which are visible on its edges. The material is bronze, and that part of the surface which forms the background of the ornamentation appears to have been silvered (not tinned as is stated in the *Lapidarium*, p. 58). The silver is now blackened, and has sometimes been taken erroneously for *niello*.⁴ Probably the ornamentation was made by first silvering the whole, then punching the outline in small holes in the silver, and finally scratching off the silver within the outline.

The ornament consists of a raised central boss and eight small flat compartments round it. The boss is adorned with the figure of an eagle with outspread wings, holding in its beak a twig with leaves. The *genus* of the tree is undistinguishable on the actual bronze, but analogies, such as the eagle on the tombstone of Cn. Musius at Mainz, suggest that it is meant for oak, rather than for olive as Dr. Bruce suggested. A similar shield-boss, found near Mainz, shows an eagle holding in its beak a wreath or garland. On either side of the raised boss a flat compartment contains a legionary standard of the ordinary type, having a point to fix it in the earth, five of the usual disks or *phaleræ*, a cross-piece with ribands dependent from it, and on the top an upright hand. Over one of the standards are dotted the

¹ The rates were fixed at 2s. for every laden foreign ship, 11d. for every British ship of less than 100 tons burden, 1s. 1d. for British ships above 100 and not exceeding 200 tons, 1s. 3d. for British ships above 200 and not exceeding 300 tons, and 1s. 5d. for every British ship above 300 tons burden. 'An Act for extending and enlarging the powers, and increasing the rates and duties of the corporation of the Trinity House of Newcastle-upon-Tyne.' 41 Geo. III. cap. lxxxvi.

² 'An Act to enable the master, pilots and seamen of the Trinity House of Newcastle-upon-Tyne to erect two new lighthouses at North Shields, at or near the port of Newcastle, and to raise a fund for defraying the charge thereof.' 45 George III. cap. lxxv.

³ For further information respecting the lighthouses at North Shields and Tynemouth see Hesleton, *Charitable Establishments for Merchant Seamen* (manuscript in the library of the Literary and Philosophical Society, Newcastle-upon-Tyne). Mr. Hesleton computes the number of ships that paid lightage to the North Shields lights to be as follows: in 1539, 847; in 1650, 3,125; in 1700, 3,182; in 1750, 2,897; in 1780, 4,249; in 1800, 7,865; in 1818, 11,165. Lightage and other dues payable to the Trinity House of Newcastle were abolished in 1862 by the Harbour and Passing Tolls Act, 24 & 25 Vict. cap. 47.

⁴ Information from the Anglo-Roman department, British Museum.

letters LEG VIII and over the other AVG—*legio viii Augusta*. It seems probable—though it has not, I think, been noticed—that the eagle and two *signa* form a group, exactly like the groups consisting in each case of an eagle flanked by two *signa*, which occur regularly on Roman monuments and coins.¹ Below the central boss is a flat compartment containing the figure of a bull, with a half-moon and four stars above him. The bull is the emblem of the Legio VIII Augusta, as Dr. Bruce first suggested and as the coins of Gallienus and Carausius amply prove. Prof. A. von Domaszewski has pointed out that it received this emblem from Julius Caesar, and for a definite reason. The deity of the Julian house was Venus genetrix, and the part of the year over which she presided was that which fell under the zodiacal sign of the bull. What the moon and stars denote I am not sure.

The five other compartments of this ornament contain male human figures. Along the top are three. On the left is a nude dancer, or the like, with a scarf hanging behind him from his arms, and a festoon or scarf held over his head somewhat as if it were being used for a skipping-rope. His attitude is that of a man springing backwards in some game or dance. In the centre is a nude figure, also springing backwards, with a similar scarf over the arms, but equipped with a helmet, a shield and a spear. In the right-hand corner is a winged nude figure in a similar attitude of springing backwards, again with a scarf over the arms and holding in his right hand what looks like a scythe or sickle. At the bottom of the shield are two erect standing figures. That on the left is winged and undraped; a scarf hangs over the arms; in the right hand is a bunch of fruits (?) and in the left a fruit basket or bucket (?). That on the right is clad in a tunic and has a scarf over the arms and a scarf or festoon over the head, somewhat like its diagonal *vis-à-vis*.

It is not quite clear whether these five figures possess any special significance, or are merely conventional decoration. The centre-piece at the top may be intended for Mars, though the scarf is somewhat strange in this connection. The other four were explained by Dr. Bruce and Prof. Hübner as the four Seasons. According to this view Spring, in the top left-hand corner, is a youth vainly pulling his clothes around him in windy March weather.² Summer is an unclad husbandman with a scythe. Autumn holds fruits and a basket, and Winter is wrapped in fur, while his scarf is blown about by the wind. This explanation is in part, at least, correct. The figures identified as Summer, Autumn and Winter agree with figures of those Seasons in other works of ancient art, and Spring is not unsuitable to the same idea. But figures resembling the four Seasons are so frequently used as a mere decoration of corners, that we may wonder whether real meaning attaches to them in this case. No connexion is apparent between a soldier's shield and the four Seasons. It would be fanciful to argue that a soldier's business goes on in all months equally. Indeed, under the conditions of ancient warfare, it tended not to do so. Probably, therefore, the decorator of the shield merely chose four corner-pieces suitable to his design without thinking of their special significance. What he meant by the pieces of drapery (?) which hang from the top of each compartment, like curtains in a room or stage, is not clear. But it is never safe to press the details of conventional ornament.

The shield also bears two inscriptions, the letters of which are made with dots punched through the silver covering of the surface. One of these, LEG VIII AVG, has been already noted. The other fills the edge near the lower left-hand corner and reads *Q IVL MAGNI IVNI DVBITATI*, that is, *centuria Iulii Magni, Iuni Dubitati*. In other words, the shield belonged to Iunius Dubitatus, a soldier in the century of Iulius Magnus and the Eighth Legion Augusta. The insertion of an extra element in the M of *Magni* is, of course, a mere slip of the man who punched it on. Similar inscriptions, recording the ownership of armour, are not uncommon among Roman remains.

The Eighth Legion was never quartered in Britain. But it contributed a detachment or *vexillatio* for temporary service in the island on one occasion, and probably did so on another. It is possible, though not certain, that some of its men were included in the army of the Claudian invasion in A.D. 43. It is certain, as an inscription of Ferentinum tells us, that *vexillationes*, a thousand strong, of the

¹ A. v. Domaszewski, *Fahnen im römischen Heere* (Wien, 1885), p. 41. Figs. 20, 34 foll.; *Arch. Epigr. Mitt.* vol. xv. p. 192, Fig. 3.

² Dr. Bruce puts in a snake at his feet, 'to indicate the renewal of vital energy in the lower creatures.' This is improbable as symbolism, and I cannot see the snake on the original. Lindenschmidt seems not to believe in the four Seasons at all.

Legions VII Gemina, VIII Augusta and XXII. Primigenia, joined in an *expeditio Britannica* about the time of Hadrian.¹ The date of the expedition is not given. But it would appear to have taken place a few years after the death of Trajan, in A.D. 117, and it may be reasonably identified with the visit of Hadrian to Britain in or about A.D. 122, and the erection of the Wall of Hadrian from Tyne to Solway. The vexillation was doubtless here only for a brief period, and it has therefore left very scanty traces of itself. One such trace is our shield. It is not possible to connect this with the Claudian invasion. No Roman soldier could have penetrated so far north as the Tyne in A.D. 43. On the other hand the Tyne was the centre of Hadrian's activity. It may be added, as a straw indicating the wind of probabilities, that the description of the owner of the shield by his *nomen* and *cognomen*, without his *praenomen*, suits far better with the time of Hadrian than with that of Claudius.

It is not unlikely though it cannot of course be proved—that the owner of the armour was wrecked on the Tyne bar. We possess some little evidence that Roman troops sometimes sailed from the Rhine to the Tyne instead of landing in south Britain and marching inland.² Such a voyage had its special perils, and the entrance to the Tyne may well count as one of them. It may be, as Canon Greenwell has suggested, that the rest of the equipment of Iunius Dubitatus is still lying in the mud of the river bed near Shields.

(2) The other piece of armour found in the river demands less comment. It is the left cheek-piece of a helmet, 7½ inches high by 4¾ inches wide, decorated, as such pieces often were, with a design made by lines of small punched dots. This design shows one of the Dioscuri (Castor or Pollux), holding a spear in his left hand and the bridle of his horse in his right. Below and above is some conventional geometrical ornament. The other of the pair was doubtless figured on the right cheek-piece.³

CULLERCOATS TOWNSHIP.

The north-east corner of what was formerly Tynemouth township now constitutes a separate poor-law township and forms the village of Cullercoats. It lies by the seashore on the south side of the Marden burn,⁴ is bounded by John Street on the west, comprises an area of fifteen acres, and in 1901 had a population of 1,743.⁵ Coal was worked here in 1315, when the workings were destroyed in a Scottish invasion.⁶ Though the water-mill of Marden is not mentioned by name before the suppression of the monastery, it was probably one of the six mills belonging to Tynemouth in 1292,⁷ and may be identified with the water-mill existing in 1483, when Richard III. gave £100 to Prior Boston as provision for its maintenance.⁸ In 1538 Marden mill was in the occupation of Robert Dove and John Dove, and formed part of the prior's demesne.⁹ Receivers' accounts show

¹ *Corpus Inscr. Lat.* x. 5,829, Dessau 2,727.

² *Arch. Ael.* second series, vol. xxv. p. 143.

³ The shield-boss has been published and figured in the *Lapidarium Septentrionale*, p. 58, No. 106, and in Lindenschmidt, *Alterthümer unserer heidnischen Vorzeit* (Mainz, 1881), vol. iii. pt. iv. Plate III. The cheek-piece was exhibited to the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries in 1884 (*Proceedings*, second series, vol. i. pp. 340-341), and has been kindly lent by its present owner for the purpose of this description.

⁴ The course of the Marden burn can still be traced in the depression running up by Eskdale Terrace.

⁵ Population statistics for the township are: 1801, 452; 1811, 454; 1821, 536; 1831, 542; 1841, 738; 1851, 695; 1861, 866; 1871, 1,398; 1881, 1,365; 1891, 1,620; 1901, 1,743.

⁶ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 168.

⁷ See above, page 251.

⁸ See above, page 106.

⁹ Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. pp. 217-218.

26 cm



BOSS OF ROMAN SHIELD FOUND IN THE TYNE.

that it was being rebuilt in 1598-1599. Trees were felled and squared in Hedley wood, and carted thence to Blaydon staith, after long delay 'for that the frehoulders of Proddoo refused to lede the same which fell for ther partes to lede by the baylif's order and th'other tennants.' The timber was wrecked in the river and had to be weighed up again. The cost of building was £17 17s., besides £6 for a pair of millstones.¹

Amongst the parcels of demesne of which the tenants of Tynemouth had the herbage in 1539 were two closes called Nether Marden and Upper Marden.² A close containing two acres of pasture, called Culvercoats close, is mentioned in a survey taken about 1600 as being part of the demesne.³ The dovecote from which the name was derived may have stood near, and been built in connection with, the mill. Arnold's close *alias* Marden close, also known as Culler Corners, was held in 1606 by Ralph Delaval of Tynemouth. Ralph Delaval conveyed it in that year to his brother Peter Delaval, whose son, John Delaval, sold it as freehold in 1618 to Thomas Wrangham.⁴ The latter disposed of his estate in 1621 to Thomas Dove of Whitley.⁵ John Dove of Whitley, son and heir of Thomas Dove, joined the Society of Friends, and, with his brother William, was imprisoned at Tynemouth castle for attending a quakers' meeting in 1661. In the following year he enclosed a piece of land at the north end of John Street (formerly called Back Lane) as a private burying-ground, and interments took place here until 1818.⁶ He became partner in 1676 with John Carr of Newcastle, John Rogers of Denton, Henry Hudson of Newbiggin, and others, in Whitley colliery. By way of providing for the exportation of coals won at Whitley a pier was erected at Cullercoats in 1677, and was constructed at the joint expense of Lady Elizabeth Percy

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS. That the mill was at the mouth of the burn, and not near Marden farm, appears from Thomas Dove's lease in 1644 of land in Arnold's close (now Cullercoats) bounded by Marden mill on the north and by the sea on the north-east. Tomlinson, *Historical Notes on Cullercoats, etc.*, p. 5.

² See above, page 262.

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS. Early seventeenth century survey of Tynemouthshire.

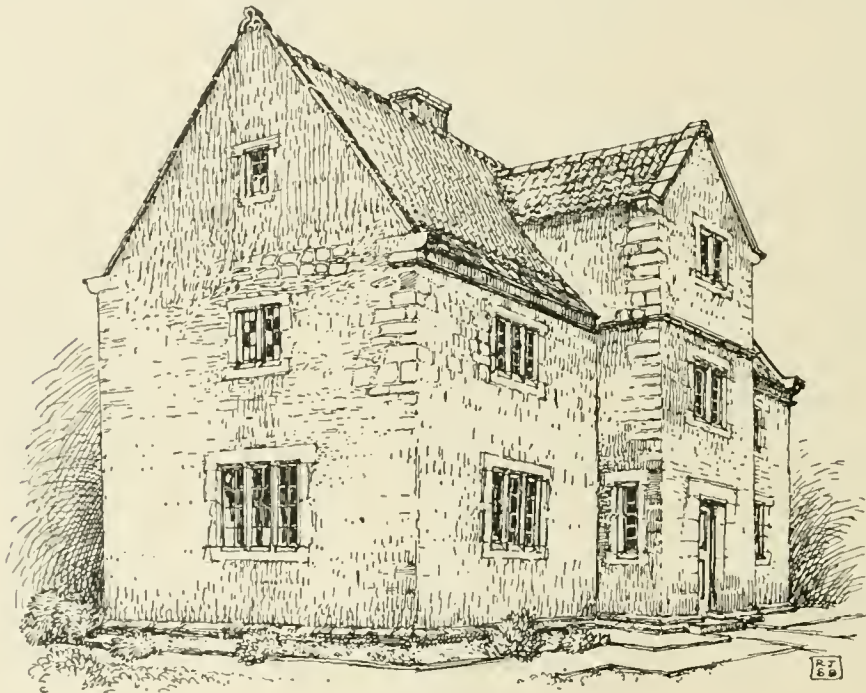
⁴ Dr. Simpson's deeds, from Mr. H. A. Adamson's collection. Arnold's close is defined in the deed of 1621 as 'late the inheritance of one Maddison and Follensby. situate and being within the field and liberty of Tynemouth, bounding on the town moor on the west, and upon a beck or river called Marden on the north, and the sea banks towards the east, and upon a gutter or running swirl towards the south-east.'

⁵ Accounts of the Dove family have been given by Mr. W. W. Tomlinson, *Cullercoats*, pp. 4-13, and 39-40, and by Mr. Maberly Phillips, *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xvi. pp. 281-294. For a pedigree of the family see *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xix. p. 125.

⁶ With regard to the burying-ground see Maberly Phillips, 'Forgotten Burying Grounds of the Society of Friends,' *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xvi. pp. 275-281.

and of the lessees of Whitley colliery, the total cost being £3,013. Upon a petition presented in the same year by Lady Elizabeth Percy to the lord treasurer, Cullercoats was made a member of the port of Newcastle, and, like Seaton Sluice, was put under the charge of a custom-house officer resident at Blyth. Salt pans were started at Cullercoats in connection with Whitley colliery. Coal was also worked upon the estate.¹

In 1682 Thomas Dove of Whitley, son and heir of John Dove above mentioned, built himself a dwelling-house in Cullercoats, which is still



SPARROW HALL.

standing and is known as Sparrow hall. His son, John Dove of Wapping, sold it in 1706 to his kinsman, Zephaniah Haddock.² Eleanor Dove, only daughter of John Dove the younger, by his wife, Mary, daughter of Enoch Hudson of Brunton, inherited her father's property at Cullercoats, and, on August 5th, 1742, married Curwen Huddleston, incumbent of St. Nicholas', Whitehaven, and of Clifton in Westmorland.³ Their representatives still own property in Cullercoats.

¹ Tomlinson, *Cullercoats*, pp. 6-9.

² *Ibid.* pp. 9, 13.

³ The Rev. Curwen Huddleston was second son of Wilfrid Huddleston of Hutton John, for whose ancestry see *Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica*, new series, vol. ii. p. 408.

In consequence of its growing population, Cullercoats was separated from Tynemouth by an order made in quarter sessions on July 6th, 1690, and created a distinct township.¹ The coal and salt trade flourished. Besides two salt pans erected near the pier by Thomas Fearon of South Shields in 1677, there were seventeen pans in the hands of John Rogers and partners,² namely, seven on the north side of the bay and ten on the south side, on the point then called 'Coning Garth,' above Smuggler's Cove. In the year 1708 these pans produced 2,180 tons and yielded a clear profit of £538.³ Warburton estimated that the harbour, piers and salt works



CULLERCOATS HARBOUR.

would bring in £1,700 per annum.⁴ This commercial prosperity did not, however, last for long. About the year 1710 the outworks of the pier were carried away by a heavy sea. Whitley colliery ceased working in 1724, and Cullercoats colliery was laid in on June 4th of the preceding year. The salt trade did not survive the loss of the local supply of 'pan' coal on which it was dependent. In 1724 only 756 tons of salt were cleared

¹ 'Ordered that whereas the towne of Cullercoates is growne numerous and populous, and but about a mile distance from Tynemouth, and many houses new built there, it is ordered that it be made a distinct constabulary of itselfe; that William Richardson be sworne petty constable there. And it is further ordered that Mr. John Mills, high constable, doe order and settle their proportions of assessments and rates of Cullercoats and Tynemouth, and what in particular shall be paid by Tynemouth and what by Cullercoates. *Sessions Order Books*, vol. ii.

² John Rogers, son of John Rogers the elder, by will dated September 20th, 1711, devised to his mother, Elizabeth Rogers, for life, with other properties, his collieries and salt pans at Cullercoats, Monkseaton, Whitley, and Hartley, with remainder to Colonel Nathaniel Blakiston. An account of the Rogers family has been given by Mr. W. W. Tomlinson, *Denton Hall and its Associations*.

³ Purvis papers in the custody of Messrs. Griffith.

⁴ Warburton, *Magna Britannia*: Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

coastwise, and 668 tons in the following year. In 1726 the export trade ceased altogether, six of the pans being sold to Richard Ridley and Company for £456 and transferred to Blyth.¹

After salt had ceased to be manufactured at Cullercoats, the village developed into a fishing station, and was described in 1749 as 'the best fish-market in the north of England.'² The pier, after long lying in ruins, was rebuilt in 1848. Herring fishing has now left the village, but white fishing is carried on during the winter, and many cobbles are employed for catching salmon during the summer months.

NORTH SHIELDS TOWNSHIP.

North Shields township is a narrow strip of land along the northern bank of the Tyne. Its boundary commences about half a mile up the river from Tynemouth, to the south of the bridge crossing the Pow burn at the Low Lights, and proceeds along the north side of the Low Light Stairs and along what was called in the eighteenth century 'Shields Bank Head' to a point opposite the foot of Stephenson Street. It then intersects some of the houses on the south side of Tyne Street and crosses the Library Flags at the foot of Howard Street, whence it proceeds in a north-westerly direction to the Magnesia Bank; thence northward to Union Street and westward to the Church Stairs and Causey Bank. There it traverses Wooden Bridge Bank and so goes along the Ropery Banks (crossing the bridge over the Borough Road) as far as Collingwood Street. Running up and across that street it reaches Mount Pleasant, and, crossing Burdon Main Row, continues along the north side of North Street, Milburn Place, to the west end of the street. At that point it turns south-west by Dock (or West) Street, and intersects the Ballast Hill on the south side, to the west of Smith's Dock, whence it goes in a southerly direction to the river Tyne. Its area is 103 acres, but this includes seventy acres of water, the southern boundary being taken to be a line equidistant from the Northumberland and Durham shores of the Tyne.

'All over the wastes (as they call them),' says Camden, writing of the condition of the south-west of the county in Elizabeth's time, 'as well as

¹ Tomlinson, *Cullercoats*, pp. 13-16.

² *Ibid.* p. 17, citing *Newcastle Journal*, October 7th, 1749.

in Gillesland, you would think you see the ancient Nomades ; a martial sort of people that from April to August lie in little hutts (which they call *sheals* and *shealings*) here and there among their several flocks.¹ As far back as the seventh century of the Christian era there were to be found in Northumberland these thatched and turf-built huts, tenanted by shepherds during the summer months and left deserted in the winter time.²

Into the Tyne on the north side, at the point where the banks begin to trend away north and south and the river finds a broader channel, there flows a little stream called the Pow burn, which now finds a vent through a conduit into the river, but was once an important tributary, called 'Pwl,' *the* stream or water. Here there were three fishers' huts or shields.³ At the end of the thirteenth century no one knew how long they had stood there. The fishermen of Tynemouth had always made use of them and put out and in at this point. There was a wharf here. In September, 1819, in digging to make gas tanks at the Low Lights in the Pow dean, the workmen came, at a distance of twelve feet six inches from the surface, on a framing of large oaken beams, as black as ebony, pinned together with wooden trenails, the whole forming a pier to which vessels drawing nine or ten feet of water had come. Large oak trees were also found embedded in the mud, hollowed out as if to convey water.⁴

In or about the year 1225 Prior Germanus began to build at the Sheels, or, as the name is now written, Shields. The land was the prior's demesne and was then within the township of Tynemouth. A permanent population of fishermen was settled here, who, in return for the privilege of having boats of their own, were bound to provide fish for the monastery. Seven houses were built between the Pow burn and a 'sicket' to the west, in which one may recognize the now dry Dogger lech. Beyond the sicket there were twenty more houses. All were built close down to the shore, and a few must have been raised on piles, for they extended six to sixteen feet within high-water mark. Every house had a quay attached. Some had two quays. Mills were built there, and the place developed into a

¹ Gough, *Camden*, ed. 1772, p. 1079.
work, p. 30.

² Bede, *Vita Cuthberti*, cap. 5. See also vol. iv. of this

³ 'To many of the fisheries on the Tweed is attached a building called a *shiel* or *shield*, in which the fishermen at certain seasons keep their nets, etc., and use as a dwelling,' *Arch. Acl.* 1st series, vol. iv. p. 303.

⁴ *Newcastle Courant*, October 2nd, 1819. *Gentleman's Magazine*, vol. lxxxix. pt. ii. pp. 541-542. The pavement of an ancient roadway was discovered near the same place in September, 1846, at the depth of six feet below the surface. Latimer, *Local Records*, p. 220.

small port. Vessels put in and were laden with coal at the pier at the Pow burn mouth. Dressed hides were sent out from a tannery at Preston. An import trade of fish, wine and wool came into existence. The number of merchantmen who used the port caused a retail trade to be started for supplying their needs.

The new settlement aroused the jealousy of the merchants of Newcastle. About the year 1267, a large number of Newcastle burgesses, led by their mayor, Nicholas Scot, armed themselves and descended on the village. They beat and maltreated the monks and servants of the priory on whom they could lay their hands; they set fire to the mills and houses, and carried off a vessel loaded with coal which they found lying there. The affair was notorious. To preserve the dignity of the order, the abbot of Waltham, as conservator of the privileges of Saint Alban's, wrote insisting that satisfaction should be made, or, failing satisfaction, that these 'Satan's satellites of Newcastle-upon-Tyne' should appear before him.¹ At the assizes of 1269 the prior brought a writ against 149 persons for the recovery of damages estimated at £300, but, as he did not appear and so suffered the case to drop, parties must already have come to an arrangement.² New houses were built on the east of the Pow burn where the Low Light and Clifford's fort now stand; thirty-two had been erected before 1280 and sixteen more in the course of the next ten years. In 1292 a hundred houses existed at Shields.

The growth of the mercantile port and the loss of royal tolls consequent upon the decrease of Newcastle trade was brought to the notice of the king in 1275.³ Fifteen years, however, were suffered to elapse before any

¹ Abbas sancte crucis de Waltham, conservator privilegiorum monasterii sancti Albani et ejusdem cellarum, etc., discreto viro magistro Roberto de Dryffeld, rectori ecclesie de Ponteland et vicario de Neuburn, salutem in domino, etc. Quoniam Sathane satellites de Novo Castro super Tynam, prout in quadam cedula huic littere appensa quorundam nomina duximus nominanda, in quosdam monachos de Tynem' et servientes eorundem, Dei timore postposito, manus violentas injecerunt, eosdem verberando aliasque male tractando, et domos eorundem infra libertatem sancti Oswyni combusserunt, necnon et plura bona eorundem maliciose asportaverunt, in maximum dicti monasterii prejudicium et libertatis ecclesiastice conceptum ac scandalum plurimorum, quod ita manifestum est in partibus Northumbriae quod nulla tergiversacione potest celari; vobis in virtute obediencie firmiter injungendo mandamus sub pena canonice districtionis quatinus dictos malefactores moneatis et efficaciter inducatis quod sine mora de prefata violencia injuriis et spoliacionibus uno et dampnis actenus illatis tam publiciter et notorie dictis monachis plenarie satisfaciant. Alioquin si monuitis vestris, quod absit, parere neglexerint, eosdem omnes et singulos, prout nomina eorundem in cedula duxerimus redigenda, peremptorie citatis quod compareant coram nobis vel commissariis nostris in conventuali ecclesia nostra de Waltham proximo die juridico post festum s. Jacobi Apostoli, abbati de sancto Albano et priori suo de Tynem' et ejusdem loci conventui super sibi obiciendis responsuros, etc. Datum apud Waltham. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 116 b.

² *Northumberland Assize Rolls*, Surt. Soc. No. 88, p. 162.

³ *Rotuli Hundredorum*, Record Commission, vol. ii. p. 18.

steps were taken. In 1290 the prior of Tynemouth was summoned to appear in parliament to answer the king and the burgesses of Newcastle. The charges against the prior were that he had made a new town at Shields and had fishers, bakers, and brewers living there, from whom he received an annual rent of thirty-six marks and upwards, and took 'furnage' and 'forstall' which were rightfully the king's, with a consequent loss to the royal treasury of thirty pounds yearly; that he took tolls and prises in kind of the wine, herring, and haddock brought into port, which prises ought to be taken at Newcastle by the king's officers; that he had bakers at Tynemouth, who sold bread at Shields to the sailors and others who put in there, whereas these ought to have gone to Newcastle to buy their victuals; and that sailors were allowed to put in to the new port for the purpose of selling their merchandise and cargoes, with the result that the market dues went to the prior instead of to the king. The prior, while denying that he had any market or bakery at Shields, admitted the substantial truth of the other statements, but proceeded to justify them by the practice of his predecessors and the charter granted to the monastery by Richard I.; this charter being antecedent to the granting of similar and conflicting privileges to the burgesses of Newcastle by King John. In dealing with the landing and selling of fish without payment of toll, he drew a distinction between strangers, who did, or at least ought to, pay toll and custom to the king for fish sold or taken on board,¹ and the fishers of his own demesne. These latter were employed for provisioning the monastery; they, therefore, were privileged by Stephen's charter, which allowed the monks to buy freely, that is, free from the payment of any custom, whatever was necessary for the maintenance of their house. He took exception to the form of the proceedings, which was a series of criminal charges; the subject-matter in dispute was, according to him, his free tenement, for which he was not bound to make answer except under the king's writ.

This ground of defence was unfortunate. The king's attorney replied that the prior's demesne did not extend to the middle of the stream as he claimed, but only to high-water mark, and that, consequently, some of the houses in Shields were on the king's land. It was also pointed out that

¹ On October 11th, 1485, the king granted for life to Edward Vavasour the office of 'praysen' of fish at Newbiggin and Tynemouth. *Materials illustrative of the Reign of Henry VII.* Rolls Series, vol. i. p. 82.

the prior had himself admitted the port of Tyne to be the king's, and that, therefore, he could have no liberties therein. The prior's defence with regard to his own fishermen was inconclusive, since sixteen large fishing boats could not be supposed to be required for the provision of as many monks with fish. His real object was trade, and not simply to provide for home consumption. An account was given by the prosecution of how vessels, large and small, a hundred or even two hundred at a time would come in to Shields; how the prior and his men came down to the port with horses and mules and made their purchases, and then the ships and boats went on their way to Newcastle, half empty, or else with a cargo made up from the remainders of several vessels which had disposed of the greater part of their freight. The victualling trade at Shields was said to be so thriving that many bakers and brewers had left Newcastle and settled there and at Tynemouth, to the damage both of the king and of Newcastle.

A judgment was delivered in the king's favour. Owners of vessels were forbidden in future to unload or to take in cargoes at Shields, or to sell their merchandise in that town. No provisions were to be sold there to merchantmen. All wharves which extended below high-water mark were ordered to be removed. So ended the first attempt made by Tynemouth priory to establish a trading community on the Tyne.¹

Shields continued to exist as a small township. The subsidy roll of 1296 gives the names of its principal inhabitants:²

SHIELDS SUBSIDY ROLL, 1296.

		£	s.	d.		s.	d.
Summa bonorum	Roberti Suynwynd ...	...	0	15	0	unde regi	1 4 $\frac{1}{4}$
"	Willelmi filii Ricardi ...	...	1	10	0	"	2 8 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Roberti Gray ...	...	1	13	4	"	3 0 $\frac{1}{2}$
"	Rogeri Gray ...	...	0	14	0	"	1 3 $\frac{1}{4}$
"	Johannis filii Patricii ...	...	1	0	0	"	1 9 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Petri de Hauthorn ...	...	1	10	0	"	2 8 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Roberti Galt ...	...	1	0	0	"	1 9 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Hatkorn ...	...	1	0	0	"	1 9 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Willelmi Suynwynd ...	...	2	0	0	"	3 7 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Roberti filii Matildis ...	...	2	6	8	"	4 3
"	Radulphi filii Matildis ...	...	1	0	0	"	1 9 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Thome filii Rogeri ...	...	1	6	8	"	2 5
"	Henrici filii Elie ...	...	2	6	0	"	4 2 $\frac{1}{4}$
Summa hujus ville, £18 1s. 8d. ; unde domino regi, £1 12s. 10 $\frac{1}{2}$ d.							

¹ The proceedings are printed in *Rotuli Parliamentarii*, vol. i. p. 26, and Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. pp. 557 *et seq.*

² *Lay Subsidy Roll*, 1 $\frac{1}{2}$ ^s, 24 Edw. 1.

Shields began to revive in the latter part of the fourteenth century. The town had its own bailiffs in 1364.¹ In 1376, the priory was receiving from the township an annual rent of £9 7s. 6d.² It began to be called North Shields to distinguish it from the prior of Durham's town on the other side of the river. Its second development dates from about 1390. Some four acres of land below high-water mark were reclaimed and covered with two hundred houses—inns and stables, wine taverns, butchers' stalls, shambles, shops, 'herynghowses' and 'fishe-howses.' A new market was started. An assize of bread and wine and ale was kept. The prior made himself thirteen bake-houses, where a thousand quarters of corn were yearly baked into bread; and brew-houses, at which he found a vent, every year, for two thousand quarters of his barley-malt. He claimed and took wreck of the sea, flotsam and jetsam, and deodands found upon the water. Twenty years later, as trade increased, he commenced building staiths along the shore, where ships could lie to and load at all stages of the tide.³

The merchants of Newcastle were ever ready to defend their extensive privileges. In 1401, a commission was appointed to enquire into the report that divers men of Northumberland and Durham had loaded and unloaded vessels with merchandise on either side of the river Tyne; had taken prises, toll, custom, and wreck of the sea; and had bought and sold in places unaccustomed in times past, built on either side of the river within 'flood-mark,' all within the liberty and port of Newcastle.⁴ In 1417, complaints were exhibited against the prior of Tynemouth for making new weirs in the river.⁵

Nevertheless the monks, undeterred, went on with their commercial undertakings. About the year 1433 they bought a vessel of their own, and then another, and briskly carried on an export trade in fish and salt and coal. They were fishmongers on a large scale, salting and smoking herring, dealing in cod and ling caught in the seas about the Shetlands, and in salmon taken close at hand in the three long weirs or 'salmon-yares' that stretched across the Tyne towards Jarrow, and almost barred the way to Newcastle.⁶ By letters patent, dated July 10th, 1446, Henry VI. granted

¹ Rymer, *Foedera*, Record Commission, vol. iii. pars 2, p. 728.

² *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 51 b.

³ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. pp. 569-574.

⁴ *Cal. Pat. Rolls*, 1399-1401, p. 461.

⁵ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 15, note, citing Murray MS.

⁶ *Ibid.* pp. 569-574.

to Prior Langton the custom and toll received for grain, salt, salt-fish, leather, merchandise, and coal loaded and unloaded by him and his tenants within the port of Tyne, as well as all fines and amercements of tenants and farmers within the lordship of Tynemouth and at Shields for bread baked, ale brewed, and victuals sold to mariners within the liberty and jurisdiction of the town of Newcastle.¹ This measure called forth an angry protest from Newcastle. An inquisition was held on January 4th following to enquire into encroachments made on the privileges of the municipality, and provides an interesting record of the state of trade at Shields. The jurors computed that fourteen staiths had been erected between 1386 and 1429, varying in size from twenty by fifteen to sixty by forty feet, having most of them 'mussel-scalps'² annexed to them, and in some cases, curing-houses and stables. There were twenty cobbles in the town and seven larger craft owned by four shipowners.³ A staith, coble and baking-house appear to have been owned by each of the principal tenants, amongst whom is one with the Teutonic name of Herman Duchman.⁴

Prior Langton was allowed to retain the privileges granted to him for some years longer. They were recalled under an Act of resumption passed in 1450.⁵ Twelve years later, Edward IV. conferred upon the priory the right of baking and brewing at Shields, and of selling victuals to mariners who put in at that port. By the same charter the prior and convent were permitted to import victuals for their own use and the preservation of their castle, free of all toll and unmolested by the Newcastle merchants, as well as to export, within the port of Tyne, coal, salt, and other merchandise, reserving to the king his customs upon wool, leather and hides.⁶

The strife with Newcastle increased in bitterness. About the year 1510, the mayor, aldermen and commonalty of Newcastle addressed a petition to the king, stating that Prior Stonewell 'hath subtilly and forcibly accroched to hym great quantyte of grounde within the porte and haven, and theruppon hathe rered and made diverse and many wharffes,

¹ *Foreign Accounts*, 33 Henry VI. m. 11.

² 'Unam statham longitudinis 60 pedum et latitudinis 40 pedum, et desuper statham illam unam domum vocatam herynghowse, unum stabulum equinum, et unam scalpam pro musculis, jam in tenura Ricardi Gaddon.' Brand, *ibid.* p. 572.

³ The inquisition distinguishes between the *cymba* (coble) and the larger *navis*, which may be identified with the 'crare' or 'crayer' employed in deep-sea fishing.

⁴ Brand, *loc. cit.*

⁵ *Foreign Accounts*, quoted above. *Rotuli Parliamentarii*, vol. v. pp. 183-199.

⁶ See page 104.

stathes and keyes, and uppon them made many howsses, salt-pannes, milnes, and other buyldynges; and them so made ryottously with great compeny forcibly kepeth and useth to his propre use. The said ungraciously priour,' they continue, 'dayly chargeth and dischargeth shippes and other vesselse at Shelez and Tynemowthe with diverse merchandyses, and ther maketh oon new porte and haven. Also the seyd priour dayly maketh fysch-garthes and weeres for takyng of salmons in the seid haven between the seid town of Newcastle and the see, and yerly remeved them from place to place att his pleasure.' Acts of violence took place on both sides.

Fyve hundreth persons and above, riottously and forcibly armed in hernays as though it hadd ben in tyme of werre, with speres, gleyves, bowes and arrowes, by the exhortacion, comaundement, and labour of the seid priour, assembled togyther att Tynemowthe aforeseid; and with them in compeny great nombre of th'enhabitauntes of Tyndale and Reddesdale, to whom, as is supposed and openly spokyn in the contrees there, the seid ryott and unlawfull assemble was comytted. The seid priour gave wages vj^d by the day to th'entent that the seid mysdemeaned persons by his comaundement shuld have mured the meyer, aldermen, and other th'enhabitauntes of your seid town, and to have takyn, drowned, and destroyed ther shippes, beyng in the porte of the same. And so they hadd drowned the best shipp belongyng to the seid town, if they hadd nott well defended and it rescowed; and so in hernays, riottously ageyn your lawes and peas assembled, dayly roode about your seid town of Newcastle by the space of vj dayes, and tooke many of th'enhabitauntes of the same town, and them imprisoned att Tynemouth; and, as is opynly seid by suche as wer of the seid riottouse compenye, the seid priour said, though they kyled oon hundreth of the caytyffes dwellyng in Newcastle, he shuld be ther warraunt. Also th'enhabitauntes of your seid town, duryng the tyme of the seid unlawfull and riottous assemble, durst nott for drede of ther lyves goo to ther shippes att Sheeles or otherwise about ther besynesses, butt kept them close within the walles of your seid town, as though they hadd ben asseged with enemyes. And of suretie, most graciously sovereign lorde, suche a great gadderyng and unlawfull assemble of people so long contynewed together in tyme of peas hath nott ben seen in those parties of many yeres past, nor to so perillouse example of other offendours in tyme comyng.¹

Finally the questions in dispute were referred to arbitrators, who, upon March 23rd, 1511/2, gave their decision:

23rd March, 3 Hen. 8th. A copy of an award of the bishops of Norwich and Coventry and Sergeant Elliott between the prior and convent of Tynmouth and major of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, concerning diverse libertys and franchises, etc., in the river of Tyne and in the town of Tinemouth and North Shields.

Firste, we awarde ordeyne and deame, that the saide maior, sheref and commonalty, suffre the saide prioure and convente to have thaire werres or yares standinge in the porte of the watere of Tyne as longe as oder werres standinge in the same porte betwene the saide townes of Newcastle and Tynemouthe, in the same side of the saide porte be suffrede to stande.

Item, we awarde that the saide maior, etc., suffre the saide prioure and convente thaire servants in everye parte of the saide porte [to buy] everything for his owne use or howsholde withoute license of the saide maior, etc., and withoute anye duetie or custume therfore to be paid to the saide maiour, etc., by the saide priour or convente or by anye of thaym or by the sellers therof to thayme for the same.

¹ *Star Chamber Proceedings*, Henry VIII. Bundle 20, No. 2.

Item, we awarde that the saide maior, etc., suffre the saide prioure, etc., to charge and discharge within the saide porte all suche thing as they bye too thaire own or sell of thaire owne marchaundiss in any place within this realme of England, without anything paying to the saide maior, etc.

Item, we awarde that the saide maior, etc., suffre the saide prioure, etc., to passe with thaire shippes and boots to any parte of this realme of England, Wales and Ireland, oute of the saide haven with thaire owne salte, fishe, heringe and oder marchandisses of thaire owne, withoute bringinge it to the saide towne of Newcastle, and withoute payinge anye tolls or custumes for it to the saide maioure, etc., and that the prioure nor his successors colloure¹ any marchands or other thinge of any oder persone to passe withoute payinge of thaire toll and custume due to the saide maior, etc.

Item, we awarde that the saide maior, etc., suffre the commen bakehowses and brewehowses now being in Tynemouthe and Northe Sheles to be occupiede in like forme as theye have bene xx yere nexte before the date nowe, and that non other furnage be takyn of the said bakehowses than have bene takyn bye the said tyme, and that the prioure and convente have the correxion of the assise of brede and alle of the same.

Item, we awarde that at such tyme after this, whan any vessaile cumythe into the saide porte with whete or other vitaille in tyme of starving, as when a bussell of whete is at the price of xx^s or more, that than the saide prioure shal bye therof but a reasonable quantitie for the relefe of his saide monasterye, levinge to the saide maire and communalte and to the inhabitaunts of the contreye there aboute a reasonable parte thereof to the relefe of thayme, and than the saide prioure to certifie the saide maior what quantitie the saide prioure have boughte therof.

(Clause to the effect that the two parties shall enter into mutual obligations.)²

Too much was conceded to Tynemouth monastery to content the burgesses of Newcastle. They aimed at having a legal recognition of their exclusive right to trade in the port of the Tyne. This, with an important exception, they obtained by the insertion of the following clause into 'An Acte concerning Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and the porte and haven therunto belonging,'³ passed by the parliament of 1530:

In consideracion whereof it may please your highnesse of your moste abundaunt grace, with the assent of your lordes spirituall and temporall, and the commons in this present parliament assembled, and by the auctoritie of the same, to enacte, ordeine, and establishe, that from hensefoorth any marchant or marchantes, or any other person or persons, shall not ship, lode, or unlode, charge or discharge any maner of goodes, wares, or marchandises to be solde here within this your realme or elsewhere, in, to, or from any ship or shippes, or other vessels, in or at any place or places within the said port, river and haven, betwene the said place called the Sparhauke,⁴ and the said place called Hedwinstremes, but onely at the said towne of Newcastle, and no where els, upon peine of forfeiture of all suche goodes, wares, and marchaundises to the king, our said soveraigne lorde, and to his heires, kinges of England. . . . Provided alway that this act be not prejudicial or hurteful to any person or

¹ To colour strangers' goods = to enter a foreign merchant's goods at the custom-house under a freeman's name, for the purpose of evading additional duties. Murray, *New English Dictionary*, vol. ii. p. 638.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ 21 Henry VIII. cap. 18. *Statutes of the Realm*, vol. iii. pp. 302-303.

⁴ The Sparhawk or Sparrowhawk has, like Tynemouth bar, disappeared before the improvements of the Tyne Commissioners. Brand describes it as a sand, at a depth of four feet below the surface of the sea at low tide, lying about a quarter of a mile from the Spanish battery. It was nearly of the shape of a crescent, of which one point was directed towards Prior's Haven, and the other towards the bar. *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 16, note (m).

persons, beinge the kinges subjectes, for bieng, shipping, lodinge or unloding of any salte or fishe within the said river and porte, or to any of them, or any other person or persons, repaying to the saide porte with shippes and marchandises, for selling or bieng of any wares or marchandises, nedefull for the vitellyng and amending of their sayde shippes, at the time of their there being within the saide porte : this acte or any thing comprised in the same notwithstandinge.

By this Act the fishing and victualling trades and manufacture of salt received special protection. On the other hand the burgesses of Newcastle won their object in checking the further commercial development of the twin towns of North and South Shields; for the blow was aimed at the prior of Durham as much as against the prior of Tynemouth, and the feuds of the one monastery with Newcastle had their counterpart in the history of the other. For more than two centuries industry in the two towns of Shields was confined within the narrow limits imposed by the Act of 1530.

At the dissolution the total rental of North Shields was £16 3s. 8d.¹ It contained only 'small fisher cotages, and befor the suppressione never in cople, but in the prior's hande in demesne.' In a letter written to Henry, ninth earl of Northumberland, Robert Helme has described the tenure by which they were held.

Consider the Sheilds to the prior and convent of Tinemouth was demayne, and no howses ther but such as they buylded and upheld before the dissolucion of the priory of ther onely proper coasts and charges; and so from tyme to tyme did keape the same in good and sufficient reparacions, and never no copy used ther of any house, but leased by convent seale; and then the rent was, or ought to have bene, xvij^{li} x^s by year. . . . Wherupon your lordship's late father had forth of the exchequer a comission to him and others to lett by lease or copy at their pleasors; and by vertue therof your lordship's sayd late father lett copleys by court rool, which were the first copleys that ever were in the Shields.²

From that time the rents rapidly diminished. Houses fell into utter ruin and decay, and new tenants could hardly be found. A commission, appointed to inquire into the causes of this decline, gave a sketch in its report, January 7th, 1564/5, of the condition of the town and the best course that might be taken in dealing with the tenants:

The said towne of Northe Sheales bene litle howses builded under the watter banke, and have nether groundes belonginge unto them nor yet anye rowme on the backsids to make onye gardines or orchardes, but onlye howses for fishermen, and on the fore partes litle kyes and shores maid before everye howse for ther cobles and ther geare to ly at and to drye ther fishe and geare upon, so that, yf it be not for suche poore fishermen, the nomber wherof is nowe muche decayed and like rather to minishe then increase, by reason the fishe is nothinge so plentifull in that coste as it hathe bene, ther will not howse ther be nihe biled oneless it shalbe one or two that may be maintained for vittillinge howses, and so the holt rentes shalbe without some regards therto had for th'amendment therof in perrill to decaye in shorte processe of tyme.

¹ Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 223.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

Morover the howses beinge builde, they wer alwaies both builded and repaired by the monastery and at ther chearges ; therfor the rentes beinge the greater, the removinge of the tenants from the same (which happenethe muche amongste fishermen ther not to inhabite longe in one place), was no decaye of the rente ; and nowe, because the chearge of the reparacions are not allowede unto them, yt is the cause of the decaye ; and yf the yearelye reparacions shalbe allowed, it wilbe for the most parte of yeares amouente to more, or at enye tyme as muche as the rentes.

For thes causes it was thought beste that the said howses or as manye could so be lett to suche fishermen as are given to inhabite ther, and for a reasonable rente much lesse then before, so that the tennants should be chargeable with the buildinges and reparacions and that they shoulde have by cople or otherwise assurance therof for the said rents to them and to ther heires for ever, which wilbe meanes that these rentes shall to conteneue, and the howses better repaired and builded, and the meane to trayne fishermen to inhabite ther, which of necessitye must be done in that sorte or ells the rente shall not without allowance of yearlye reparacions stand and contyenewe.¹

The recommendations of the commission were adopted. Tenements were henceforward let by copy of court roll, and these grants, it is said, 'were the first copyes that ever were in the Sheilds.'² They continued to be granted for forty years, until the year 1604, when Shields was visited by plague. Several houses then fell vacant. They were seized by the lord's officers for want of heirs male, but the copyholders advanced a rival claim, and a letter written by George Whitehead to the ninth earl of Northumberland, upon March 28th, 1604, gives the first tidings of the coming struggle :

Here is diverse deade in Sheales in the plague, and by that meanes soome houses ar fallen into your lordship's handes for want of heyres male, according to the auncient custome of the mannor, which houses I have seized for your lordship's use ; notwithstanding Peter Delavall and his brother Raphe Delavall ar buyinge women's tytles already to defraude your lordship of your right.³

'Of layte,' wrote William Wycliffe in a later letter, 'the tenants, refusing the auntient custome of all other the tenements within the shire, will have a custome of ther own making, and women to be heires, which in common honor is absurd, beside custom, unles they will mayntayne navigacion by soome, which was the cheife ground of establishing the Sheels for a fishe towne.'⁴ The custom to which the tenants of Shields laid claim, namely, the right of the daughter to succeed to her father's copy, was one subsequently recognised for the whole manor, but does not appear to have accorded with the ancient custom of husbandry. There was precedent, however, for either contention. 'Many examples,' Robert Helme informed the earl, 'that women have therby enjoyed the custom as well as men, I could sett downe ; and even now of late dayes, in your lordship's tyme, women have bene found to have the custom and have so enjoyed yt.'⁵

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² *Ibid.*

³ *Ibid.*

⁴ *Ibid.*

⁵ *Ibid.*

On the other hand it was argued that copies granted to women as heirs were obtained by bribery, and could not invalidate the other custom. George Whitehead put forward this view in a letter to the earl :

It may be in ther petitione to your lordship they will alledge that your lordship hayth sigened with your hand sundrye copyes and receaved fynes for women's titles, and therfor not fit your lordship should nowe make questione for answere. The fault was the corrupt dealinge of your officers, and never till nowe made knowen to your lordship, soe as yowre lordship coulde not befor this tyme see thosse abuses reformed, for it is most strandge that ther should be in one manner two severall customes, and all thos copyes granted by vertue of the commissione rune in thes very wordes, *secundum consuetudinem manerii*, which custome haythe for thre hundred yeares continewed onely to heires male.¹

The case was brought before the Council of the North sitting at York. 'Ralph Delavall of Sheels thought lately,' Whitehead wrote on January 5th, 1606/7, 'to have had a judiciable hearing at York for certayne houses in Sheels, wherof I did prevent him, and sent Robert Helme and Roger Morton to Yorke as witnesses, wher our cause was proved so just as we had possessions and charges awarded against the plaintiffe.'² Whitehead felt naturally piqued at the support given by Ralph Delaval and his brother Peter Delaval to 'these broken titles.' 'The suyte at Yorke,' he told the earl, 'coste your lordship x^{li} at the least, and for myself I had two horses that cost me xviii^{li} eyther poysoned or bewiched to deathe in followinge that suyte for thesse tytles they have set afoote, for which they give the poore people, as I am enformed, nothinge but small potts of ale and goose pyes, Ralph Delavall beinge an alehouse keper without any other trade to live.'³

His success at York encouraged Whitehead to attack the whole system of copyhold tenure in North Shields, as is seen from another of his letters, written on March 23rd, 1606/7, in which he states: 'I have had opinione of the best councell this place will afforde, who doe assure me the commissione by which they hould ther copyes can erect no custome.'⁴ He pressed his advantage and carried war into the enemy's camp, with the result that the principal tenants in Shields laid their case before the earl of Northumberland in the following petition :

Humbly complayninge shewethe unto your good lordshipp your daylye orators, all his majestie's tenants, the inhabitants of the North Sheeles, that wheras in the vijth yeare of quene Elizabethes's raigne, etc., etc. Tyll nowe of late sundrye verie pore wemen, after the decease of ther kynffolke and parents in the last great plage at Sheeles, beinge founde by the homage to be next heires to sundrye cottages ther wherof ther parents and auncestours dyed seized by coppye of court role as aforesaid, and cravinge ther admittance therunto, are not onelye denyed therof by Mr. William Wicliff, your lordship's under-stewarde here, but ther cottages and rentes seized uppon and disposed by your said under-stewerde

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² *Ibid.*

³ *Ibid.*

⁴ *Ibid.*

to Mr. George Whiteheide, his brother-in-lawe, by cōpye of court role as vacantes, objecting that wee are but tennants at will and no copyholders. And theruppon haith not onelye disinherited thre verie pore wyddowes, Ann Ludgate, Elizabeth Bowes, and Margaret Robeson, and graunted ther estates of ther cottages to the said George Whiteheide, but also they tow joyne together pretendinge and pressinge the overthrowe of the customarie estate of all the pore fishermen, beinge by ther coppies tyed to repaire ther bare cottages, to yeelde ther rents, fynes and services, and to kepe a fisherman in everie cottage, by whose fyshinge trade your lordshipp reapeth a great deale more yearely benefitt then his majestie by his yearly rentes ther. The overthrowe of the tennants' said customarie estates woulde, assure youre good lordshipp, not onelye greatlye decaye the fishinge trade here, to your lordshipp's great losse, but also greatlye impoverish and bannish fishermen from this place, whose customarie es'tates uppon the considerations aforesaid were founded by your good lordship's late father and contynued by yourselfe above xl yeares. The which customarie estate we most humblye beseche your good lordship we maye contynue with your favorable permission and honorable countenance to us and our heires generall in suche sorte as wee and our predecessors have done, and by the custome of the said mannor wee ought to doo by our coppies from your good lordship's father and yourselfe, unto whome we have contynuallye payed our fynes, which haith bene and wilbe more beneficiall unto your good lordshipp then if wee were leassers unto his majestie, as sum ther be here leassers, wherby no profit at all cometh to your lordshipp as doth by our fynes after chaunge of everie tenante, which contynually befaileth either by death or saile. And also that suche coppies as your lordshipp farthe graunted to Mr. George Whiteheide of the foresaid pore wyddowes cottages may be recalled and the wyddowes therunto admitted.

Signed :	Raphe Delaval.	Henrye Helme.	John Patteson.	An Lydgath.
	Peter Delaval.	Thomas Harker.	A. Dobson.	Elizabeth Bowes.
	James Rawlinge.	Steven Patteson.	Robt. Dowe. ¹	

Apparently the earl refused to disown his officer, and there was a renewal of proceedings before the Council of the North. In their instructions to counsel the tenants of Shields described their 'litle dovett² or thatched cottages under the sea banckes nere the river of Tyne, havinge neither lande, meadowe, pasture, nor stedinge for anye kynde of cattle apperteyning to anye of them, saveinge onelye litle stone keyes or wharffes before ther fronts nere the sayd ryver to drye ther ffishinge lynes uppon.' They narrated the establishment of copyhold tenure in 1565, and then laid their charges against Whitehead and Wycliffe. 'The said George Whiteheade and his brother-in-lawe, William Wicliff, deputie stewarde unto the said earle, denye all his majestie's pore tennants of a lease of all ther cottages, to th'ende to overthrowe ther said custome, to the utter undowing of his majestie's pore cottagers and ther wives and children, and to the overthrowe of the trade of ffyshing in that place of Tynemouth haven, wherby his lordship gaynethe one hundred markes yearlye for the tythe fyshe he receiveth of his majestie's pore tennants ther, beside ther ffynes from age to age wher his majestie's rents ther is.'³

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² *Divot*, a sod, piece of turf, especially a thin, flat, oblong turf used for covering cottages. Divot-house or hut, a house or hut covered with turf. Wright, *English Dialect Dictionary*, vol. ii. p. 94.

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

The vice-president and council at York referred the matter to be tried in the Court of Exchequer, in regard that it concerned the king's inheritance, whereupon the inhabitants of Shields petitioned the earl of Dorset, as lord high treasurer, 'in respecte of their povertie, being not able to endure the charge of lawe to trie their custome' that he would be pleased to continue their copyhold estates in such sort as they had had them heretofore.¹ Dorset referred them to the Court of Exchequer, but, as a new trial meant heavy legal charges, Ralph Delaval took the first step of petitioning the king, who 'red his petitione himselfe, and presently called my lord of Dunbare, and asked him yf he knewe Northe Shells, and gave him the petitione, sayinge, "Looke how my poore tennantes ar abosed by my lord of Northumberland and his officers. Be sure you take this matter to hearinge, and call my lord of Northumberland his officers befor you."'²

In the following summer, on July 11th, 1608, a commission was issued out of the Court of Exchequer to take a survey of Tynemouthshire, and to enquire by what tenure the tenants held of the king. Haggatt and Ward, the commissioners, sat at Tynemouth during September. After taking evidence with regard to North Shields, they reported: 'Seeing their copies have no better foundation, nor are above thirty years' standing or thereabouts, and that it is manifest upon record they were tenants at the will of the lord before the granting of the said copies, we are of opinion and do perceive that they may easily be reduced to lessors, so as they be favorably regarded in their fine.'³

Thus the copyhold tenure, which the tenants of North Shields had for a brief period enjoyed, was transferred into leasehold. The change was bound to affect the character of the population, as Whitehead pointed out to the earl of Northumberland a year later:

The tennants of Sheeles ar lykewise made upe to leasse the whole towne. Yf ther be not soome course taken in that leasse, your fishinge will be utterly decayed, for the best parte of the towne ar victuallers and tiplers wher they had wonte of very late tyme to be all fishermen; and what course ther is to be taken I cannot thinke, unles my lorde treasurer were moved of the decay bothe of men for the navy in time of service, as allsoe the decaye of his majesty's tythe ther; and that his lordship woulde tye every house in the towne to maynteyne a fisherman as formerly they were bounde by ther copies.⁴

The system of leaseholds established in 1608, did not long continue. Until that time, and for a few years longer, the whole of the township

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² *Ibid.*

³ *Land Revenue Surveys*, miscell. books, vol. 223, fol. 326.

⁴ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

remained crown property¹; but, on March 13th, 1623/4, a grant was made to Henry, ninth earl of Northumberland, of two salt pans at the Pow pans, the salt pans called Stodwede's pans, and other pieces of land.² On August 26th, 1624, twenty-four cottages, and the ferry over the Tyne were granted, at the requisition of John, earl of Holderness, to Edward Ramsay of Hethersett in Norfolk and to Robert Ramsey of London,³ to whom, on May 21st following, five more cottages were conveyed, together with the salmon fishery from Howden head to the point where the Tyne falls into the sea.⁴ Four salt pans, various parcels of land at the Pow pans at the east end of the town, and between Dortwick and Coble dean at the west end, and the profits arising from the anchorage of all vessels coming into the river of Tyne at North Shields,⁵

¹ Excepting a cottage and some waste ground at the west end of Shields, granted on June 11th, 1600, to Benjamin Harris and Robert Morgan, and conveyed by them to William Milbanke of North Shields.

² *Patent Rolls*, 21 James I. pt. 5.

³ *Land Revenue Enrolments*, vol. 200, fol. 192, and vol. 201, fol. 321. For the Ramseys, see Mr. J. C. Hodgson on 'The Sixteenth and Seventeenth Century Owners of Bewick' in *Arch. Ael.* 3rd series, vol. ii. The house property acquired by Ramsey and Ramsey was sold by them on November 4th, 1624, to Anthony Uphill of London, who on May 13th, 1631, resold to Sir Alexander Davison of Newcastle. *Land Revenue Enrolments*, vol. 202, fol. 166. For Davison see Welford, *Men of Mark*.

⁴ Robert Ramsey conveyed his salmon fishery, on February 15th, 1637, to George Milbourne, then described as of South Shields, and to William Milbourne of Newcastle. Their representatives, Mary Roddam and Winifred Roddam, conveyed the fishery, *inter alia*, on August 1st, 1729, to Robert Loadman, who, on January 16th, 1730, sold the same to James Stewart of North Shields for £5. On May 2nd, 1759, the heirs of James Stewart sold to Hugh, duke of Northumberland. The fishery was known as the Low Lights fishery. The usual mode of catching salmon was by sweep nets and stake nets. Sweep nets were nets to the two ends of which ropes were attached. One of these ends was taken out in a boat, which was then rowed round in a half circle and brought again to land. Both ends of the net were then gradually drawn towards and on to the shore, and thus any fish were landed that might be caught within the sweep. Nets could be drawn ashore at the Black Middens, the Mussel scalp, Coble dean, White Hill point, and Howden. Stake nets were nets attached and fastened to stakes driven into the bed and soil of the river. They were used at the Low Lights down to about the year 1833, when their use was discontinued. Duke of Northumberland's MSS. The salmon fishery was profitable before the deepening of the river by the Tyne Commissioners. Warburton, writing about 1720, speaks of the incomparable salmon which North Shields supplies to most parts of Europe. *Ibid.* As late as 1775 no less than 265 salmon were caught at one draught at the Low Lights. Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 33.

⁵ Anchorage is a toll paid upon every ship coming to anchor between the Prior's stone (near the mouth of the Tyne) and Howden pans, and is associated with groundage, a toll paid upon every ship laid on shore within the said limits. The payments date from the sixteenth century or earlier. Sir Henry Percy stated in a letter written to Cecil on January 27th, 1566/7, touching the grievances alleged by the mayor of Newcastle and others, that he and his servants took of every stranger's ship a shilling as a new exaction. 'There is no general custom taken, but such as touch or lie upon the shore a time pay that money to the officers there as groundage.' *Cal. State Papers, Domestic, Addenda, 1566-1579*, p. 26. Anchorage and groundage used to be collected by the bailiff of North Shields, whose office, as described in 1633, was 'to areast all actions of dept under 30s. and not above, to sease upon all wrackes coming in within the towne, all fellons' goodes, all wafes, straies and deodantes and whatsoever else, and be accomptable for the same to his lordship's prime receavor.' Duke of Northumberland's MSS. A manuscript among the Delaval papers, in the possession of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, states, under the date 1575: 'The bailey of the North Shields, by vertue of his office apperteyning to the castle, was to bound every ship comyng in at the haven there, and did take up for the furnytur of

were, by letters patent dated December 8th, 1631, granted to William Collins and to Edward Fenn.¹ The salt pans, anchorage dues, and other of the premises conveyed to Collins and Fenn were acquired in 1632 and in 1635 by Algernon, tenth earl of Northumberland.²

The development of the salt trade and extension of coal mining in the neighbouring townships brought new families to reside in Shields, and trade grew, especially the victualling industry. Alehouses became numerous. Brewing, though apparently sanctioned by the Act of 1530, was regarded by the Newcastle Company of Brewers as an infringement of the monopoly claimed by them within the port. In 1627 the mayor and burgesses prosecuted one Humphrey Johnson for keeping a brew-house in North Shields, and obtained an order that the brew-house should be suppressed.³ In a petition presented to the king in 1634 they set forth their suits for maintenance of their corporate privileges against the inhabitants of North and South Shields, and prayed him to cause a general restraint and inhibition to be made, that no baker, brewer, victualler or smith, or other person using any trade, should exercise the same in any part of the port or its precincts, but

her majestie's castle, whatsoever she had in loding, a parcell of everything for the service of the castle at the quen's majestie's price; and to the bailey only of every such ship, being a stranger, his fee is for groundage xij^d and aukeradge xij^d, notwithstanding the order taken between his lordship and the town of Newcastle, which is but upon pleasor only, or so long as yt shall pleas the captain there for the time being.⁷ In 1679 the fees were stated to be a penny for anchorage or groundage of every ship belonging to any of the Cinque ports, six pence for anchorage and a shilling for groundage of every English ship not belonging to the Cinque ports, and a shilling for anchorage and two shillings for groundage of every foreign ship. Brit. Mus. *Additional MSS.* 24,815, fol. 240. The number of foreign vessels that paid anchorage or groundage in the year Michaelmas, 1648, to Michaelmas, 1649, was 123. Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

The right of boarding and searching vessels, alluded to above as belonging to the bailiff of North Shields, was claimed and exercised within that portion of the river which lies between Howden burn and the sea. A letter directed by the lords of the privy council on June 4th, 1597, to the bishop of Durham and to Lord Eure alludes to inconveniences which have arisen by 'the discontinuance of an auncient order which hath bin observed in former times, that all shippes of her majesty's domynions cominge on the sea by the said castle [of Tynemouth] should vaile their topsaile as a token of their dutie and alleageance to her majestie, and that all shippes of forraigne countries should, at their passage that waye, comme to anchor and send a-shoare to the bailiffes of the Sheeles the merchaunt, master, factour, or other officer of the shipp, to the end notice might be taken of the purpose of their voyadge and of other circumstances.' *Acts of the Privy Council*, 1597, p. 170. The custom was controverted by the officers of the custom house of Newcastle in a petition addressed two years later to the chancellor and barons of the Exchequer, in which they stated: 'The earl's officers dayly take upon them to bord and search all the ships of strangers and others passing in and out of those ports, and take bribes of them to suffer them to pass quietly. They have thereby much discouraged all merchants from trafficking with her majesty's ports there.' Brit. Mus. *Additional MSS.* 24,815, fol. 226. Conflicting evidence with regard to the time during which the right of search had been exercised by the earl of Northumberland's officers was taken in a suit brought before the Court of Exchequer in 1602 by Henry Sanderson and others against William Wycliffe and George Whitehead. *Exchequer Depositions*, Mich. 44-45 Eliz. No. 13, and Hilary, 45 Eliz. No. 19.

¹ *Patent Rolls*, 7 Charles I. pt. 15.

² *Land Revenue Enrolments*, vol. 202, fols. 114, 127 d.

³ *Exchequer Decrees and Orders*, series iv. vol. iii. fol. 300.

only at the town of Newcastle.¹ They were not strong enough to attack the salt trade, though they could handicap it by compelling vessels bringing material for the salt pans at Shields to come up the river to Newcastle to unload. The salt-makers were secure in a monopoly of their own. On December 23rd, 1634, a combination of Shields salt-makers was incorporated under the name of the Society of Salt-makers at the North and South Shields. The new society was empowered to erect salt works on the sea-coast, and in the Tyne and the Wear. No new salt works might be erected on the coast between Berwick and Southampton. The company agreed to sell their salt at rates not exceeding £3 per wey for home use, and 50s. per wey for fishing voyages. A payment was made to the king, in return for this monopoly, of 10s. per wey of fine salt, and of 3s. 4d. per wey of fishing salt.² The greater number of pans were on the south side of the river, but in 1638 there were thirty salt pans in Tynemouth parish.³ Brine was collected in cisterns and pumped thence into shallow iron pans, where it was boiled until salt crystals had begun to form. So much of the water as had not evaporated was then drained off, and the salt was ready for use.⁴

As new collieries were opened up in the neighbourhood of Shields, the prerogatives of the Hostmen's Company of Newcastle grew more irksome. That company had the exclusive vending of coals, and no coal might be shipped for exportation except at Newcastle.⁵ Not only were trading vessels of larger tonnage than formerly, but, since the corporation of Newcastle had become conservators of the Tyne in 1613, the bed of that river had been allowed to silt up, and both these circumstances rendered navigation increasingly dangerous. Masters of vessels were obliged to seek Newcastle in order to load or unload, to cast ballast, or to undergo repairs, for no persons were allowed to build or repair ships within the port unless

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Domestic*, 1634-1635, p. 100.

² For the history of the salt trade in North and South Shields, see G. B. Hodgson, *Borough of South Shields*. An account of the salt works of Durham and Northumberland, composed in the reign of Charles II., has been printed from Lansdowne MSS. 258, by Richardson, *Reprints*, vol. iii. as a separate tract.

³ *Tynemouth Vestry Books*.

⁴ Detailed descriptions of the salt pans at Shields and the method of manufacture have been given by Sir William Brereton in 1635 (Richardson, *Reprints*, vol. vii. 'Notes of a journey through Durham and Northumberland'), and by Lord Harley in 1725 (*Duke of Portland's MSS.* vol. vi. p. 105; *Hist. MSS. Com.*). See also an article on 'The Art of Making Salt' in the *Northumberland and Newcastle Magazine*, 1818, pp. 280-281, 311-312, 342-343.

⁵ *Newcastle Hostmen's Company*, Surt. Soc. No. 105, *passim*. For orders prohibiting the shipping of coals at Shields upon pain of seizure, see pp. 74-76 and 90.

they were free of the Newcastle company of shipwrights or paid a yearly contribution for licence to work within the liberties.¹ If carpenters were not freemen of Newcastle, then they plied their trade at their peril, as did Thomas Cliffe of North Shields, who, in the month of April, 1646, got a ship off the rocks under Tynemouth castle; whereupon two sergeants and several free carpenters came down from Newcastle, hailed the unfortunate shipwright to prison, and beat his wife to death. The mayor and burgesses of Newcastle further sued Cliffe in the Court of Exchequer, but, failing to make good their case, were ordered to pay costs.²

In 1650 the masters of vessels trading to the Tyne for coals gave vent to their grievances in a petition to the council of state. Their complaints were referred to the council of trade, by whom, after long debates, the action of the Newcastle citizens was pronounced prejudicial to trade and navigation, but the report was allowed to lie dormant.³ Hostilities broke out again before long. Ralph Gardner of Chirton was cast into prison at Newcastle in 1652 for refusing to close his brewery at North Shields. He escaped from his confinement, but a warrant again went out for his arrest for default of payment of £900 for fines. While sitting in his cottage in Chirton he found himself surrounded by men with swords drawn and pistols cocked. He offered resistance; 'much blood was spilt'; and the Tyne seamen, hurrying to his rescue, drove back to Newcastle the wounded and discomfited officers of the law.⁴ Gardner, however, did not long remain at liberty, and he was again in gaol when, on September 29th, 1653, he petitioned parliament, desiring that the report of the council of trade should be called for and reviewed.

Gardner's petition, like that of 1650, demanded the abolition of restrictions upon trade in the port of Tyne. It also included a request that North Shields might be made a market town, and proposed the transference of the conservancy from the corporation of Newcastle to a representative

¹ Some of the free shipwrights were, however, resident at Shields. On January 24th, 1649/50, Edward Smith of Gateshead, master and mariner, deposed that for fifty years past there had been certain vessels called 'Shotland barques,' which, being little ships and bringing in fish which was usually dried at Shields, did seldom or never come up to Newcastle; that complaint was made that for their repair ship carpenters were wanted at Shields, whereupon some had been sent from Newcastle to reside there. *Exchequer Depositions*, Hilary, 1649/50, No. 1. m. 3 d.

² For further particulars of Cliffe's case, see Gardner, *England's Grievance*, chapters 26, 31, 33, 34, 36; Richardson's *Reprints*, vol. vi. 'The humble petition and appeal of Thomas Cliffe'; *Exchequer Depositions*, Hilary, 1649/50, No. 1, and *Exchequer Decrees and Orders*, series iii. vol. xxxiii. fol. 173.

³ *Hostmen's Company*, p. 92. Gardner, *England's Grievance*, chapter 25.

Gardner, *England's Grievance*, chapter 37.

body elected *ad hoc*.¹ The matter was referred to the council of trade, to whom Gardner exhibited his charges against the corporation.² In vigorous ungrammatical style he propounded the need of giving Shields a market :

The maior and burgesses do all ingross all commodities and provisions into their own hands which comes in by sea, and setts their own rates thereon, compelling all people to their markets, the poor salt-makers and colliers often not having above 18d. to receive of their wages at the week's end, to releive themselves, wife and six or seven children, pays 4d. out of it by going and coming by water, besides a day's labour lost, often the river frozen, no boat can pass, snow so deep, coale pitts open, having died att Shields for want of food, besides many drowned in stormy weather in the river in coming from their markets, and that by their hording upp corn in their corn lofts for to make it dear, and kept it till it was so dear that the poor could not buy it, but were forced to eat dead horses, doggs and cats,³ and the other sort in the county of Northumberland exposed to let their beasts blood to make cakes to eat, which beasts, being over blooded, dyed in the spring, and yett corn kept so long in Newcastle that it moulded and rotted,⁴ and many hundred bowles thrown then into the river, not tollerating a markt at Shields for the releif of Tinnmouth garrison, the fleets of shippes, the concourse of people and inhabitants, which are thousands, nor baking nor brewing, but have ruinated men at law for the same by their great purse, which is too great for any to contest with, and which is a great crying oppression and hinderance to trade.

The conclusion is best given in Gardner's own words. 'All which said charge was proved upon oath, before the council, at Whitehall, 1650, and the committee for trade and corporations, at Whitehall, in November, 1653. And order was given, that Mr. Thomas Skinner, be desired to draw up an Act, for a free trade in that port and river of Tyne, to present to the parliament.' The proposed 'Act for a free trade in the river of Tyne, for coals, salt, etc.,' was accordingly drafted. It provided for the creation of a new conservancy board, the erection of ballast shores and holding of a market at Shields, and the abolition of the monopoly enjoyed by the free shipwrights, pilots of the Trinity House, bakers and brewers, and hostmen of Newcastle.⁵ By skilful delays the corporation postponed the conclusion of the investigation which threatened to go against it. December 13th was fixed for the final hearing of both parties. On December 12th, Parliament was dissolved and Gardner's legislative projects were baffled.

¹ *Ibid.* chapter 27 ; Richardson, *Reprints*, vol. iii. 'The Conservatorship of the River Tyne,' pp. 24-28. The tract here quoted, printed from a manuscript account of the proceedings before the council of trade, includes the answer of the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle to Gardner's petition and to the charges exhibited by him ; and the other documents connected with the case are given in a more accurate form than in Gardner's own version. *England's Grievance* gives many depositions taken before the council of trade, but mingles with them the evidence given in Cliffe's trial.

² Printed in *England's Grievance*, chapter 28, and *Conservatorship of the River Tyne*, pp. 28-32.

³ 'Many country people were necessitated to eat dogs and cats, and to kill their poor little coal-horses for food,' says Gardner.

⁴ Gardner adds, 'The very swine could not eat it.'

⁵ *England's Grievance*, chapter 54.

'The honourable committee,' says Gardner, 'met in Whitehall, and drew up another report, and signed the same, against the corporation of Newcastle, and would have presented the same to his highnesse, the Lord Protector. But I conceived to give a narrative was better.'¹ . . . 'The thing I aim at is a right understanding between the free and unfree men of England; a perfect love, every one injoying their own, and to be governed under our known and wholesome laws, as also an obedience thereunto; and not by a hidden prerogative, *alias* charters.'² He continued, with disjointed eloquence:

The mayor, aldermen, and recorder, with the burgesses, and others, against the freeborn of England, which prohibited all trade, from the 9th day of January, 1642, to the 14th of November, 1644, in that port; which caused coals to be four pound the chaldron, and salt four pound the weigh; the poor inhabitants forced to flie the country, others to quarter all armies upon free quarter; heavy taxes to them all, both English, Scots, and garisons; plundered of all they had; land lying waste; coal-pits drowned; salt works broken down; hay and corn burnt; town pulled down; men's wives carried away by the unsatiable Scots, and abused; all being occasioned by that corporation's disaffection; and yet to tyrannize as is hereafter mentioned; I appeal to God and the world.³

Gardner did not abandon hope of procuring a market for North Shields. In a letter written on February 21st, 1654/5, to one of the earl of Northumberland's officers, he stated: 'I am bringing an *ad quod damnum* in the earle's name for a markett at Sheilds, and to have the toules and other profitts thereby accruing, that towne beinge part member to the mannor of Tynemouth, which I doubt not but effect notwithstanding the greatest of Newcastle opposition.'⁴ A petition addressed to the Protector in 1654 shows his handiwork.

To his highnes the Lord Protector of the Commonwealth of England, Scotland and Ireland. The humble peticion of the inhabitants of North Sheilds and parts adjacent in the county of Northumberland and the gentry.

Sheweth that for want of a markett in the towne of North Shields in the county of Northumberland, being a place of great trade for coles, salt, and grindestones, wherein and the parts adjacent are thousands of families besides thousands of seamen and passengers daily resorting thither, as also your garrison of Tynemouth castle, all which are much necessitated and prejudiced and a great hindrance of trade and navigation, there not being any market in that county nearer then twelve myles.

That in tyme of deepe snowes, the cole-pitts always lying open, the people dare not adventure by land in the winter season to Newcastle markett, which is six myles distant from Sheildes (it being a towne and county of itselfe), in extremity of weather many boates are cast away and many people are drowned in going to and from that markett at Newcastle, the river also in the winter season being also frozen, so that the poorer sort are exposed to great want and misery.

Your petitioners therefore humbly prayes your Highnes will be plased to graunt a markett to be kept on Mondays and Thursdayes in the said towne in every weeke in the earle of Northumberland's name, by reason hee is lord of the mannor of the said Tynemouth.⁵

¹ *England's Grievance*, chapter 28.

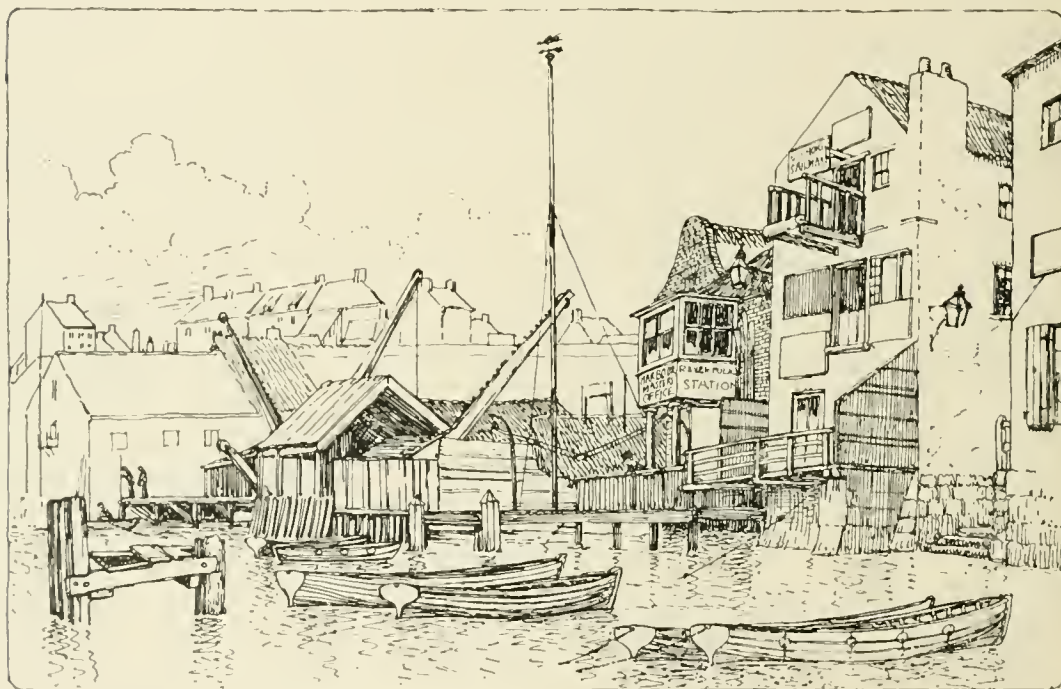
² The bibliography of *England's Grievance* is the subject of a paper in *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xiii. by the late Mr. C. J. Spence.

³ *England's Grievance*, preface.

⁴ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁵ *Ibid.*

The struggle between the Newcastle hostmen and the coalowners not of their company went on for several years. Ships were laden at Shields in spite of the bylaws of Newcastle companies, and an attempt made by the hostmen to check the practice by charging for lighter-hire was quashed by the Protector and his council. Ralph Gardner again directed his complaints against the hostmen, and, but for the Restoration, it seems likely that they would have come to terms.¹ After the Restoration, Newcastle returned to the attack. On May 20th, 1661, William



OLD QUAYS IN 1876.

Collingwood of North Shields was called before the conservancy court and presented for setting forth his quay at North Shields about seven yards into the river. Threatened with the destruction of their wharves and of the houses built on them, the townsmen of Shields petitioned the earl of Northumberland to take up their cause :

To ye right honorable ye earle of Northumberland, the humble petition of the inhabitants of North Shields, part of your honor's mannor of Tynemouth.

¹ *Hostmen's Company*, pp. 110-112, 114, 117.

Humbly sheweth that ye towne of Newcastle upon Tyne hath, under ye pretence of preservation of the river of Tyne, taken upon them to impose great mulcts and fines upon your petitioners because they will not pull downe and demolish their keyes and houses thereupon erected, which is noe way prejudiciall but of much advantage to the navigableness of the said river.

And that, except some speedy remedy be found out for your petitioners' reliefe in this particular, your poore petitioners will be constrained to suffer themselves to be ruin'd, or otherwise to disowne your lordshippe and owne the interest of the said towne, who is willing upon a very small acknowledgement too free and remitt ye said fines and impositions.¹

In spite of the continued efforts of the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle, who succeeded in 1672 in suppressing John Overing's brewery at North Shields,² the town grew rapidly. 'They are building daily,' said a letter-writer in 1658.³ The hearth-tax returns of 1664 show a hundred and eighty householders. Ten years later the number had risen to three hundred and five.⁴ Many of the older buildings in the town date from this period; on the lintel of one of the dwellings still remaining on the Wooden Dolly quay is the inscription 16^C_{1A} 74, and in houses which have vanished before modern improvements, coats of arms with-
out, and tile and carving



THE WOODEN DOLLY QUAY. 1889.

¹ Duke of Northumberland' MSS.

² *Exchequer Depositions*, Mich. 24 Chas. II. No. 35; *Decrees and Orders*, series iv. vol. xi. fol. 288.

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁴ The principal residents in 1664 were: Katharine Gardner (wife of Ralph Gardner of Chirton), John Blakeston, Edward Carr, James Denton, William Collingwood, Edward Toll, Jeremiah Low, and Mr. Ashburnham.

within, testified to former opulence. Like many other riverside towns North Shields consisted of one long narrow thoroughfare, extending from the Low Lights to the Bull Ring, and known in later times as the Low Town Street. The greater part of the street was from nine to eleven feet wide, but, at a few points, and for short distances, there were expansions that increased the width from sixteen to twenty-five feet. The 'little dovetts and thatched cottages' made way for lofty houses, solidly built of brick or stone, with rounded gables and red-tiled roofs. On the river side, short lanes and quays led direct to the water edge; on the other side steep flights of stairs gave access to what was known as the Bank Head at about seventy feet higher level. There were no houses on the higher plateau. What are now the busiest parts of Shields were overgrown with whin and provided a scanty pasture for cattle. Houses were packed tightly together. They crowded round little courts leading off the street, extended out on quays resting on piles driven into the bed of the river, and jostled one another up the hill.

At the east end of the town there were several salt pans held by the earl of Northumberland and the Milbourne family. A bridge crossed the Pow burn at this point and gave access to the main thoroughfare.¹ The street was intersected, about midway, by a piece of swampy ground, known as the Dogger lech. Across it, connecting the present Liddell and Clive Streets, ran a wooden bridge, and near to it stood the toll-gate house, demolished by the Tynemouth corporation in 1857 for street improvement. A causeway, commonly called the Half Moon, led up from the wooden bridge to the Bank Head, and continued, as Church Way, to the parish church. Farther along, a way led down to the ferry-boat landing.² Beyond that again was the Bull Ring, where bulls were baited.³ A lane, starting from this point, connected the town with the Newcastle road. At the west end of the town came more salt pans at a place called Dortwick, whence sands stretched out across the Tyne.

¹ In 1648 the Trinity House of Newcastle gave ten shillings towards building a bridge over the runner at the Low Lights. Mackenzie, *Newcastle*, p. 682, citing Trinity House MSS. At Christmas, 1701, several of the inhabitants of Tynemouth parish having refused to pay their shares for the maintenance and repair of the bridge at Pow pannels, and the highway between Billymill and Shields, it is ordered that the fines be levied and paid to the surveyor of the highways. *Sessions Order Books*, vol. iv. p. 20.

² At quarter sessions held at Christmas, 1724, the following order was made: 'The way in North Shields leading to the church (a conduit or current being stopt, the water overruns the streets, by which the streets are very much abused) to be repaired by the town of North Shields. The way to the ferry-boat landing at North Shields, in the parish of Tinnmouth, so bad that a horse going to the boat is in danger of having his legs broke.' *Ibid.* vol. vi. p. 357.

³ A large flat stone, containing an iron bolt and ring, was turned up here in June, 1820.

North Shields was not a healthy town. Plague was a constant visitant.¹ Refuse accumulated in the streets, and ways were foul. Most of the scavenging was done by pigs. Dense clouds of steam, ascending from the salt pans, wrapped the place in a white mantle.²

The town was under the joint control of manorial officers chosen in the court leet and of a select vestry known as the four-and-twenty. The following bylaws exemplify their jurisdiction :

April 15th, 1639. It is agreed by the minister and four-and-twenty that the first Sunday of every month shall be a collection in the church for the relief of the poor of the parish of Tynemouth, and likewise the money collected at every communion throughout the year shall be put in the church box and recorded in writing ; the said moneys collected and distributed to the poor at Christmas and Easter time, and account to be made every Easter to the four-and-twenty. *Tynemouth Vestry Books.*

April 19th, 1647. Agreed that profaners of the Lord's Day, or being absent from the church drinking in time of preaching, being drunken and swearing, to be severely punished according to the penalty laid on by the minister and churchwardens, acquainting the four-and-twenty with it. Diligent search to be made every Lord's Day, before and after noon, by the churchwardens, their assistants, and the assistance of all the petty constables, for the observing and keeping of the Sabbath. *Ibid.*

October 15th, 1694. Whereas complaint hath been made from court to court of the great newsances and trespasses committed or done by the keeping of swine unbowed and unringed in North Shields, and notwithstanding the several americiaments made of those that were presented at the several past courts, there is no amendment, but dayly greater numbers are kept therein, and by reason of the narrowness of the streets, and the town of late grown so populous that the keeping of swine in the said town is very infectious and nautious (especially in the summer time), insomuch that we do order that from and after the 17th day of October untill the next court no person or persons whatsoever shall permit or suffer any swine to go abroad in the streets or keep them in any place which shall or may annoy any of the inhabitants or be a publick newsance to the said town upon pain of xxxix^s xj^d upon every one that shall be found to keep the same. *Tynemouth Court Rolls.*

As early as 1620, Shields appears to have been divided into four wards, each represented by a petty constable, who was also surveyor of highways. A high constable acted for the whole town. The town was represented by a special jury in the manor court and had two bread-weighers and ale-tasters. The supervision of the salt measures also came within the manorial jurisdiction.³

Churchwardens and overseers of the poor were elected at the vestry meetings. These officers joined with the constables in policing and supervising the sanitary condition of the town, but their chief task was the administration of the poor law.

¹ Plague was at Tynemouth and Shields in 1546/7 (*Ministers' Accounts*) ; in 1583 (*Cal. Border Papers*, vol. i. p. 114) ; in 1604 (Duke of Northumberland's MSS.) ; in 1634 (*Court of High Commission at Durham*, Surt. Soc. No. 34, p. 171) ; and again in 1666 (*Tynemouth Register*, ed. Couchman, vol. i. p. 255).

² *Life of Marmaduke Rawdon of York*, Camden Soc. 1863, p. 143 ; Daniel Defoe, *Tour through the whole Island of Great Britain*, 1727, vol. iii. p. 193.

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

North Shields was the poorest part of the parish, and this fact caused the other townships within the parish to feel that they were unduly burdened. With a view of remedying this inconvenience, it was ordered by the justices of the peace at Christmas, 1713, 'that the severall villages in Tinemouth parish doe from henceforth maintain and take care of the poor in each village, but that all the poor that are now charged upon the parish be taken care of as they formerly have been, and for the future noe village to be chargeable, but, as before-mentioned, each village for their own poor.'¹ The consequence of this order was to overburden the town of North Shields, the overseers of the poor for that township stating, in a petition presented to quarter sessions in January, 1716/7, that there were more orders granted by the magistrates against them by £6 5s. a quarter, than if the whole cess was well paid, and that 'till of late they had the help of Chirton, Preston, Tynemouth, and Cullercoats, and now the town of North Shields decays and the poor increases.'²

By turning back a few years in the history of Shields it may be possible to detect the causes that led to the impoverishment of the town at the commencement of the eighteenth century. The hostmen of Newcastle had renewed their ancient quarrel. In 1684 complaints were made of the great damage sustained by that company by the loading of ships at the Low Lights.³ Orders were made by the same society in 1691 for the seizure of all coal shipped at Shields by other than freemen.⁴ They were fighting against the natural tendency of trade to drift down to the harbour towns. As Roger North observed about this time, 'Ever since ships have been built larger, partly for better roads, and partly for better pilotage, the port towns have crept nearer the main; as they say would happen upon the Tyne, and Shields would become the port town, if Newcastle had not a privilege that no common baker or brewer should set up between them and the sea.'⁵ The common council of Newcastle, in alarm, referred to a committee, in the year 1690, the consideration of what means were necessary to be used 'for preventing the great growth of trade at Shields.'⁶

¹ *Sessions Order Books*, vol. v. p. 173.

² *Sessions Papers*, Christmas, 1716/7. The method of poor law administration inaugurated in 1713 continued until the formation of Tynemouth union in 1836. A select vestry for the concerns of the poor in North Shields township was appointed on November 4th, 1824, under the powers of the Poor Law Act of 1819.

³ *Hostmen's Books*, Surt. Soc. No. 105, p. 142.

⁴ *Ibid.* p. 148.

⁵ North, *Life of Lord Keeper Guildford*, p. 121.

⁶ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 28, note, citing Common Council Books, September 30th, 1690.

Large fleets of colliers rode daily all along the northern shore by the Low Lights. Proposals made in 1699 for building a quay at that point met with strenuous resistance from the Newcastle Trinity House,¹ but appear to have been eventually carried, for staiths existed in 1714 not only at the Low Lights but near the ferry-boat landing and at the west end of the town (the Long Staith).² A little later, Warburton described North Shields as 'a large, well built and populous seaport town, situated at the very confluence of the river Tyne with the sea, where there is a haven sufficient to contain a thousand sail of ships of the largest burden. It is



THE RIVER SIDE NEAR THE LOW LIGHTS, 1872.

the harbour for Newcastle, drives a great trade in salt made of sea water, and in fish, which are here cured to admiration, particularly the incomparable salmon, which they supply to most parts of Europe.'³

The salt trade had, however, already begun to decline, as may be seen from the following petition presented to quarter sessions :

To the honourable the knights, citizens and burgesses in parliament assembled, the humble petition of the justices of the peace for the county of Northumberland at the quarter sessions for the said county held by adjournment at the castle of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, the 21st day of March, 1701, humbly sheweth that great numbers of poor people who have been employed in the salt works at North Shields,

¹ Richardson, *Reprints*, 'Conservatorship of the river Tyne,' p. 92 (from Trinity House papers).

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ *Ibid.*

Cullercoats, and other places in the county, by the decay of the salt trade are sett on begging and become burthensome to the inhabitants of this county. Your petitioners therefore humbly pray that this honourable house will be pleased to take the same into consideration and do therein as in their great judgments shall be thought meet; and your petitioners as in duty bound shall ever pray, etc. Given under the seal of the sessions at the sessions aforesaid.¹

Gradually this industry became obsolete. A survey taken in 1707 shows ten salt pans in the hands of the Milbourne family, while seven were owned by John Airey, two by Michael Coatsworth, three by Luke Killingworth's heirs, two by Mark Ogle, one by Sarah Chayter, and two by the heirs of William Collinson, making twenty-seven in all. At the same time the Pow pans, formerly granted to Sir John Melton and Ralph Reed for twenty-one years from 1631, lay waste, being long since decayed.² Sixty years later all the salt pans upon the duke of Northumberland's property in North Shields had been taken down and houses built upon them.³ A single salt manufactory existed till recently at the Low Lights.

The decay of the salt industry undoubtedly inflicted temporary hardship upon the poorer classes, upon whose unskilled labour it largely depended.⁴ Its place was soon taken, however, by the shipping industry, to which great impetus was given by the wars of the eighteenth century. Numerous masters and mariners came from Whitby and Ipswich to settle in North Shields. Shipbuilding commenced with the formation of a graving dock in 1752 by Mr. Edward Collingwood near the Bull Ring.⁵ It is said that during the American war as many as thirty ships were turned out annually from the various shipbuilding yards in the town, several frigates and gun-brigs being built for the government.⁶ In 1778 a society, named the Union Society, was founded in North Shields for the insurance of vessels belonging to the port of Tyne,⁷ and several other ship insurance associations and benefit societies were formed subsequently.⁸ Various trades subservient to the shipping industry found a footing in the town, chief among them being rope making and iron founding.

¹ *Sessions Order Books*, vol. i.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ *Ibid.*

⁴ This is pointed out in a narrative of the salt trade drawn up about 1605: 'It is to be noted that in the countyes of Durham and Northumberland ther bee no great trades as clothing and such like used, by which the poorer sort are sett on worke and releived from begery, saving only the trades of colyery and salting.' *Ibid.*

⁵ This dock was for many years owned by the Laing family, by whom it was sold in 1883 to Mr. H. S. Edwards of Corbridge.

⁶ Mackenzie, *Northumberland*, 1st edition, vol. ii. p. 552.

⁷ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 36, note.

⁸ Amongst other benefit societies the 'Good Intent' was established in 1799, and the 'Seamen's Loyal Standard Association,' for the mutual relief of sailors belonging to North Shields, in 1829. In 1827 there were thirteen local insurance clubs in North Shields.

Communication with Newcastle was improved. The old road had become almost impassable in the winter season, and the surveyors of the highways proved quite unequal to the task of keeping it in repair. The first of a series of turnpike Acts, passed in 1749, entrusted the upkeep of the road to a body of trustees, and provided for the erection of gates, turnpikes and tollhouses.¹

During the second half of the eighteenth century the town began to expand northwards, and the freeholds lying between the Tynemouth road and the Bank Head were covered with streets and buildings. When the common fields of Tynemouth township were divided in 1649, the larger portion of the south field had been divided into narrow strips running north and south and allotted to the several freeholders. This circumstance has left its mark upon the configuration of the town, for the main streets followed the same direction as the properties on which they had been built, and access from east to west long remained difficult.

Public buildings and public institutions followed one another rapidly as the town increased in size. On January 1st, 1777, a portion of the Brocks pasture near Christ-church was leased by the duke of Northumberland to Henry Hudson and others as a site for a poorhouse.² An Act of Parliament passed in 1786 incorporated six brewers of North Shields under the name of 'the company of the proprietors of the North Shields water-works.'³ The town, which had been formerly dependent upon Marden well and upon a spring in the Whitley limestone quarries, now obtained a good supply of fresh water, reservoirs being constructed at Waterville in Coach Lane, at the Ridges farm in Flatworth, and at the Brock farm in Tynemouth township. In 1792 a house of correction was built on the Tynemouth road. A dispensary was founded in 1802 in Church Street. Upon May 23rd, 1803, Shields was accorded the long-contested right to a market, and in 1806 a market-place was formed on the New Quay, where weekly markets were held, as well as fairs in April and November.⁴

¹ An Act of Parliament for repairing the road from North Shields, in the county of Northumberland, to the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne; 22 Geo. II. cap. ix. There were two toll gates at Percy Main, one at Chirton, one at South Preston and one opposite to the Master Mariners' Asylum. The last of the road trusts expired in 1886.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS. The land was purchased by the guardians of the Tynemouth Union in 1870, and in 1884 the workhouse was considerably enlarged.

³ An Act for supplying North Shields and the shipping resorting thereto with water; 26 Geo. III. cap. cx.; *Statutes at Large*, vol. xxxv. p. 932.

⁴ A new market-place between Saville and Tyne Streets was opened in 1887.

Shipping increased its proportions, and outgrew the restrictions imposed upon it by the corporation of Newcastle. Trade was carried on with the East Indies, North America, and the Baltic; and, after the Baltic ports were shut, about two hundred vessels sailed annually to British America.¹ In 1788, the shipowners of North Shields entered into conflict with the hostmen's company by introducing a Bill into Parliament for providing a public office in Shields to register the arrivals and ascertain the returns of ships laden with coal.² The measure was rejected, but the enforcement of a voyage up the Tyne on all vessels wishing to trade with Shields was becoming impossible. Joseph Scott, a wharfinger in North Shields, established regular traders in 1808 for the conveyance of goods direct to the harbour town.³ The Newcastle custom-house had a branch office in the market-place, and a watch-house near Clifford's fort, but it was a standing grievance that there was still no separate custom-house for North Shields. Vigorous efforts to obtain one were made in 1816, and, though they failed, it was determined by the Lords of the Treasury that masters of colliers might be permitted to sign the coast-bond at North Shields.

A subscription library and town clock were built in 1807 at the foot of Howard Street. Except for some slight provision for the instruction of the poor children of the parish,⁴ education had been hitherto neglected, but, upon the occasion of the jubilee of George III., subscriptions were raised for a British school, for which a site was found near Christ-church, part of the building being used as a school of industry for girls.⁵ In 1819 Mr. Thomas Kettlewell founded a charity school in George Street, a clause in the deed of trust providing that a lame person, if duly qualified, should be appointed schoolmaster.⁶ In the same year the first banking under-

¹ Mackenzie, *Northumberland*, first edition, vol. ii. p. 552.

² *Hostmen's Books*, pp. 216-217.

³ Mackenzie, *loc. cit.*

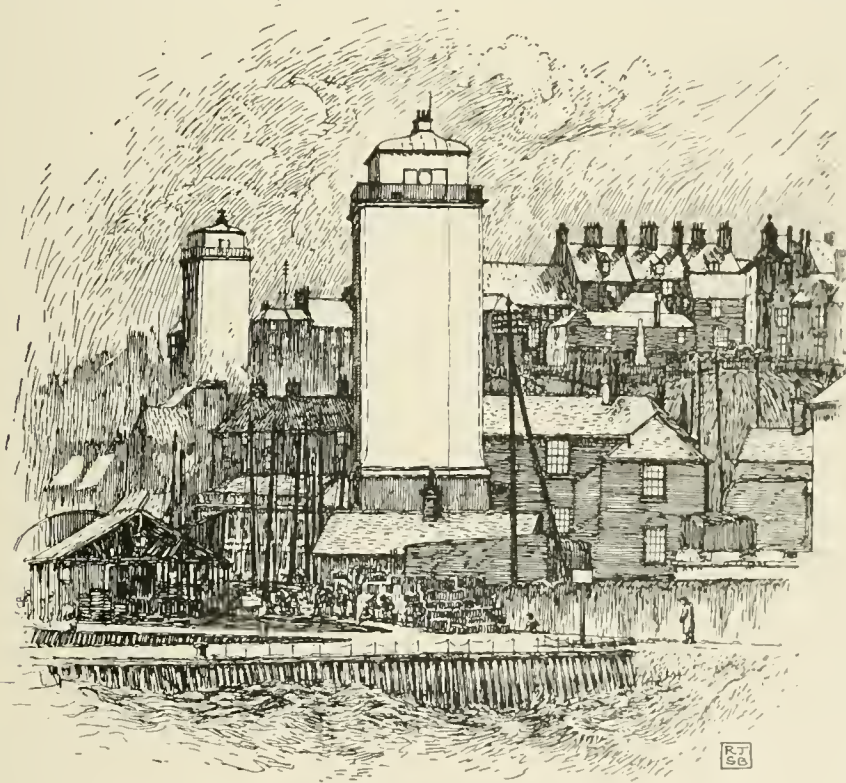
⁴ A parish school existed from the time of the Commonwealth, when (in 1652/3) £10 out of Allenton tithes were assigned to it by the Commissioners for the Propagation of the Gospel. *Lambeth MSS.* No. 1,006, fol. 424, *ex inf.* A. F. Leach. In 1655 Gabriel Coulson, the parish clerk, was chosen schoolmaster for the poor children of the parish. *Tynemouth Vestry Books.* John Spearman of Thornley, about the year 1703, bequeathed £20 to the vicar and churchwardens on trust to apply the interest to the education of poor boys in the parish. Surtees, *Durham*, vol. i. p. 96. The parish schoolhouse was let in 1783 to the Rev. Mr. Ireland, on condition that he should teach four poor children. *Tynemouth Vestry Books.* On April 20th, 1785, permission was given by the Tynemouth Vestry to James Storey of the Low Lights to erect a pew in the parish church on condition that he and his heirs should yearly pay to the curate of the parish thirty shillings towards the education of four poor children of the parish. *Ibid.*

⁵ An account of the Jubilee School is given by G. H. Haswell, *The Maister, a Century of Tyneside Life*. In 1880 it was handed over to the School Board for the borough, and an infant school has been added to it.

⁶ Kettlewell's school was transferred to the local educational authority in 1905.

taking in the town was started by Robert Spence and others. It continued under the name of the North and South Shields Bank until 1836, when the business was transferred to the Newcastle, Shields, and Sunderland Joint Stock Bank.¹ A Scientific and Mechanical Institute was formed in 1825, and was re-organised eight years later as the Mechanics' and Tradesmen's Library, with rooms in Tyne Street.

Industry centred round the Low Lights. A waggonway was constructed connecting the Cullercoats Main Colliery and Whitley limestone quarries



THE LOW AND HIGH LIGHTS.

with the Tyne at this point, and much coal and lime was shipped at staiths erected on the foreshore. In 1848 the colliery was laid in, and the staiths were shortly afterwards removed.² Gas works were established near the same place in 1820 by the newly-formed North Shields Gas Company.

¹ Maberley Phillips, *History of Banks and Banking*, pp. 221-225.

² See p. 27. A good view of the lime staiths is given in T. Sutherland's engraving of a sketch by T. M. Richardson. See also views of the foreshore in Carmichael, *Pictures of Tyneside*.

Three years later the Union Quay was built, connecting the Low Street with the ancient bridge over the Pow burn. The increase of the fishing industry caused a fish market to be built in the market place in 1820. A new graving dock, now the property of the Shields Engineering Company, was formed about the same time by Mr. Thomas Metcalfe in Liddell Street.

Regular communication with Newcastle by river commenced with the organization of a steam-packet service in 1814.¹ Coaches covered the distance by road, starting from the Bull Ring at North Shields, and proceeding up Coach Lane to the Tynemouth road.² In 1798 proposals were made for improving communication between North and South Shields by means of a tunnel under the river, and a subscription was started with that object.³ Passage across the river was hitherto only practicable by means of ferry boats belonging to the Dean and Chapter of Durham.⁴ Plans were submitted in 1825 for the construction of a suspension bridge, but the scheme was allowed to drop.⁵

By this time North Shields had extended far beyond the limits of the original township. The joint rule of the vestry and the court leet had become antiquated, and it was found necessary to define afresh the boundaries of the town and to establish some sort of municipal government. An Act of Parliament passed in 1828⁶ defined the boundaries as follows :

To the east, a line drawn in a south-east direction from the correction house to the river Tyne : to the north, the turnpike road from the said correction house to the south-west corner of the churchyard ; from thence the west wall of the said churchyard to the north-west corner thereof ; and from thence a line drawn in a north-north-west direction to the lane or road called Hawkey's Lane, leading from the Newcastle turnpike to the village of Preston : to the west, a line drawn from the termination of the said northern boundary in Hawkey's Lane to the end of the road leading from the Newcastle turnpike to the town of North Shields ; and from thence the said lane or road leading therefrom to

¹ 'Before steamboats became so numerous upon the Tyne, there were several covered passage boats, called *comfortables*, which went every tide to and from North Shields. Some of these sailing boats still remain.' Mackenzie, *Newcastle*, 1827, p. 722.

² Mackenzie, *Northumberland*, 1st edition, vol. ii. p. 538. In 1827 there were ten coaches and twenty-eight gigs, whereas 'about forty years before only one old crazy gig was employed upon the road.' Mackenzie, *Newcastle*, 1827, p. 722.

³ *Monthly Magazine*, vol. v. p. 149.

⁴ Depositions were taken in 1611 with regard to the tenure by which the ferry was held ; *Exchequer Depositions*, 9 Jas. I. Hilary, No. 20 ; and again in 1619. *Ibid.* 17 Jas. I. Mich., No. 11. A ferry was granted by the Crown *inter alia* to Edward Ramsey and Robert Ramsey in 1624. In 1717 an order was made by the Master of the Rolls that the Dean and Chapter of Durham should enjoy this ferry, paying to the duke and duchess of Somerset and to their heirs the yearly and accustomed rent of 6s. 8d. Duke of Northumberland's MSS. The ancient ferry rights of the Dean and Chapter were bought up by the Tyne Commissioners under the Tyne Improvement Act of 1865.

⁵ Hodgson, *Borough of South Shields*, pp. 141-143. *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Newcastle*, 2nd series, vol. ix. pp. 24-25.

⁶ An Act for paving, lighting, watching, cleansing, regulating and improving the town of North Shields, in the county of Northumberland ; 9 Geo. IV. cap. xxxvii.

the town of North Shields as far and unto the south end of the Quakers' burial ground on the west side of the said lane; and from thence a line drawn straight therefrom to the north-west corner of Milburn Place; and from thence following the boundary between the townships of North Shields and Chirton to the river: to the south the river Tyne: provided always that nothing in this Act contained shall extend or be taken or construed to alter or in any manner affect the present boundaries or limits of the parish of Tynemouth, or any of the townships contained therein, otherwise than for the purposes of this Act, but that in all other respects and for all other purposes whatsoever the present boundaries and limits of the said parish and the several townships contained therein shall continue and be the same as they respectively were at and immediately before the passing of this Act.

Under this Act commissioners were appointed who comprised: (1) all justices of the peace residing within the limits of the Act, (2) the churchwardens of the parish, (3) the steward and bailiff of the manor, (4) householders or occupiers of lands, etc., within the limits of the Act of the annual value of £40, or having real or personal property amounting to £2,000. Various powers were conferred upon the commissioners, including the appointment of watchmen, who were to have the full power and authority of constables. North Shields was divided into four wards and Tynemouth into two, a watchman being appointed for each ward. Before tracing the further development of local government, some account must be given of Chirton and Preston townships, which came to be included within the municipal area.¹

CHIRTON TOWNSHIP.

The township of Chirton is bounded by Preston and Tynemouth townships upon the east, by Shields Bank-head and the river Tyne upon the south, and by the Howden burn on the west. Northward it stretched up to Shire Moor, the boundary in this direction before the enclosure of the moor being an irregular line drawn from Moor Houses to Murton Row. A considerable portion of the moor is now included within its limits, increasing its acreage from 1,820 to 2,576 acres.²

A deed of the year 1320 bears witness to the gradual process by which the southern edges of the moor were brought into cultivation. Henry Faukes of Backworth quit-claimed to the prior and convent of Tynemouth all right to sixty acres of Rodestane moor, on the west side of Preston.

¹ The following are the census returns for North Shields township: 1801, 7,280; 1811, 7,699; 1821, 8,205; 1831, 6,744; 1841, 7,509; 1851, 8,882; 1861, 9,595; 1871, 8,619; 1881, 7,250; 1891, 6,046; 1901, 5,737.

² Of these 2,576 acres 81 acres are inland water, 116 acres are tidal water, and 4 acres are foreshore. The census returns for the township are: 1801, 1,152; 1811, 3,116; 1821, 4,351; 1831, 4,973; 1841, 4,360; 1851, 3,960; 1861, 5,544; 1871, 8,005; 1881, 11,248; 1891, 13,066; 1901, 15,668.

The boundaries of this piece of land are described as being the way leading from 'Billing' mill to Murton, the North Street leading from Tynemouth to Rodestane gallows, the furlong in Preston called Spittal flat, and the furlong in East Chirton called Black Chesters. Full liberty was accorded to the prior and convent to bring this land under cultivation.¹ Another proof of the gradual extension northward of Chirton township is afforded by the fact that the moor retained its name of Billy Mill moor long after that mill had fallen outside its limits.

The name of Black Chesters does not, as has been supposed, necessarily imply Roman occupation. Chesters was a name applied generally to earthworks of an early date; a place on the boundary of Tynemouth and Killingworth moors was termed Green Chesters, though it has never been suspected to be Roman; and no further inference can be drawn from such place-names than that they mark pre-Conquest and possibly prehistoric settlements. Black Chesters has been variously located. The deed quoted above demands a site immediately north or west of Preston colliery, the land there conveyed practically coinciding with Billy Mill farm. No traces of it can now be discovered, though they are said to have been distinguishable early in the nineteenth century.²

Other evidences of early occupation are not wanting. A stone cist was unearthed in 1790 in Billy Mill quarry,³ and another in Crawley close, to the east of Chirton village.⁴ In 1892 a bronze fibula, 5 $\frac{5}{8}$ inches long, with a square head 2 $\frac{1}{8}$ inches across and a hatchet-shaped foot, was discovered at Whitehill point.⁵

¹ This deed is incorrectly printed from the *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 80 b, in Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 91. The portion of it bearing on the topic under discussion is as follows: 'Remitto insuper pro me et heredibus meis ac quietum clamo dictis priori et conventui omne jus si quid habui in quadam parte more de Rodestane more ex occidentali parte de Preston, que quidem pars continet in se sexaginta acras, et extendit se in longitudine de via que ducit a molendino de Billing versus Moreton usque ad culturam que vocatur Spitel-flat in campo de Preston, in latitudine de illa cultura que vocatur Blakechestres in campo de Est Chirton usque ad North-strete que ducit de Tynem' versus furcas de Rodestane; quam quidem partem more Nicholaus Faukes, pater meus, priori et conventui de Tynem' et eorum successoribus concessit, remisit, et imperpetuum omnino quietum clamavit; ita quod nec ego, predictus Henricus, neque heredes mei, nec aliquis nomine nostro, aliquam communiam seu aliquid aliud juris in predicta parte more de cetero exigere poterimus vindicare; set bene liceat dictis priori et conventui eorum successoribus predictam partem more in culturam redigere et inde commodum suum omni modo quo eis placuerit facere imperpetuum absque contradictione mei seu heredum meorum.' [July 29th, 1320.]

² A laureated head and part of the shoulder of a large mailed figure are entered in the catalogue of Roman stones at the Blackgate museum, Newcastle, as having being found at Black Chesters. *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. i. pp. 237, 242. Upon supposed earthworks at Chirton and coins found there, see *Arch. Ael.* 1st series, vol. i. p. 235.

³ Mackenzie, *Northumberland*, 2nd edition, vol. ii. p. 460.

⁴ *Newcastle Courant*, November 7th, 1818; Richardson, *Table Book*, Hist. Div. vol. iii. p. 192.

⁵ *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Newcastle*, 2nd series, vol. v. p. 236, and illustration on p. 238.

Before the formation of the Albert Edward dock there was a natural landing-place on the north shore of the Tyne, a little above North Shields. It was formed by the confluence of two streams. The Red burn,¹ flowing down from the north-west through Coble dene, is the larger of the two, and divides Chirton township into two distinct areas. The second stream flows more nearly north and south, down Chirton dene. Proceeding up it, along haunted² Silky's lane, East Chirton village is reached at the junction of this lane and of the Newcastle and Tynemouth road. The stream turns east at this point, and then north, forming the boundary between Chirton and Preston townships. Silky's lane continues northward as Billy Mill lane, past Billy Mill to Moor Houses, where stood the prior of Tynemouth's gallows,³ and where it was joined by the medieval road from Tynemouth to Morpeth, known as North Street.

As the term 'chesters' is not confined simply to Roman encampments, so a 'street' might be other than a paved road, but at least it denotes a well defined track. The deed of 1320, quoted above, shows that the North Street turned north at Moor Houses, and passed through Murton. It must have crossed the Seaton burn at Holywell, for Edward I. passed through that village in 1304, on his way from Horton to Tynemouth.⁴ This line from Murton to Holywell carries it through Earsdon, and an allusion to a route from Earsdon to Holywell may be found in the mention, in 1208, of a field or furlong in Holywell called Erdesdunes-wei.⁵ A deed drawn up in 1326 furnishes positive evidence for the existence of a road from Holywell across Seaton Delaval moor to Stickley. Thence, as appears from the itinerary of Edward I., it continued to Horton, and after crossing the Blyth, probably at Humford mill, reached Bedlington.⁶

When the monks of St. Cuthbert fled from Durham with the body of their patron saint before the coming of William the Conqueror in 1069, they rested the first night at Jarrow and the second at Bedlington,⁷ and so probably passed along this road. Edward I. followed the same route upon three occasions on his way to or from Tynemouth priory.

¹ Called Reed's burn in a plan of 1769; *Watson Papers*, North of England Institute of Mining and Mechanical Engineers.

² Mackenzie, *Northumberland*, 2nd edition, vol. ii. p. 456.

³ Moor Houses is identified with Gallow Houses in *Tynemouth Parish Registers*, ed. Couchman, vol. i. p. 116.

⁴ Gough, *Itinerary of Edward I.* vol. ii. p. 241.

⁵ *Feet of Fines*, John, Northumberland, No. 13. ⁶ *Itinerary of Edward I.* vol. ii. pp. 100, 202, 241.

⁷ Symeon of Durham, *Historia Regum*, Rolls Series, vol. ii. p. 189.

His use of the road gives interest to an agreement drawn up in the reign of his successor between Prior Richard de Tewing and Sir Robert de la Val. This is dated May 4th, 1326, and recites that Sir Robert de la Val was in arrears for the rent of the multure of the prior's tenants in South Dissington. He had also failed to keep up a road which had existed from time immemorial over his moor between Holywell and Stickley, and had allowed it to become so deep and muddy that carts could not go along it. He undertook to repair the road at his own cost upon being remitted his arrears.¹

The evidence of these scattered entries points to the villages of Chirton, Murton, Earsdon and Holywell being early settlements along a road which had probably before the Conquest become a frequented route from north-eastern Durham into Northumberland. Chirton threw off two colonies, and the three hamlets were distinguished as East, Middle, and West Chirton. The two former were, between the years 1093 and 1116, granted to the prior and convent of Tynemouth.² West Chirton and Flatworth, on the right bank of the Red burn, continued for a century and a half to form part of the barony of Hadston.

A story is told in the *Life of St. Oswin* of the pious discrimination exercised by a flock of geese owned by a Chirton 'bond.' Their owner

¹ *Ista indentura testatur quod, cum quedam controversia mota fuisset inter priorem de Tynemuth ex una parte et dominum Robertum de la Val, militem, ex altera, de eo quod predictus prior petivit de predicto domino Roberto octo libras et sexdecim solidos que ei aretro fuerunt, de quodam annuo redditu sexdecim solidorum que ei debet pro multura tenentium predicti prioris de South Dissington, et etiam de eo quod dictus dominus Robertus cepit carectam predicti prioris in quadam via que ducit de Haliwell usque Sticlawe per medium more predicti domini Roberti, et ubi dictus dominus Robertus dicit quod nulla debet esse via pro carris nec carecta alicujus nec esse consuevit, tandem inter eos controversia predicta conquieuit in hunc modum; videlicet, pro eo quod recta via, in qua dictus dominus Robertus dicit quod carri et carecte de jure ire debent per medium more predicte et a tempore cujus non extat memoria ire consueverunt inter Haliwell et Sticlawe, ita existit temporibus modernis profunda et lutosa quod carri et carecte in instante ire non possunt ibidem, predictus prior remisit predicto domino Roberto omnia arreragia predicta. Pro qua quidem remissione predictus dominus Robertus concessit pro se et heredibus suis quod ipse et heredes sui rectam viam, in qua carri et carecte ire debent et temporibus retroactis ire consueverunt de Haliwell usque Sticlawe per medium more sue predicte, congrue et sufficienter sumptibus suis propriis emendare facient, ita quod carri et carecte ipsius prioris et successorum suorum congrue et sufficienter absque impedimento preterire possint, et quod interim, quousque predicta via sic emendetur, predictus prior et successores sui habeant viam sufficientem et congruam juxta predictam viam per quam ire solebant per medium predicte more cum carris et carectis suis omni tempore anni de predicta villa de Haliwell usque Sticlawe, ad majus aisiammentum ipsius prioris et successorum suorum, et ad minus dampnum ipsius Roberti et heredum suorum, quo ibidem transire poterint sine impedimento predicti domini Roberti vel heredum suorum. In cujus, etc. Datum apud Novum Castrum supra Tynam, die dominica proxima post festum ascensionis domini, A.D. 1326. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 89.*

² Henry I.'s charter, by which he confirmed the two Chirtons to the prior and convent of Tynemouth, is probably to be dated between 1106 and 1116. See above, p. 55 (13). Matthew Paris states that the grant was made in the time of Richard, abbot of St. Alban's, 1093-1119. *Gesta Abbatum*, Rolls Series, vol. i. p. 68.

stacked his corn after harvest, and leaving the tenth stook on the ground as St. Oswin's tithe, he carted the remainder home.¹ His wife drove her geese into the field, and tossed them one of the saint's sheaves; but they waddled away, so she took up the sheaf and cooped the geese up with it, resolved that they should have that or nothing. Her curiosity excited her presently to open the door of the pen. The geese took their heads out from under their wings, and raced towards her with expectant cackles; but not a grain of the saint's corn had they touched.² The tale of how the daughter of Roger of Middle Chirton was cured of a bloody flux is of a less miraculous character.³

EAST CHIRTON.

According to the survey of 1292, the sum of 11s. 10d. was received from East Chirton in money-rents, in addition to forty quarters of barley-malt, valued at 2s. 6d. the quarter.⁴ The tallage roll of 1294 gives the following names of tenants:

EAST CHIRTON TALLAGE ROLL, 1294.

	s.	d.		s.	d.
De Willelmo filio Ranulphi ...	12	0	De Roberto de Chirton ...	—	—
De Ricardo longo ...	3	4	De Willelmo Belle ...	13	4
De Roberto filio Willelmi ...	1	0	De Willelmo Champeneys ...	12	0
De Rogero filio Ranulphi ...	3	0	De Willelmo Graye cum sociis, tenenti-		
De Roberto filio Johannis ...	2	0	bus terre Hugonis Dene ...	—	—
De Radulpho filio Willelmi ...	9	0			

Summa, £2 15s. 8d.⁵

All these tenants, except Robert de Chirton and William Gray, who pay no tallage, reappear in the custumal as bonds, doing the same services and having the same customs as those of Preston.⁶ Each bond held thirty-six acres; but as the whole customary lands of the township measured 299 acres, rent was paid for the eleven acres surplusage.⁷ There were four minor holdings; Robert Burdon had a house, and paid 6d. rent; William Barker, Robert Sis, and Ralph, son of William, each held four acres, for which they paid 9d. apiece. Robert de Chirton and Hugh the pounder, who may be identified with Hugh Dene, reappear as customary freeholders paying rad-mal. The latter's services are thus set forth:

¹ Cum per metas modicas, ut moris est metentibus, fruges suas collegisset in agro, decimam metam sancto Oswino consignavit in decimam, eo quod terra sua ad sancti dominium pertineret, et partem bladi reliquam, quae cum contingebat, domum cum carro studiosus agricola deducebat. *Vita Oswini*, Surt. Soc. No. 8, cap. xli. ² *Ibid.* ³ *Ibid.* cap. xxxvi. ⁴ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 55.

⁵ *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 109 b. ⁶ For these see above, p. 223. ⁷ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 7 b.

Hugh Punder holds forty-five acres and pays yearly 5s. 2d., and 5s. for rade-male, and three 'tawes' of barley-malt and three 'tawes' of oats. He shall do one 'boen-ere' at the prior's maintenance, and 'bon-harrowe' without food. He shall, together with Robert de Chirton, who is associated with him, do one Neusum-lade at the prior's maintenance. He shall do three days' work in the autumn, as does William Drymouth. Together with Robert de Chirton, who is associated with him, he pays 6½d. and gives 1½d. for milne-silver.

Robert de Chirton also held forty-five acres, for which he paid 2s. 6d. yearly rent. He did in-lade in the field of Tynemouth without food, and gave 1½d. for milne-silver at the feast of St. Peter and St. Paul. The other services imposed upon him were similar to those rendered by Hugh the pounder.¹

Six of the eight bonds paid subsidy in 1296. William Gray and Robert de Chirton appear in that roll among the jurors of the liberty.

EAST CHIRTON SUBSIDY ROLL, 1296.

		℥	s.	d.		s.	d.
Summa bonorum	Willelmi Champenays ...	2	17	0	unde domino regi	5	3
"	Willelmi Bel ...	2	8	4	"	4	4 ³ / ₄
"	Radulphi filii Willelmi ...	1	14	4	"	3	1 ¹ / ₂
"	Willelmi filii Ranulphi ...	2	4	8	"	4	0 ³ / ₄
"	Rogeri filii Ranulphi ...	1	1	11	"	2	0
"	Roberti filii Johannis ...	1	1	0	"	1	11

Summa hujus ville, £11 8s. 1d. ; unde domino regi, £1 os. 8¾d.²

Various pieces of land in East Chirton were acquired by the prior and convent as demesne in 1348, 1354, and 1380.³ Only twenty-five acres out of the ninety acres mentioned above remained in the hands of free men in 1377. The owners had compounded with the prior at 5d. an acre, as an equivalent for all services except carting of millstones and tallage. Eight acres lately acquired by the convent brought in 6s. 8d. rent. The land which Walter de Hesilden held for the term of his life was in the lord's hand and not yet let out. There were still eight bondage holdings, but four were waste and were leased for a payment of barley-malt and oats; the remainder paid a money-rent collectively of 15s. 3d.⁴

At the time of the suppression of the monasteries there were five tenements in East Chirton. Each customary tenant paid £1 17s. 4d. as money-rent, 4d. for pannage, and 1s. for the tithe of hay, as well as three quarters of barley and three quarters of oats. There was a payment of 1s. 4d. made by the whole township for a garden.⁵ A survey of 1606 specifies the extent

¹ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 39.

² Lay Subsidy Roll, 1296.

³ See above, pp. 115, 116.

⁴ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 52 b and 60.

⁵ Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 221.

of each holding as a house with barn and garth, forty-five acres of arable, two acres of meadow, fourteen acres of pasture, and common on Billy Mill moor. The five tenants were Rowland Marshall, Robert Andrew, William Bailiff, Thomas Coward and Mark Milbanke.¹

¹ *Land Revenue, Miscell. Books, vol. 223, fols. 299-300.*

REED OF CHIRTON.

..... REED, =

Ralph Reed of Chirton, together with George Milbourne of Chirton purchased land at the Pow Burn, and the coal mines in Monkseaton and Chirton, in 1633 (<i>b</i>); buried 9th October, 1636 (<i>a</i>); will dated 18th June, 1636 (<i>d</i>).	=	Phillis [daughter of Stephen Kitchin of Jar-row*], to whom her husband gave his lands in East and Middle Chirton for life (<i>d</i>); remarried before 19th November, 1646, William Chapman of South Shields (<i>d</i>).	Roger Reed, named in the will of his brother Ralph (<i>d</i>).
--	---	--	--

Edward Reed, bapt. 11th February, 1615/6 (<i>a</i>); buried 28th May, 1616 (<i>a</i>).	Ralph Reed of Chirton, baptised 6th July, 1617 (<i>a</i>); of St. John's College, Cambridge; matriculated 11th July, 1633, aged 17; to whom his father gave his lands in East and Middle Chirton, subject to his mother's life interest, his salt pans, his coal pits in Preston, Chirton, Monkseaton, and Billymoor (<i>d</i>); buried in the chancel of St. Oswin's, Tynemouth, 24th November, 1646 (<i>a</i>); will dated 19th November, 1646 (<i>d</i>).	=	Catherine, daughter of John Salkeld of Rock (<i>c</i>); to whom her husband gave his farms and freeholds in East Chirton for her widowhood (<i>d</i>); she remarried, 9th September, 1648, Ralph Gardner of Chirton (<i>f</i>) (<i>a</i>), the River Reformer,† and as Catherine Gardner exhibited an account of her first husband's personal estate in 1649 (<i>d</i>), and paid hearth tax for a house in North Shields in 1663.	Edward, baptised 3rd December, 1619 (<i>a</i>); apparently dead before 18th June, 1636 (<i>d</i>). George, baptised 1st May, 1622 (<i>a</i>); apparently dead before 18th June, 1636 (<i>d</i>). Thomas, baptised 9th July, 1626 (<i>a</i>); buried 15th July same year (<i>a</i>). Roger,‡ baptised 14th Feb., 1629/30 (<i>a</i>); to whom his father gave the manor of Whitcheater (<i>d</i>); mar. Margaret, dau. of Robert Conyers of Bowlby (<i>h</i>). Jane, baptised 9th July, 1626 (<i>a</i>); named in her father's will (<i>d</i>); married 7th January, 1639/40, Gilbert Errington (<i>a</i>) of West Denton (<i>c</i>).
--	--	---	--	---

Ralph, buried 13th March, 1638/9 (<i>a</i>), in Tynemouth chancel. Nicholas, baptised 26th December, 1638 (<i>a</i>); buried 22nd January, 1638/9 (<i>a</i>), in Tynemouth chancel.	Ralph Reed of Chirton, baptised 15th July, 1640 (<i>a</i>); found heir to his father's lands, April, 1650 (<i>b</i>); admitted to Gray's Inn, 31st May, 1656; rated for lands in East Chirton in 1663, and surrendered same, April, 1672, to the use of Sir Thomas Liddell (<i>b</i>); was of the parish of St. Margaret's, Westminster, 20th May, 1673, when he mortgaged his salt pans at North Shields to Ralph Milbourne, of the parish of St. Clement Danes, gentleman (<i>c</i>); described as of Newcastle in a release dated 7th December, 1676 (<i>c</i>); buried at St. John's, Newcastle, 13th December, 1676 (<i>g</i>).§	=	Ann living at Newcastle a widow, 14th Feb., 1677/8 (<i>c</i>).	Francis, baptised 2nd December, 1641 (<i>a</i>); to whom his father gave his salt pans at North Shields (<i>d</i>); died 2nd April, 1675 (<i>a</i>). Ludovick, baptised 23rd September, 1645 (<i>a</i>); named in his father's will (<i>d</i>); buried 1st February, 1646/7 (<i>a</i>). Barbara, baptised 20th June, 1644 (<i>a</i>); married 9th August, 1669, Captain Jo. Tong (<i>a</i>), and 2nd, at All Saints', Newcastle, 10th October, 1675, John Clutterbuck of Newcastle.
--	---	---	--	---

Ralph Reed, baptised 3rd September, 1659 (*a*).

* 1640, 18th July. Edward Kitchin, brother of Mistress Reede of Chirton, buried. *Tynemouth Register*. Compare Surtees, *Durham*, vol. ii. p. 29.

† 1648, 9 Sept. Rad, Gardiner gen. et Catherina Reed de Chirton vid. *Earsdon Register of Marriages*.

‡ Roger Reed of North Shields compounded for his delinquency in 1649 (Welford, *Royalist Composition Papers*). On 15th June, 1652, he sold his burgage and two salt pans in North Shields to William Collinson (*Tynemouth Court Rolls*).

§ Administration of the goods of Ralph Reed of the chapelry of St. John, Newcastle, was granted in 1677, but the document is missing from the bundle for that year remaining in the Probate Registry at Durham. The inventory of his goods, appraised 10th August, 1677, only amounted to £40.

(*a*) *Tynemouth Register*.

(*b*) *Tynemouth Court Rolls* and Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

(*c*) Welford, *Royalist Composition Papers*, Surt. Soc.

(*d*) *Durham Probate Registry*.

(*e*) Abstract of title to salt pans at North Shields. Bell Collection.

(*f*) *Earsdon Registers*.

(*g*) *St. John's Register*, Newcastle.

(*h*) Dugdale, *Visitacion of Yorkshire*.

Marshall's and Bailiff's farms came, before 1650, into the hands of Ralph Reed, a colliery-owner and salt-manufacturer. His son, Ralph Reed the younger, appears to have sold his property at Chirton in 1672 to John Clarke, an agent of Joscelin, eleventh earl of Northumberland. Clarke obtained permission from the earl's widow to dismantle Warkworth castle, and with its spoils he built Chirton hall on the west side of Silky's lane, a road running down from the village towards the river.¹ After Clarke's death, on May 6th, 1675, his widow married Philip Bickerstaffe, member of parliament for Berwick in 1686, and for Northumberland in 1688 and 1694.² Mr. Bickerstaffe surrendered his copyhold lands in Chirton on August 1st, 1699, to Sir William Blackett,³ who concluded a sale of Chirton hall to Archibald, first duke of Argyll. The duke was a great lover of horse-racing, and kept a large stud at Chirton, where he died on September 28th, 1703.⁴

A year before his death Argyll made over his English estates, including Chirton, to Mr. Boutflower of Apperley, in trust for Mrs. Allison. The duke's relatives put in a claim to the property. The full purchase-money for Chirton had, however, never been paid, and Sir William Blackett concluded a bargain with Mrs. Allison to enable her to dispose of the estate. She sold Chirton to Mr. Robert Lawson of Cramlington, receiving £1,200 for her interest in those lands, while the rest of the money went to pay off Sir William Blackett.⁵

Under the provisions of the will of Hilton Lawson,⁶ son of Robert

¹ See vol. v. of this work, p. 75.

² 1676, October 24th. Capt. Phillip Bickerstaffe and Maddam Jane Clarke married; *Tynemouth Registers*.

³ *Tynemouth Court Rolls*.

⁴ *Duke of Portland's MSS.* vol. iv. p. 70; *Hist. MSS. Com.* See also *Dictionary of National Biography*.

⁵ *Argyle Papers*, Edinburgh, 1834, pp. 92, 121.

⁶ Will of Hilton Lawson of Chirton, dated April 14th, 1748, proved March 25th, 1768: To my wife, Winifred Lawson, for her life, an annuity of £100 payable out of my copyhold lands at Chirton, and the use of my capital mansion at Chirton. To my god-daughter, Winifred Collingwood, £100. The residue of my freehold and copyhold estates at Cramlington, Chirton and Preston, to my brother, John Lawson of Barton, co. Beds., esq., for life. After his decease to John Lawson the younger, eldest son of the said John Lawson, for life. Remainder to the heirs of the said John Lawson the younger in tail male. And for default of such issue, to the Rev. Wilfrid Lawson, vicar of Warkworth, for life, with remainder to his heirs in tail male. And for default of such issue, to Mansfield Cardonnel, esq., commissioner of the customs at Edinburgh, and his heirs and assigns for ever, upon condition that they shall take and use the surname of Lawson. My wife sole executrix.

Hilton Lawson died at Chirton on December 15th, 1767 (*Newcastle Courant*, December 19th, 1767). John Lawson the elder having died in his brother's lifetime, John Lawson the younger inherited under the provisions of the will. Wilfrid Lawson died without issue, November 27th, 1777 (see vol. v. of this work, p. 187). Mansfeldt Cardonnel died November 22nd, 1780. Upon the death of John Lawson the younger without issue in October, 1791, Adam Cardonnel inherited the property as eldest son and heir of Mansfeldt Cardonnel. *Bell Collection* at Alnwick castle, No. 352. For Mansfeldt Cardonnel see Alexander Carlyle, *Autobiography*, pp. 218-219. A biography of his son, Adam Cardonnel, is given in the *Dictionary of National Biography*, vol. ix. pp. 41-42.

Lawson mentioned above, and high sheriff for the county in 1761, Cramlington and the Chirton farms came, in 1791, to Adam Cardonnel, who assumed the name of de Cardonnel-Lawson. Upon the opening of the Burdon Main colliery on the estate in 1811, Mr. Lawson pulled down Chirton hall, and went to reside at Cramlington. Only the gate posts and

CARDONNEL-LAWSON OF CHIRTON AND CRAMLINGTON.

MANSFELDT CARDONNEL,* some time of North Shields, = Anne, daughter of Thomas Hilton of Low Ford, near afterwards of Musselburgh, N.B., and a commissioner of customs in Scotland, an appointment he held for thirty-six years; died 12th November, 1780 (*b*), aged 83 years (*c*). Sunderland, second son of Henry Hilton, a baron of the bishopric; baptised 5th June, 1708; bond of marriage, 20th August, 1726; married at Tynemouth, 8th September, 1726 (*a*); died 23rd July, 1786 (*b*).

Adam Cardonnel,† a medical practitioner at Edinburgh, afterwards called Adam Mansfeldt de Cardonnel-Lawson; succeeded to estates at Chirton and Cramlington in 1791, under the provisions of the will of his kinsman, Hilton Lawson of Chirton; Fellow of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland, 1780, and a curator of that society, 1782-1784; high sheriff of Northumberland, 1796; buried at Cramlington, 14th June, 1820, aged 73 (*d*); will dated 22nd May, 1819; proved at the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 21st November, 1820, and at Durham, 13th July, 1822 (*e*).

= Mary, daughter of James Kidd, a general in the army (*e*), named in her husband's will; died 25th May, 1830 (*e*).

James Cardonnel, baptised 10th December, 1727 (*a*); buried at St. Nicholas', Newcastle, 15th August, 1735. Daniel Cardonnel, baptised 21st January, 1733 (*a*); buried four days later (*a*). Mary Margaret, baptised 7th October, 1730 (*a*). Ann, buried 28th December, 1735 (*a*).

Adam Mansfeldt de Cardonnel-Lawson of Chirton and Cramlington, an officer in the 21st Light Dragoons; married, first, *circa* June, 1802, Lucy, daughter of Weston, prebendary of Durham (*f*), and second,; died at Acton-house, 21st November, 1838, aged 58; buried at Felton.

Alexander Hilton de Cardonnel (*e*), baptised 27th February, 1794 (*a*); named in his father's will.

Anne Lindsay de Cardonnel, married at Walcote, Bath, 14th September, 1813, Magnus Morton Kelly (*g*); named in her father's will. Hannah Mary de Cardonnel, married at Cheltenham, 19th February, 1824, Joseph Edward Greaves, who afterwards assumed the name of Elmsall (*h*); named in her father's will.

James Hilton de Cardonnel-Lawson of 3rd or Prince of Wales Dragoon Guards, = Caroline Russell, daughter of Lieut.-Col. born 20th March, 1827; was stationed at Pontefract, 20th March, 1848, when he attained the age of 21; afterwards resided at Hilton Lodge, Tynemouth. Willford; remarried, 12th January, 1875. Henry Warren.

* Mansfeldt Cardonnel was a kinsman of Adam Cardonnel, secretary of the great duke of Marlborough, whose will, dated 29th October, 1718, was proved at London in the following year. It is stated in the *Scot. Mag.* for November, 1780, of Mansfeldt Cardonnel, that by his mother he was grandson of the duke of Monmouth, and not a distant relation of Oliver Cromwell. His father, James Cardonnel, was secretary to the duke of Schomberg, who was killed at the battle of the Boyne. *Notes and Queries*, series ii. vol. x. p. 239.

† Adam de Cardonnel was author of *Numismata Scotiæ, or a Series of the Scottish Coinage from the Reign of William the Lion to the Union*. Edinburgh, 1786. Also of *Picturesque Antiquities of Scotland*, London, 1793.

(*a*) *Tynemouth Registers*.

(*b*) *Musgrave Obituary*, Harl. Soc. vol. xlv.

(*c*) *Notes and Queries*, series ii. vol. x. p. 239.

(*d*) *Dictionary of National Biography*.

(*e*) Bell Collection, No. 352.

(*f*) *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1802, p. 684.

(*g*) *Ibid.* 1813, pt. ii. p. 394.

(*h*) Hunter, *Familiæ Minorum Gentium*, vol. ii. p. 748.

some of the outbuildings of the old house remain. Warburton described it, a century earlier, as built of fine freestone and brick, having a good garden on the south front. Mr. Lawson's son, James Hilton de Cardonnel-Lawson, sold the greater part of his Chirton property, amounting to 293 acres, and it was purchased in 1865 by Mr. Trevelyan, now Sir George Otto

Trevelyan of Wallington. Four years later it was sold in lots, the duke of Northumberland being the principal purchaser. The estate included the Meadow Well and Chirton Dene farms. The eastern portion is now covered with streets, and the southern part is in the hands of the Tyne Commissioners and used for storage purposes. Chirton Hill Lane farm, on which Preston colliery stands, is still in the hands of the Lawson family.

MILBOURNE AND BUTLER OF CHIRTON.

GEORGE MILBOURNE purchased lands in the parish of Tynemouth from John Errington and Richard Lambert *circa* 1616 (*c*). =

Ann = first wife, bur. 28th December, 1640 (<i>a</i>).	George Milbourne of Chirton, to whom <i>circa</i> 1619 his father conveyed the lands purchased from Errington and Lambert (<i>c</i>); admitted to lands in Chirton, 22nd October, 1631, on the surrender of Henry Andrew (<i>c</i>); purchased lands at Pow Panns in 1632, and a salt pan near that place in 1635; together with William Milbourne of Newcastle purchased a salmon fishery at the Low Lights in 1637, then described as of South Shields (<i>c</i>); buried 7th March, 1650/51 (<i>a</i>).	Jane, dau. of Michael Mitford of Seghill, married at Earsdon 9th March, 1642/3; she married, 2nd, 1st Jan., 1651/2, Ralph Fenwick (<i>a</i>).	John Milbourne brother of George Milbourne of Chirton, bur. 19th December, 1640 (<i>a</i>).
--	--	---	---

William Milbourne of Chirton, baptised 13th August, 1644 (<i>a</i>); apprenticed 15th August, 1660, to John Butler of Newcastle, mercer; admitted free of Merchants' Company, 26th October, 1670 (<i>f</i>); to whom his brother George gave an annuity payable out of his freehold lands (<i>d</i>); buried in the chancel of Christ Church, Tynemouth, 28th Oct, 1675 (<i>a</i>).	Ralph Milbourne of Chirton, baptised 13th Aug., 1646 (<i>a</i>); died 22nd May, 1689, aged 43 (<i>b</i>) (<i>a</i>); will dated 8th November, 1686; proved 1689 (<i>d</i>).	Winifred, daughter of Thomas Richardson of Clement's Inn, London (<i>b</i>); she rebuilt Chirton-house in 1693; buried 2nd April, 1720 (<i>a</i>).	Barbara, baptised 21st March, 1647/8 (<i>a</i>). Sarah, baptised 11th December, 1649 (<i>a</i>).
---	---	--	--

Winifred Milbourne, daughter and heir, married 4th July, 1698 (*a*); buried 29th December, 1722 (*a*). = John Roddam of Roddam and Little Houghton, died at Chirton; buried 1st October, 1702 (*a*).

Winifred, baptised 27th September, 1699 (*a*); buried two days later (*a*).

Mary, baptised 10th December, 1700 (*a*); married Edward Collingwood of Byker.

Winifred, baptised 19th August, 1702 (*a*); married 14th July, 1737/8, Hilton Lawson (*a*), and died his widow at Chirton, 15th February, 1790.

George Milbourne of Chirton, * son and heir (<i>c</i>) [baptised 3rd December, 1637 (<i>a</i>)]; was admitted to his father's lands, 14th October, 1651, then aged 13 (<i>c</i>); was rated for lands at Chirton, Murton and North Shields in 1663; died 10th, buried in the choir of Christ Church, 13th March, 1671/2 (<i>a</i>); will dated 20th January, 1671/2; proved 1672 (<i>d</i>).	Isabella Milbourne (<i>c</i>), sister of the whole blood and heir of George Milbourne; second wife of John Butler (<i>c</i>); [baptised 27th October, 1639 (<i>a</i>)]; party to deed 5th March, 1672.	John Butler of Newcastle (<i>c</i>), merchant adventurer, was 46 years of age when he entered his pedigree at the visitation, 24th August, 1666 (<i>c</i>).
--	--	---

William Butler, was 5 years of age in 1666 (<i>c</i>); joined his parents in surrenders of lands at Chirton in 1683 (<i>c</i>).	George Butler, = Ann: she remarried Thomas Sharper of North Shields; articles before marriage, 5th June, 1696; living a widow for the second time, 22nd March, 1714.	Catherine, born before 24th August, 1666 (<i>c</i>). Milbournella, baptised 23rd November, 1675 (<i>a</i>); buried 6th December same year (<i>a</i>). Isabella, bapt. 19th Dec., 1678 (<i>a</i>).
Ralph Butler, was aged 1 year and 10 months, 24th August, 1666 (<i>c</i>).		

* There was a contemporary George Milburn at Chirton, who, in one entry in the *Tynemouth Register* is described as a herd.

(*a*) *Tynemouth Registers*.

(*b*) Monumental Inscription, Christ Church, Tynemouth.

(*c*) *Tynemouth Court Rolls* and Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

(*d*) *Durham Probate Registry*.

(*e*) Dugdale, *Visitation of Northumberland*, 1666.

(*f*) *Newcastle Merchant Adventurers*, Dendy.

Ballast hills, over a hundred feet in height, form a conspicuous feature on what was once the Lawson property. The ground on which they stand, south-west of Milburn Place, was leased to Messrs. Smith, dock-owners, who obtained permission from the corporation of Newcastle in 1825 to make a ballast depôt there. The heaps grew rapidly for a time, gravel being delivered out of vessels by cranes and conveyed on tramways to the top of the heap; but gravel has now been almost entirely superseded by water ballast, and the ballast heaps are being gradually demolished. A time-gun, placed upon one of them in 1863, was fired daily at 1 p.m. by a current from Greenwich observatory, but the practice has been discontinued.

Andrew's farm was acquired in 1631 by George Milbourne. He, like his neighbour, Ralph Reed, was actively engaged in the coal and salt industries. His younger son and eventual heir, Ralph Milbourne, died in 1689, leaving his property at Chirton to his widow, Winifred Milbourne, who, in 1693, rebuilt Chirton house on the east side of Silky's lane. Their only daughter and heir, Winifred, married John Roddam of Roddam, by whom she had two surviving daughters, Mary and Winifred. They married respectively Edward Collingwood of Byker, and Hilton Lawson of Chirton. The bulk of the Milbourne inheritance, including Chirton house, was assigned to the elder daughter, and thus came into the hands of the Collingwood family.

Edward Collingwood, the husband of Mary Roddam, was son and heir of Edward Collingwood of Byker and Dissington. He was for many years recorder of Newcastle, and was mayor of that town in 1740. On his death, in 1783, he was succeeded in his estates by his son, Edward Collingwood the younger. The latter by his will, dated June 26th, 1805, devised his property at Dissington and Shipley to his niece, Mary Winifred (daughter of Thomas Babington Pulteney of Carlton, and wife of Walter Spencer Stanhope of Cannon hall in Yorkshire), in trust for her third son, Edward Stanhope, who assumed the name of Collingwood, and from whom are descended the Collingwoods of Dissington. Under another clause of the will Chirton devolved, upon Mr. Edward Collingwood's death, to his kinsman, Cuthbert, Lord Collingwood. Though naval commands prevented Lord Collingwood from ever visiting Chirton, his letters show that he took a keen interest in his new property, and his wife and daughters resided there

until his death in 1810. As he died without male issue, Chirton passed, under the provisions of Mr. Edward Collingwood's will, to Lord Collingwood's brother, John Collingwood, ancestor of the Collingwoods of Lilburn tower, the present owners.¹ Chirton house was sold in 1876, and in 1899 it was pulled down to make way for co-operative stores. The estate includes Chirton and Billy Mill farms, with an acreage of 127 acres, besides lands in Murton, Preston and North Shields.

Coward's farm was acquired, about the year 1620, by Thomas Spearman, second son of Robert Spearman of Preston. His grandson, Robert Spearman of Durham, ancestor of the Spearmans of Old Acres in that county,² surrendered his Chirton property on September 21st, 1724, to Henry Walker of Whitby, master and mariner, brother of John Walker of the Low Lights. Mr. Walker also purchased property in Preston and Tyne-mouth from the Spearman family. He left three daughters and co-heirs, namely, (1) Esther, wife of Richard Ellison of Thorn in Yorkshire, (2) Rachel, wife of John Yeoman of Whitby, (3) Mary, wife of Matthew Waters of Wallsend. A portion of the Chirton property was purchased in 1794 by Mr. Cardonnel-Lawson. The remainder passed by descent to the Yeoman, Sibthorpe and Rudyerd families. It included the district between the Coach Lane and Little Bedford Street in North Shields, and is now covered with streets. Hawkey's farm has been sold to the Tyne-mouth Corporation by the representatives of Richard Rudyerd of Whitby, who married Anne, daughter of John Yeoman mentioned above.³

Mark Milbanke, the owner of the remaining farm in East Chirton, had inherited land in Chirton and North Shields from his grandfather, Edmund Milbanke. He was high sheriff of Newcastle in 1638, and was mayor of that town in 1658, and again in 1672. His son and namesake was created a baronet in 1661, and from him are descended the Milbankes of Halnaby in Yorkshire,⁴ and of Thorpe Perrow in the same county. The following wills illustrate the connection of its earlier members with this district.

¹ On the general descent of the Collingwood family, see an article by Mr. J. C. Hodgson on 'The Ancestry of Admiral Lord Collingwood' in *Arch. Ael.* 3rd series, vol. ii. Biographies of Lord Collingwood and of Edward Collingwood, recorder of Newcastle, may be found in Mr. Welford's *Men of Mark*. The standard authority for the life of Lord Collingwood is the *Public and Private Correspondence of Vice-Admiral Lord Collingwood*, edited by his son-in-law, Mr. G. L. Newenham, who took the additional name of Collingwood. See also *Dictionary of National Biography*. A monument to Lord Collingwood was erected in 1845 and stands at the mouth of the Tyne, near the Spanish battery.

² For a pedigree of Spearman of Old Acres, see Surtees, *Durham*, vol. i. p. 96.

³ Abstract of title in the possession of Mr. W. H. Ryott.

⁴ For a pedigree of this family see Surtees, *Durham*, vol. i. p. 274.

September 21st, 1596. Will of Edmond Milbancks of the parishe of Tynemouth, sick in bodie ; to be buried in the chancell of St. Oswald's [*sic*] church at Tynemouth, so neare my late wife Joan Milbancke as possible may be. To my wife that now is, Christobell Milbancke, one half quarter of the 'Jonas' and £20 ; to my eldest sonn, William Milbancke, my howse, my pann and farmehold of Chirton ; to my second sonne, John Milbancke, my howse in Pilgrim strette in Newcastle, in the occupation of Stephen Resley, my lease of a malt-howse which I have of Ralph Rawe, the lease of two chambers that I have of Edward Hall that standeth by the Key-side, and the eighth part of the underwood of Chopwell, which is myne own, and £20 ; to my third sonne, Robert Milbancke, my land att Leades, accordinge to his mother's will, and one howse in the Viccar Layne, and one close in the Hoanes (?), both in the occupation of my brother-in-law, James Dickson, one half quarter of the barke 'Sallamon,' and £10 ; to my fourth sonne, Edmond Milbancke, my land in Willington, and a close in Merchut, called Askue, and 20 marks, half a dussen silver sponnes, my lesser silver peace, and my greate Bible ; to my fift and youngest sonne, Richard Milbancke, his owne salt-pan which he holdeth of the quene by copie, the third parte of my keale that I holde partnarshipp with Mr. Henrie Anderson, one quarter of the barke 'Sallamon,' and one quarter of the 'Elsabeth,' and £20, and my sonne William Milbancke to have the tuition of him, and putt him to schoole, etc., till he shall come to lawfull yeares of aigue [*sic*]. Bryan Walker of Willington to be tutor of my son Edmond. My sonne Richard, so soone as he can writte, rede, ciphre, and caste accompte, to be putt to an occupation or some good science. To John Milbancke, my best silver pece ; to Edmond Milbancke and Richard Milbancke, one quarter of the 'Sallamon' to be sould to William Milbancke. The twelve yeares which I have of Robert Midforth in a cole-pitt in Kenton moore, which began the 20th of March last past, and a lease for eight yeares of one quarter of a cole-pitt in Kenton pasture, to be sould and divided among my children, and 20 marks to my daughter Elinor ; to my brother, Bryan Milbancke, 30 shillings ; to my brothers, Richard Milbancke and Nicholas Milbancke, 20 shillings ; to my brother, Lancelot Milbancke, 10 shillings ; to my sonne, Edmond Milbancke, 10 shillings. My sons, William Milbancke and John Milbancke, executors.

Inventory, December 1st. Goods, sheep, horses, etc., £93 2s. 6d. Goods at North Shields ; one salt pan, £26 ; half and half a quarter of a fisher named the 'Salamon,' £75 ;¹ half of another fisher, named the 'Elizabeth,' £36 ; 3,000 of salt fish, praised five score, 40s. ; 20 tenns of coals, £35 ; the third part of a keel of ten chalders, £8 ; two silver pieces and six silver spoons, £5 10s. Sum, £301.

He owes, for beer, £29 10s. 9d. ; for salt fish drying, 3s. 8d. ; two years' arrerages, 15s. 2d. ; for winning the corn in harvest, £5 ; grassing of seven beasts, 46s.

July 3rd, 1603. Will of William Mealbanks of Tinemouth Sheeles, yeoman, to be buried in my parishe churche of Sancte Oswin in Tinemouth, or in the yarde of the Spittle nere Tinemouth. To Grace Mealbanks my wyef and Marke Mealbanks my sonne, for his noneadge, my tenement, etc., in East Chirton ; to my sonne Mark Mealbanks my howse in Tinemouth Sheeles wherin I nowe dwell, and the saltpanne with the howse and scyte of the same, builded in and upon the kaye of my said dwelling howse, with all other sumps, staythes, etc. ; my wife to bring up my said sonne ; to my brother John Mealbanks all my parte and portion of my lands in Leads in Yorkshier, and the custody of my brother Richard Mealbanks, with his portion amounting to £80, and one quarter of the good shipp called the 'Elizabeth' of the Sheeles, given and left unto him by my father's last will, and in my custody till he be 21 ; to my mother Christobell Mealbanks, my fatt kowe in Brearden and 20th share fishe, and she to pay for the grasse of the said kowe ; to Margaret Bell a fatt kowe in Flatworth ; to my wyef and my sonne Mark Mealbanks my 8th part or $\frac{1}{2}$ quarter of the good shipp 'Elizabeth' with ankers, cables, tacklinge, boats, etc. ; to my brother Edmond Mealbanks £5 ; to my brother Richard Mealbanks my wissell with £4 ; to my syster Elyonor 50 share fyshe ; to Robert Peresone one angell in gold ; to Christopher Pereson one branded ridged qwhyte which goyth in Est Chirton : remainder to my wyef and son Mark, and they my executors. My brothers John and Edmond Mealbanks supervisors. Witnesses, Marke Norton, John and Edmund Milbancks.

¹ About the year 1595 Richard Holdsworth, vicar of Newcastle, brought a suit in the spiritual court against Ralph Cock and Edmund Milbanke for tithe of ling or salt fish caught 'in quodam loco vocato Shotland alisque partibus longe ab hoc regno Angliae distantibus versus septentrionem' in the 'Salamon' of Newcastle. Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

Inventory praised November 10th, 1603, by Raphe Delavale, Marke Norton, gents., Nicholas Atkinson, master and maryner, and Robert Mylls, yeoman. Goods at East Chirton, £59 17s. 2d.; at Preston, £3 16s. 5d.; at Tinemouth Sheeles, a half quarter of the 'Elizabeth,' £10; 800 costingdale with 900 share fyshe, at £3 the 100, £40; 4 drynking towells, 4s.; 2 drynking clothes, 2s.; 100 old salt fishe, 33s. 4d.; one chalder boate, 40s.; one salte panne, £20; salt remayning in the gardens, 40s.; th'apparrell of the deade, 10s.; 2 old almeryes with one buttery of fyerdale, 16s.; one broken silver peice with 4 spoones, 26s.; one whistell of silver, 3s. 4d.; one muskett with a callyver and furnytüre, 6s. 8d.; for beare for the first viadge, £5 10s.; in beare for the second viadge, £4 16s.; for cleashing his howses, £5; for coales for the howse and salt panne, £6 15s.; East Chirton rents, 25s. Summa, £202 16s. 7d.¹

The Milbanke farm in East Chirton formed part of the Balkwell estate sold in 1805 by Sir Ralph Milbanke, the sixth baronet.

In the north of the township, near the edge of Shire Moor, stands Billy mill, to which allusion is made as Billing's mill in the grant made by Henry Faukes to Tynemouth priory in 1320. It stood upon demesne land belonging to the prior and convent, was granted, as part of Tynemouth demesne, on December 8th, 1631, to William Collins and Edward Fenn, and was subsequently conveyed to Algernon, tenth earl of Northumberland.² In the years 1597-1599 Billy mill was being rebuilt, as appears from the following extracts from contemporary accounts.³

	£	s.	d.
August 20th, 1597. Payed for the charge of Robert Singleton, miller, and Robert Helme, for going with the mill-wrights thre dayes in Hedley and Proddowe woods to choose xx tymber trees for Billy mill	0	8	0
Payed for the charges of Robert Helme and Rowlande Younger with ther horses vj dayes at severall tymes in going to presse the horssing and conveying the tymber from Hedley wood to the river syde	0	13	0
Payed for drincke bestowed on the tennants in Hedley and other places for helping to horse the stob ⁴ on the carridge	0	3	4
Payed to Robert Hallsey, bayliff, for his travaile in gatheringe and pressinge the tennants together for horsing and conveying the same tymber at several mettings, the tennants being verie unwilling therunto	0	10	0
For a paire of mill stones for Billye myll and the carridge therof from Barnacastle to the Sheles by land and water	6	15	8
June, 1599. Payed to John Soulbye of Bleadon, Mr. Tempesse's man, for freight of xx trees for Billy millne and vij pece of tymber for Mardon myllne from Stella to the Sheeles ...	3	14	4
Payed for thre fir masts xvij yeards long apece, for to make a fearne ⁵ to hoyste the millne stobb anender and the rest of the tymber theron	1	0	0
Bestowed in drincke on the tennants of Tynemouthshier for helpinge to horse the tymber on carriage at Sheeles to be conveyed to Billy myllne	0	3	0
For vj fyr buntyns ⁶ to be sawen in barrs for the wynde mill wards, at ijs. a pece	0	12	0

¹ Raine, *Test. Ebor.*

² Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. pp. 217, 244.

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁴ Stob = the central post upon which the superstructure revolves.

⁵ Fearn or fern = a windlass.

⁶ Buntyn or bunting = a great squared beam; see Wright, *English Dialect Dictionary*, vol. i. p. 448.

	£	s.	d.
Payed to towe laborers fower dayes apece in rydding the grounde fytt for laying the cross-trees wherin to sett the mill stobb	0	8	0
September 12th. Payed for drinck bestowed on the tennants and mill-wreights at the hoysting the mill stobb and all th'other tymber theron	0	3	0
Payed Richard Rea, William Browne, and John Athyr of Newcastle, myll-wreights, for building Bylly millne and felling and squaringe the tymber, and finishing all the same myll's tymber-worke, ready and fytt to grynde corne	23	0	0

Ralph Gardner of Chirton seriously endangered the mill in 1658 by quarrying away the ground round it. A letter of the time states: 'Mr. Gardner hath broken a quarrie on ye west side of Billy milne close by ye milne, so that ye milne shall now have noe constant winde, but every great winde shall be in danger not only to tear all her sayles, but also to blow her of ye stob into some of ye quarries.'¹ A survey of 1722, however, shows the mill still standing on its stob.² It was burnt down shortly afterwards, but about 1760 was rebuilt of stone.³ Since that time it has fallen again into ruins, for the milling industry, so far as it depends on wind for its motive power, has become extinct.



BILLY MILL.

MIDDLE CHIRTON OR BALKWELL.

In the year 1292 the prior and convent of Tynemouth were in receipt of £1 8s. 4d. and fifty-two quarters of barley-malt yearly from Middle Chirton, the money value of the malt-rent being £6 10s.⁴ The tallage roll of 1294 gives the names of fourteen tenants, of whom one, Roger Grey, was exempt from tallage.

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.² *Ibid.*³ *Ibid.*⁴ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 55.

MIDDLE CHIRTON TALLAGE ROLL, 1294.

	s.	d.		s.	d.
De Ranulpho de Middel Chyrton	... 13	4	De Roberto filio Margaretæ	... 12	0
De Roberto filio Ranulphi	... 11	0	De Galfrido filio Willelmi	... 6	0
De Henrico [filio] Wyot	... nichil quia pauper		De Milot Belle	... 12	0
De Ranulpho filio Willelmi	... 8	0	De Willelmo Drymoth	... 1	0
De Gilberto filio Miloth	... 10	0	De Gilberto Ayr	... 2	0
De Rogero filio Willelmi	... 8	0	De Willelmo Hardewey	... nichil quia pauper	
De Symone filio Radulphi	... 5	0	De Rogero Grey pro terra Rogeri clerici		—
Summa, £4 12s. 4d. [sic]. ¹					

The bondage lands of Middle Chirton were measured in 1295, and found to contain four hundred acres. They were cultivated by eleven bonds, each holding thirty-six acres, and this left four acres' surplusage, for which rent was paid.² The names of the bonds are those of the ten first given in the tallage roll, with the addition of Ralph, son of Christiana, while Ranulph of Middle Chirton has been succeeded by his son Ralph. They had the same services and customs as the bonds of Preston, though each bond paid an additional 'kenning'³ of 'stac-malt,' and one 'kenning' of 'stac-ates' of ancient measure. The township also paid yearly five shillings for 'billing-male,' a payment probably made in composition for services to Billy mill.

There were besides four free holdings, including 108 acres, held by a tenure analogous to that of East Chirton, the distinctive features being the yearly payment of five shillings from each holding as 'rad-mal.' The services are briefly as follow :

(1) Roger, son of Ralph de Wylam, holds one messuage and thirty-four acres. He pays 5s. rent and 6½d. as cornage. He does boon-ere and boon-harrow and two days' work in autumn. He attends the great 'auth-rep' with his whole household, except the housewife, but does not provide 'kakes.' He gives merchet. (2) John Ayr and Thomas Faccale hold thirty-six acres. They pay 8s. rent and 5s. 'rad-mal.' They do boon-ere, boon-harrow, in-lade, Neusom-lade, and nine 'auth-reps.' (3) William Drymouth holds twenty acres. He pays 2s. rent and 5s. 'rad-mal.' He does boon-ere, boon-harrow, and two days' work in autumn with two men. He shall be reeve at the great boon-work and shall have one monk's loaf and one gruel loaf for himself and one mess-mate. (4) Roger Gray holds eighteen acres and pays 5s. for 'rad-mal.' He performs the same services as Drymouth does, but works for three days in autumn. He pays 6d. for land reclaimed (*frissura*) in the common moor.⁴

The names of all the bonds except Henry, son of Wyot, and Symon, son of Ralph, reappear upon the subsidy roll of 1296. Roger Grey is entered under Whitley township.

¹ *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 109 b.

² *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 7 b.

³ The term 'kenning' is used in northern dialects for a dry measure containing half a bushel.

⁴ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 38-39.

MIDDLE CHIRTON SUBSIDY ROLL, 1296.

			£	s.	d.		s.	d.
Summa bonorum	Milonis Bell	...	1	13	6	unde regi	3	0½
"	Galfridi filii Willelmi	...	1	14	10	"	3	2
"	Roberti filii Marjorie	...	1	10	10	"	2	9½
"	Radulphi filii Christiane	...	1	12	10	"	3	0
"	Rogeri filii Willelmi	...	2	5	4	"	4	1½
"	Gilberti filii Milonis	...	2	2	0	"	3	9½
"	Radulphi filii Willelmi	...	1	12	0	"	2	11
"	Roberti filii Ranulphi	...	2	2	4	"	3	10½
"	Ranulphi	...	1	17	10	"	3	5½
Summa hujus ville, £16 11s. 6d. ; unde domino regi, £1 10s. 1¾d. ¹								

Faccale's land was afterwards acquired by Sir Adam de Benton.² The prior and convent had licence to acquire a toft and six acres and one rood of land in Middle Chirton from Simon del Vikers in 1360, as well as land of unspecified amount in 1345 and 1380.³ In 1377 the rents from free men there had diminished to 5s. 5¼d. per annum, and tenements and land lately acquired by the monastery were being leased at a yearly rent of £2 5s. 5½d. The bondage system had ceased to exist. Five bondage holdings were without tenants, and were farmed out in return for a payment of barley-malt. John de Wylam, probably a descendant of Roger de Wylam, who was a free tenant in 1295, had lately taken a lease of the remaining bondage holdings, for which he paid £1 12s. 9¾d. yearly.⁴

At the dissolution there were three customary tenants, each having one tenement, forty acres of arable, two acres of meadow, twelve acres of pasture, pasture for six oxen in the ox pasture, and for six cattle, forty sheep and two horses in the common pasture. Two-thirds of the township appears to have been common pasture or waste. Each tenant paid £2 4s. 5d. as rent for his holding, 1s. for the farm of the hay tithe, and 4d. for pannage of swine. The whole township paid 2s. for the farm of a cottage.⁵ The money-rent was exceptionally high, but on the other hand no hall-corn was paid. A possible explanation for this fact is to be found in the statement that the Ridges, a farm in Flatworth, south of Middle Chirton, 'was understood to have been a large enclosure in which the tenants in Flatworth and West Chirton held parcels by rig and rein, or in ridges of ground, and that the owner of Middle Chirton gave up the ridges or parcels of ground belonging to him in lieu of the lord's claim for hall or half-corn.'

¹ *Lay Subsidy Roll*, 1½s.² *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 67.³ See above, pp. 115, 116.⁴ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 52 b and 60.⁵ Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 221.⁶ *Bell Collection*, No. 436 a.

There were other ways in which Middle Chirton stood distinct from the neighbouring townships. It was not comprised in the various leases made to the persons who farmed the lordship of Tynemouthshire. Its tenants refused allegiance to the manorial court. They were said to hold not by custom of husbandry,¹ though in 1609 they joined in obtaining a recognition of their right to be considered copyholders of inheritance. Their fines, however, were those paid by the townships of the out-shire, amongst which Middle Chirton appears to have been classed, all the other copyhold townships in Tynemouth parish being reckoned members of the in-shire.² Notwithstanding, Middle Chirton was included in the grant of Tynemouthshire made to William Scriven and William Eden in 1633, and thus became definitely a part of the manor of Tynemouth.

Before the year 1604 all the three tenements had come into one man's hands.³ They became the property of the Reeds of East Chirton. Ralph Reed, the second of that name, mortgaged his farms and certain collieries about the year 1641 to his neighbour, George Milbourne, as security for debts amounting to more than £1,300. Milbourne assigned his mortgage to Reed's father-in-law, John Salkeld of Rock. In 1646 Ralph Reed died in prison, where he had been confined for espousing the royalist cause. His widow married Ralph Gardner, the young and enterprising son of Devereux Gardner, writing-master of the grammar school of Newcastle.⁴ Gardner quietly enjoyed the estate in right of his wife until the year 1650, when it was sequestered on the ground of its former owner's delinquency. In spite of his and John Salkeld's protests, the Chirton lands were included in the third Act for Sale of 1652. The sale was stayed upon application made by Ralph Reed, son and heir of Ralph Reed the elder, and on March 2nd, 1653, the county committee requested that the estate should be withdrawn from sale and no further proceedings allowed against it.⁵

The property at this time stood on the court rolls in the name of John Salkeld. He surrendered it, on October 11th, 1652, to his second

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS. ; early seventeenth century survey of Tynemouthshire.

² See above, page 239.

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁴ Ralph Gardner was baptised at St. John's, Newcastle, August 29th, 1625. He was entered at Barnard's Inn, and subsequently, on January 29th, 1654/5, at Gray's Inn. He married Catherine, widow of Ralph Reed, at Earsdon, September 9th, 1648, and had issue by her. In 1659 he removed from Chirton to London. The time and place of his death are uncertain. A biography of him is to be found in Welford, *Men of Mark*. See also above, pp. 301-304.

⁵ Welford, *Royalist Compositions*, Surt. Soc. No. 111, pp. 316-317.

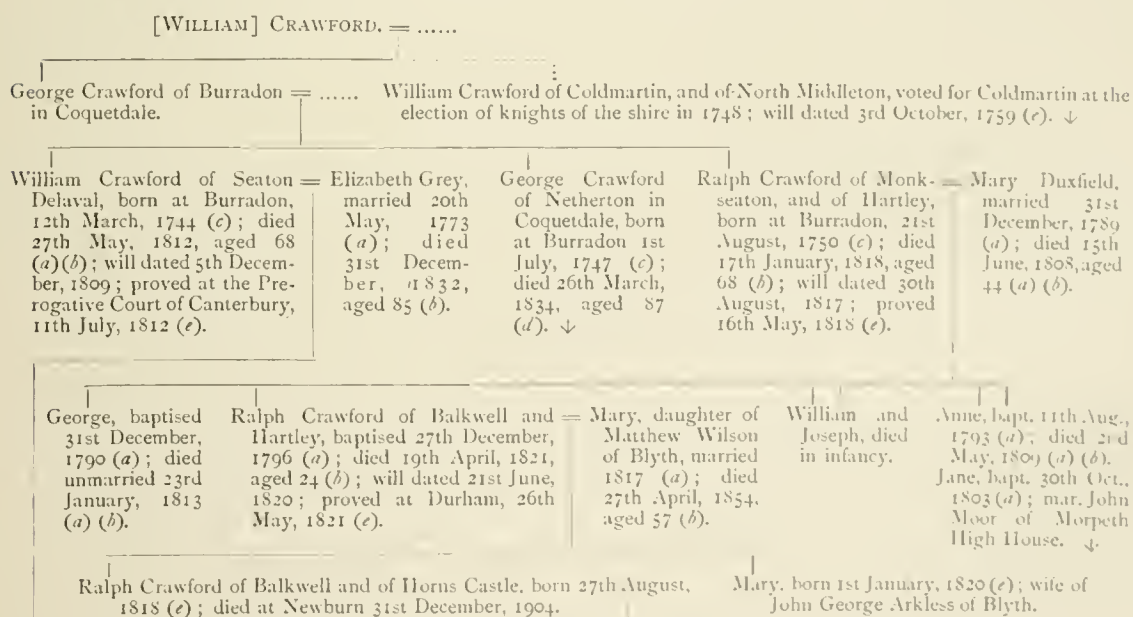
son, William Salkeld.¹ William Salkeld, who received knighthood at the Restoration, married Frances, daughter of Sir Francis Fernham of Kent, and widow of Sir Robert Wildgose of Sussex. He had issue by her one daughter and heir, 'married to a notorious counterfeiter of hands and very poor.'² Sir William Salkeld, or his representatives, sold Middle Chirton to Mark Milbanke, mayor of Newcastle, and it continued to be owned by the Milbanke family until 1805, when the Balkwell estate, consisting of lands in East and Middle Chirton and Shire Moor, and comprising 544 acres, was sold in four lots. The purchasers were Ralph Crawford of Hartley (Balkwell farm), John Watson of Willington Quay (West Chirton farm), Thomas Wright of Whitley Park and Stephen Wright of Dockwray Square (Chirton Hill farm), and Richard Cowell of Long Benton (North Balkwell farm). The present respective owners are the devisees of John Crawford of Cambois, the representatives of John Hedley of Newcastle, the representatives of Thomas Bell Barker of Westoe, and the duke of Northumberland.³

¹ *Tynemouth Court Rolls*. See vol. ii. of this work, pp. 140-141, for a pedigree of Salkeld of Rock.

² Le Neve, *Knights*, Harl. Soc. No. 8, p. 72.

³ Documents in the custody of Mr. W. H. Ryott.

CRAWFORD OF SEATON DELAVAL, HARTLEY, AND OF BALKWELL.



A

George Crawford of Briardon, baptised 23rd October, 1774 (a); died unmarried 29th September, 1838, aged 64 (b); will dated July, 1836 (c).	Ralph Crawford = Frances Nixon, of Seaton Delaval, bapt. 22nd February, 1784 (a); died 22nd June, 1869, aged 85 (b); will dated 13th November, 1867; proved 1869.	Frances Nixon, died 10th July, 1855, aged 59 (b).
Thomas Crawford of Briardon, baptised 2nd February, 1777 (a); died unmarried, 22nd January, 1832, aged 55 (b); administration of his personal estate granted out of the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 27th February, 1832, and at Durham, 20th February of same year (c).		
William Crawford of Whitley Lodge, baptised 1st August, 1779 (a); married Dorothy by whom he had no issue; died 2nd November, 1848, aged 69 (b); will dated 26th October, 1848; proved at Durham, 15th February, 1849, and at the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 24th February of same year (c).		

John Crawford of Balkwell and of Seaton Delaval, born 20th December, 1790; baptised 27th February, 1791 (a); died 16th February, 1847 (b); will dated 24th December, 1846 (c).	= Anne, daughter of William Robson of Hartley, married 28th September, 1817 (c); died 8th October, 1844, aged 49 (b).	Jane, baptised 27th January, 1782 (a); married John Grey of Hartley, and died 8th December, 1863, aged 81 (b).
		Elizabeth, baptised 13th April, 1788 (a); died 30th August, 1806 (a) (b).

William Robson Crawford of Balkwell, and of Cambois, born 5th April, 1825 (c); died unmarried, 9th September, 1859 (b); will dated 27th July, 1859; proved at Newcastle, 29th September, 1859 (c).	Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Freeman of Benton. ↓
John, born 1827, died 1828.	Mary, wife of Aaron Adshead of Bedlington. ↓
John Crawford of Balkwell, and of Cambois, born 28th June, 1830; died unmarried, 8th December, 1863 (b); will dated 18th January, 1862; proved at Newcastle, 4th June, 1864 (c).	Anne, wife of Patrick Freeman of Cambois. ↓
	Jane, wife of Richard Hodgson of Cowpen. ↓
	Dorothy, wife of J. Reinhard.

William Crawford of Seaton Delaval, died unmarried, 15th April, 1869, aged 46 (b); will dated 24th March, 1869; proved same year.	George Crawford of Gloster Lodge, born 1st May, 1830 (a); died 6th September, 1867, aged 37 (b); will proved 25th October, 1867.	= Anne Lambert, married 14th Nov., 1860; died 22nd July, 1897, aged 72 (b).	Thomas, died 24th September, 1855, aged 20 (b).	Elizabeth Anne, died 26th Sept., 1843, aged 21 (b).
Ralph, died 3rd September, 1843, aged 18 (b).				Anne Elizabeth, married David Thomas Jones, clerk in orders, and chaplain at Blyth; died 3p. 19th Feb., 1886, aged 58 (b).
				Frances, died 24th September, 1859, aged 27 (b).

Ralph Crawford of Morpeth, born 26th December, 1861 (a).	Frances Anne, born 1863; died 1879.	Anne.	Mary Isabella, born 1866; died 1867.
--	-------------------------------------	-------	--------------------------------------

(a) *Earsdon Registers.*(b) *Monumental Inscriptions, Earsdon.*(c) *Alwinton Registers.*(d) *Monumental Inscription, Alwinton.*(e) *Family papers in the possession of Mr. J. C. Hodgson.*

WEST CHIRTON AND FLATWORTH.

Though the hamlet of West Chirton has disappeared without leaving a trace of its position, the site of Flatworth, or, as it was anciently termed, Flatford, is still marked by Flatworth mill. The mill stands on the right bank of the Red burn, at the mouth of Coble dene, past which the Tyne once ran in shallows over the Dortwick sands. Flatworth and West Chirton together formed part of the Wirecester barony of Hadston, created by Henry I.,¹ and continued to be held of the Crown by military service

¹ *Testa de Nevill* in *Arch. Acl.* 2nd series, vol. xxv. pp. 163, 166. For a fuller account of the Hadston barony, see vol. iv. of this work, p. 272, and vol. v. pp. 406-412.

In the year 1166 Ralph de Wirecester informed his sovereign that Jordan Heron held lands of him by new feoffment in return for the service of a quarter of a knight's fee.² The lands in question may be identified with West Chirton. Jordan Heron appears, from his presence as a witness to many palatinate charters, to have been a chief tenant of the bishop of Durham. He also held lands in 1166 from Gilbert Hansard, who in his turn held of the bishop of Durham a knight's fee in Yorkshire.³ Though connected with Dolphin, son of Uctred, progenitor of the Nevilles of Raby, Hansard was not, as he has been represented, a member of that family, and the relationship was probably that shown below.⁴

Gilbert Hansard (I.) held lands in Alverstonshire in 1166 (*Liber Niger*). = = Meldred fitz Dolphin (*Feodarium*, p. 140).

Gilbert Hansard (II.), son of Gilbert Hansard, 'frater Roberti filii Meldredi' (*Feodarium*, p. 114); paid relief in 1196 (*Pipe Rolls*). Robert fitz Meldred (*Feodarium*, p. 53); paid relief in 1196 (*Pipe Rolls*). Gilbert fitz Meldred (*Feodarium*, p. 53). Other issue.

John Hansard, married Matilda, niece of Robert de Mowbray (*Excerpta e Rot. Fin.* vol. i. p. 251); died in Gascony in 1254 (*Mat. Paris, Chronica Majora*, vol. v. p. 427). Geoffrey de Neville, a quo Neville of Raby.

¹ Compare Mr. Horace Round on 'The Ancestry of the Nevilles' in *Feudal England*, pp. 488-490. Surtees' assumption (*Durham*, vol. iv. p. 157) that Gilbert Hansard was son of Meldred fitz Dolphin is inadmissible. He was more probably brother of the half-blood to Robert fitz Meldred, and, though they were charged for relief in the same year, that is probably due to the fact that the king's officers made use of their opportunity, during the vacancy of the see of Durham on Pudsey's death, to collect all outstanding fines and debts. *Pipe Rolls*, ed. Hodgson, p. 56.

Ralph de Wirecester died between the years 1172 and 1184.¹ Jordan Heron married the heiress to the barony, and became guardian of his wife's lands. He conferred West Chirton upon his former lord, Gilbert Hansard, whose son and heir, Gilbert Hansard (II.), became his ward. Dying about the year 1191, he was succeeded by his eldest son, Ralph Heron,² on whose death, in or about 1196, Jordan Heron (II.), younger son of Jordan Heron (I.), came into the inheritance.³ Jordan Heron (II.) was sued in 1202 by Gilbert Hansard (II.) for refusing to receive his homage for the vill of Chirton. His defence was that Chirton was his mother's and not his father's inheritance, and that Jordan Heron (I.) had no authority to enfeoff Hansard with his wife's estates.⁴ It was agreed that Heron should receive the proffered homage, saving his right. In 1221 the same parties came to an agreement with regard to three carucates of land in Chirton.⁵

Tynemouth monastery appears to have obtained an interest in these lands before 1225, when its prior sued John Hansard on a plea of warranty of charter.⁶ In 1256 the prior and convent acquired the manor of West Chirton in free alms from William Heron, sheriff of Northumberland, son and heir of Jordan Heron (II.). An entry in the *St. Alban's Register* shows that four marks were paid to William Heron and five pounds to Sir Gilbert Hansard (III.) in consideration of the transfer.⁷ Prior Dunham on his part received William Heron and his heirs into all the benefits and prayers which from thenceforth should be made in his church for ever.⁸ The engagement was perhaps onerous, for Matthew Paris observes upon Heron's death, which occurred two years later, 'He ground down the poor and oppressed the monks. His thirst for riches was immense, and now he has gone to thirst in hell.'⁹

Having obtained possession of West Chirton, the prior and convent proceeded to evict several of the original tenants. Between the years 1280 and 1293, various suits were brought against the priory for recovery

¹ *Pipe Rolls*, pp. 20, .

² *Ibid.*, p. 51.

³ *Ibid.* p. 57. For a proof of the descent, see *Feodarium*, Surt. Soc. No. 58, pp. 124, 168.

⁴ *Jurdanus dicit quod non debet capere homagium ejus de terra illa, quia fuit hereditas matris sue et non patris sui; et si pater ejus illam dedit patri ejusdem Gilberti, injuste illam dedit, quia non debuit nec potuit, desicut non fuit nisi custos hereditatis matris sue. Abbreviatio Placitorum*, Record Com. p. 39; Hodgson, *Northumberland*, part iii. vol. ii. p. 338.

⁵ *Curia Regis Rolls*, 4 Hen. III. Mich. and 5 Hen. III. Hilary and Easter.

⁶ *Ibid.* No. 88.

⁷ See above, p. 76, note 1.

⁸ *Three Northumbrian Assize Rolls*, Surt. Soc. No. 88, p. 410.

⁹ *Chronica Majora*, Rolls Series, vol. v. p. 663.

of lands in West Chirton. Henry Clere claimed twenty-four acres; Ralph, son of William, claimed sixteen; and William Cokeman twenty-five. Henry, son of Adam, brought a suit for a toft and forty-eight acres in Flatworth. So did Roger, son of Ralph de Wylam, claiming to inherit from his grandmother, Alice, daughter of Questric de Flatford. In 1293 Hugh Burdon attempted to recover the manor of West Chirton. He asserted that his great-grandfather, Roger, had been seised of the manor in the time of Richard I., but, like the others, failed to prove his case.¹

In 1292 the prior and convent was in receipt of £10 yearly rent from West Chirton. Their manor of Flatworth had a carucate of arable land attached to it as demesne, which gave no return. They made, however, an annual profit of thirteen shillings from the hundred and four sheep kept on the pasture.² A survey taken in 1295 sets out the demesne as follows:

	a.	r.	p.				a.	r.	p.
In Wet-acres	16	2	0	In Clovengare	10	0	20		
In the same	10	1	0	In Middel-flat	5	1	0		
In Slure-leyes	3	2	30	In the same	4	1	20		
In the same	6	0	0	In Bone-flat	9	0	20		
In the same, lying fallow	16	0	0	In Tepe	11	3	0		
In Huyos-hupp	4	3	20	On the east of the grange	1	2	0		
In 'le side' on the east of the hall	16	1	0	In the Reie-flat	19	0	0		
In Holletche-flat	4	3	20	In the Shel-feld	25	0	0		
In the same, lying fallow	2	2	30						

There were 387 acres in West Chirton, an acreage roughly corresponding to the three carucates mentioned in 1221. This land was cultivated by fifteen bonds, each holding twenty-five acres. Six of the additional twelve acres were farmed out to five of the bonds, and six to the remaining ten bonds.³

Fourteen tenants paid tallage in 1294.⁴

WEST CHIRTON TALLAGE ROLL, 1294.

	s.	d.			s.	d.
.....	13	4	De Alano filio Roberti	13	4	
.....	3	0	De Gilberto filio Galfridi Belle	1	6	
.....	6	0	De Henrico filio Radulphi	5	0	
.....	6	0	De Henrico Sparu	5	0	
De Willelmo filio Nicholai	3	4	De Roberto filio Margarete	13	4	
De Gilberto filio Serlonis	3	4	De Roberto Caldewell	1	0	
De Willelmo Pointel	10	0	De Roberto Messoro	13	4	

Summa, £4 2s. 2d. [*sic*].

¹ The various suits are set out in the *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 192-193, 203, 204, 205.

² *Ibid.* fols. 54 b, 55.

³ *Ibid.* fols. 4 b and 7 b.

⁴ *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 109.

The names of the four tenants first upon the list are supplied by the custumal of the township. They were Derlyng, Henry Drury, Richard, son of Matilda, and Henry, son of Robert. A very similar list is given in the subsidy roll of 1296.

WEST CHIRTON SUBSIDY ROLL, 1296.

		£	s.	d.		s.	d.
Summa bonorum	Gilberti filii Serlonis ...	1	3	10	unde regi	2	2
"	Walteri Pyntel ...	1	18	0	"	3	5 $\frac{1}{2}$
"	Alani filii Roberti ...	0	13	7	"	1	2 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Henrici filii Radulphi ...	1	3	3	"	2	1 $\frac{1}{2}$
"	Henrici filii Edmundi ...	0	15	4	"	1	4 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Roberti filii Margarete ...	1	16	0	"	3	3 $\frac{1}{4}$
"	Roberti de Caldewell ...	0	14	6 $\frac{1}{2}$	"	1	3 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Henrici filii Gilberti ...	0	19	7	"	1	9 $\frac{1}{2}$
"	Ricardi filii Matildis ...	1	6	2	"	2	4 $\frac{1}{2}$
"	Willelmi filii Roberti ...	1	5	4	"	2	3 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Willelmi filii Nicholai ...	0	13	4	"	1	2 $\frac{1}{2}$
"	Roberti filii Johannis ...	1	16	6	"	3	3 $\frac{3}{4}$
Summa hujus ville, £14 5s. 5 $\frac{1}{2}$ d. ; unde domino regi, £1 5s. 11 $\frac{1}{2}$ d. ¹							

These were the customs and services of the tenants of West Chirton :

Each tenant holds twenty-four acres, and pays yearly one mark to the chamberlain of Tynemouth. He shall do one 'boon-ere' with food, and 'boon-harrow' without food. He shall find one man for the prior's great boon-work in the autumn. If required to cart tithe-corn to his house, he shall have his meal ; that is to say, every two tenants shall have fifteen 'swayn-laves,' and seven and a half jugs of ale, and six herrings. If he does not cart tithe-corn, he shall go to the harvest with the servants of the free men. The reeve shall attend the great boon-work in person, and shall have food. At the carting of the tithe-corn he shall have one monk's loaf and a dish (of meat) and a jug of good ale.

The whole township pays the prior half a mark for fourteen acres in Flatford, 3s. 4d. on St. Barnabas' Day for castle-ward (and the reeve who brings that rent shall have his food), 3s. at Martinmas and Whitsuntide for fine of court, 1s. 3d. at Michaelmas for cornage, one mark every seven years at Easter and at Christmas, and [] for twelve acres increment.²

The bonds of West Chirton occupied a superior position to their neighbours in East and Middle Chirton. They were free from week-work and from payments in kind, and had very light labour-services, their position comparing favourably in this respect with that of customary freeholders elsewhere. Yet the three Chirtons were kindred communities, and so wide a difference between their customs can only be due to the different influences to which they were subjected in the impressionable age of the twelfth and first half of the thirteenth century,

¹ *Lay Subsidy Roll*, 152.

² *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 39 b to 40.

when East and Middle Chirton belonged to the prior and convent of Tynemouth, and West Chirton formed part of the Hadston barony. A neighbouring monastery proved a harder taskmaster than an absentee lay lord.¹

Communal action on the part of the tenants, noticeable in the custumal, is further instanced by a joint lease taken in 1328 of the fishery of Sand-yare in the Tyne.² The survey of 1377 gives the additional information that the payment of a mark made every seven years was for chevage or 'hede-penys.'³ Fifteen marks continued to be paid to the chamberlain, and various small sums, amounting in all to 16s. 10d., went to the prior. 'There is no freehold in the vill,' the surveyor notes, 'but the whole is demesne, leased at the will of the lord.'⁴

A manorial hall, grange and mill formed the nucleus of Flatworth demesne,⁵ to which the fishery of Depe-yare formed an appendage. The

¹ If further proof were needed that the sums paid for castle ward, fine of court, and cornage were chargeable upon West Chirton before William Heron conveyed it to Tynemouth priory, it is to be found in his quit-claim, to which allusion is made in an agreement between Gilbert Heron and Mary, widow of William Heron, dated March 25th, 1299: 'Et etiam eadem perdonat ad acquietandum priorem de Tynemuth et Adam de Benton de iiij. et quadrante pro warda castri, et de fine curiae per annum duobus solidis et septem denariis, et de duobus solidis et uno denario de cornagio, pro tenementis quae idem prior et Adam tenent in Flatsworth, Chirton, et Benton.' *Lansdowne MSS.* vol. 326, fol. 45.

² Memorandum quod frater Ricardus, prior de Tynemuth, dimisit tenentibus suis de West Chirton piscariam in aqua de Tyne vocatam Sand-yare, a festo sancti Martini in yeme, A.D. 1337, usque ad finem trium annorum, etc., reddendo inde per annum dicto priori viginti solidos ad festa annunciacionis beate Marie et sancti Petri ad vincula per equales porciones. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 173.

³ Head-pennies formed the subject of the following petition presented to parliament in 1444: Please it to the full wise and discrete communes of yis present parlement to considre, yat where the kyng's poure communes, and his true liegemen of his countee of Northumberland, longe tyme hath ben oppressed and over-charged by sheryffs of the saide countee for the tyme beyng arrezyng and making levee of theire goodes and catalles, to the somme of lx^{li} and more, called Hede-penys, twyes in vii yere; that is to sey, every thirde yere and every forthe yere, to theire owen propre availle, withoute ony accompt profite or avayll unto oure soveraigne lorde the kyng, and withoute ony lawfull cause or grounde, but of theire grete extortion; ye which causeth divers men for to laboure and spende grete godes to be sheryff when the seid yeres comes, to the more and gretter oppression of the seide poure communes. Wherefore please it to your right wise discretions to considre yat oure saide soverayn lorde hath none avall of the same Hede-penes; and how the seide shire of Northumberland is marchyng to the Scottes, the kyng's enemyes, and with thaim the seid liegemen ben dailly troubled and deseased, wherthugh they are contynuelly enpovered; and yereupon to pray oure saide soveraigne lord the kyng, yat he by y'assent of his lordes spirituall and temporell in this present parlement assembled, and by auctorite of the same parlement, to ordeine and graunte that the said colect of the saide Hede-penes may be utterly put awaye for evermore, notwithstanding ony use or custume into the contrare, under paine of c^{li} to be paide that one half yereof to the kyng, and that other half yereof to the partie that sueth the forfaiture agenst the sherryff. This ordenaunce to beginne at the fest of the Nativite of Saint John Baptiste, that shall be in the yere of our Lord MCCCXLVI. *Rotuli Parliamentarii*, vol. v. pp. 107-108. This petition was embodied in the statute 23 Henry VI. cap. 7, sect. 6.

⁴ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 52 and 59 b.

⁵ The townships of East Chirton, Preston, Whitley, Monkseaton, Backworth, and Elswick were chargeable for the timber of Flatworth mill, and, together with Middle Chirton and Dissington, paid a yearly rent to it (miln-silver). *Ibid.* fol. 67.

fishery was farmed out on short terms of three or six years,¹ but the demesne land, of which no lease is recorded, appears to have been kept in the prior's hand.

At some date between 1377 and 1538 the tenants of West Chirton were evicted, and their lands annexed to Flatworth. The tillage was converted into cattle pasture, and two large closes were formed, namely, Howden close (200 acres), and the pasture lying on the moor (100 acres). Flatworth, in 1538, included the 'Rigg' meadow of sixty acres, and the



COBLE DENE.

Fence close and Marte close, each containing eighty acres of arable. The whole was leased to Sir Thomas Hilton and afterwards attached to the captaincy of Tynemouth castle.² A memorandum, drawn up in 1559, states that Flatworth closes 'may continually well keep two thousand sheep, besides as

¹ Presens indentura testatur quod dominus Ricardus, prior de Tynemuth, concessit et ad firmam dimisit Johanni filio Johannis Scot de Novo Castro super Tynam, Rogero Mathewson, et Roberto Fader de Pipewelgate juxta Gatesheved, totam illam piscariam que vocatur le Depe, juxta Flatford, a festo purificationis beate Marie virginis, A.D. 1328, usque ad terminum sex annorum proxime sequentium plenarie completorum, reddendo inde annuatim dicto domino priori et successoribus suis viginti sex solidos et octo denarios, et duos salmones in quadragesima, etc. Datum apud Tynemuth, die et anno supradictis. Et sciendum quod solvebantur pro ingressu pre manibus quadraginta solidi, preter annuam firmam quadraginta solidorum predictam. *Ibid.* fol. 159 b. Cp. fols. 162 b, 170 b, 173.

² Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 216.

many beeves and muttuns as a baron can conveniently spend in a year on his house, and may very well also keep ten geldings and sixty milch kine.'¹

The salt-pans in the lands and wastes between Dortwick and Coble dene were conveyed by the Crown on October 7th, 1610, to George Salter, and in 1631 a similar grant of the granges and closes of West Chirton and Flatworth, and the coal mines in Flatworth fields, was made to William Collins and Edward Fenn, from whom the property passed to Algernon, tenth earl of Northumberland.² The demesnes have continued in the possession of the Percy family, by whom they were leased for terms of twenty-one years³ until 1756, when they were divided up into nine separate farms. A survey, taken in 1655, shows that Flatworth then contained 466 acres of pasture and 404 acres of meadow and arable land.⁴

The industrial exploitation of this district dates from 1799, when Percy Main colliery was won.⁵ Waggonways, run down to Whitehill Point and Hayhole, opened up a large colliery area.⁶ The modern village of Percy Main was built, and the old names of Flatworth and West Chirton became almost forgotten. The river front was further utilised by the formation of docks. In 1857, the Northumberland docks were opened, having been constructed by the Tyne Commissioners under powers conferred on them by the Tyne Improvement Act of 1852. As far back as 1798, schemes had been brought forward for making a dock at Coble dene.⁷ This project, several times unsuccessfully renewed, was finally sanctioned by the Tyne Improvement Act of 1877, and executed in 1884, the new works being opened by the present king and named the Albert Edward dock.⁸

¹ *Cal. State Papers, Foreign*, 1559-1560, p. 279.

² Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. pp. 241, 243.

Among the lessees of Flatworth desmesnes in the seventeenth century was Sir Nicholas Tempest, who appears to have made Flatworth his residence. He was a member of the family of Tempest of Thornley in the county of Durham, and was sheriff of Newcastle in 1620. Dying in 1656, he was buried in St. Nicholas', Newcastle, on September 16th of that year. His son, Richard Tempest, who was admitted free of the Merchant Company of Newcastle, on July 4th, 1667, died on August 15th, 1671 (Dendy, *Merchant Adventurers*, vol. ii. p. 281), having by a nuncupative will appointed William Carr, son of William Carr, late mayor of Newcastle, his sole legatee (Surtees, *Durham*, vol. ii. p. 275). In 1708 Robert Allgood took a lease of the demesnes, and renewed the same in 1729 (Duke of Northumberland's MSS.). In the *Newcastle Courant*, February 20th, 1714, occurs the advertisement: 'To let, Low Flatworth and brick-kilns and lime-kilns. Apply to Robert Allgood, esq., of Low Flatworth, near Howden Pans.'³

⁴ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁵ See above, pp. 22, 25-26.

⁶ A waggonway had been laid from Shire Moor colliery to Whitehill Point in 1704, and branches connecting it with Percy Main and Backworth collieries were formed respectively in 1799 and 1818. In 1825/6 the Cramlington railway was laid to Hayhole.

⁷ In 1733 Thomas Burdon took a lease of Coble dene for twenty-one years 'with an intent of inclosing it by a wall from the river, in order to have made a ballast key; but, as the corporation of Newcastle claim the sole right as conservators of the river to have the carrying and laying all ballast, he was never able to inclose it.' Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁸ The history of the formation of these docks is detailed by Guthrie, *The River Tyne*, and by Johnson, *The Making of the River Tyne*.

PRESTON TOWNSHIP.

Preston is a township of 646 acres lying between Tynemouth on the east and Chirton on the west. Albion Street forms its southern boundary. On the north-west it ran up into Shire Moor, ninety-four acres being annexed to the township upon the enclosure of the moor in 1788. Rake Lane on the north, and Marden burn on the north-east, divide Preston from Monkseaton township. The population in 1901 totalled 3,337.¹

Preston, which was confirmed by Henry I. to the prior and convent of Tynemouth not later than 1116,² formed a separate manor, though its two carucates of demesne were worked in common with the demesne land in Tynemouth. In 1292 these were computed to be each worth £1 7s. yearly. The convent was also in receipt of a money rent of £1 4s. 3d. and of 37½ quarters of barley-malt, priced at 2s. 6d. the quarter.³ The fragmentary tallage roll for 1294 is as follows :

PRESTON TALLAGE ROLL, 1294.

	s.	d.		£	s.	d.
De Johanne molendinario	11	0	De Rogero filio [Juliane] ... ..	...	
De Gilberto Ayr	5	0	De Roberto Chirton pro terra [sua			
De Roberto Scorht	0	8	in pas]tura de Preston ... ..	...	
De Roberto Silvermoth ... ..	...		De Roberto Bateman pro libera			
De Willelmo Gray cum soc[iis, tenenti-			terra et aliis . . .	...	
bus liber]e terre ... ..	...		De Willelmo Averai	0	7	0
De Matilda de Morton ... ..	...		De Henrico longo	1	0	0
De Willelmo Rikelot ... ..	...		[De] Emma vidua	0	16	0
De Willelmo Chirton, cotario ... ..	...		De Adam Silvermoth pro tercia			
De Serlone de eadem ... ..	...		fyn . . .	...	
Summa, £5 5s. 2d. ⁴						

The bondage land of Preston was measured in 1294, and found to contain 279 acres. It was divided into seven full holdings of thirty-six acres each, and one half holding of eighteen acres, leaving a surplusage of nine acres, for which rent was paid.⁵ Fuller information is given in the custumal. The services of the bonds are identical with those of East and Middle Chirton; they are set out in great detail, and have been

¹ Population statistics are : 1801, 431 ; 1811, 445 ; 1821, 627 ; 1831, 765 ; 1841, 919 ; 1851, 983 ; 1861, 1,456 ; 1871, 1,593 ; 1881, 1,707 ; 1891, 2,178 ; 1901, 3,337.

² See above, page 55 (13).

³ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 54.

⁴ *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 109 b.

⁵ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 7 b.

already quoted at length in the account of Tynemouthshire.¹ The half-holding was worked by Robert Bateman, who also held free land. These eight bonds reappear in the subsidy-roll of 1296.

PRESTON SUBSIDY ROLL, 1296.

			£	s.	d.		s.	d.
Summa bonorum	Roberti Bateman	...	2	3	6	unde regi	3	11½
„	Willelmi filii Averray	...	1	15	0	„	3	2¼
„	Henrici Long	...	2	12	10	„	4	9¾
„	Willelmi Punder	...	2	11	4	„	4	8
„	Johannis molendinarii	...	1	10	2	„	2	9
„	Matildis de Morton	...	1	19	5	„	3	7
„	Willelmi Rikelot	...	1	10	8	„	2	9½
„	Willelmi filii Johannis	...	1	16	0	„	3	3½
Summa hujus ville, £15 18s. 11d. ; unde domino regi, £1 9s. ²								

There were five freeholders, namely, (1) Gilbert Air, holding thirty acres, rent 4s. ; (2) Roger Nades, holding eighteen acres, rent 3s. ; (3) Robert de Chirton (also a freeholder in East Chirton), holding eighteen acres, rent 3s. ; (4) Roger, son of Juliana, holding twenty acres, rent 4s. ; (5) Robert Bateman, holding fifteen acres, rent 5s. 4d. Each held a toft in addition to their land in the fields. Their services may be summarised as follow :

Each freeholder pays a money-rent for his holding, and also half a quarter of barley-malt and half a quarter of oats. He pays 1½d. for milne-silver and 9¼d. for abbot-scot. He does one day's boon-ere and one day's boon-harrow, and has food for his plough but not for his harrow. Every week in the autumn, from the time when they begin to reap until the time when they finish, he works for two days and employs a man to work with him, and he shall have food and 'binding-bund.' If the weather prevents him from performing his work for the space of one week, it is not carried over to the next. He shall cart his 'in-lade' in the field of Tynemouth once in the autumn without receiving food or sheaf, and shall cart one load from Neusum (namely, three thraves of wheat, or four thraves of barley, or five thraves of oats), and shall have food and one sheaf. He gives merchet and leyr-wite for his daughters. He does suit to the prior's 'hall,' does suit to the prior's mill at the thirteenth dish, carts millstones from Slaley, and herds beasts that are taken by way of distraint, for which last service he shall have food.³

Robert Silvermouth, who held a toft and six acres at a shilling rent, and Roger Belle, who held a toft and sixteen acres, rent 1s. 4d., seem to be classed in this custumal as 'selfodes.' Their only services were three days' work in the autumn and three suits yearly to the prior's free court. The list of tenants ends with the names of nine cottagers: William Patadoille, holding five acres, rent 10d. ; Ralph Thirnyrn, holding one acre

¹ See above, page 223.

² *Lay Subsidy Roll*, 132.

³ Robert Bateman renders double the usual quantity of corn-rent, and reaps every week in the autumn for four days instead of two.

and a half, rent 1s. 4d.; Roger Scot and Roger Boyt, holding one acre each, rent 4d. each; Nicholas de la Haye, holding one acre, rent 1½d.; Bolt's daughters, holding two-thirds of an acre, rent 3d.; Robert Short, holding a half-acre, rent 3½d.; Alan de Boldon and Robert, son of William, son of Gilbert, holding a half-acre each, rent 2d. each.¹

In this way the total of 413⅔ acres is reached, held as arable or meadow by tenants of varying status, and, as there were roughly two carucates of demesne in addition, it follows that the whole township was under corn or hay cultivation. There was no need for a common pasture; that could be found upon the neighbouring moor.

In Preston, as in the other townships, the priors of Tynemouth carried out a piecemeal purchase of the freehold land.² The survey of 1377 notes that a twelfth of the land let out at the lord's will was once free. There were still eight bonds, paying a total rent of £1 18s. 1½d., while 17s. 7d. was received from free men and cottagers.³ During the fifteenth century, the quantity of land held in tenant-right remained fairly constant. On the other hand nearly two hundred acres of original demesne and of subsequently acquired freehold were converted into pasture. It appears probable that a delimitation of the township took place, the tenants receiving an allotment of strips in the North and West fields, while the South field was turned into pasture and equal grazing rights over it were assigned by the prior and convent to the customary tenants. The demesne farm was abandoned; the garth of the manor-house at the east end of the village was leased to the tenants, and its origin was so completely forgotten that it came to be a disputed point whether the hall-garth lay in Tynemouth or in Preston township.⁴

By the year 1538 the number of tenants at will had declined from eight to five. Each tenant held forty-five acres of arable, one acre of meadow, and pasture for six oxen in the ox pasture, and for six cattle, twenty sheep and two horses in the common pasture. The rent paid for a husbandry holding was £1 6s. 8d. in money, four quarters of barley and two quarters of oats, 8d. for the tithe of hay, and 4d. for pannage. Two cottages and an acre of land were farmed separately for 21s. rent. Rents of 13s. 4d.

¹ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 36 b to 38.

² See above, pages 115-117.

³ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 52 b and 60.

⁴ See a case heard in the Court of Exchequer in 1591 with regard to this point; *Exchequer Depositions*, Mich. 33-34 Eliz. No. 20.

and four quarters of wheat respectively were paid by the five husbandry tenants in common for the herbage of the pasture called the Hall garth and of thirty-five acres of arable called the Well flat.¹

The common field system lasted in Preston until 1649. In that year the meadow and arable lands within the township were enclosed. They totalled 337 acres 31 perches, and included the North field (183a. 2r.), the West field (137a. 1r.), and the Miller's leazes (16a. 1r. 31p.).² A terrier was compiled,³ and the lands in question were found to contain :

	a.	r.	p.
Rigs belonging to Tynemouth but lying in Preston fields, 10a. or. 4p. ; ditto belonging to Monkseaton, 8a. 3r. 5p. ; part of Robert Otway's Tynemouth farm lying in Preston, 3a. 1r. 23p. ; total
Highways
Robert Spearman's freehold, 10a. 3r. 1p. ; Mr. George Milbourne's freehold, 9a. 3r. 9p. ; Mr. Ralph Grey's freehold, 3a. 2r. 17p. ; Robert Otway's freehold, 15a. or. 16p. ; total
Five farms containing 53 acres each, namely, Michael Spearman, one farm ; Mr. Ralph Grey, one farm ; Robert Otway, three farms ; total
Sum total

Two acres were, so to speak, lost in the division. After making the necessary abatements and allotment of lands to freeholders, the remaining 265 acres were divided into five farms of equal value, for which lots were cast by the copyhold tenants. The normal acreage of a farm was taken at fifty-three acres, but in each case certain additions or deductions were made by reason of their several qualities and conveniences. Thus Robert Otway took the East, Middle and West farms (153a. or. 31p.) ; Michael Spearman received the Marsh farm (56a. 1r. 4p.), and Mr. Ralph Grey took the farm next the Rake (55a. 2r. 5p.). The ox pasture and common pasture probably remained unenclosed for another half-century. All these farms are now the property of the duke of Northumberland. Preston Grange farm, which may be identified with the Marsh farm, was sold in 1808 by Ralph Spearman of Eachwick to John Burrell of Witton Gilbert, in the county of Durham, who resold in 1844 to Richard Fenwick. It was purchased from Mr. Fenwick by the duke of Northumberland in 1852. The Rake House farm was purchased in 1822 upon the sale of the Backworth estate. Preston farm and White House farm represent the land allotted in 1649 to Robert Otway.

¹ Ministers' Accounts of 1538, printed in Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 220. Supplementary details are given in a survey of 1608 ; *Land Revenue Surveys*, miscell. books, vol. 223, fols. 295-298.

² The meadow close, known as the Miller's leazes, now forms part of Billy Mill farm, and is owned by the Collingwood family.

³ Printed in *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xii. pp. 172-190.

OTWAY OF PRESTON.

I. Thomas Otway of Preston, married, November 18th, 1610, Elizabeth Mills; will dated November 17th, 1634: died seised of a tenement in Preston and a tenement in Backworth; buried in Tynemouth parish church, [December] 6th, 1634. He had issue (1) Robert, died in infancy; (2) Robert (II.); (3) Thomas Otway of the Sandgate, Newcastle, ship carpenter, baptised September 14th, 1617; and had two sons, Gilbert and Roger (IV.); (4) John Otway of the Sandgate, Newcastle, master and mariner, baptised March 26th, 1627 [buried at Newcastle, May 21st, 1698], left issue a son, John Otway, who died in the West Indies, April, 1705, and a daughter, Elizabeth Reed, who was living a widow, January 18th, 1706/7; (5) Gilbert Otway of Newcastle, merchant, baptised May 31st, 1631; apprenticed December 1st, 1647, to Samuel Cock of Newcastle, boothman; admitted free of the Merchants' Company, September 1st, 1656; died May 27th, 1681, leaving issue a son, John Otway, who was admitted free of the Merchants' Company by patrimony, March 21st, 1678, and died without issue *circa* 1697; (6-9) four daughters.

II. Robert Otway of Preston, baptised May 14th, 1615; was admitted to his father's lands in Preston and Backworth, April 3rd, 1635; buried in Tynemouth church, March 3rd, 1666/7. He was three times married, but had issue only by his first wife, namely, two sons, Thomas (III.) and Matthew who died without issue, and five daughters.

III. Thomas Otway of Preston, baptised August 23rd, 1644; was admitted to his father's lands in Preston, April 8th, 1667; married March 17th, 1679/80, Susanna, daughter of Edward Toll of North Shields. She married, secondly, John Snowden, and died in 1699. Thomas Otway made his will, May 22nd, 1696, and died without issue, being buried November 29th, 1696. He was succeeded by his cousin.

IV. Roger Otway of Preston, son of Thomas Otway of the Sandgate, married Barbara, widow of John Collingwood; will dated January 18th, 1702/3, proved 1704. He left an only daughter, but had no heirs male.¹

¹ Based on the duke of Northumberland's MSS., *Tynemouth Registers*, wills in the Durham Probate Registry, and Dendy, *Merchant Adventurers*.

SPEARMAN OF PRESTON.

ARMS: *Azure, a chevron ermine between three broken spears erect or, headed argent.* Granted to Ralph Spearman of Eachwick; cf. Surtees, *Durham*, vol. i. p. 94.

Thomas Spearman, a juror at Tynemouth Manor Court, October, 1561 (*b*).

George Spearman, a copyholder in North Shields *circa* 1565 (*b*).

ROBERT SPEARMAN, in 1608, held lands in Preston by copy of court roll = [Alice, daughter of John Brown (*g*), 'lieutenant-governor of Tynemouth castle.']
dated October, 1601, and a freehold in Tynemouth (*i*).

Margaret, widow of Mills of Monkseaton, and daughter of John Fenwick of Morpeth (<i>g</i>); buried 19th June, 1649 (<i>a</i>)	=	Michael Spearman of Preston, to whom Robert Potts, <i>circa</i> 1622, surrendered lands there (<i>b</i>); rated for the same in 1663; buried 13th December, 1679 (<i>a</i>); administration of his personal estate, 1st May, 1691, committed to Anne, his third wife and his widow (<i>f</i>).	=	Alice [daughter of Thomas Horner of the Glass-houses, Newcastle, and widow of] Morton, married 14th December, 1649 (<i>a</i>); had lands in Tynemouth by grant from her father, 6th January, 1662; buried in Tynemouth church, 18th March, 1665/6 (<i>a</i>).
--	---	---	---	--

Thomas Spearman of Preston (<i>a</i>), admitted to lands in East Chirton, <i>circa</i> 1622, on surrender of Bertram Mitford (<i>b</i>); died before April, 1649 (<i>b</i>); [buried 15th December, 1631 (<i>a</i>)].	=	Margaret, daughter of John Atkinson of Cleadon (<i>g</i>), married 16th November, 1620 (<i>a</i>).	|	[Agnes, married Thomas Otway of Preston (<i>g</i>).] [Jane, baptised 12th December, 1600; married Middleton of North Shields (<i>g</i>).] [Isabel, baptised 2nd December, 1607; married John Butler of Chirton (<i>g</i>).]
---	---	--	--	---

Robert Spearman, son and heir, baptised 7th October, 1621 (<i>a</i>); admitted to his father's lands in East Chirton and Preston, April, 1649 (<i>b</i>).	↓	Other issue.
---	---	--------------

From whom Spearman of Thornley, co. Durham.

Edward Spearman of Preston, baptised 6th April, 1629 (a); admitted to his father's lands, 4th April, 1680 (b); buried 26th December, 1690 (a); administration of his personal estate, 28th February, 1691/2, committed to Anne, his widow (f).	Anne, daughter of James Perkins, married 4th May, 1663 (a) (b); buried 25th July, 1695 (a).	Robert, baptised 13th Nov., 1636 (a). Ralph, baptised 12th August, 1638 (a). Michael, baptised 3rd Nov., 1642 (a). John, baptised 16th May, 1644 (a). John Spearman of Newcastle, attorney, baptised 28th January, 1646/7 (a); died 1686 s.d. (g).	Elizabeth, baptised 21st August, 1631 (a); married John Hall (g). Grace, baptised 20th April, 1634 (a); married Ralph Billington of Birtley, co. Durham (g).
Michael, baptised 22nd December, 1663 (a). Robert, baptised 29th January, 1666/7 (a); buried 16th March, 1674/5 (a). Edward, baptised 8th July, 1669 (a); buried 19th March, 1686/7 (a). Delaval, baptised 11th March, 1672/3 (a); lieutenant R.N.; killed at La Hogue, 19th May, 1692 (g). John, baptised 2nd May, 1676 (a); buried 30th May, 1677 (a). Edward, baptised 3rd February, 1679/80 (a). John Spearman of Preston, baptised 9th January, 1682/3 (a); buried 2nd September, 1702 (a); will dated 9th August, 1702 (a).	Philip Spearman of Preston, afterwards of Birtley, co. Durham, baptised 31st March, 1685 (a); apprenticed 12th August, 1701, to John Grey of Newcastle, barber surgeon; as eldest surviving son, was admitted to his father's lands, 16th April, 1706 (b); surrendered lands at Preston in 1715 and 1716 to the use of various individuals (b); buried at Chester-le-Street, April, 1718 (g); will dated 26th March, 1718 (f).	Jane, daughter of James Burfield of Wallsend, bond of marriage, 25th Aug., 1703; married 26th Aug., 1703 (d); died circa 1746.	Thomas, baptised 7th September, 1686 (a); buried 18th November, 1687 (a). George, baptised 24th January, 1687/8 (a); died at Preston; buried in Christ Church, Tynemouth, 2nd July, 1714 (a). Anne, born at Monkseaton; baptised 8th May, 1665 (a). Margaret, baptised 24th January, 1670/1 (a); buried under the name of Mary, 6th June, 1673 (a). Elizabeth, baptised 22nd September, 1674 (a); buried 7th June, 1675 (a). Margaret, baptised 26th February, 1677/8 (a); married, 28th November, 1695, Thomas Fenwick (a) (g). Anne, baptised 3rd May, 1681 (a). Dorothy, baptised 22nd January, 1683/4 (a); buried 17th February, 1694/5 (a).
Edward, baptised 9th October, 1704 (a); buried 20th November, 1705 (a). James, died s.p. (g). John, died s.p. (g).	Eleanor, daughter of Edward Anderson of Newcastle (g).	George Spearman of Preston and, <i>jure uxoris</i> , of Eachwick, born 10th June, 1710 (g); buried 4th November, 1753 (e); will dated 16th October, 1753; proved 1758 (f).	Elizabeth, widow of William Potter of Hawkwell, daughter of Edward Bell of Eachwick, and sister and co-heir of Edward Bell of the same place (c) (g); married October, 1748; died 14th April, 1792, aged 69 (c). Jaques Spearman, clerk in orders, of Peterhouse, Cambridge (g); B.A., 1734; died s.p., 1745 (g). Anne, married James Walker of Newcastle (g); an executrix of her brother's will (f); died at Eachwick, 24th May, 1778.
Edward Spearman of Preston, son and heir, died February, 1762; buried at Heddon-on-the-Wall (g). John, named in his father's will (f); died s.p. (g). Matthew, named in his father's will (f); died s.p. (g). George, named in his father's will (f); died s.p. (g).		Ralph Spearman of Eachwick, born 4th September, 1749 (c); named in his father's will (f); held lands at Preston in 1790 (b); died unmarried, 13th July, 1823, aged 74; buried at Heddon-on-the-Wall (c).	Mary, sister and heir, born 18th May, 1751 (c); died unmarried, 26th Feb., 1827, aged 76 (c).

(a) *Tynemouth Registers*.

(b) *Tynemouth Court Roll* and duke of Northumberland's MSS.

(c) *Arch. Ael.* vol. xi. p. 267.

(d) *Bolam Register*.

(e) *St. John's Register*, Newcastle.

(f) *Durham Probate Registry*.

(g) *Surtees, Durham*, vol. i. p. 94.

(h) *South Shields Register*.

(i) *Land Revenue Survey*, 1608.

By indenture, dated September 2nd, 1714, the heirs of Thomas Otway conveyed their lands in Preston to John Johnson of Bebside, high sheriff of Northumberland in the following year, who was succeeded in his Preston property by his eldest daughter, Mary, wife of Charles Fielding of Bebside. Charles and Mary Fielding sold their land in 1758 to Samuel Lacy¹ of North Shields, master and mariner. His grandson, Samuel Lacy of Kirk-

¹ See *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Newcastle*, 2nd series, vol. ix. p. 219, for an account of the Lacy family.

oswald in Cumberland, sold Preston farm (eighty acres) to John Scott in 1805, and White House farm (123 acres) to Sir David Smith, bart., in 1809. In 1821, Sir David Smith resold to the duke of Northumberland. In 1817, Preston farm was purchased from John Scott by Thomas Fenwick, whose representatives sold it to Mr. William Davison of North Shields in 1872, and in 1894 it was purchased from the executors of Mr. John Thomas Davison by the duke of Northumberland.

The chief of the numerous small properties, into which the southern portion of the township was formerly divided, comprised lands purchased in 1814 by John Fenwick of Milburn Place, North Shields. Mr. Fenwick's residence of Campville was built on part of this property. It is known as the Fenwick Park Estate, and has been laid out for building sites. A namesake, John Fenwick of Dockwray Square, North Shields, bought lands in Preston in 1818 from Ralph William Grey of Backworth. This property includes the house known as Preston villa and grounds. A portion of it was sold in 1857 to the Tynemouth Corporation for the purpose of making the Preston cemetery.

FENWICK OF PRESTON AND NORTH SHIELDS.

JOHN FENWICK of Tynemouth. = Sarah Atkins, married 1st January, 1722 (*a*); died 14th May, 1795, aged 95 (*b*).

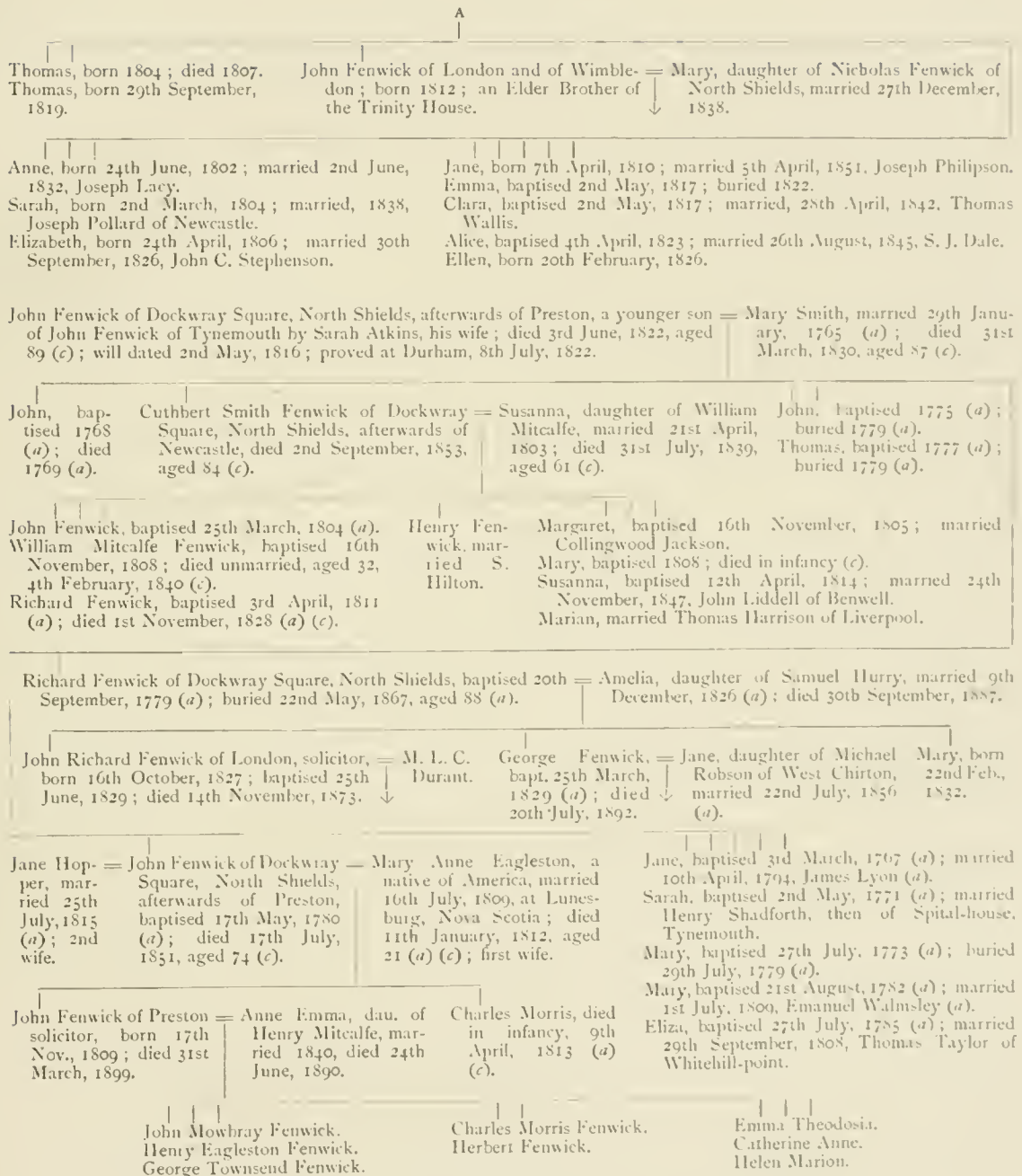
Thomas Fenwick of Milburn Place, North Shields, baptised 13th April, 1724 (<i>a</i>); died 25th November, 1796, aged 73 (<i>a</i>) (<i>b</i>); will dated 17th October, 1796; proved at Durham, 4th January, 1797.	= Anne Saunders, married 5th December, 1767 (<i>a</i>); died 13th December, 1821, aged 90 (<i>b</i>).	John Fenwick of Dockwray Square, afterwards of Preston, executor of the will of his brother Thomas; died 3rd June, 1822, aged 89 (<i>a</i>) (<i>c</i>). ↓	= Mary Smith, married 29th January, 1765 (<i>a</i>); died 31st March, 1830, aged 87 (<i>c</i>).	Jane, baptised 15th August, 1726 (<i>a</i>); married, 1754, Edward Hutchinson. Eleanor, baptised 10th November, 1728 (<i>a</i>). Sarah, baptised 8th December, 1729 (<i>a</i>). Ann, baptised 9th October, 1732 (<i>a</i>). Eleanor, baptised 28th Jan., 1737/8 (<i>a</i>). Ann, baptised 26th August, 1741 (<i>a</i>). Mary, baptised 27th January, 1743/4 (<i>a</i>).
--	---	---	---	---

Sarah Jackson, died 6th September, 1805, aged 32 (*b*). = Thomas Fenwick of Milburn Place, North Shields, afterwards of South Preston, bapt. 4th Jan., 1771 (*a*); named in his uncle's will; died May, 1860, aged 89; will dated 13th Sept., 1845. = Jane Bell, died August, 1864, aged 72.

Thomas, died in infancy (<i>b</i>); buried 20th September, 1802 (<i>a</i>).	Margaret, baptised 4th April, 1804; married 3rd March, 1827, James Eddowes of South Shields.	John William Fenwick of North Shields and of Preston, born 1818.	= Isabella Dale, married 18th October, 1853.
---	--	--	--

Frederick Bell Fenwick. John William Fenwick.	Thomas Fenwick. Francis Fenwick.	Henry Fenwick. Percy Fenwick.	Isabel. Kate Forster.
--	-------------------------------------	----------------------------------	--------------------------

John Fenwick of Campville and North Shields, bapt. 13th September, 1773 (<i>a</i>); named in his father's will; died 4th May, 1850 (<i>a</i>), aged 76.	= Elizabeth Frank, married 17th September, 1801 (<i>a</i>); died 18th May, 1846, aged 66 (<i>b</i>).	Alice, baptised 15th November, 1768 (<i>a</i>); buried 7th November, 1769 (<i>a</i>).
---	--	---



(a) Tynemouth Register.

(b) Monumental Inscription, Tynemouth Priory.

(c) Monumental Inscription, Christ Church, Tynemouth.

The name of Chirton Barracks was at one time given to a block of houses in South Preston taken on lease by the government in 1811-1813 to

provide extra accommodation for troops. The block includes South Preston lodge and the adjoining houses and is now owned by the representatives of Mr. Charles J. Spence.

SPENCE OF SOUTH PRESTON.

I. Robert Spence, son of Robert Spence by Sarah his wife, born at Whaitemill house, Yorkshire, February 10th, 1784; lieutenant R.N., and afterwards of North Shields, banker and draper; married August 29th, 1810, Mary, daughter of Robert Foster of Hebblethwaite hall, Yorkshire (who died October 6th, 1846), and had, besides fourteen daughters, four sons, namely: (1) Robert Spence (II.); (2) John Foster Spence, born November 8th, 1818; resided at Chirton cottage; alderman and four times mayor of Tynemouth; married, September 28th, 1843, Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Corder of Wedford hall, Chelmsford, by whom he had issue four sons and two daughters; died July 2nd, 1901; (3) Joseph Spence, born 1819; twice mayor of Tynemouth; married, in 1845, Caroline, daughter of Joseph Shewell of Colchester, by whom he left issue, and died December 17th, 1889; (4) Thomas Spence, born 1821, died March 24th, 1839, unmarried. Mr. Spence died August 17th, 1845.

II. Robert Spence of North Shields and of Newcastle, banker, born December 12th, 1817; married, June 2nd, 1842, Sarah, daughter of Thomas Hagen, by whom he had issue four sons and one daughter, Sarah, wife of Francis Thompson. He died in 1890, leaving an only surviving son, Charles James Spence.

III. Charles James Spence, of South Preston and of Newcastle, banker, born November 20th, 1848; married, firstly, Alice Clibborn, by whom he had issue three sons, namely, Robert Spence and Philip Spence, who survived him, and Gilbert Spence, who died *s.p.*, and a daughter, Sarah. He married, secondly, Alice M. G. Weiss, and died October 8th, 1905.¹

MUNICIPAL HISTORY OF THE BOROUGH.

The North Shields Improvement Act of 1828 invested that town with a semi-municipal character. The old township limits were abandoned for boundaries more nearly corresponding with the urban area; and the functions of the vestry and the court-leet, so far as they related to the administration of the town, were transferred to a newly-constituted body of Improvement Commissioners.²

The Parliamentary Borough. Earl Grey's scheme of parliamentary reform included the creation of several new boroughs, of which Tynemouth was one. Commissioners appointed to report upon the subject recommended, in October, 1831, that the new electoral district should comprise the townships of North Shields, Tynemouth, Chirton, Preston and Cullercoats. They stated in their report:

The condition of the town of North Shields is certainly prosperous; it is progressively increasing in importance, and the port was described as the second in this kingdom for tonnage registered as belonging to the port. The manufactories in this town are merely of those articles which are required by the shipbuilder. Much building is in progress, and many improvements have been both commenced

¹ *Ex inf.* Mr. Percy Corder and Mr. H. A. Adamson. A biographical notice of Mr. C. J. Spence is given in *Arch. Acl.* 3rd series, vol. ii.

² See above, pp. 314-315.

and agreed upon : new roads are to be made through the parish towards the west and north-west, and a railroad is to connect this town and Newcastle, which will pass through the township of Chirton. The town is chiefly extending itself on the west and north-west into Chirton and Preston townships, and in the direction of the town of Tynemouth. There is little doubt but that in a few years the village of Chirton will be nearly united to the town of North Shields in a continuous street, and that a great portion of the township of Preston will be occupied by that town. Already several buildings of a superior class have been erected in that township in its immediate neighbourhood, and the whole of a small part of that of Tynemouth, which juts out in the form of a peninsula on the south-west adjoining both Preston and Chirton, is either covered with new buildings or marked out as their future site.

The report continues :

Cullercoats township appears to contain some good houses, and, in consequence of its small extent, these can contribute to the constituency without the inconvenience commonly attended on the annexation of an entire township. By the addition of these three townships the two towns of North Shields and Tynemouth will be distant, respectively, about a mile from the nearest point of the new boundary : which seems to give sufficient scope for the probable increase of the former. The latter is a small sea-bathing place, the increase or decrease of which must always greatly depend on the extent of the growth of its more important neighbour. The population of Chirton township has increased 506, that of Preston 144, and that of Cullercoats 47, within the last ten years.¹

The Reform Act of 1832 constituted Tynemouth a parliamentary borough, of which the boundaries were defined in accordance with the commissioners' report.²

MEMBERS OF PARLIAMENT FOR THE BOROUGH SINCE 1832.

George Frederick Young	...	1832 to 1837	Richard Hodgson	...	...	1861 to 1865
Sir Charles Edward Grey, knight		1838 to 1841	George Otto Trevelyan	...	...	1865 to 1868
Henry Mitcalfe	...	...	1841 to 1847	Thomas Eustace Smith	...	1868 to 1885
Ralph William Grey	...	...	1847 to 1852	Richard Sims Donkin	...	1885 to 1900
Hugh Taylor	...	...	1852	Frederick Leverton Harris	...	1900 to 1906
William Schaw Lindsay	...	...	1854 to 1859	Herbert Craig	..	...
Hugh Taylor	...	...	1859 to 1861			1906

The Poor Law Union. In 1836, Tynemouth was made the centre of a union formed under the provisions of the Poor Law Amendment Act of 1836. The Tynemouth Union included the eight townships of Tynemouth parish, the eight townships of Earsdon chapelry, and eight others, namely, Cowpen, Bebside, East Hartford, West Hartford, Cramlington, Horton, Long Benton, and Wallsend. Five other poor-law townships have since been added, namely, Camperdown, Walker, Willington, Willington Quay, and Weetslade. A guardians' hall was erected on land purchased in Howard and Saville Streets, North Shields. The offices of the Union have since been transferred to the buildings of the North Shields Club in Northumberland Square.

¹ *Parliamentary Representation*, Boundary Reports and Plans, vol. iv. pp. 177-178.

² 2 Will. IV. cap. 45, sect. 4 ; 2 and 3 Will. IV. cap. 64, Schedule O (26).

Municipal Incorporation. A petition for the incorporation of the borough was presented in 1841. Though the Privy Council upon that occasion refused its assent, the application was renewed, and, after enquiry, a charter of incorporation was granted by an order in council dated August 6th, 1849, and confirmed by Act of Parliament in the following year.¹ The municipal and parliamentary boundaries were made co-extensive; a council was constituted consisting of a mayor, six aldermen and eighteen councillors; and the borough was divided into the Tynemouth, North Shields, and Percy wards, with six councillors for each ward. The new council took over the town hall in Saville Street, which had been erected by the Improvement Commissioners in 1845, from designs by Mr. John Dobson. On March 26th, 1850, a separate commission of the police was granted to the borough. In 1904, Tynemouth was made a county borough, and the council was increased from twenty-four to thirty-six members, namely, nine aldermen and twenty-seven councillors. The borough was at the same time re-divided into nine wards, namely, (1) Percy, (2) Linskill, (3) Dockwray, (4) Central, (5) Rudyard, (6) Trinity, (7) Milbourn, (8) Preston, and (9) Collingwood wards.²

LIST OF MAYORS OF TYNEMOUTH.

1849-50. William Linskill.	1874. Henry Edward Pyle Adamson.
1851. Alexander Bartleman.	1875. William Aubone Potter.
1852. Solomon Mease.	1876. Joseph Green.
1853. Matthew Poppelwell.	1877. Edward Shotton.
1854. John Walker Mayson.	1878-9. Charles Tully.
1855. William Linskill.	1880. Joseph Baker.
1856. William Walker.	1881. John Spence.
1857. Robert Pow.	1882-3. John Hedley.
1858-9. Edward Potter.	1884. Robert Morrison Tate.
1860. Solomon Mease.	1885-6. Joseph Elliott.
1861. John Foster Spence.	1887. George Dodds.
1862. John Fawcus.	1888-9. Ralph Collins.
1863. Joseph Spence.	1890. Augustus Whitehorn.
1864. George Jobling.	1891-3. John Foster Spence.
1865. Joseph Green.	1894-5. George Armstrong.
1866. John Hedley.	1896. Thomas Thompson Bolton.
1867-8. Edward Shotton.	1897-8. Richard Irvin.
1869. Joseph Spence.	1899. Jonathan Eskdale.
1870. George Bell.	1900-1. Jacob Daglish.
1871-2. Charles Alexander Adamson.	1902. James Dunsmore Gillespie.
1873. Robert Watson Surtees.	1903-6. John Philip Spencer.

¹ 13 and 14 Vict. cap. 42² 4 Edw. VII. cap. cvii.

The Port of North Shields. A decision of the Lords of the Treasury in 1833 empowered the custom-house officers at North Shields to clear, without reference to Newcastle, coastwise vessels loading below Hebburn Point. The long struggle between Newcastle and Shields was brought to a close in 1848, when, on March 30th, Shields harbour was constituted an independent customs port under the title of the port of Shields, the boundary of the ports of Shields and Newcastle being defined by a straight line drawn from the east end of Whitehill Point sands to the east end of Jarrow quay. The custom house was fixed at North Shields. In 1850 the port was



SHIELDS HARBOUR.

given a local marine board under the provisions of the Mercantile Marine Act. The harbour was again divided in 1865; North Shields and South Shields were then created separate ports, bounded by the mid-channel of the river, and marine boards were given to each of the two boroughs. Blyth was included in the port of North Shields until the year 1897, when it was constituted a separate customs port.

The River Tyne Commission. Down to the year 1850 the conservancy of the river remained in the hands of the corporation of Newcastle; but by the River Tyne Improvement Act, which passed into law on July

15th, 1850, the corporation was deprived of its charge, and the management of the river was vested in a commission of fourteen, to which Tynemouth contributed three members.¹ The establishment of the commission inaugurated an era of river improvement. In 1854, the commissioners began the construction of piers at the entrance of the river. Dredging operations commenced in 1861 and have since been carried on without intermission. Tynemouth bar was removed, as were the sands at Dortwick and Whitehill Point, and the narrow passage past the Low Lights was widened and deepened. The formation of the Northumberland docks at Hayhole, near Flatworth, begun in 1852 and completed on October 22nd, 1857, gave the river for the first time a public dock.² Similar works were projected at the Low Lights. The necessary powers were obtained in 1861,³ and the foundation stone was laid three years later, but financial and other objections led to the abandonment of the scheme. In its place the Albert Edward dock was formed at Coble dene and opened in 1884. It has an enclosed water space of twenty-four acres as compared with an area of fifty-five acres included within the Northumberland docks.

Ferry-boat Service. The North and South Shields Ferry Company was formed in 1829 to provide for better communication between the two harbour towns;⁴ and in the following year steamboats commenced running between the New Quay on the north side of the river and Dean Street, near the market-place, in South Shields. A rival undertaking, known as the Tyne Direct Ferry Company, was started in 1848, but was immediately acquired by the Shields Ferry Company.⁵ Both services were continued under its management, and in 1856 a third ferry was opened, running between Whitehill Point and Penny Pie Stairs on the opposite shore. In 1863 the three ferries were transferred to the Tyne Commissioners under the Tyne Improvement Act of 1861.⁶ The steamers of the Tyne General Ferry Company, formed in 1860, run in the summer months between the Tynemouth and South Shields piers. Those of the Shields Steam Shipping Company, created in 1866 for the carriage of goods from the Tyne to London, used to start from Shepherd's Quay in North Shields, but the

¹ 13 and 14 Vict. cap. lxiii.

² Powers were conferred on the commissioners to construct this dock by statute 15 and 16 Vict. cap. cx.

³ 24 and 25 Vict. cap. xci.

⁴ 10 Geo. IV. cap. xcviii.

⁵ 11 and 12 Vict. cap. xlv.

⁶ 25 and 26 Vict. cap. lxxvi.

enterprise proved unsuccessful, and the company was wound up in 1875. Proposals for the erection of a high-level bridge between North and South Shields have more than once been made, but have never been put into execution. The Tyne Commissioners were authorised in 1902 to construct new landing stages, and in other ways to improve the ferry-boat service;¹ and in the same year a company was incorporated under the name of the North and South Shields Electric Railway Company, and powers given to it to carry an electric railway through a tunnel under the Tyne, from Bedford Street to Mile End Road.²

Railways. In December, 1830, a committee was appointed to take steps for the establishment of railway communication between Newcastle and North Shields, and this resulted in the formation of the Newcastle and North Shields Railway Company in 1835.³ A railway from the Manors in Newcastle to a station in Nile Street, North Shields, was formally opened on June 19th, 1839, and extended in 1847 to Oxford Street in Tynemouth village.⁴ The Newcastle and North Shields Company had amalgamated in 1845 with the Newcastle and Berwick Railway Company,⁵ and in 1854 the line was included within the North Eastern Railway system.⁶ A new railway, from Blyth to Percy Main on the Newcastle and North Shields line, was opened in 1847. It continued in private hands until the incorporation of the Blyth and Tyne Railway Company in 1852.⁷ In 1861, the same company opened a branch from the Dairy House, near Seaton Delaval, along the old Whitley waggonway, to a point near the Master Mariners' Asylum on the Tynemouth road.⁸ In 1865, a connexion was made with Tynemouth. The North Eastern Railway Company acquired this branch in August, 1874, and in 1882 made the present line from Tynemouth, through Cullercoats and Whitley, to Monkseaton.

Education. A school board was constituted in 1871, and assumed control of the Jubilee School in Albion Road. Five council schools have been founded since that date. Under the Education Act of 1902 the board was superseded by a committee of the town council, to which ten denominational schools were transferred on September 30th, 1903. The following list gives particulars as to the public elementary schools at present existing within the borough.

¹ 2 Edw. VII. cap. xxxiii.² 2 Edw. VII. cap. clxxviii.³ 6 and 7 Will. IV. cap. lxxxvi.⁴ 8 and 9 Vict. cap. xlvii.⁵ 8 and 9 Vict. cap. clxiii.⁶ 17 and 18 Vict. cap. cxi.⁷ 15 and 16 Vict. cap. cxxii.⁸ 17 and 18 Vict. cap. lxxxix.

Name.	Foundation.	Denomination.	Accommodation.
Jubilee	1809 ...	British	1,104
Kettlewell's	1825 ...	"	269
St. Cuthbert's	1840 ...	Roman Catholic	595
Howard Street	1843 ...	Scotch Church	469
Trinity	1845 ...	Church of England	332
St. Joseph's	1857 ...	Roman Catholic	216
Priory	1868 ...	Church of England	449
Percy (St. John's)	1869 ...	"	394
St. Peter's	1870-71 ...	"	288
Christ Church	1872 ...	"	845
Preston	1872 ...	"	72
Western	1872 ...	Council	1,429
Chirton	1873 ...	"	374
Eastern	1875 ...	"	1,100
Percy Main	1894 ...	"	756
Queen Victoria	1897 ...	"	804

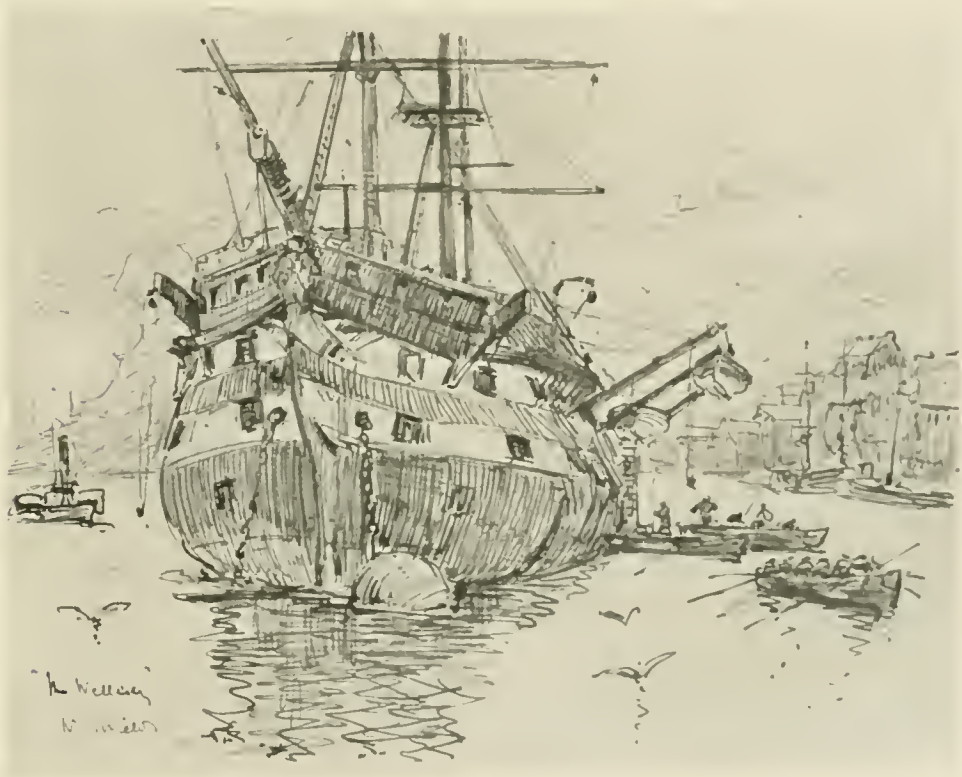
Public Institutions. The Subscription Library, formed in 1807, came to an end in 1835, its place being taken by the Tynemouth Literary and Philosophical Society. In 1869 it was resolved to adopt the Free Libraries Act. A free library was formed in the building of the Tradesmen's and Mechanics' Institute in Howard Street (established in 1833), and the Literary and Philosophical Society was merged in it. The library has a museum attached to it.¹

Amongst the charitable institutions in the town are the Master Mariners' Asylum on the Tynemouth road, erected in 1837 for the purpose of supporting infirm and decayed master mariners of the port; the Sailors' Home, built on the New Quay in 1856 by Algernon, fourth duke of Northumberland, and endowed by public subscription; the Wellesley Training Ship, started in 1868 with a view to training homeless and destitute boys for a seafaring life; and the Victoria Jubilee Infirmary for the reception of accident cases.

A native of North Shields, William Wouldhave, has a claim to be considered the inventor of the lifeboat. His more successful rival of the opposite borough, Henry Greathead, whose model was accepted in 1789, built the first lifeboat used at North Shields. Lifeboat stations were made at the Low Lights, the Spanish battery, and Cullercoats. In 1840 the management of the North and South Shields boats was consolidated in the Tyne Lifeboat Institution. The National Lifeboat Institution has charge of

¹ The thirty-second report of the Public Library Committee contains a useful bibliography of local books, and a historical sketch of Shields and Tynemouth literature by the late Mr. C. J. Spence.

the boats placed at Cullercoats, Tynemouth haven, and the Black Middens. In consequence of the wreck of the 'Stanley' on the Black Middens in 1864, the Tynemouth Volunteer Life Brigade was formed through the exertions of the late Mr. John Forster Spence, as a means of supplying the coast-guard with disciplined assistance in the working of their life-saving appliances. The institution so formed was the first of its kind in the kingdom.



THE WELLESLEY TRAINING SHIP.

CHRIST CHURCH.

During the disturbed times of the Civil War, the parishioners of Tynemouth were prevented from attending their parish church in the castle, which began to fall into ruin. An entry in the parish vestry book states that on July 29th, 1645, it was agreed that a cessment should be laid on the whole parish 'for prosecuting of the busines concerneing a place for

preaching and house and maintenance for our minister to be given to him by reason of his greatt distress at this time.' A malting kiln at Chirton was subsequently rented of Ralph Gardner at £8 a year, and services were held in it.¹ Naturally a more suitable edifice was desired. The Commonwealth commissioners for church livings reported (June 1st, 1652) 'that the parish church of Tynemouth is quite ruined; that the town of North Shields being a populous place of itself, it is fit that a parish church be built there, and the town[ships] of Tynemouth, Preston, East and Middle Chirton, Whitley and Morton annexed to it.'² In conformity with this recommendation the parishioners addressed the following petition two years later to the earl of Northumberland:

To the right honorable the earle of Northumberland. The humble peticon of the parrishioners of Tinmouth in the countie of Northumberland, July, 1654.

Humbly sheweth that the petitioners to there great grifes have for theis 12 or 13 yeares past bin deprived of hearing God's holy word in their usuall church, it being within the castle, which is garrisoned soe that manie tymes they have bin forced to heare the same in the open feilds. That your petitioners, not haveing anie hopes of the use of their church againe and well knowing your honor's piety and zeale to soe good a work, are emboldened to become most humble suitors, beseeching your honor to be pleased to graunt unto them a proporcion of ground to build them a church on, also for a buriing place, and they humbly conceive if it be with your honor's pleasure that a corner of a close there called Brocke close by the highway wilbe most convenient for that purpose.

[Endorsed.] His lordship is pleased a parcell of ground be sett out where it may be most convenient. Aug. 5th, 1654.³

The earl thereupon gave them a piece of land in the demesne called Brock close, at the south end of the road leading from Preston, abutting on the highway from Tynemouth to Newcastle.

At the quarter sessions held at Morpeth, April 21st, 1658, a petition of the parishioners of Tynemouth was presented, showing 'the great want of a church there, whereby not only the parishioners but many others, both the masters of shippes, straingers, and other travellers and passengers, resorting thither, cannot have any publique and convenient place for the service and worshipp of God, the former church being made use of for the garison of Tynmouth castle, soe that some thousands of people ar left destitute of the word and meanes of salvation, to the great dishonour of God and encouragement of many loose and ignorant people in prophaneing of the sabboth and liveing in a luid life and conversation.'⁴ It was ordered that an assessment of two shillings in the pound should be levied throughout the county for building a church.

¹ *Tynemouth Vestry Books*.

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² *Arch. Acl.* 1st series, vol. iii. p. 9.

⁴ *Tynemouth Vestry Books*.

The building was immediately commenced. In April, 1663, it was arranged to treat with Robert Trollop for carrying on and finishing the new church, and raising a roof of English tiles, ceiling the inside and plastering the walls on the inside.¹ The church was consecrated on July 5th, 1668.²

The bishop of Durham, being at Newcastle on his visitation, went to Tynemouth, and with the assistance of Dr. Basire, archdeacon of Northumberland, and half a dozen more of the clergy, consecrated a new church erected there upon a piece of ground given by the earl of Northumberland. Mr. Clarke, the earl's officer, delivered up possession of the edifice and land in the name of his master to the bishop, who dedicated it Christ Church, and at the offering gave £5 towards the better beautifying and adorning the church. Dr. Dockwray held the first service. Dr. Basire and Wrench, a prebendary of Durham, the second. Mr. Davenport, the bishop's chaplain, preached the consecration sermon.³

This church was a cruciform building, measuring $71\frac{1}{2}$ feet from east to west, and the same from north to south, the limbs of the cross being twenty-four feet in breadth.⁴ Doors in the north, south and west walls gave access to two long passages running through the middle of the building and crossing one another at right angles. The font, clerk's desk, reading desk, parson's pew and pulpit were all in the south-west quarter of the church. The communion table was apparently portable, and when in use was placed in the centre of the building. Large pews, allotted to the principal parishioners and their servants, were erected in all parts of the church, even at the east end, where were the pews of the duke of Somerset, Sir Ralph Delaval, and the officers of Tynemouth castle.⁵

Not long after its construction the church was found to be too small, and during the eighteenth century various structural changes were made in order to provide additional accommodation. In 1786 money obtained by the sale of pews by public auction⁶ was applied to building a steeple and purchasing six bells. The first set of bells was lost at sea on its passage from London, but a second set was presented to the church by James Storey of Storey's hall, Low Lights. Four other bells have since been added.⁷

¹ *Tynemouth Vestry Books*.

² July 5th, 1668. The new church was consecrated by the Right Reverend father in God, John, Lord Bishop of Durham, and named Christ's Church. *Ibid.*

³ *Cal. State Papers Domestic*, 1667-1668, p. 427; cp. *ibid.* p. 476. The service used upon this occasion is printed in the *Correspondence of Bishop Cosin*, Surt. Soc. No. 55, pp. 175-190.

⁴ Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 119, quoting Dr. Ellison's MSS.

⁵ Plan in Mr. H. A. Adamson's possession.

⁶ Down to 1859 the pews in this church were regarded as personal property, and were transferred from vendor to purchaser like shares in a company. The market value of a pew in 1764 ranged from £6 to £71 10s., according to its position. 'To be sold at Mr. Ker's, the sign of the Beehive in North Shields, to the highest bidders, the seats or pews, separately as they are numbered, in the newly erected addition to the parish church of Tynemouth.' *Newcastle Courant*, October 6th, 1764.

⁷ On the church bells see *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Newcastle*, 2nd series, vol. iii. pp. 21-22.

In 1792 the church was practically rebuilt. The roof, which had decayed, was taken down ; the walls were heightened ; some of the galleries were removed ; the pulpit and reading desk were placed in a more convenient situation (a 'three-decker' of the usual type being brought into the church), and an organ was purchased and placed in the west gallery.¹ The present chancel and organ-chamber were erected in 1869, when the church was reseated.

The affairs of the parish were conducted by the minister, the four churchwardens and the select vestry or four-and-twenty. Until 1840, and for at least two centuries before that date, it was customary to elect two churchwardens for 'the country' and two for Shields. The four-and-twenty, together with the minister, imposed church rates, elected the churchwardens and examined their accounts, and took an important part in local administration.

Christ Church remained the only Church of England place of worship in the parish until 1836, when the chapel of ease of Holy Trinity was built in Coach Lane at the west end of North Shields (consecrated October 21st, 1836). A few years later the chapel of ease of Holy Saviour was built at Tynemouth, at the intersection of the Manor Road and the North Road (consecrated August 11th, 1841). Messrs. Green of Newcastle were architects for both structures. The old parish remained undivided until 1860, since which year the following seven ecclesiastical districts or parishes have been carved out of it :

1860. Percy, Tynemouth (St. John).
 1860. Low Town, Tynemouth (St. Peter).
 1860. Cullercoats, Tynemouth (St. Paul's,
 Whitley).

1861. The Priory, Tynemouth (Holy Saviour).
 1861. Western Town, Tynemouth (Holy Trinity).
 1880. St. George's, Cullercoats.
 1885. St. Augustine's (Washington Terrace).

The sacramental plate of Christ Church includes a large silver flagon given by John Spearman of Durham in 1703 ; three silver patens, the gifts respectively of William Raper, keeper of the stores of Tynemouth castle (1728), of Mrs. Naters of Tynemouth (1818), and of William Mitcalfe of Tynemouth house (1825) ; and a double set of silver communion plate, given by the members of the family of the late Canon Brutton.²

¹ The organ is traditionally stated to have been bought by the churchwardens from the proprietors of Vauxhall Gardens, and is perhaps to be identified with the organ built for Westminster Abbey in 1660, and removed thence to Vauxhall Gardens seventy years later. The common supposition that Father Smith built the Westminster organ is open to doubt. See *Musical Times*, vol. xlv. pp. 518-519.

² A full account of the church plate is given in *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Newcastle*, 2nd series, vol. iii. pp. 19-21.

The ordination of the vicarage is dated 1250, the endowment being then fixed at £26 13s. 4d.¹ In Pope Innocent's taxation of 1264, however, the vicarage was assessed at £10 only,² and in that of Pope Nicholas, taken in 1292, at £6 1s. 2d.³ In 1295 the vicarage was estimated to be worth £30.⁴ In 1535 it was returned as worth £24 19s. 4d. After the suppression of the religious houses a pension of £30 to the vicar was charged upon the rectory, but of this sum £4 13s. 4d. was due to the curate of Earsdon. The vicar's stipend was temporarily increased under the Commonwealth to £97. Archdeacon Sharpe, about the year 1725, valued the vicarage at £100. In 1825 the actual receipt was £280; and at the present date the gross income is about £416 and the net income £353.

MONUMENTAL INSCRIPTIONS, CHRIST CHURCH.

In memory of Charles Charleton, M.D., member of the Royal College of Physicians, Edinburgh, second son of the late Reverend Charles Charleton, A.M., vicar of this parish, who died on the 26th day of December, 1827, terminating a short but eminently useful life at the age of 23 years.

Sacred to the reverend memory of John Collingwood of Chirton house in this parish, esq., who died January 7th, 1841, aged 90 years. Also of Sarah, wife of the above, who died July, 1824.

In memory of William Conyers and Mary, the daughter and son of Nicholas Conyers of Scarbrough, gentleman. Also of Ann, daughter of the above-named Nicholas Conyers, who dyed the 14th of March, 1733, aged 66 years. Arms: *a maunch demised by a bend*; crest: *a bull's head erased*.

Sacred to the memory of Anne, wife of Henry Coward of Preston, near North Shields, who departed this life, May, 1834, aged 74 years. Also the above Henry Coward, esq., who departed this life July 7th, 1836, aged 73 years. Also Margaret Antonia Linskill, eldest daughter of the above, died May 2nd, 1843, aged 55 years.

The burial place of John Cruddas of North Shields, common brewer. Eleanor Cruddas, wife of the above, died March 4th, 1830, aged 85 years. The above John Cruddas died November 25th, 1831, aged 81 years.

In hope of a blessed resurrection, here lies deposited ye remains of Mr. John Dale, master and mariner, late of Robin Hood's Bay. He departed this life, December the 26th, 1744, aged 49 years.

Here lyeth interred the body of Stephen Dockwray, M.A., late vicar of this church, sone and succour of the Reverend Thomas Dockwray, D.D., who was chaplaine to and slaine with the Right Honourable the earl of Sandwich in that great engagement with ye Dutch, May 28th, 1672. The said Stephen departed this life September 20th, 1681, and Thomas, his son, Aprill ye 13th, 1676.⁵

In memory of Richard Dockwray of North Shields, mariner, who departed this life November 2nd, 1802, aged 58 years. Elizabeth Dockwray, wife of the above, died January 22nd, 1835, aged 98 years. Anne Dockwray, daughter of the above, died November 21st, 1848, aged 74 years.

The buriall place of Christopher Erington, senior. Here lieth ye body of 7 of his children, vizt., 2 Margarets, 2 Johns, 2 Barbaras, and Christopher. Also here lieth ye body of Christopher Erington of North Shields, marriner; he departed the 14th of August, 1722, aged 36. Elizabeth, his daughter, ye wife of George Howett, departed this life the 29th day of October, 1732, aged 21 years. Arms: ERRINGTON, *impaling a chevron between three stags' heads erased*; crest: *a boar's head erased*.

¹ See above, p. 125, note.

² Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. ii. vol. iii. p. 424.

³ *Taxatio Ecclesiastica*, Record Com. p. 316; Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. iii. vol. i. p. 349. To this entry the note is added: 'Memorandum de dubio taxationis vicariae de Tynemuc, et est dubium de pane et cerevisia et prebendis receptis per manus prioris et conventus ejusdem loci in specialibus prenotatis et per eosdem dimissis.'

⁴ See above, p. 126.

⁵ This inscription was discovered under the floor of the south transept in 1869, and was again covered over.

In memory of Peregrine Henzell, esq., of Whitley, who died the 19th of July, 1824, aged 78 years.

Here lyeth interred the body of Edward Hodgson of North Shields, cordwainer, one of the first founders of this church, who was buried the 3rd of November, anno 1690. And Anne Hodgson, his wife, buried the 7th day of March, 1689. Here lyeth also the body of Mr. William Richardson, who departed this life the 6th day of July, 1710, aged about 59 years.

Hic jacet Radulphus Milbourn de East Chirton armiger qui obiit vicesimo secundo die Maii 1689 et actatis suae 43. Uxorem duxit Winifredam unicam filiam et prolem Thomae Richardson de Clements Inn in parochia St. Clements Danes in comitatu Middlesex generosi. Reliquit unicam filiam Winifrid nominatam superstitem hoc anno salutis MDCXCIII. Posuit hoc monumentum maestissima conjux supradicta Winifrida Milbourn. Obiit 1720.

Sacred to the memory of John Stephenson, esq., of North Shields, who departed this life September 16th, 1752, aged 66 years. And also his son, John Stephenson, esq., who died July 12th, 1801, aged 74 years. Here also lies interred Elizabeth Stephenson, wife of the above and mother of the late John Stephenson, who died May 9th, 1746, aged 45 years.

Here lieth the body of Mary Stephenson, relict of John Stephenson, jun., esq., who studied to excel in every Christian virtue. How far she succeeded, those, who knew her, best can tell. She died October 18th, 1803, aged 75 years.

Ann, wife of Joseph Straker, died August 30th, 1854, aged 74 years. Henry, their son, was lost overboard from the 'Richard and Ann,' April 21st, 1827, aged 17 years. Joseph Straker, J.P., departed this life October 13th, 1867, aged 83 years.

Sacred to the memory of Thomas Wright, esq., of Whitley park in this parish, who died the 18th of March, 1840.

VICARS OF TYNEMOUTH.

- 1083. Elwald or Alwald, 'qui et canonicus Dunelmensis ecclesiae fuerat' (Symeon of Durham, *Hist. Regum*, Rolls Series, vol. ii. p. 260), attested a charter of Bishop St. Carileph, April 27th, 1085.
- 11.... Osbern, 'vicarius de Tinemuth,' afterwards chaplain of Horton (*Vita Oswini*, Surt. Soc. No. 8, cap. xviii.).
- 1200 (*circa*). Stephen, attested grant of Milo de Whittonstall to the hospital of St. Mary at the Westgate, Newcastle (*Hist. of Northumberland*, vol. vi. p. 185).
- 1250. Peter (*St. Alban's Register*, fol. 128).
- 12.... Henry Gategang (*Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 116), [rector of Embleton *circa* 1245-1270].
- 1291. William de Dunham (*Coram Rege Rolls*, No. 128; *Rot. Pat.* 19 Edw. I. m. 9), died September 25th, 1295 (*St. Alban's Register*, fol. 129b).
- 1308 (*circa*). John de Barneburgh, presented April 24th (*St. Alban's Register*, fol. 213); also vicar of Norton (*Reg. Pal. Dun.* vol. ii. p. 844), and vicar of Lesbury in 1306 (*ibid.* vol. i. p. 529).
- 1311. John de Howick, admitted March 30th, 1311 (*York Register*, Greenfield, pars i. fol. 199).
- 1325. John de Howarth, was vicar March 19th, 1324/5, when he conveyed lands in Backworth, Murton and Whitley; resigned or dead before August 5th, 1325 (*Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 86, 87).
- 1344. Roger de Selby, was cited to appear at Durham to show by what title he held the vicarage (*Durham Register*, Bury, fol. 10).
- 1350. John de Weteley, admitted November 22nd, 1350 (*Durham Register*, Hatfield, fol. 1); living December 5th, 1363 (*Waterford Charters*, No. 16).
- 1380. Alan Whitheved (*Cal. Pat. Rolls*, 1377-1381, p. 623); living September 12th, 1392 (*ibid.* 1391-1396, p. 154).
- 1466. William Merryman (*Arch. Acl.* 1st series, vol. iii. p. 80).
- 1492. John Hebborne, LL.B., had papal licence to hold plurality of benefices, June 10th, 1492 (*Durham Register*, Fox, fol. 36b); received monition from the bishop of Durham to reside, November 4th, 1499 (*ibid.* fol. 28); presented for non-residence in 1501 (*Ecclesiastical Proceedings*, Bishop Barnes, Surt. Soc. No. 22, p. xx).
- 1526 (*circa*). Edward Felde, S.T.P., on December 2nd, 1531, was presented to the rectory of Whalton, which he resigned in 1533 (*Durham Register*, Tunstall, fol. 8b).

1533. William Hobson, M.A., upon resignation of Felde, instituted July 10th (*Durham Register*, Tunstall, fol. 13). On December 10th, 1536, Thomas, prior, and the convent of Tynemouth granted the next advowson and presentation of Tynemouth to Thomas Grey, Thomas Lawson, William Selby and John Selby, if the church should fall vacant by resignation or otherwise during the natural life of Oliver Selby, clerk (*ibid.*).
1540. Oliver Selby, after the death of Hobson, admitted September 15th (*Durham Register*, Tunstall, fol. 29); also chaplain of Branxton (g).
1578. John Knightley, after the death of Selby, admitted June 26th, 1578 (f) (*Durham Register*, Barnes, fol. 3 b).
1588. Gilbert Spence, after the death of Knightley, admitted September 2nd, 1588 (f); of St. Edmund Hall, Oxon.; matriculated April 3rd, 1584, aged 32 (c).
1607. William Robinson, after the death of Spence,¹ admitted December 3rd, 1607 (f); of St. John's College, Camb.; B.A. 1615; M.A. 1618; incorporated with Oxford 1621 (c); buried February 13th, 1622/3 (a).
1623. John Heslop, after the death of Robinson, instituted August 8th (b) (*Durham Register*, Neile and Cosin, fol. 56); of St. Edmund Hall, Oxon.; matriculated October 13th, 1620, aged 19; B.A., 1620 (c); buried August 2nd, 1637 (a).
1637. James Hume, after the death of Heslop, instituted January 11th, 1637/8 (b); sequestered Walker, *Sufferings*, vol. ii. p. 272).
1651. . . . Dersley. In 1651 the four and twenty, taking into consideration the great pains taken by Mr. Dersley, then minister, for their souls' comfort, in ministering the Gospel, 'for the futher doth engage ourselves to allow him a yearly stipend duringe pleasur; doth lay on the lands six shillings 8d. per farme, and so the collyeres, mills, tythes, personall estates, and panos, and all other profits whatever within our parish and ye town of Sheeles, what every one shall subscribe towards his stipend, beginging from his deputation, and if any doe refuse to subscribe, then the twenty-four bath power to sese the said partie accordinge to there profit, and if refractery then a warrant to be procured from a justice for the use of Mr. Doarsly, he contynuing his paines amongst us' (c).
1652. Francis Gibson, of Queen's College, Oxon., matriculated June 4th, 1641, aged 17; B.A. 1645; served in the earl of Dover's regiment in the Civil War (c); appointed by the Commissioners for Propagating the Gospel, February 5th, 1652. 'For his support and maintenance it is ordered that ye crown rents out of Tynemouth vicarege being per annum £30, out of the corn tithes and petty tithes of Walesend per annum £31, the remainder of Newcastle tithes being per annum £16, out of Bywell Andrew and Slaley per annum £20, be vested and settled upon the said Mr. Gibson' (c).
1659. Alexander Gordon, chosen to be minister, April 4th, 1659 (c); was ejected in 1662 after the Act of Uniformity (Calamy, *Continuation*, p. 685) and went into Scotland, where he became minister to the marquis of Argyle at Inverary, and, living to a great age, died in 1714 (Wodrow, *History of the Sufferings of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 318).

¹ 'Maye yt please your lordship to knowe that after ye deathe of Gilbert Spence, late vicare of Tynemooth, I presumed to wryte a letter to your lordship in the behalfe off one Wylliam Robinson, that your lordship woulde be pleased to bestowe your gift theroff to him. The man hathe for dyvers yeares by paste taught some off my bretheren, and I knowinge his carryadge to be honest and his suffycyencye suche as he ys able to serve that cure better then heretofore yt hathe beene, beinge a batchalour off arte and a preacher, makes me the more desierous to have him placed there.

Synce which tyme I understand your honour hathe bestowed your gifte theroff off one Lawson, whose insuffycyencye and yll condycion hathe so longe beene knowne to my lorde of Durham that he wyll nott admytt off him. My humble suite to your lordship ys that your honour woulde be pleased to bestowe your gift theroff off him whome I fermerly recomended by my letter to your lordship and graunt your honour's presentment to this Robinson, who hathe alredeye my gift theroff so farr as ys in me, I beinge joynt purchasor off ye rectory off Tynemoothe and advowsonne theroff frome my coosen Peter Delavale, off whome your lordship purchased ye other moyetic.'

Letter from Sir Ralph Delaval to Henry, ninth earl of Northumberland, dated August 12th, 1607. Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

1662. Henry Ashburnham, admitted October 29th, 1662 (*f*) (*Durham Register*, Neile and Cosin, fol. 101 b); curate at St. Andrew's, Newcastle, 1667; buried in St. John's church in that town, May 28th, 1669 (Brand, vol. i. p. 193).
1668. Thomas Dockwray, D.D., vicar of Newburn, 1652-1667, and of Whitburn, 1667-1672, also chaplain to the earl of Sandwich, and fell in action against the Dutch, May 28th, 1672.¹
1673. Stephen Dockwray, M.A., son of the above, instituted February 10th, 1672/3 (*b*); of Sidney-Sussex College, Cambridge; died September 20th, 1681 (*h*); buried in the chancel of Christ Church (*h*).
1682. Thomas Dockwray, M.A. brother of the above, instituted February 22nd, 1681/2 (*b*), or March 13th, 1681/2 (*e*); of St. John's College, Camb.; matriculated April 14th, 1673, aged 16 (*d*); also perpetual curate of Wallsend (*g*); buried February 24th, 1724/5 (*a*).
1736. Charles Ward (*e*), of Lincoln College, Oxon.; matriculated June 28th, 1733, aged 18; B.A. 1737; M.A. 1740 (*e*); vicar of Whittingham, 1763-1773; also vicar of Chatton and of Longhorsley; died July 11th, 1785, aged 77; buried at Tynemouth priory.
1749. Emanuel Potter, instituted May 6th, 1749 (*b*); inducted June 8th (*e*); of Queen's College, Oxon.; matriculated July 5th, 1733, aged 18 (*c*); nominated perpetual curate of Wallsend, 1760 (*g*); died November 18th, 1789; buried at Cramlington.
1789. Charles Charleton, instituted November 27th, 1789 (*b*), of Lincoln College, Oxon.; matriculated December 5th, 1780, aged 19; B.A. 1784; M.A. 1787 (*c*); died August 18th, 1824, aged 65; buried at Christ Church (*h*).
1825. George Dixon, M.A., after the death of Charlton, inducted February 26th, 1825 (*e*) (*f*) of Catherine Hall, Cambridge; afterwards vicar of Helmsley in Yorkshire.
1830. Christopher Reed, on the cession of Dixon, instituted July 19th, 1830 (*f*), of Exeter College, Oxon.; matriculated May 9th, 1815, aged 17; B.A. 1828; M.A. 1829 (*c*); died July 21st, 1868; buried at Christ Church (*h*).
1868. Thomas Brutton, inducted December 8th, 1868 (*e*), of Pembroke College, Oxon.; matriculated January 23rd, 1845, aged 17; B.A. 1848; M.A. 1851; honorary canon of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, 1885; rural dean, 1885 (*e*); died January 16th, 1903; buried at Christ Church (*h*).
1899. Thomas Emerson Crawhall of Trinity College, Cambridge, on the cession of Brutton; B.A. 1889; M.A. 1900; rector of Newton Hall, 1898; honorary canon of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, 1906.

(*a*) *Tynemouth Registers*.

(*b*) *Liber Institutionum*, P.R.O.

(*c*) *Foster, Alumni Oxonienses*.

(*d*) *Admissions to St. John College, Cambridge*.

(*e*) *Vestry Minute Books*.

(*f*) *Bishop's Certificate*, P.R.O.

(*g*) *Randall, State of the Churches*.

(*h*) *Monumental Inscriptions, Christ Church*.

TYNEMOUTH REGISTERS.—SELECTED ENTRIES.²

- 1635, June 16. John Hall and Luce Delavale, married.
- 1636, Nov. 27. Humphray Coward and Anne Read, married.
- 1639/40, Jan. 7. Gilbert Errington and Jaine Read, married.
- 1651/2, Jan. 1. Mr. Raiph Fenwick and Jaine Milbron, widow, married.
- 1662, June 24. Ralph Killingsworth and Mabell Halton, married.

¹ Mr. Humphrey Bell (minister of Ponteland) had this expression: 'What comfort should I now have had, had I conform'd against my conscience, as (says he) I doubt Mr. Dockwray did?'; meaning Mr. Thomas Dockwray, afterwards Dr. Dockwray, who was by the duke of York prefer'd to be chaplain to the earl of Sandwich, who (as I have been inform'd) was burnt in the ship in which the earl was burnt. Calamy, *Ejected Ministers*, vol. ii. p. 514.

Archdeacon Basire noted, May 4th, 1669, that Dr. Dockwray did not wear a surplice when he preached, and omitted the service after the sermon. In 1671 he was pronounced contumacious and as having no institution, induction, or licence for Christ Church, and as neglecting procurations. Hunter MSS. No. 137.

² The registers, edited by the Rev. R. H. Couchman, are in course of publication. Further extracts from them are given by Mr. H. A. Adamson in *Arch. Acl.* 2nd series, vol. xix. pp. 197-216.

- 1663, Oct. 15. Henry Ashburnham, vicar of Tynemouth, and Mrs. Mary Lambe, married in Walsend church.
- 1672, May 7. John Kellet and Jane Carnabie, married.
- 1675, June 27. Mr. Ralph Kellio and Anne Stanton, married.
- 1675, Aug. 31. Mr. Peter Lorrence and Jane Chester, married.
- 1678, Dec. 16. Mr. Robert White, minister, and Mrs. Mary Atkinson, both of Bowdon, in ye county palatine of Durham, married.
- 1680/1, Feb. 13. Mr. Thomas Howard and Mrs. Frances Ogle, married.
- 1684, April 6. Mr. William Whitehead and Mrs. Hannah Pattison, married.
- 1684, July 8. Mr. William Collingwood and Mrs. Margaret Clarke, married.
- 1686/7, Feb. 10. Mr. Thomas Arey and Mrs. Dorothy Sisterson, married.
- 1686/7, Feb. 11. Mr. Jacob Wilkinson and Mrs. Barbara Smith, married.
- 1694, June 10. Mr. Robert Durham and Mrs. Mary Murton, married.
- 1694, Dec. 19. Mr. Richard Bates and Mrs. Margaret Clarke, married.
- 1697, April 6. Mr. Ralph Clarke and Mrs. Elizabeth Browne, married.
- 1698, July 4. John Roddam of Litle Houghton, esq., and Maddam Winnifrid Milbourne, junior, of Chirton, married.
- 1702, April 28. Mr. Joseph Bonner, vicar of Bowlum, and Mrs. Isabell Hickeringill, married.
- 1710/1, Feb. 4. Francis Brownhill and Mrs. Susannah Roddam, married.
- 1711, Dec. 25. Mr. Robert Loadman and Margaret Story of Shields, married.
- 1712, March 31. Mr. John Severan, Capt. Leiuett, and Mrs. Margaret Bates, married.
- 1723, Sept. 5. Mr. Michael Johnson and Mrs. Mary Depommas.
- 1730, Sept. 29. Mr. Robert Bugnel and Mrs. Anne Storo, married.
- 1731/2, Jan. 27. Mr. Benjamin Kellio and Martha Vasy, married.
- 1752, July 25. Mr. Robert Clark and Mrs. Dorothy Vanholt of Newcastle, married.
- 1753, Oct. 2. Grey Cooper, esq., and Mrs. Margaret Grey, married.
- 1753/4, Jan. 31. Mr. George Ward of Whitby and Mrs. Mary Errington, married.
- 1753/4, Mar. 24. Mr. Henry Ogle of Liverpool, and Mrs. Jane Ogle of Newcastle.

CHARITIES.¹

16.... Robert Spearman gave a cottage and close for the schoolmaster: also ten shillings a year out of a house in Tynemouth for washing surplices.²

1650. George Milbourne of Chirton bequeathed ten shillings yearly to the poor of the parish. The yearly sum of ten shillings is a charge on the Collingwood property at Chirton, and is distributed by the churchwardens among the poor of the township of Chirton.

1654. Gawen Forster bequeathed the sum of ten shillings yearly to the poor of the parish, a benefaction now lost.

1671. George Milbourne of Chirton bequeathed four pounds a year to the native poor of the parish, to be distributed on the day of his burial. This bequest does not appear to have taken effect.

1675. William Collinson of Tynemouth gave ten shillings yearly to the poor of the parish, to be distributed at Easter. This has also ceased to be paid.

1678. Sir Mark Milbank of Hahnaby, bart., gave half of the tithes of corn and grain in Tynemouth township to the vicar and poor of the said parish, namely, two pounds per annum to the vicar, and the remainder to the poor: the latter portion to be distributed by the vicar and churchwardens on the first Sunday after Lady-day and the first Sunday after Michaelmas.

1703. John Spearman of Durham bequeathed to the vicar and churchwardens of Tynemouth '£20 towards a stocke for the parish, the yearly interest to be applied for the teaching of one or more poore boy or boys of the parish by birth the catechism and principles of the protestant religion of the

¹ Lists of Tynemouth charities are given in the *Charity Commissioners' Twenty-third Report* (1830, pp. 438-443, and in *Parliamentary Papers*, 1895, No. 147.

² Ralph Spearman's MSS.

established church, and in reading, writing, and arithmetick and navigation, to fitt them for the sea or manuall trades, recommending the towns of East Chirton, Preston and Tynemouth, where my paternal estate is, to have the preference, and excepting North Shields.¹

1703. Eleanor Wilson of North Shields bequeathed £25 to the poor of the parish, the interest to be distributed by the churchwardens every Christmas Day.

1730. William Raper, storekeeper at Tynemouth castle and Clifford's fort, bequeathed the interest of £30 to the poor of the parish. This sum is charged on a house in the Low Street, North Shields, and is distributed half-yearly, on February 2nd and August 2nd.

1768. Anthony Pearson of North Shields bequeathed to the vicar and churchwardens the interest of £50, to be distributed yearly on Christmas Eve to six poor widows of seamen.² The bequest appears never to have taken effect.

1785. James Storey of the Low Lights agreed, in return for permission to erect a pew in the parish church, that the sum of thirty shillings should be paid yearly by him and his heirs to the curate of the parish, towards the education of four poor children. This agreement terminated in 1792, when the church was re-seated.

1788. Margaret Richardson of West Ham, Middlesex, bequeathed to the Four-and-twenty of the parish the sum of £466 13s. 4d., invested in East India annuities, on trust to distribute the interest among the poor of the township of North Shields only. The dividends on the stock are distributed half-yearly, for the benefit of the poor, by the two acting churchwardens for the townships of Tynemouth and North Shields.

1790. Winifred Lawson of Chirton bequeathed the interest of £100 to the poor of the parish.

1811. George Crawford of King's Langley bequeathed the interest of £700, invested in three per cent. consols, to trustees, for the poor of the village of Tynemouth only. The dividends are distributed about Easter by the vicar and churchwardens.

1824. Thomas Kettlewell of North Shields bequeathed four annuities of two guineas each to the Bible Society for Tynemouth parish, the preacher for the time being at Howard Street Methodist chapel, the North Shields and Tynemouth Dispensary, and the Indigent Sick Society of the parish of Tynemouth. He directed his trustees to support, out of the proceeds of his estate, one or more schoolmasters for instructing children in a charity-school built on land in George Street, North Shields, on land given by the testator for that purpose in 1819. The trustees were to employ the remainder of the annual revenue in providing books, etc., in clothing the children, and in other beneficial purposes. Orphans and fatherless children were to have the preference for admission. In the appointment of a school-master, a lame person was to be preferred.

1827. Charles Charleton, M.D., of North Shields devised his house in Dockwray Square and other property, subject to his wife's life-interest, to trustees for the purpose of establishing a fever-house to be joined to the Tynemouth Dispensary. The bequest was contested and failed to take effect.

1859. Robert Pow of North Shields devised £2,700 on trust, as to two-thirds, for the North Shields Town Mission Society, and, as to one-third, for the Missions to Seamen Society. The fund is managed in accordance with a scheme drawn up by the Charity Commissioners in 1879.

1872. Joseph Elder Heward of St. George's Place, Hyde Park, devised the residue of his estate, amounting to £4,200, to the mayor, aldermen, and burgesses of the borough of Tynemouth; the income to be applied by them for clothing, educating, and bringing up poor and deserving orphan children of sailors belonging to the borough. This sum is administered by a committee of the borough council.

1874. J. Aynsley bequeathed £50 to be invested for the benefit of the poor at Monkseaton.

1884. Edward Shotton devised the interest on £100 to the Indigent Sick Society, and like sums to the North Shields and Tynemouth Dispensary, and to the Tynemouth Sailors' Home.

¹ Surtees, *Durham*, vol. i. p. 96. 'This sum was laid out with other moneys for the school, viz., Spearman's gift, three boys from Preston, two from Chirton, one from Tynemouth. My father and aunt Walker always named boys. It was lost after my speaking to old Collingwood. He said our family naming was not of right but from respect to benefactors.' Ralph Spearman's MSS.

² Mr. H. A. Adamson's collections.

MISCELLANEA.

1505. John Hebborne, vicar; William Bell, chaplain. The parishioners say that the vicar does not reside in his benefice as he is bound to do, and they say that matins and vespers are not said at fitting and usual hours. They also say that the glass windows in the choir are broken, and it is enjoined on the impropiators that they be sufficiently repaired and mended before the feast of the Purification next. *Ecclesiastical Proceedings*, Surt. Soc. No. 22, p. xx.

1535, May 8th. Charge of adultery with Sir Philip Dacre, knt., brought against Dorothy Clapam of the parish of Tynemouth. She appeared and purged herself by oath; was inhibited from consorting with Sir Philip Dacre in future. *Ecclesiastical Depositions*, Surt. Soc. No. 21, p. 50.

1535. Tynemouth vicarage worth yearly £24 19s. 4d. clear. *Valor Ecclesiasticus*, Record Commission, vol. v. p. 327.

1601, October 13th. Their communion book is torn and not sufficient. *Visitation Books*, Durham Episcopal Registry.

1603/4, February 6th. Office against Simon Ward and Nicholas Hunter that they refused to pay their wine silver; against John Scott and Barbara his wife for not receiving the holy communion at Easter last. *Ibid.*

1605, June 8th. Office against Ann, wife of Simon Ward, for scolding in the church in the time of divine service on the Sabbath day, so as the minister could not read the service. *Ibid.*

1607/8, February 4th. They want the table of the commandments, a register book in parchment, a chest or locker with three locks. *Ibid.*

1638. Assessment for the parish :

	£.	s.	d.
Cessment of 4s. per farm, 55 farms	11	0	0
Salt pans, 30 at 4s.	6	0	0
Taverns, 4 at 4s.	0	16	0
Cobles, 10 at 2s.	1	0	0
Wherries, 20 at 2s.	2	0	0
Alehouses, 100 at 2s.	10	0	0
Of every mill	0	4	0

Deduct for the outshire farm, for each one-third part of their cess, being 18 farms, for a whole cess 24s. More the outshire to pay. More Flatworth to pay. *Tynemouth Vestry Books*.

1645. It is ordered that the burials shalbe in the place appointed for burying, paying the minister his dues, and, if any other ground be broken att Spittle, to pay to John Cramlington for every buriall out of the ordinary place 6d., viz., the church yard. *Ibid.*

1658, June 28th. 'I doe ingage to give teen pounds towards ye building a church for ye parish of Tynemouth.' (Signed) W. Collinson. *Ibid.*

1658, December 8th. 'Whereas Mr. Frederick Simpson, preacher of God's word, was invited from London and presented by Ralph Gardner, esq., to be minister of the parish of Tynmouth in the county of Northumberland, where he did for severall Lord's days preach wholsom orthodox devinitie, but for want of a laudable voyce through the indisposition of his body they are deseirous to chose another; wee the twenty four of the said parish doe, in the behalf of ourselves and the rest of the parishioners, and in consideration of his charges in his jurneys and the said devine's pains, order and allow him the meanes or stipend which belonges to ye said parish from the tyme our laite minister, Mr. Gibson, left it, and until such tyme as we have chosen another; also wee giving him all harty thanks for his said great paines.' *Ibid.*

1658/9, January 3rd. To the Commissioners for Propagating the Gospel. 'Wee the churchwardens of the parish of Tynmouth do humbly present the bearer Mr. John Page, minister, to be examined by you whether he is fit to receive a call by this parish to be their minister, he having spent some tyme and paines, and is genarly liked by the said parish.' Upon examination in the history of the Bible and other things relating to the ministerial functions, the said Page was found 'very wake and ignorant and altogether unfit to preach or exercise in the work of ye ministry.' *Ibid.*

1658/9, January 8th. Received for the distressed protestants in Poland and twenty families banished out of Bohemia the sum of £2 14s. 3d.; paid to the high sheriff, Mr. Edward Fenwick, for there use. *Ibid.*

1662, October 24th. 'Whereas in these late times ye bookes, vestments, furniture and ornaments belonging to our church have either been plundered, purloyned, imbezeled or made away, so that none of them of any consequence are remaining to be found for ye performance of devine offices there;' a rate was imposed for providing the articles required. *Tynemouth Vestry Books*.

1667/8, March. It was ordered that each farmer and copyholder in the inshire should pay 5s. the farm, and the Shields to raise as much as the county amounted unto, for the building of a pulpit and glasing the windows. *Ibid.*

1674. The names of the Four-and-twenty. For the country, Sir Ralph Delavale, Captain Thos. Love, Ralph Reed, esq., Thos. Otway, Mich. Spearman, John Butler, Henry Archbold, Wm. Reay, Ro. Rotherforth, Robt. Dove, Edw. Spearman, Thos. Hall and Jas. Robinson. For the Shields, Wm. Collinson, esq., Jeremiah Low, Abraham Readhead, Edw. Toll, Edw. Hodson, Jas. Killerby, Jo. Hunter, Jo. Howlet, Jo. Clarke, Robt. Story, Geo. Bradley. *Ibid.*

1682, Easter Tuesday. Received of Gabriel Coulson, clerke, one silver bowle (or chalice) and silver cover, two flaggons, two plates, one table-cloath and one napkin, all of them belonging to the communion table, together with a large pewtaer bason belonging to the same. *Ibid.*

1684, December 18th. Ordered this day and year abovesaid by the vicar and gentlemen of the four and twenty, that a cess of 1s. 6d. per farme in the inshire, and 12d. per farme in Tinnmouth, and ye collyeryes mills demaines and free lands in Tinnmouth aforesaid at 10s. per pound, according to a schedule drawn by ye four and twenty, and the rectory of Tinnmouth £1 10s., for the repaireing of the chancell, and 2½d. in ye pound in North Shields, be laid on and forthwith collected for the repairing of the church. *Ibid.*

1725 (*circa*). Tynemouth vicarage. According to Dr. Ellison's paper the value is £80, but according to my account taken in the visitation, £100. The vicar hath neither glebe, tithe, nor Easter offerings, but the Crown pays him a pension of £30 per annum (of which he is to pay his curate at Earsdon £4 13s. 4d.), and 40s. per annum was left by deed by Sir Mark Milbank out of his part of the tithes of Tynemouth town. The duke of Somerset pays him £10 per annum, but that is gratuitous and may be withdrawn at pleasure. Books, Foxe's *Martyrs*, three volumes, belonging to the parish. *Archdeacon Sharpe's Visitation*.

1736 (*circa*). Vicarage of Tynemouth in sequestracion. Resident families, 800; 200 dissenters; two meeting houses, one Presbyterian, one Quaker; value of living about £200; a public school; Nathaniel Tavenor and W. Donkin, masters; catechism with Williams; sacrament once a month; 100 come, 300 come at Easter and Whitsunday. *Bishop Chandler's Visitation*.

Churchwarden's accounts. 1759, to putting three women in the stocks, 4s. 6d.;¹ 1776, to cleaning the Dogger letch and conveying the rubbish in the church way, 14s. 4d. *Churchwardens' Books*.

1775 (*circa*). Tynemouth vicarage. Clear yearly value, £41 18s. 0¾d.; yearly tenths, £2 9s. 11¼d.; bishop's procuration money, 14s.; archdeacon's procuration, 12s.; real value, £90. Randall, *State of the Churches*.

1792, July 28th. 'The boundaries of the parish of Tynemouth were perambulated on Wednesday last by the vicar, the principal gentlemen and churchwardens, agreeable to the instructions of the bishop of Durham.' *Newcastle Chronicle*.

1795, April 9th. At a vestry meeting held to consider the most effectual means of raising men for the navy, agreeable to an Act of Parliament passed March 5th, 1795, it was agreed that the overseers and churchwardens should be allowed to offer a bounty of thirty guineas for every recruit to be raised for the township of Tynemouth. *Vestry Books*.

1823, December 10th. Mr. Joel Ventermann was appointed town cryer or bellman; he was to be provided with a blue coat, red cape, and three-cocked hat trimmed with lace. *Ibid.*

1827, April 29th. Tynemouth vicarage. Certain payments, Crown, £28; Sir Ralph Milbank's legacy, £2; other moneys, £4; claimable fees, £180; actual receipt, £290. Duty, two services on Sunday, and sermon in the morning for the vicar, but the lecturer preaches in the afternoon, which is his whole duty. *Archdeacon Singleton's Visitation*.²

¹ The old stocks were in use as late as 1820. They stood at the foot of Preston Road until 1881, when they were removed to the churchyard. A photograph of them is reproduced in *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Newcastle*, 2nd series, vol. x. p. 298.

² Further extracts from the Tynemouth Vestry Books are given by Mr. H. A. Adamson in *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xix. pp. 93-104.

THE RECTORY OF TYNEMOUTH.

Tynemouth rectory was valued in Pope Innocent's *Valor* of 1264 at £73 6s. 8d.,¹ and in Pope Nicholas's taxation of 1291 at £71 12s. 10d.² This represents its net value. A more detailed account sets it out as follows :

	£	s.	d.
Tithe of grain of Tynemouth, £8 13s. 4d.; of Whitley, £6; of Monkseaton, £8 13s. 4d.; of Earsdon, £8; of Preston, £5 6s. 8d.; of the three Chirtons, £9; of Milneton and Shields, 5s.; of the two Backworths, £2; of Seghill, £7 6s. 8d.; of Holywell, £5 13s. 4d.; of Newsham, £2 13s. 4d.; of Seaton Delaval, £12; of Hartley, £12. Total ³ ...	87	11	8
Tithe from the mills, £3 6s. 8d.; tithe of wool and lambs, £3 9s.; tithe of geese and pigs, 5s. 6d.; tithe of hay and flax, £2; tithe of wax, £2; from baptisms and churchings, £1; from mortuaries, £3 10s.; from annual offerings £6 10s.; from sundries, £2. Total ...	24	1	2
Sum total ...	111	12	10
Deductions. For alms, £30. For pittances to the monks, £10. ⁴			

The tithe of corn, fleeces, and lambs was estimated in 1340 at £76 12s. 10d.⁵ In 1538 the total yield was £79 7s. 8d., namely :

	£	s.	d.
Tithe of grain of Tynemouth, £6; of Whitley, £2 10s.; of Monkseaton and Hartley, £12; of Earsdon, £4; of Preston, £2 10s.; of East Chirton, £2 10s.; of Middle Chirton, £2 13s. 4d.; of Backworth, £5; of Seghill, £4; of Holywell, £3 6s. 8d.; of Newsham, £1; of Seaton Delaval, £10 5s.; of Murton, £2; of Burradon, £1 6s. 8d. Total ...	59	1	8
Tithe of wool and lambs, £4 6s. 8d.; tithe of flax and hemp, 19s. 4d.; tithe of fish, £5; ⁶ small tithes, £8; altarage or Easter offerings, £2.* Total ...	20	6	0
Sum total ...	79	7	8+

* Easter offerings were, for a hen, 9d.; for smoke, 1d.; for sacrament wine, 2d. from each house; for each person over sixteen years of age, 2d. Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

† Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. pp. 230-231.

¹ Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. ii. vol. iii. p. 424.

² *Taxatio Ecclesiastica*, Record Com., p. 316; Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. iii. vol. i. p. 349.

³ Excepting the tithe corn of Murton and Burradon, which formed part of the vicar's endowment.

⁴ *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 108 b, and *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 56; printed by Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 593.

⁵ Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. iii. vol. iii. p. xxxvi.

⁶ A suit between the prior and convent of Tynemouth of the one part and certain of the parishioners of Tynemouth of the other part was heard in 1366 in the consistory court of Durham. The claim of the prior and convent was there recognised to the tenth fish, great or small, caught in salt water or fresh, in ship or boat, by the parishioners of Tynemouth, and landed by them; at North Shields or sold at Newcastle market; as well as to the tenth penny of the market price of all fish caught by the parishioners of Tynemouth and sold by them elsewhere, without any drawback for salting or other charges. The notarial instrument is printed from the register of the prior and convent of Durham (*Registrum Tertium*, fol. 108) in Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. iii. vol. ii. p. 112. Special regulations had to be made for tithing fish caught in vessels owned by men of North Shields and South Shields in partnership, as the two towns lay in separate parishes, and Jarrow monastery had a share in the tithes. These were as follows :

‘Modus decimandi hominum de South Sheels navigantium in batellis de la North Sheels. Memorandum quod die martis proxima post festum Sancti Dunstani episcopi A.D. 1313 comparuit personaliter

The corn tithes of Cowpen in the chapelry of Horton, and of Elwick and Owton in the parish of Hart in Durham, were also reckoned to be parcels of the rectory, and brought up its annual value to £96. Upon the suppression of Tynemouth priory, the rectory came into the possession of the Crown. Separate leases were made of the corn tithes of East Chirton, Burradon, Seaton Delaval, Cowpen, Elwick and Owton, as well as of the tithe of fish for Hartley and Blyth, and the tithe of hay was farmed to the tenants in the various townships of the parish. The residue of the rectory was leased on March 9th, 1538/9, to Sir Thomas Hilton,¹ and continued, during the sixteenth century, to form part of the maintenance of the captain of Tynemouth castle. The tithe-barns within the castle were kept in good repair, and thither the tenants within the parish carted their tithe corn by custom, 'without any consideration saving bread and drink.'²

On February 9th, 1588/9, the rectory and the advowson of the vicarage were granted by the Crown to Edmund Downing and Charles Dodding, as trustees for sale, to be held in common socage, rendering yearly £5 15s. for the rectory and £30 as the stipend of the vicar of Tynemouth.³ Downing and Dodding sold the same on June 28th following, for £1,050, to Ralph Delaval and Peter Delaval of Tynemouth,⁴ who subsequently

in ecclesia beati Johannis de Novocastro Robertus Gray piscator de North Sheels coram procuratore prioris et conventus de Tinemouth, etc. Idem Robertus fatebatur decimam cujuscumque generis piscium in mari captorum cujuslibet navis et battelli super terram dictorum religiosorum apud North Sheels applicantium, praefatis religiosiis, scilicet priori et conventui predictis et ecclesie sue de Tinemouth, fore et esse debitam et efficaciter pertinere; ita videlicet quod si aliqui sint piscatores de South Sheels, de parochia ecclesie de Jarrow, in hujusmodi navi sive battello, qui lucri et damni sunt consortes piscatorum de North Sheels, pro decima duntaxat portiones eorum contingenti procurator dictorum religiosorum virorum procuratori magistri ecclesie de Jarrow predicta de pecunia numerata juridicaliter respondebit, cum fuerit competenter requisitus ex parte magistri antedicti.' Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

In 1538 a salmon fishery in the Tyne was farmed by the fishermen of North Shields, subject to the customary payment of one salmon out of every twenty to the bailiff of the town. Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 223. This was subsequently commuted for a charge of ten shillings on each coble. Duke of Northumberland's MSS. Crown leases of the bailiwick of North Shields also included the tithe of the great fish called Shetland lings and the tithe of small fish caught in cobbles.

¹ *Ibid.* p. 217.

² In a letter written in 1595 to the ninth earl of Northumberland, Peter Delaval describes the manner in which the tithe corn was collected: 'Your lordship's collectors of the tythes, when they were brought into the castle, being entreated by the tenants to allowe them sum one rigg and sum tow rigs of corne, being lozen corne for sede to the quantatie of x or xx threves, as it pleased the collectors to yeeld them more or lesse, which (for the better furnishing ther grounds with good sede, for the avoyding your lordship's expence in hiring laborers to carrie the tythe stooks together on lieapes, for the ease of the tenants' cattle in taking ther tithes upp together uppon one rigg or tow rigs rather then to go to everie wikered stook, and for expedicion in leading in corne of all hands) they, your lordship's collectors, yeelded therunto, allwayes provided that they might choose ther tyth together of one rigg or more throughout all the rest of ther crops after the same quantitie of x or xx threves allowed them for sede, being of like bignes of sheif that ther sede-corne was of.' Duke of Northumberland's MSS. Lozen corn perhaps refers to corn that has been cut but not bound. Compare *Promptorium Parvulorum*: 'losyn or unbyndyn, solvo.'

³ *Patent Rolls*, 30 Eliz. pt. 15.

⁴ *Harleian Charters*, Brit. Mus. 79, F. 17.

conveyed one moiety to their kinsman, Robert Delaval of Seaton Delaval.¹ The other moiety was made over on June 23rd, 1602, to Henry, ninth earl of Northumberland, in part payment of Peter Delaval's debts. The fee-farm rent of £5 15s., reserved to the Crown upon the sale of the rectory, was sold under Act of Parliament in 1650, and is now payable to the Company of Merchant Venturers of Bristol, for the maintenance of a hospital and almshouse in that city.

The representatives of the Percy and Delaval families continued each to hold a moiety of the advowson, and made alternate presentations to the living, until the year 1838, when Hugh, third duke of Northumberland, purchased the Delaval moiety from Sir Jacob Astley, bart. The duke of Northumberland is the principal tithe-owner in the parish, having, besides the moiety acquired in 1602, the second moiety of the tithes of corn in the townships of Seghill, Burradon, Backworth, Earsdon, Whitley, and Preston. These tithes were purchased on October 15th, 1818, from Sir Ralph Noel, *alias* Milbanke, bart., heir and representative of Mark Milbanke of Newcastle, to whom Sir Ralph Delaval of Seaton Delaval, bart., had made conveyance on October 19th, 1676. Sir Mark Milbanke of Halnaby, bart., devised his moiety of the tithes of corn and grain in Tynemouth township in 1678 to the vicar and the poor of the parish. The moieties of the corn tithes in North Shields, Chirton, Monkseaton, and Murton, are in the hands of various owners; and those of Holywell, Hartley, Seaton Delaval, and Newsham have been merged in the freeholds. In 1838, the tithe payments were commuted for fixed rent-charges.²

NON-ESTABLISHED CHURCHES.

George Fox, the founder of the Society of Friends, visited Newcastle in 1653, and the influence of his teaching was felt at North Shields, since meetings for worship were shortly afterwards held by his followers in Isabel Larkin's house in that town.³ Four years later Fox was again at Newcastle, and thence travelled through the county, having meetings and visiting friends, 'and a very good meeting,' he says in his journal, 'we had at

¹ This moiety was confirmed to Sir Robert Delaval by letters patent dated February 16th, 1608/9, in consideration of £600 paid by him to Thomas, earl of Suffolk.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ Compare Steel, *Early Friends in the North*, London, 1905.

Lientenant Dove's, where many were turned to the Lord and His teaching.'¹ As early as 1661 a graveyard for the use of Friends was provided at Cullercoats.² On June 6th of that year, at a meeting at Robert Linton's at Laygate, South Shields, John Dove and William Dove of Whitley, yeomen, Mary Dove of the same place, spinster, George Linton and Lawrence Haslam, both of North Shields, and others, were apprehended by Major Graham, deputy-governor of Tynemouth castle, and were by him cast into 'nasty holes' in that fortress, where they lay a full month.³ Similarly in January, 1681, Richard Pindar of North Shields, was presented at quarter sessions for having a meeting of quakers there.⁴ In 1698 notice was given to the justices of the peace that a newly-erected brick building at the west end of North Shields was desired to be licensed for a place of public worship by the people called quakers.⁵ This meeting house stood at the Bull Ring, and near to it, in Coach Lane, opposite to the spot where Trinity church now stands, a piece of copyhold land was, before the year 1729, purchased from Robert Lawson of Chirton and converted into a quaker burial place.⁶ In 1800 a new meeting house was built in Stephenson Street, and enlarged in 1849 for the better accommodation of the monthly meeting. In 1811 the society purchased a piece of ground on the opposite side of the street for a burial ground. This, together with the old graveyard near the Bull Ring, was closed by order in council under the Burial Acts of 1853-1854, and Friends now bury in the public cemetery, in a portion of ground allotted to them by the Town Council.⁷

After the passing of the Act of Uniformity, forty ministers in Northumberland resigned the livings to which they had been appointed during the Commonwealth. Among them were Alexander Gordon, who was ejected from the parish church of Tynemouth and retired to Scotland; William Henderson, who, ejected from the parochial chapel of Earsdon, became chaplain to Sir Ralph Delaval, to whom he dedicated his 'Discourse against

¹ Fox, *Journal*, p. 281. The original manuscript of the journal was in the possession of the late Mr. Charles James Spence of South Preston lodge, North Shields, who would have contributed to this volume, had not illness prevented, a historical account of the Society of Friends at Cullercoats and North Shields.

² See above, p. 281. ³ Besse, *Collection of the Sufferings of the People called Quakers*, vol. i. pp. 174-175.

⁴ *Sessions Order Books*, vol. i. ⁵ *Sessions Papers*, 1697, Christmas, No. 14. ⁶ *Tynemouth Court Rolls*.

⁷ *An Account of Charitable Trusts within the compass of the Durham Quarterly Meeting*. Some extracts from the register of burials and from the cash books of the society may be found in a paper by Mr. Maberly Phillips on 'Forgotten Burying Grounds of the Society of Friends,' *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xvi.

Conformity;' and the learned John Lomax, ejected from the church of Wooler, who thereupon settled in North Shields, where he maintained himself as an apothecary and physician. These three men may be regarded as the fathers of Protestant Nonconformity in the parish of Tynemouth.

Lomax,¹ who, though never imprisoned, 'suffered much on account of his nonconformity,' and 'was often obliged to flee from his family and wander about the country in the most inclement weather,' on November 18th, 1672, took out one of the unconstitutional licences, granted by Charles II. to those of tender conscience, as an 'Independent teacher' and preached and taught in the house of Mrs. Isabel Green in North Shields, which was licensed for the purpose, May 13th, 1672.² He was presented at quarter sessions, January 11th, 1681/2, for keeping a conventicle and preaching publicly contrary to the statutes in that case provided.³

A small stone structure, afterwards a bake-house, in Thorntree Lane, now called Magnesia Bank, was, so far as is known, the first building set apart as a chapel. Traces of texts of scripture which had been painted on the walls were visible as late as 1880. A larger chapel, near the lower end of the town, was erected in the early years of the eighteenth century, but the church was weakened and ultimately exhausted by a secession which took place in 1759 during the ministry of the Rev. Joseph Wilkinson. The following is a list of ministers: John Lomax, died May 25th, 1693; John Turnbull, 1693-1723; James Richardson; Joseph Wilkinson; Isaac Robinson, died August 23rd, 1782, etc.⁴ The register of births and baptisms, 1756-1812, is deposited at Somerset House.

The members of Mr. Wilkinson's congregation who seceded in 1759 assembled in a room at Wooden Bridge under the ministry of the Rev. James Rae. They afterwards built the High Meeting, and subsequently in 1811 a chapel in Howard Street. By the trust deed the minister must be a licenciate of the Church of Scotland; hence the building is called the

¹ For an account of John Lomax by Mr. Maberly Phillips, see *Arch. Ael.* 3rd series, vol. ii. Cf. *Memoir of Ambrose Barnes*, Surt. Soc. No. 50; and Calamy, *Continuation of the Account of Ejected Ministers*, pp. 670-672.

² For list of licences granted for Northumberland and Durham see *Arch. Ael.* 2nd series, vol. xiii. p. 63.

³ *Sessions Order Books*, vol. i. Fifty other persons were presented for nonconformity in that year by the churchwardens of Tynemouth. Rev. John Hodgson's *Collections*, from a volume of entries of presentments at Archdeacon Turner's visitation, formerly in the possession of Mr. John Bell.

⁴ The register of burials of Tynemouth parish contains the following entries: 1730, April 20th. Mr. William Cowden, dissenting teacher, Shields, bur. 1733, Sept. 24. Mr. Worthington, dissenting teacher, of North Shields, bur.

Scotch church. A schoolhouse adjoining the chapel was built in 1843. The register of births and baptisms from 1783 to 1837 is deposited at Somerset House. The following is a list of the ministers: James Rae,¹ 1759-1803; Walter Knox² (previously assistant minister), 1803-1817; John Cochrane, 1817-1823; Charles Thomson, 1823-1840; Charles F. Buchan, D.D., 1840-1843; George J. C. Duncan, 1844-1851; William Reive, 1852-1854; Colin A. Mackenzie, 1854-1864; John Stewart,³ 1866-1872; and the Rev. David Tasker, the present minister.

St. Andrew's chapel, in Camden Street, was erected in 1818 by members of the Scotch Church who were dissatisfied with the theological opinions of the Rev. John Cochrane. The trust deed provides that the minister may be either a Presbyterian, as was the first minister, the Rev. John Wilson, or an Independent, as have been all of his successors. The following is a list of ministers: John Wilson, D.D., 1818-1820; W. H. Stowell, D.D. (successively of Rotherham and Cheshunt colleges), 1820-1834; Archibald Jack, 1834-1867; J. Christien, 1868-1871; J. W. Ellis, 1872-1878; James Webb, 1878-1887; E. R. Palmer, M.A., 1888-1892; J. E. Brown, B.A., Ph.D., 1892-1895; W. H. Girling, 1896-1898; and the present minister, the Rev. H. S. Savage. The register of births and baptisms, 1817-1837, is deposited at Somerset House.

A General Associate or Anti-Burgher church was formed on May 1st, 1781, by a few residents in North and South Shields who had hitherto been members of the Blackett Street church in Newcastle. A house in Milburn Place, a theatre in the market-place, and chapels at the foot of Church Way and in an entry off Green Street were successively used as meeting-houses by the congregation. In 1812 the society removed to a chapel on the Ropery Banks which had been vacated by the Scotch Church, and in 1821 another move was made to a building in Norfolk Street, previously tenanted by a congregation of the old Northumbrian Classes, the present place of worship in Northumberland Square being built in 1858. The Anti-Burghers and other small bodies coalesced to form the United Presbyterian Church, and this in its turn united with the English Presbyterians in 1876 to form the Presbyterian Church of England, of which the chapel in Northumberland

¹ Died June 20th, 1803, aged 78. Monumental Inscription, Tynemouth priory.

² Died January 13th, 1817, aged 49. *Ibid.*

³ Cf. *The History of the English Presbyterian Church in North Shields*, by Revs. Charles Thomson and John Stewart.

Square is a local representative. The following is a list of the ministers : George More, 1781-1785 ; Alexander Armstrong, 1788-1810 ; Thomas Gilmour, 1813-1841 ; Thomas Bowman, 1842-1845 ; Henry Erskine Fraser, M.A., 1845-1856 ; William Salmond, B.A., D.D., 1858-1875 ; James Aitken, M.A., 1877-1881 ; William T. Bankhead, 1882-1890 ; David Christie, M.A., 1890-1897 ; Andrew Gillison, M.A., 1897-1899 ; and William Colville, M.A., the present minister.

John Wesley, in one of his memorable missionary tours, visited North Shields, and on June 24th, 1759, preached to an assembly the greater part of whom 'seemed to hear as for their lives.' He visited the place again on June 25th, 1761, and May 15th, 1764, on the latter occasion preaching 'to a very large yet serious congregation. How is the scene changed since my brother Charles preached here, when the people were ready to swallow him up ! Oh, what has God wrought on this land within four or five and twenty years !' He returned to the place in his subsequent tours in 1766, 1780, and 1788. The society, formed as a result of these efforts, in 1808 built a chapel in Howard Street which seated about 1,200 persons, and in which they assembled until 1889, when they removed to a new structure in Tynemouth Road, built and presented by Mr. Joseph Robinson of North Shields. The congregation also possess a lecture hall and schools. A register of births and baptisms, from 1800 to 1837, is deposited at Somerset House.

The Wesleyan Methodists also had a chapel in Percy Street, Tynemouth, which, about 1870, was converted into a schoolhouse and replaced by a larger chapel in Front Street. The society also possesses chapels at the Bull Ring, North Shields, at Chirton and at Whitley.

A disruption in the Society of Methodists in 1797, headed by the Rev. Alexander Kilham, led to the formation of the reformed society known as the Methodist New Connexion. This new body obtained the use of a chapel, erected in Milburn Place in 1786, originally used by the Methodists. Another congregation of Methodists of the New Connexion, formed in 1808, assembled in a building in Bell Street, at the foot of Church Street, now used as a Roman Catholic school, until 1836, when Salem chapel was built in Linskill Street.

The reformed society, known as Primitive Methodists,¹ formed a con-

¹ Cf. *The Origin and History of the Primitive Methodists*, by the Rev. H. B. Kendall, B.A.

gregation in 1822 which assembled in a building in Union Street until 1861, when a new chapel was erected in Saville Street West. From this church missions have spread over all the mining and populous districts of the county. One of the early offshoots was the Fisherman's chapel of Cullercoats, rebuilt in 1868, and now used as a school and lecture hall, having been superseded as a chapel by a building erected in 1899. The register of births and baptisms of the Primitive Methodists from 1823 to 1837 is deposited at Somerset House.

The United Free Methodists, comprising the Wesleyan Association, the Protestant Methodists, and the Arminian Methodists, together founded a church in North Shields in 1850, when they assembled in the Temperance Hall, Norfolk Street, until 1857, when they erected a chapel in Howard Street. Various offshoots have been made. A mission, begun in New Row chapel, led to the building of Dene Street chapel in 1871. Other missions, begun at Walker Place and Blagdon's Quay, are represented by the Hudson Street chapel.

A Roman Catholic mission was begun on July 15th, 1784, by the Rev. James Johnson of Pontop, in the county of Durham, who said mass once a month in a hired room in Milburn Place. On October 5th, 1793, two hundred and ninety-five French refugees landed at North Shields. Two of the priests who accompanied them hired a room in Norfolk Street wherein to officiate. One of the two, the Rev. M. Dubuisson, remained until 1809, when he returned to France. For the needs of the Roman Catholics of a regiment stationed at Tynemouth castle, a building in Union Street was obtained in 1809 and served from Ushaw, the priest coming over every week. After the above-named regiment was moved on from Tynemouth, the congregation used successively rooms in Camden Street, West Percy Street, and Bedford Street, served by the greatly respected Rev. James Worswick of Newcastle, who said mass every third Tuesday. Largely through his influence and exertions a chapel in Bedford Street, dedicated to St. Cuthbert, was erected in 1821, to which a school was added in 1840.¹

The following is a list of the incumbents: Thomas Gillow, 1821-1857; John William Bewick, afterwards bishop of Hexham and Newcastle, 1857-1869; William Gillow, 1869-1873; Robert J. Franklin, 1873-1878; John

¹ Cf. *History of St. Cuthbert's Church, North Shields*, 1902, by Rev. J. Stark.

Nolan, 1878-1884; Denis Ryan, 1884; James Stark, 1884-1903; M. J. Haggarty, 1903. The register of baptisms, 1821-1840, is deposited at Somerset House.

A mission was begun at Tynemouth in 1870, in a room in Front Street, near the spot where the present chapel was erected in 1890. It was served by the Rev. J. W. Bewick (1870-1882), who was succeeded in 1882 by the present incumbent, the Rev. G. E. Howe.

A Baptist church was founded in 1798 by the Rev. Robert Imeary, with the support of the Tuthill Stairs Baptist chapel in Newcastle, meeting first in a room in Walker Place. The old Assembly Room in Stephenson Street was purchased in 1799 and was used as a chapel until the present chapel in Howard Street was erected in 1846.¹ A mission in Milburn Place was begun in 1882. The register of births from 1799 to 1837 is deposited at Somerset House. The following is a list of ministers: Robert Imeary,² 1798-1814; James Williamson, 1816-1838; J. D. Carrick, 1839-1866; J. F. C. Williams, 1866-1869; S. Pipe, 1869-1874; W. C. H. Anson, 1874-1877; Robert Herries, 1880-1892; Charles Stanley, 1892.

A congregation of Independents existed in 1835, when the Bethel chapel was built on Ropery Banks. The register of births and baptisms from 1835 to 1837 is deposited at Somerset House. The Stephenson Street Congregational or Independent chapel was founded in 1870 by a body of persons of strong temperance views, who had been gathered together, two years before, by the Rev. John Broadbent, a Wesleyan Methodist preacher.

A large Independent or Congregational chapel was erected in Front Street, Tynemouth, in 1868, from designs by Mr. Thomas Oliver. The adjoining lecture room and Sunday schools were built in 1886. The church in 1875 began a mission at Low Lights which was removed successively to Pottery Yard in 1876, and to Northumberland Street in 1902. The following have been ministers of this congregation: Alfred Norris, 1869-1885; M. S. Shaw, M.A., LL.B., 1887-1891, and the present minister, the Rev. Samuel Pearson.

A Lutheran church for the Scandinavian sailors who frequent the port of North Shields stands in the Borough Road.

¹ Douglas, *North of England Baptist Churches*, pp. 238-239, 242.

² The Rev. Robert Imeary, Baptist minister of the gospel in North Shields, died April 4th, 1814; aged 45.

The Jews, formerly more numerous than they are at present, had a synagogue on the Bank-head for many years, together with a small burial ground in Billy Mill Lane, now in a dilapidated condition, although one or two headstones may yet be found. When Preston cemetery was opened in 1857, a parcel of ground was set apart for burials of this faith.

THE SEA FISHERIES.

Fishing ranks foremost among the industries of the Northumbrian coast, the principal port being at North Shields. That town owes its origin to the commercial enterprise of the priors of Tynemouth in the thirteenth century. It was founded as a fishing community, and at the present day it is the chief fish market in the county. Other religious houses were equally enterprising. The monks of Farne and Holy Island invested in fishing boats and engaged crews; and so they were able to carry on a small trade as well as provide for their own wants. Cobles were in use both for net and line fishing, their average price in the fourteenth century being £2;¹ 5s. 6d. was paid for a 'great line' and 3s. 4d. for a 'small line' of 400 fathoms in length; a herring net cost what was then the large sum of eighteen shillings. The fish caught were very much the same as those of the present day, but lampreys and mullet were more common, smelts and sprats were to be found in abundance at the mouths of the rivers, garpike were taken plentifully near Budle, and many fish were eaten which until recently were considered worthless, as congers, common and sand eels, coal-fish, and skate; but the modern demand is so great that most of these are again finding a place in the markets. Mussels, cockles, clams and whelks were constantly eaten; high prices were paid for porpoises and dolphins, and seals were taken on the Farnes.²

Fishing was by no means confined to the inshore. A fleet sailed yearly into the North Sea and penetrated as far north as Iceland, fishing also off the Shetlands and the north coast of Scotland.³ Cod and ling were the

¹ It appears from a letter written by Sir John Delaval in 1626 that 'four-men cobles' were the largest type of fishing boat then employed off the coast. Each man worked an oar. *Cal. State Papers Domestic*, 1625-1626, p. 411.

² See *Durham Account Rolls*, Surt. Soc. Nos. 99, 100, 103, and the extracts from the account rolls of Holy Island and Farne priories, given in Raine, *North Durham*. For early regulations touching the seal fisheries of the Farnes, see *North Durham*, appendix, No. dcccv.

³ In 1528 North Shields sent out six 'crayers' to the Iceland fleet; *Letters and Papers*, Henry VIII. vol. iv. p. 2223.

principal catches and were salted and sold at Newcastle, then, and until the introduction of railways, the chief fish market in the district. Similarly, herrings were caught off the coast of Norway. On the east coast the native fishermen had to compete with the Dutch in the sixteenth, seventeenth, and eighteenth centuries¹ and the French during the greater part of the nineteenth.

The fish were sold on the beach or on the quay, or were conveyed to Newcastle by road or boat. Large quantities of salmon were brought from Berwick on horseback to Shields, where they were cured, pickled, and sent up to London in kits or tubs.² Lobsters and turbot were kept alive in 'hullies' or cavities in the rocks, pending the arrival of welled smacks to take them to London; and the rings by which the smacks were moored are still to be seen at Beadnell and at other harbours along the coast. Tyne-mouth appears to have supplied the London market even in monastic times.³

The boats used for the herring fishery until recent years were undecked vessels of the Scottish or yawl type, ranging from thirty-four to thirty-seven feet in length and costing about £100 or £120, exclusive of nets. Each herring boat was owned by one fisherman or by two at the most, and its crew consisted of four men and a boy or, in some cases, five men. The owner received one half of the profits. Half-shares men, who each got two shillings in the pound, were hired during the herring season to make up the crew, some being labouring men from the neighbouring country districts and from Ireland, and others fishermen from Lowestoft and Yarmouth. At some points on the coast, as at Alnmouth and Cullercoats, large cobbles similar to the salmon cobbles of the present day were used. These were generally owned by two men, who sometimes engaged a third hand for one-sixth share. A boat carried from twenty to thirty nets. The market price of a net was £3, but it was usually home manufactured, the women spinning the hempen yarn, while every child over twelve years old was expected to work daily during the winter months a yard's width of netting the full depth of the net. The mesh was thirty-one to the yard. Hemp had this advantage over the cotton now in use, that it was more durable and did less damage to the fish; at the same time the broad mesh allowed the escape of the smaller herring which are now so numerous. Bladders were used instead of buoys for keeping the nets afloat.

¹ Dendy, *Merchant Adventurers*, vol. i. (Surt. Soc. No. 93) p. 167.

² Defoe, *Tour through Great Britain*, first edition, vol. iii. p. 193. ³ Gibson, *Fynemout*, vol. i. p. 211

Herrings were also caught with the jigger, as is still done from the quay at Calais. The jigger consisted of a heavy sinker through which some five or six stout wires furnished with large hooks were passed. It was attached to a line and moved up and down in the water, impaling the fish with which it came into contact. It is still sometimes used when the nets have been launched. A modification of this apparatus, weighing about six pounds, has recently come into use for catching codling at North Sunderland. There the hooks are attached directly to the lead sinker, which is fish-shaped.

Fishing was chiefly inshore, Goswick bay and the neighbourhood of the Longstone being favourite grounds. Attempts were made at various times by local fishermen to extend the field of their operations, and between 1840 and 1850 fishermen from Berwick were in the habit of going to the Moray Firth, where they were engaged to fish for so many weeks at a price averaging ten shillings a cran. At the present day they fish off the Irish coasts or from North Shields during May and June, before the regular Northumbrian season commences, and off Yarmouth during October and November after its close. At Berwick, where most of the catches are made from twenty to forty miles out, the fishing is altogether in deep sea.

Large decked boats costing £600 or £700 each, with keels from forty-five to sixty feet in length and drawing six to eight feet of water, have now superseded the old herring coble and are manned by local fishermen, half-shares men being rarely employed. A boat's crew numbers six or seven men, for whom cabin accommodation is provided. Largely as a result of the increase of the size of the vessel the total number of local boats engaged in herring fishing has diminished; for example, in half a century (1855-1905) the number of native herring boats at Berwick and Spittal has fallen from sixty-four to nine, and at North Sunderland from fifty-two to eight. At North Shields steam trawlers and liners are converted into drifters during the herring season. Each boat carries from forty to seventy nets, each net fifty to fifty-five yards long and eighteen-score meshes (sixteen yards) deep. These are of cotton and are machine-made. Their top line, which is the light one, is fitted with corks, and at each end of the net is a bow or buoy line, which allows the net to sink two or three fathoms. The bow or buoy is made of sheepskin or canvas. A messenger or foot rope runs along the entire fleet of nets, the whole forming a wall into which the herring fix themselves.

Large numbers of stranger vessels come to the harbours on the coast during the herring season. Over 150 herring boats yearly, from the Firth of Forth, Berwickshire and Cornwall, make North Sunderland a base for their fishing between the end of June and the middle of September. Steam drifters and sailing boats from Lowestoft and Yarmouth similarly visit North Shields. At Berwick, a maximum was reached in 1866, when 200 herring boats came there from other ports as compared with a muster of fifty-one in 1904. In fact, the fishing has suffered a decrease at all points on the coast except at North Sunderland and North Shields. The development of North Sunderland is largely due to the extension of its harbour in 1866-1869 by Lord Crewe's trustees,¹ the formation of a light railway to Chathill, opened in 1898, and the growth of the curing industry. A new harbour at Craster is now (1906) in course of formation.

The old trade of curing and smoking ungutted herring as 'reds,' which used to be carried on at Tweedmouth² and elsewhere, has almost disappeared. Kippers were first smoked about the year 1860, and are now, together with bloaters and Findon haddocks, extensively prepared. Cured herrings have obtained a high position in continental markets in some measure because of the exertions of the Scottish Fisheries Board, instituted in 1808 as the Board of British White Herring Fishery, whose jurisdiction with regard to the white herring cure extends along the Northumbrian coast. Herring are gutted and packed under the supervision of its officers, and the barrels branded as a guarantee of quality, the charge for branding being fourpence per barrel. In 1769, it was stated that herring were not taken on this coast in sufficient quantities for export, but to-day 12,000 to 16,000 barrels are exported yearly from North Sunderland to Stettin, Königsberg, Dantzig, and other Baltic ports, as well as great quantities of kippers and fresh and sprinkled herring to London and other inland markets. Cured herring are also exported to the Continent from Berwick.

Line fishing is carried on by means of cobbles, a type of boat characteristic of the coast between the Humber and the Tweed. The forward part of a coble is keeled and draws two to three feet of water, but it gradually becomes flat-bottomed towards the after-end, where it draws practically nothing, so that it is admirably adapted for beaching. It responds well to

¹ A harbour was first made at Seahouses shortly before 1791. Before that time the only haven was a narrow channel through the rocks.

² Fuller, *History of Berwick-upon-Tweed*, p. 425.

the oars and is a fast sailer, being noted for the closeness with which it can be brought to the wind. Its rig is lug, or lug and foresail, with sometimes a mizzen; the rudder acts as a keel and serves to stiffen the boat. Water-tight compartments or 'air-boxes' are often fitted into the bow and stern of the coble at the northern fishing villages, and are valuable in keeping the boat afloat in a rough sea. It is manned by three or four men, each with lines. The crew share equally in the profits, each finding his proportion of the gear. Seven small lines are carried per boat, and every line is made up of three and a half pieces,¹ the piece being seventy-five fathoms in length. There are about five hundred hooks to a line, but they vary in number, forty-two to forty-seven inches apart, with a three feet seven inches snood.

North Shields, Tweedmouth and Sunderland used to be noted for coble-building. To-day a few are still built at Shields, but most at Hartlepool and Amble. They are usually reckoned to cost £1 per foot of the ram or keel plank. Larger cobs were at one time extensively used at the southern stations for herring fishing, but have now given place to the Scottish type of herring boat. Small keeled boats called mules, costing about £45, capable of carrying twenty nets and intended to be worked by four men, were introduced about 1860-1870, and used both for ordinary and for herring fishing, but never became popular.

Fi-men (five-men) boats were employed in the deep-sea white fishing, and landed at Newcastle, and latterly at Shields, their catches from the Dogger bank and other distant grounds. They were from fifty to seventy feet long in the keel, and had a square overhanging stern and about eighteen feet of beam. Their rig was similar to that of the large cobs, namely, jib, main, and mizzen sails; and they carried two cobs from which the lines were worked.

Mussels and, to some extent, limpets are used for baiting the lines, as being adapted to the hard ground on which modern fishing is carried on. Nereids and arenicola (the lug worm) are also in use, though not to such an extent as formerly, for the catching of flat fish on smooth bottoms. Sand eels were extensively employed for bait, but have been replaced by herrings. Mussel bait was obtained at the mouths of the Tweed, Aln, Coquet, and Blyth, and on Fenham and Warnham flats. Before the Tyne

¹ At Newbiggin and one or two other places eight lines of four pieces each are carried.

was deepened, mussels were to be got on the Mussel Scalp near the Black Middens. Their cultivation has been attempted in Budle bay, where beds were laid down in 1890, by the late Mr. A. H. Browne of Callaly castle. In 1896-1897 one hundred, and in 1897-1898 nearly two hundred tons of mussels were sold from these beds, but since then they have not done so well.¹ Northumberland has never been noted for mussel bait, and it is mainly procured from the Tees, Boston, Morecambe bay, Newhaven, Port Glasgow, from different places in Ireland, and from Harlingen.

Among the possessions of the monks at Holy Island in 1394-1395 was a dredge for gathering oysters at Fenham, and Wallis (1769) mentions the Fenham oysters 'on a bank belonging to the Right Hon. the earl of Tankerville.' Oysters are still kept upon the scarp by the earl of Tankerville.

On November 7th, 1877, trawling with steam tugs was commenced at North Shields. These tugs were provided with beam trawls of about fifty-four feet beam. About five of them still continue trawling from Shields, but use the otter trawls introduced in October, 1895. Every trawler is provided with two otter trawls, which cost about £50 each. Screw trawlers commenced to fish in 1879 and their use is now fairly general at North Shields, where many of them are built. They are made of iron or steel, are 100 to 120 feet long, have a twenty-feet beam and are eleven feet deep; and cost about £1,000 per twenty feet of keel. They steam at the rate of nine or ten knots. A second type of steamer used at North Shields for purposes of fishing is the liner. Boats of this class have usually a wooden hull; they are built principally at Blyth and at Scottish shipbuilding ports, and cost about £3,000. They are eighty to a hundred feet long, are nineteen feet in beam and have a depth of eight feet. They carry a fleet of twenty to forty lines, each line costing £2. These great lines (which were also used by the fi-men boats in past years) consist of six pieces of seventy-five fathoms each, with hooks at four fathoms' intervals, on six-foot snoods. The crews of trawlers and liners number eight or ten, and comprise a skipper, mate, engineer, firemen, fishermen and deck hands. Fishing is done by the trawlers on the North-east bank, Berwick bank, Souter bank, and on the Dogger bank, as well as on the Great Fisher bank, off the Shetlands and Farøe Islands, and on other distant grounds; by the liners on local grounds and off the north and west coasts of Scotland.

There has been remarkable progress in the white fishing at North Shields since the introduction of trawlers, as is shown by the following figures based on the harbour master's returns. The total yield for the year ending March 25th, 1876, before trawling had commenced, was only 372 tons. In 1880 it had risen to 2,430, and in 1885 to 4,328, where it temporarily remained stationary, being 4,272 in 1890. The introduction of the otter trawl in 1895 sent it up to 8,832; in 1900 it had risen to 10,430, and, in 1905, 12,485 tons of white fish were landed at North Shields.¹



NORTH SHIELDS FISH QUAY.

At the smaller fishing stations, where the fishing is entirely inshore, there has been an opposite tendency. During the eighteenth and the greater part of the nineteenth centuries white fish were cheap and plentiful. 'The haddock,' Wallis wrote in 1769, 'is taken in such abundance as to

¹ The figures for herring landed at North Shields during the same period show far less variation. They are: 1876, 3,000 tons; 1880, 5,548 tons; 1885, 8,119 tons; 1890, 7,674 tons; 1895, 5,857 tons; 1900, 2,574 tons; 1905, 6,633 tons.

furnish all tables and to reward the toil of the hardy fishermen.' An increased impetus was given to trade in the second quarter of the nineteenth century by the development of the railway system. The Report of the Fisheries Commissioners for 1866 stated: 'It is clear that at all these fishing villages (Cullercoats, Newbiggin, North Sunderland, and Holy Island) there has within the last twenty years been a constant increase in the number of fishermen, the size of their boats and the quantity of nets and other gear.' But a scarcity of fish in shallow water was then beginning to be noticed. The same report announces: 'It is only within the last seven years that [sailing] trawlers have made their appearance; they come from Scarborough and Hartlepool in considerable numbers, and trawl over a range of smooth ground off Cullercoats and Newbiggin, about five or six miles in breadth, and separated from the shore by four to six miles of rough ground on which they cannot use their trawls. They do not go so far north as North Sunderland and Holy Island, but the fishermen of these places join with those farther south in complaining against them and attributing to them a decrease of all classes of fish, but especially haddocks, on the ground that they disturb the spawning ground of these and other fish.' The introduction of steam trawling at North Shields and corresponding rise of that port hastened the decline of the inshore fisheries.

Consequent upon this decline, there is a falling off in the number of fishermen at the smaller stations, and the younger men are going into trades. Many of the Cullercoats fishermen find work for a portion of the year as labourers on the Tyne, those of Newbiggin get occupation in the neighbouring coal pits, and the fishermen of Boulmer, Craster and Newton-by-the-Sea obtain work in quarries. The fishing industry was a marked feature at Alnmouth down to the middle of the nineteenth century, but now it has almost left the town.

Cobles are also employed for crab and lobster fishing. A coble worked by two men used to carry twenty-four 'trunks,' which were iron rings or hoops, each supporting a piece of net and a line which crossed the hoop, to which the bait was attached. The trunk was lowered from the coble and hauled up frequently, the pressure of the water preventing the escape of the crabs and lobsters which had been attracted by the bait. In this way, it is stated, about the year 1805,¹ as many as fifty-two to seventy-five

¹ Report on Crab and Lobster Fisheries of England and Wales, 1875.

lobsters were caught in a night. Pots or creels are now used instead of trunks, and were employed at Berwick for taking lobsters as early as 1799.¹ The crab pots consist of a wooden base and a wicker frame-work covered with net, in which the openings or eyes are directly or obliquely opposite to one another. Fish is used for bait. The old habit of fishing with separate pots, placed not nearer each other usually than eighteen fathoms, was given up about 1870 for fleets of pots only ten fathoms apart. One hundred to two hundred pots per boat are now quite common, especially in the northern part of the district. The fishing used to commence about February or March and ended in May or June. At Craster a manorial custom, in operation up to about 1870, confined it to March, April and May. Autumn crab-fishing then became general but not with good results.

Hard ground is most extensive in the northern half of the county, and there crabs are more numerous, but lobsters are equally numerous in the southern half of the district. Wallis in 1769 said that the lobster 'is taken in such plenty that the annual export usually amounts from £1,200 to £1,500 of those that are taken between Newbiggin and Newton-by-the-Sea, exclusive of such as are taken at Holy Island, which annually amounts to a considerable sum.' This district may have become contracted on its southern margin by the deposition of mud at the mouths of the Tyne and the Blyth. This branch of the inshore fisheries is becoming more important as the line fishing has declined. Serious efforts are being made to preserve and encourage it, and experiment will determine upon the comparative merits of restriction and of cultivation.²

For the taking of salmon and sea trout, the stell nets formerly employed at the mouths of rivers have been replaced by stake nets, which are now in use, in accordance with the Scottish system, in Goswick bay. Elsewhere along the coast drift nets are in vogue, and this kind of fishing has, since about 1870, taken the place at Cullercoats of the herring fishery, which has become extinct there. The salmon net has a mesh of six and a half inches, is 150 yards long (but when in use 100 yards), and fifty, sixty, or seventy meshes deep. The trout net has a mesh of three and three-quarter to five inches, is 120 yards long and is fifty to seventy meshes deep ;

¹ Fuller, *History of Berwick-upon-Tweed*, p. 426.

² The catches of crabs and lobsters along the coast (excluding North Shields) were, in 1895, crabs, 872,133, lobsters, 40,621 ; in 1900, crabs, 1,452,975, lobsters, 29,807 ; in 1904, crabs, 1,294,745, lobsters, 53,577.

corks buoy up its top side and leads weigh down the bottom rope. A boat carries three nets, and these are launched like herring nets, the last net being turned round so as to form a loop or hook. The close season for the Tweed is September 15th to February 1st, for the Coquet district (Howick burn to Newbiggin point) September 15th to March 25th, and for the Tyne district (Newbiggin point to Souther point), September 1st to February 1st. Licences, costing £5 per boat, are obtained from the Coquet and Tyne Salmon Conservancies, which have the regulation of the drift net fishing within their respective districts. The fishing is very variable in its results.¹ During the salmon season numerous porpoises or 'dunters,' and, occasionally, other cetacea visit the coast.

Mackerel appear off the coast every year about July, August and September in very varying numbers. They are caught in trout and salmon nets as well as by the spinner.

The turbot has almost completely disappeared from this coast. It used to be caught in brat-nets, 240 yards long with meshes of seven inches from knot to knot and seven meshes deep. The upper edge of the net was buoyed with small corks and the lower edge was weighted with small stones at intervals of nine meshes. Eight nets went to the fleet.² Large catches used to be made in places where herring were spawning.

The Northumberland Sea Fisheries Committee was formed under the provisions of the Sea Fisheries Regulation Act, 1888, by an order of the Board of Trade dated March 20th, 1890. The general powers given to the committee under the above Act are : (1) to make by-laws for the regulation of the sea fisheries ; (2) to make by-laws imposing penalties for breach of by-laws ; (3) to appoint fishery officers and to give them authority to stop and search any vessel or vehicle used within the district in fishing or in conveying either fish or any substance the deposit or discharge of which is prohibited or regulated by any by-law ; to search and examine all instruments used in carrying or catching fish ; to seize any fish or instrument liable to be forfeited in pursuance of any such by-laws ; to enter suspected places. The Act also provides for the expenses of the committee being paid by the County Council.

¹ See Mr. Berrington's Report to the Board of Trade, 1890, and Mr. Aaron Watson's *Papers on Fishery Questions*, 1890.

² At Craster ten nets were employed.

FISHING BOATS, NORTHUMBERLAND, 1905.

Stations.	Steam Trawlers.	Steam Liners.	Line, Crab, etc.		Herring.			
			Cobles.	Mules.	Native.		Strange.	
					Sail.	Steam.	Sail.	Steam.
Berwick ...	—	—	—	15	8	—	40	3
Spittal ...	—	—	—	8	1	—	—	—
Holy Island ...	—	—	1	13	4	—	—	—
Seahouses ...	—	—	15	1	9	—	80	5
Beadnell ...	—	—	14	—	9	—	20	—
Newton-by-the-Sea ...	—	—	10	—	3	—	—	—
Craster ...	—	—	12	—	9	—	20	—
Boulmer ...	—	—	9	—	1	—	—	—
Alnmouth ...	—	—	4	—	—	—	—	—
Amble ...	—	—	2	—	—	—	—	—
Hauxley ...	—	—	7	—	—	—	—	—
Cresswell ...	—	—	6	—	—	—	—	—
Newbiggin-by-the-Sea ...	—	—	13	—	11	—	—	—
Blyth ...	—	—	6*	—	1	—	—	—
Seaton Sluice ...	—	—	4*	—	—	—	—	—
St. Mary's Island ...	—	—	2*	—	—	—	—	—
Cullercoats ...	—	—	35†	—	—	—	—	—
North Shields ...	72	27	6	—	—	—	78	44

* Salmon fishing in summer only.

† Salmon fishing in summer, but including fifteen cobles employed at line fishing, etc.

The herring boats from other ports fishing from the northern stations come from Cockenzie, Cellardyke, Isle of Man, St. Ives, Eyemouth.

The herring boats fishing from North Shields come from (sailers) Eyemouth, Buckhaven, Kirkcaldy, Lowestoft, Cellardyke; (steam drifters) Yarmouth, Lowestoft, Hull.

A list of fishermen in Northumberland (exclusive of Berwick), taken by Sir John Delaval on August 28th, 1626, shows what changes have occurred in the distribution of the fishing population in the course of three centuries. The number of fishermen residing at each fishing station was then as follows: Spittal, 40; Holy Island, 27; Bamburgh, 10; Shoreston and North Sunderland, 7; Beadnell, 14; Embleton and Newton-by-the-Sea, 10; Craster, 8; Boulmer, 12; Alnmouth, 19; Warkworth, 8; Hauxley, 9; Cresswell, 12; Newbiggin-by-the-Sea, 16; Blyth, 12; Hartley, 18; North Shields and Tynemouth, 62. Harbours then only existed at Holy Island and at Blyth. *State Papers, Domestic*, Charles I. vol. xxiv. 42, i. A certificate returned to the archbishop of York in April, 1547, gives the number of fishermen in the county as 192, 'whereof many be Scots.' Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 325, note. In the census of 1901 the number of persons in Northumberland returned as engaged in fishing was given as 1,212.

The committee have passed the following by-laws for the regulation of the fisheries of the district: (1) by-law prohibiting trawling within the district (April, 1891); (2) by-laws making the size limit for lobsters nine inches instead of eight inches as specified by the Act of 1877, and protecting the berried lobster during the months April to July inclusive (1899), and, secondly, prohibiting the removal of protected shell fish from the district.¹

¹ The following is a list of the Acts under which powers are given to the committee and under which its by-laws are made and enforced:

1877. Fisheries (Oyster, Crab, and Lobster) Act, 1877. By this Act regulations were made (1) as to the prohibition of taking or selling oysters between certain dates; (2) as to prohibition of

Marine investigation has been pursued by the Berwickshire Naturalists' Club, the Tyneside Field Club, and the Newcastle Natural History Society. Since its formation the Northumberland Sea Fisheries Committee has caused enquiries to be made on subjects connected with the regulation of the fisheries.¹ Mr. John Dent, county alderman, the present chairman of the committee, commenced a series of trawling experiments in 1892, and in 1897 built a marine laboratory at Cullercoats, of which Mr. Meek is director.

WHITLEY TOWNSHIP.

Whitley township stretches along the sea coast northwards from the Marden burn to the southern bank of Brier dene, and marches with Monkseaton township on the west. It includes an area of 658 acres, of which five acres are inland water and 117 acres are foreshore,² and in 1901 had a population of 6,753.³

Whitley and Monkseaton formed, at the commencement of the twelfth century, part of Graffard's lordship, of which the seat was at Seghill. The three manors were made over by Henry I., before the year 1116, to Richard, abbot of St. Alban's, and to the monks of Tynemouth.⁴ Whitley was either already held by a single owner in sub-infeudation, or an enfeoffment was made by the prior and convent in the course of the same century. The name of Ralph de Whitley occurs among the witnesses to certain charters of

taking or selling edible crabs less than four and a half inches across the back ; (3) as to prohibition of taking or selling lobsters under eight inches in length.

The Sea Fisheries Regulation Act, 1888, as above.

Sea Fisheries Regulation Act, 1891, which empowers committees to make by-laws.

Sea Fish (Shell Fish) Regulation Act, 1894, which gave powers to local committees to make by-laws for the regulation and development of fisheries for all kinds of shell fish, also to stock or restock any public fishery for shell fish, and for that purpose to incur such expenses as may be sanctioned by the Board of Trade.

Board of Agriculture and Fisheries Act, 1903, by which the superintendence of the fisheries was transferred from the Board of Trade to the Board of Agriculture, which was in future to be called the Board of Agriculture and Fisheries.

¹ Papers have been published by Dr. Gregg Wilson on the crab and lobster fishing of the district, by Mr. William King on mussel culture, by Mr. C. Williams on the hatcheries at Dunbar, by Alderman J. Dent on trawling experiments, and, since 1896, annual reports on scientific investigations by Mr. A. Meek.

² The tithe commutation map of 1842 specifies the area as follows : arable, 253 acres ; meadow and pasture, 186 acres, 2 roods ; Whitley links, 44 acres ; limestone quarry, 10 acres, 2 roods, 4 perches ; buildings and waste ground, 8 acres 3 roods.

³ Census returns are : 1801, 251 ; 1811, 375 ; 1821, 554 ; 1831, 632 ; 1841, 749 ; 1851, 431 ; 1861, 419 ; 1871, 731 ; 1881, 1,350 ; 1891, 2,444 ; 1901, 6,753. Up to 1881 inclusive these returns include the hamlets of Hotspur Place and Whitley Row on Shire Moor.

⁴ See above, p. 55 (12).

the reigns of Richard I. and John. His son or grandson was sued by the prior of Tynemouth in 1225 for the customs and services due from his free tenement in Whitley.

Several of the services were identical with those given in the custumal of 1295, as prevailing in the other townships. The owner of Whitley did one boon-ere with his own plough and with all the ploughs of his vill. He found four harrows for the boon-harrow. In the autumn he did three auth-reps with eight men, and all the inhabitants of the vill, except the house wives, joined on the fourth day in the great boon-work. He carted four loads of corn from North Seaton, and the tithe produce of Hertness to Tynemouth together with his peers at his own maintenance, or paid Hertness-pennies in commutation for that service. He gave merchet for his daughters, sued at the prior's court, and paid aids together with his peers. He also gave thirteen pence yearly for cornage and paid an annual rent of twenty shillings.

Besides these there were services connected with the priory mills. The lord of Whitley and his men did suit to the mills and gave multure at the thirteenth bushel. He was bound to build, roof and repair the sixth part of the two mills of Tynemouth; he contributed one-sixth to the purchase and carting of millstones for the same, carted timber to the mills and found two men to fell it at his own charges.

The most distinctive service due from the holding was that to which allusion is made in later custumals as 'Conveys.' This involved the entertainment of the prior and his household by the lord of Whitley in his own house every 23rd and 24th of December, and finding his guests in food and drink, lights, hay and oats for the horses, and in all other necessities.

Ralph de Whitley pleaded a demurrer. The prior and convent had sued him for services due from a free tenement, but the services enumerated were base. Villein services could not be chargeable upon freehold land; and the judges of the King's Bench, to whom drengage and its paradoxical incidents were novelties, accepted the logical argument of the defendant. The claim was dismissed, but was brought up again in the course of the following term, with slight modifications, and the addition of a penny half-penny to the sum claimed for cornage. Ralph de Whitley again pleaded that he held no land in villeinage but admitted the claim to twenty shillings. Prior Germanus refused to be led into a discussion on land tenure, basing

his claim on the fact that the defendant, his father and grandfather, had done the whole of the services mentioned, from the days of Prior Acharius down to the preceding Christmas.¹ The judges of the King's Bench made over the conduct of the case to the justices itinerant, but at Easter, 1227, before the next Northumbrian assize, Ralph de Whitley came into the Court of King's Bench, and acknowledged that he was bound by all the services mentioned in the prior's claim.²

A petition presented to the king by John de Whitley between the years 1280 and 1282 states that the petitioner held a carucate of arable, eight acres of meadow, and sixty acres of pasture in demesne, while 234 acres of arable were cultivated by bonds. His father, Henry de Whitley, having died while he was still a minor, Prior Adam de Tewing had claimed the wardship and marriage of the heir in right of his church. His lands remained in the prior's hands until he came of age and then he was not permitted to have seisin of the same until he had paid a fine of fourteen marks, amounting to two years' proceeds of the manor. The prior had moreover hindered the petitioner from distraining on the bonds of his demesne, had cited him to appear in court for so doing, and had mulcted him of one hundred shillings, besides robbing him of four hundred cartloads of marle, for which he could find no remedy.³

¹ Prior de Tinemue petit versus Radulfum de Witele quod faciat ei consuetudines et recta servicia que ei inde facere debet de libero tenemento suo quod de eo tenet in Wyteleia, ut in arreragiis et aliis, unde idem prior dicit quod idem Radulfus tenet de eo et ecclesia sua de Tinemue villam de Wytel', et debet ei has consuetudines subscriptas, scilicet quolibet anno, quinto et sexto die Natalis Domini, debet idem prior cum tota familia sua de Tinemue quam secum assumere voluerit venire ad domum ipsius Radulfi in Wytel', et debet idem Radulfus invenire ei per illos duos dies ad totam familiam suam rationabiliter ad manducandum et bibendum et candelam et fenum et avenam ad equos suos et omnia alia necessaria, et preterea arare per unum diem cum omnibus carucis ville sue, et cum sua propria, et eodem die debet ipse Radulfus interesse in propria persona ad cibum ipsius prioris semel in die. Et debet invenire iij hercuras per unum diem usque ad nonam ad cibum ipsius Radulfi, et, cum opus fuerit, debet reparare sextam partem duorum molendinorum de Tinemue et sextam partem molendinorum illorum facere et cooperire, et sextam partem molarum emere et cariare ad molendina illa, et maeremium cariare ad eadem molendina et invenire duos homines ad secandum illud maeremium ad cibum Radulfi proprium; et in autumpno facere tres precarias per tres dies, quolibet die cum octo hominibus ad cibum prioris, et iij⁶⁰ die debent omnes homines ville ejusdem venire ad precaria preter hospitissas domorum ad cibum prioris. Et debet cariare iij caretas bladi de Nor-Setan usque Tinemue ad cibum proprium. Et ipse et homines sui debent sequi molendina ipsius prioris et ibi molere per xij tolfatum. Et debet cariare simul cum paribus suis decimas de Hertenes usque Tinemue ad cibum proprium vel denarios dare pro cariagio. Et debet merchetum de filiabus suis. Et debet sequi curiam ipsius prioris et dare auxilia cum paribus suis quando pares sui dant auxilium. Et de cornagio quolibet anno xij^d., et preterea de annuo redditu xxs. *Curia Regis Rolls*, Nos. 88, 94. Maitland, *Bracton's Notebook*, vol. iii. p. 53.

² *Patent Rolls*, 11 Henry III. m. 23. *Curia Regis Rolls*, No. 97. In 1226 the sheriff of Northumberland accounted for one mark from Ralph de Witele 'pro falso clameo';³ Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. iii. vol. iii. p. 145.

³ A nostre seignour le roy et son conseyl se pleynt Johan de Wytele ke la ou memes cesty Johan tent del priour de Thynemowe un mies une carue de terre en demeyne, e xx^v et xiiij acres de terre en service ke les bondes memes cely Johan de ly tenent, e viij acres de pre, e lx acres de pasture

The story has already been told of how, on October 29th, 1290, John de Whitley with two of his companions broke into the house of Walter fitz Nicholas in Whitley, and carried off certain goods which he found there; of his trial for breach of the peace in the prior's court, and of the subsequent delays of justice, resulting in a hearing of the case before Edward I. and his council at Norham, and the forfeiture of the prior's franchise.¹ John de Whitley was doubtless effecting a distraint, and the action of the prior and convent in treating this as a case of burglary may be considered either as a wilful misrepresentation of facts or as a just protection of the lesser tenants in a dependent manor.

od les apurtenaunces en Wytele, par certeyn service annuel, le quel service ne dune mie garde ne mariayge; la seysit le priour Adam, predecessour cesty priour, les avaunt diz tenemenz en sa mayn apres la mort Henry de Wytelee, pere ly avaunt dit Johan ky heyr il est, cum chef seignour du fee, apropiant garde des avaunt diz tenemenz e mariayge del avaunt dit heyr a ly a sa eglyse de Thynemowe, ou nule garde ne mariayge apent, ne unkes predecessour ky il eut seysi ne fu de garde des avaunt diz tenemenz, ne de mariayge de ancestre ke il unkes ust. Morust Adam. Willam, un son successur, ceo tort continua. Morust Willam; apres ky mort, Symun, ke ore est, les avaunt diz tenemenz entra cum en sa garde, e les avaunt diz tenemenz tint en sa mayn tant ke le avaunt dit Johan fu passe le ayge de xxij aunz. E puy ke kant le avaunt dit Johan aveit son ayge prove, il ne poeyt le entre aver en sa terre, cynz ke il eut paie xiiij mars de argent al avaunt dit priour ke ore est pur relef, ke est la value de sa terre de deus aunz. E tut ust il ewe la garde des avaunt diz tenemenz du dreyt, sicum ele fu tortenuse, si deveyt il aver ewe sa terre sanz relef e sanz fyn, ou riens doner du son; e ceo par la graunt chartre nostre seignour le roy, ke ceo ad graunte e comunie de son seale.

Wstre ceo se pleynt memes cely Johan, ke la ou il destreynt ses vyleyns pur lur ferme ke est arere, e pur autres services ke du ly sunt de eus, cum de ses vyleyns en park, lur avers cum ben ly list a fere, cum de ses chatels demeyn; la vent memes cesty priour e delivre les avers hors de sa propre faude, maugre son par sa seignourie; e pur la poverte l'evaunt dit Johan, issi ke il ne poet ses vyleyns pur ly justicer, ne sa ferme de eus lever, ne prendre ne autres services ke du ly sunt de eus cum de ses vyleyns, e pur ceo ke il volt ses vyleyns justicer, si ly ad destreynt l'evaunt dit priour devenir a sa curt, ou il nul conseil ne poeit aver ne trover encuntre le priour, mes ilokes fu surpris par defaute de conseil, e fu mis en la merci, e fu leve de ly pur sa seul amerciement cent souz, pur queus cent souz il fist mechef de x liverez de chateus. E estre ceo, la ou il aveyt graunte a un moygne de la meson, daunz Johan de Ludeburn, cent charettes de marle a prende de la demeyne terre memes cely Johan in Wytelee, a carier sur la terre l'evaunt dit priour en Thynemowe pur son par, la prist memes cely moygne cccc carettes de marle hors de la terre le avaunt dit Johan, estre ceo ke il le aveyt done, encuntre son gre e sa volente. E son serjaunt, ke vout aver desturbe le avaunt dit moygne de plus prendre de marle ke graunte ly, fust pris par comaundement le seneschal le avaunt dit priour e mys en cept, de quel trepas le avaunt dit priour fu aresone ke il feyst les amendes, e riens ne vout fere, ne uncore ore ne fest. E de ceus torts prie le avaunt dit Johan remedie pur Deu.

Cestes grevaunces me sunt fites plus apertement, par la reson de la franchise de retur de bref ke il unt; ke la ou jeo le avaunt dit Johan par la sute et le conseil de mes amys avey purchace un bref de mort d'ancestre vers Willam, priour de la avaunt dite meson de Thynemowe, predecessour le priour ke ore est, devant sire Johan de Vaus e ses cumpaignouns justices dreyn erranz en le cunte de Norhumbreland; la vynt le priour e demaunda retur par le graunte ke il aveyt de nostre seignour le roy de cele franchise, e le aveyt. E par agarde de justices dona jur avaunt dit Johan a sure son bref; e au jour kant il vint ne trova nul bref, purceo ke par le avaunt dit Willam priour fu besile. E purceo ne osa il unkes puy bref purchacer ne son dreyt sure tant cum il fu dedeinz ayge, pur dute de autiele malice. E prie pur Deu ke remedie de ceo seit fest.

[Endorsed:] A nostre scyngur le roy pur le roy mustre Johan de Whyteleye ke le priour de Tynemuth ad fete grant deseritons au roy, ausi bien en ewe cum en tere, cum de wreke de mere e de vyles, a l'amutainue D. mars e plus en sun tens, e mut deseritesuns ad fet al gent du pays par sa franchyse ke il ad de vos auncestres et de vus, sicum il dit. *Ancient Petitions*, P.R.O. No. 7,286.

In 1292 John de Whitley sued Simon, prior of Tynemouth, because the prior refused to give an account of the profits of the manor of Whitley during the time that he had the wardship of the same. *De Banco Rolls*, No. 93.

¹ See above, pp. 216-218.

John de Whitley was one of the twelve jurors in the court of the liberty. His goods were assessed in 1296 at £3 15s. 6d., on which he paid 6s. 10½d. as subsidy. The other tenants in the township are grouped in the subsidy roll of that year with certain of the tenants of East Chirton.

EST CHIRTON ET WYTELEY SUBSIDY ROLL, 1296.

		£	s.	d.		s.	d.
Summa bonorum	Rogeri Gray	2	13	3	unde regi	4	10
"	Willelmi Brun	1	3	4	"	2	1½
"	Willelmi de Brerden	0	17	1½	"	1	6½
"	Radulphi Averay	0	19	3	"	1	9
"	Nicholai de Wytteley	4	7	4	"	7	11½
"	Agnetis relicte	0	15	8½	"	1	5½
"	Gilberti de Wytteley	1	4	10	"	2	3
"	Alienore relicte	0	19	10	"	1	9½
Summa hujus ville, £13 os. 8d.; unde domino regi, £1 3s. 8½d. ¹							

Prior Walden had his revenge on his troublesome vassal in 1297. William Wallace, at the head of a Scottish army, was marching down the Tyne valley and laying the country waste. John de Whitley hastened to collect all his muniments and household stuff, which he deposited in a house close to the priory gates. The castle was strong enough to resist the invaders, provided no cover was left for the enemy near its walls. Consequently, on November 23rd, Prior Walden set fire to the house in which John de Whitley's effects were stored, without troubling to remove its contents.²

Among the deeds then destroyed was a bond from Henry de Newenham, whose name recurs in 1310 when John de Whitley conveyed to him the manor of Whitley. The abbot of St. Alban's and the prior of Tynemouth put in their claim and prevented the transfer from taking effect.³ There were also burnt in the fire two charters of enfeoffment of the manor. A detailed statement of the custom called 'Conveys,' drawn up about this time, was perhaps necessitated by their loss.

The mode of doing the service called the Conveyes at Whitley. All the men of Tynemouth priory, all the horses and dogs of the priory, all who have their quarters in the priory, all the prior's servants at Preston manor, and the serjeant, 'messor' and carter of Monkseaton manor, and all the servants employed in barges who are called 'kelers,'⁴ and four threshers, and a man and woman fanner, shall come once a year at Christmastide on Holy Innocents' Day to a place in Whitley on this side of the vill. And there the lord of that vill shall meet them, and shall receive them fittingly and

¹ *Lay Subsidy Roll*, 1318.² *Coram Rege Rolls*, No. 202.³ *Fect of Fines*, 4 Edw. II. No. 12.⁴ 'The keelmen are those who manage the lighters which they call keels, by which the coals are taken from the steathes or wharfs, and carryed on board the ships at Sheals to load them for London.' Defoe, *Tour through Great Britain*, 1727, vol. iii. p. 192.

honourably ; and he shall find them in all necessities on that day and on the next, for two days and two nights, so that they be fittingly entertained and fed. All the serving men aforesaid shall be served with two courses, of suitable quantity and quality, and with cheese at mid-day ; and the free men of the household similarly with two courses and with cheese at supper. The squires and those of their degree shall be served on flesh-days with fowl as the second course at supper, namely, one fowl between two of them ; and those of lesser degree shall be served with half a fowl and fresh boiled meat as the second course at supper. And all the ploughmen and those of like degree shall be served with common meats and with cheese at supper, always provided that all, whether free men or ploughmen, have good beer and fitting, and that they have every two of them one bed, sufficient and suitable to their stations. Each of the horses shall have good forage (except the prior's horses, which used to be served with hay, or with pease in place of hay, and were taken in and lodged in Whitley manor). Each of the horses shall have half a bowl of good oats. Whatever is left over from the provisions shall be carted to the prior's granary by the keeper of the granary.¹

The case of Walter fitz Nicholas was not the only instance in which the lords of the manor of Whitley were charged with breach of the peace. On July 7th, 1305, John de Whitley headed an attack on William Baret of Burradon, kept him in prison at Whitley for two days, and despoiled him of robes, furs, gold and silver, and other property to the amount of £100. Whitley's defence on this occasion was that he had arrested Baret as a constable and keeper of the king's peace for having assaulted one Robert Otway at Whitley and beaten him almost to death.² On October 1st, 1318, Gilbert, son of John de Whitley, with other companions, broke into the house of Ranulph le taillour at Tynemouth, drove the said Ranulph to take refuge in the priory, and blockaded him there. The same Gilbert de Whitley, on September 20th, 1324, seized on Roger Brown of Tynemouth, put him into the stocks on the king's highway and prevented his friends from bringing him food and drink, so that he nearly died from starvation and exposure.³

Agnes, the widow of John de Whitley, on March 29th, 1321, granted to John de Houworth, vicar of Tynemouth, a toft and a plot of land in Whitley, containing one acre, besides common of pasture appurtenant to the same. This and other properties were transferred by Houworth in 1325 to Thomas de Raynton, seneschal of the liberty, who reconveyed the same to the prior and convent.⁴

¹ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 68, printed by Brand, *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 595.

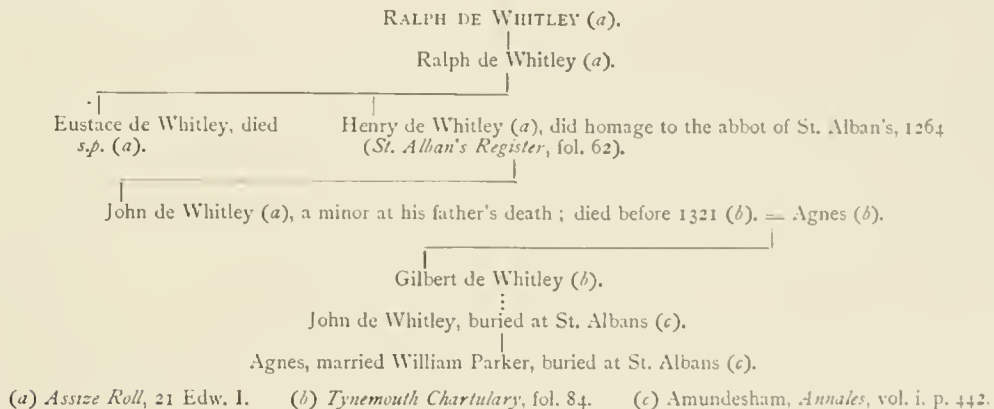
² *Coram Rege Rolls*, No. 183.

³ *Ibid.*, No. 258.

⁴ The deeds are set out in the *Tynemouth Chartulary*. (1) Grant from Agnes, widow of John de Whitley, to John de Houworth. Dated at Whitley, March 29th, 1321. *Hiis testibus, domino Roberto de la Val, domino Adam de Benton, domino Willelmo de Swynburn, militibus, Roberto de Rihill, Simone de Welteden, Roberto de Haukewell, Alano de Castro, et aliis* ; fol. 84. (2) Confirmation by Gilbert, son of John de Whitley ; dated at Tynemouth, March 30th, 1321. *Hiis testibus, domino Johanne de Fenwyk, domino Roberto de Fawedon, militibus, Roberto de Rihill, Thoma de Hidewyn,*

Gilbert de Whitley received royal licence on April 9th, 1345, to crenellate his manor house at Whitley.¹ The tower recurs in the list of castles and fortalices drawn up in 1415,² but probably soon fell into disuse, as there is no mention of it in the survey of 1538, and no tradition survives as to its site. Gilbert de Whitley was an expert military architect, holding the office, in 1356, of master and supervisor of the king's work in the castle of Newcastle.³

A survey taken in 1377 repeats the custumal of 1225 with little alteration. The sum of 3s. 4d. was paid yearly as abbot-scot; an annual payment of five marks was due by statute merchant;⁴ and a few of the services had been commuted for money payments, notably the conveys. Two pounds was paid for this, and no more 'because of the poverty of the tenants.' The surveyor notes that four, six, or eight marks had previously been paid. The sum due for Hertness-pennies, which was not stated in the earlier custumal, is here given as a shilling. Two shillings was paid in lieu of timber for Flatworth mill, and five pence for repairing the mill pond.⁵



John de Whitley, the next in succession to the manor, left his home for St. Albans, and, dying there, was buried in the abbey church. He

Roberto de Seton Wodehorn, Roberto de Byker, et aliis; fol. 84 b. (3) Quitclaim from the same, attested by the witnesses to the first deed; dated at Tynemouth, March 31st, 1321; fol. 85. (4) Grant of the above land *inter alia* by John de Houworth, vicar of Tynemouth, to Thomas de Raynton; dated at Tynemouth, March 19th, 1324. 5. Hiis testibus. Henrico Faukus, Johanne de Bacworth, Alano de Castro, Galfrido de Moreton, Johanne de Seton, Roberto Sauvage, et aliis; fol. 86. (5) Grant of the premises by Thomas de Raynton to the prior and convent of Tynemouth; dated August 1st, 1325; fol. 87. See Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 138.

¹ *Cal. Patent Rolls*, 1343-1345, p. 446.

² Bates, *Border Holds*, p. 16.

³ *Arch. Acl.* 2nd series, vol. iv. p. 50.

⁴ 'Per statutam mercatoriam.'

⁵ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 51 b and 58 b.

left a daughter, Agnes, who was married to William Parker, squire to Abbot de la Mare.¹ A certain Percival Symeon had also an interest in the manor through Johanna his wife. She enfeoffed John Roland, clerk, Alan Whytheved, clerk, Adam Fenrother, clerk, William de Chevyngton, and William de Titlyngton, of the third part of one messuage, 330 acres of arable, eight acres of meadow, and eighteen acres of pasture in Tynemouth and Whitley, to hold in trust for herself and her husband during her lifetime, and then in trust for William Parker and William Fymer and William Parker's heirs. In 1382 the said Percival Symeon and Johanna his wife surrendered their interest in these lands to Parker and Fymer in consideration of a hundred marks.² In 1403 John Olyver of Rypton and Johanna his wife sold to Thomas Thornburgh, William Parker, and William Assh, for £100, the manor of Whitley, a messuage and two acres in Horsley by Felton, and a messuage in Newcastle.³

Through the agency of William de Whethamstede, cellarer of Tynemouth priory, the manor of Whitley was acquired from Thornburgh, Parker, and Assh, for the monastery in the year 1404.⁴ The services due from it were then found to be worth £9 6s. 9½d. per annum. They are extended, but furnish no new details beyond the fact that the timber for the prior's mills was felled in Wylam wood, from which four loads had to be carted to Newburn or two to Flatworth mill.⁵

In 1538, Whitley township was cultivated by five customary tenants, each holding a tenement, with forty acres of arable, two acres of meadow, and pasture for twelve cattle and for thirty sheep in the common pasture. A money rent of £1 13s. 4d. was paid for each tenement, as well as a corn rent of four quarters of barley and two quarters of oats; and 4d. for pannage. The tenants farmed the tithe of hay, for which each paid 6d. A cottage or herd house, with five butts of arable land, called Lady's lands, was in the tenure of all the tenants, at 8s. rent, and a garden was farmed at 1s. 4d.⁶ The last two holdings may be respectively identified with the cottage and three roods acquired by the prior and convent in 1325, and with the hall garth of the former lords of Whitley. A dovecote on the

¹ Amundesham, *Annales Monasterii Sancti Albani*, Rolls Series, vol. i. p. 442.

² *Feet of Fines*, 5 Richard II. No. 11.

³ *Ibid.* 5 Henry IV. No. 1.

⁴ See above, pages 100, 101 (note), and 117.

⁵ Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. ii. appendix, No. cxxxi.

⁶ *Ibid.* vol. i. p. 221; *Ministers' Accounts*, 38 Henry VIII. and 1 Edward I. No. 5.

north side of the village has given its name to Dovecot close, and is described as already decayed in a lease of 1634.¹ The survey shows that there were 200 acres under arable cultivation, and ten acres of meadow land, and consequently the common or waste land within the township amounted to more than 300 acres. The carucate of arable land, held by the lords of Whitley in demesne, had evidently been allowed to go out of cultivation.

A survey taken in 1608 gives the same particulars with regard to the holdings, with the substitution of forty-four for forty acres of arable. Each tenant is further stated to have pasture for two horses in the common fields.² Enclosure took place before 1674, when surrenders were taken of closes held in severalty. The lands allotted to the copyholders in virtue of their holdings were not contiguous, but each proprietor received three or four closes in different parts of the township. Forty-four acres lying next to the sea, known as Whitley links, remain unenclosed to the present day. Here the copyholders had eatage, four stints being allowed to each copyhold farm.³ Thompson's survey of the manor, taken in 1757, gives the following names :

Henry Hudson, esq., 100 acres 2 roods ; Thomas Rutherford, 88 acres 1 rood ; John Hall, 82 acres 1 rood ; Ralph Clarke, 98 acres 3 roods ; Sarah Dove, 57 acres 3 roods ; Joseph Sayburne, 16 acres 2 roods ; Mrs. Archbold, 24 acres 2 roods ; a freehold called Lady-lands, 1 rood 30 poles ; common by the seashore, 44 acres ; town, streets, lanes, etc., 8 acres 3 roods.⁴

Coal mining was actively carried on in Whitley between the years 1673 and 1715 by John Dove, Henry Hudson, and their partners. Hudson, who had served under Sir Arthur Heslerig in the parliamentary army, deserves to be remembered for his story of how Cromwell at Dunbar 'rid all the night before through the several regiments by torchlight upon a little Scots nag, biting his lip till the blood had run down his chin without his perceiving it, his thoughts being busily employed to be ready for the action now at hand.'⁵ Hudson settled at Whitley, and there gave hospitable entertainment to persecuted dissenters in Charles II.'s reign. He worked coal in Whitley, Preston, and Monkseaton, had salt-pans and lead-mines in each of the three northern counties, and commenced a profitable business in 1684 by taking a lease of the Whitley limestone quarries. There is an outcrop of Magnesian Limestone in the field called Maudlin pits, on the

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² Land Revenue Office, *Miscell. Books*, vol. 223, fol. 313.

³ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

⁴ *Ibid.*

⁵ *Life of Ambrose Barnes*, Surt. Soc. No. 50, pp. 110-111.

north side of Marden burn and immediately to the west of the Tynemouth road. The stone is good for quarrying, and in 1754 it was calculated that the enterprise brought in £208 yearly clear of the lord's rent. 'There is,' it was then stated, 'an engine for throwing out water, and four extraordinary large lime-kilns constantly employed, besides great quantity of stone carried from the pits to be burnt at other places.'¹

HUDSON OF NEWBIGGEN IN NEWBURN. AND OF WHITLEY.

..... buried in = HENRY HUDSON of Newbiggen in Newburn, one of Cromwell's Ironsides, = Jane to whom her husband gave his mansion house at Newbiggen for her life (a).
 the Sidgate burial ground, took a lease of Billy mill and Tynemouth mills in 1679, and of Whitley and Monkseaton quarries in 1684 (g); buried 22nd January, 1704, in the Sidgate burial ground (b); will dated 22nd November, 1700 (a) (b).

Enoch Hudson of Brunton in Gosforth, to whom his father gave Newbiggen after his widow's death, a messuage in Newcastle, a colliery at Monkseaton, and various lands, salt pans, etc., in the counties of Northumberland, Durham, and Cumberland (a); died 12th September, 1715; buried in the Sidgate burial ground, aged 56 (b) (f); by his will, dated 27th June, 1712, he gave Scott-house, in the manor of Chester, Co. Pal., to his brother Henry, and his coal mines and other property to be divided amongst his four daughters (a).	= Ruth, dau. of [William] Hutchinson, to whom her husband gave a house at Brunton, held by lease of Sir Arthur Heslerigg (a).	Other issue.	Henry Hudson of Whitley, for whom his father provided in his lifetime, and by his last will gave a ninth part of the lead mines in Rookhope (a); apprenticed, 2nd May, 1679, to Benezer Durant; admitted to the Newcastle Merchants' Company, 21st June, 1689 (e); acquired lands in Whitley circa 1690; admitted to lands in Monkseaton on surrender of John Rogers, April, 1690 (g); died 17th June, 1737, aged 73 (d); will dated 1723 (a).	= Sarah, dau. of John Dove (a), died 3rd September, 1737, aged 59 (d); will dated ... 1737 (a).
--	---	--------------	--	---

Ruth, daughter and co-heir, wife of Reynold Hall of Otterburn; to whom her father gave a house in the Cloth Market, Newcastle (a). ↓ Sarah, daughter and co-heir, wife of William Hicks of Whitehaven; marriage settlement, 12th April, 1728 (f). Mary, daughter and co-heir, wife, first of John Dove of Whitley and of Wapping (e), marriage settlement, 13th January, 1710, and secondly of Rev. R. Gilpin (f). Hannah, daughter and co-heir, wife of Robert Ellison, second son of Nathaniel Ellison, vicar of Newcastle; bond of marriage, 19th December, 1726; she died, 5th June, 1772, aged 72 (a), and was buried at St. Nicholas', Newcastle (f).	Henry Hudson = Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Ellison of Whitley-hall, married by Hannah Hudson, his wife; married his first cousin once removed; died 15th May, 1789, aged 69; buried at Bath Abbey (d).
--	--

(a) Bell Collection, No. 361.

(b) Mr. Mabery Phillips on 'The Quicks Buring Plas,' *Arch. Ael.* vol. xiii. pp. 240-242.

(c) *Arch. Ael.* vol. xvi. pp. 286-287.

(d) Monumental Inscription, Tynemouth Priory.

(e) *Newcastle Merchant Adventurers*, Dendy, vol. ii.

(f) *Ambrose Barnes*, Longstaffe, p. 110.

(g) Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

Henry Hudson, a younger son of Cromwell's Ironside, purchased lands in Whitley about the year 1690, from his brother-in-law, Thomas Dove of Sparrow hall. His son, also named Henry Hudson, built Whitley hall, some seventy years later, on the south side of the village. Dying in 1789, he left his property to his widow, who bequeathed it in 1815 to her niece, Hannah Ellison, surviving daughter of Henry Ellison of Otterburn and Whitehaven. Whitley hall and land to the south and west of it was sold by Miss Ellison in 1817 to the duke of Northumberland. She died in 1837, having devised the remainder of the Hudson property,

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

comprising Whitley Village farm, to her great-nephews and great-nieces, the grandchildren of William Benson of Whitehaven by Anne Ellison, his wife. This property was sold by the trustees of Miss Ellison's will in 1855 to Mr. William Davison, a shipowner in North Shields, from whom it descended to his son, Mr. John Thomas Davison. It is now built over.

The third Henry Hudson had, in 1778, sold eleven acres of land in Whitley quarry to Edward Hall of Flatworth for the purpose of erecting a brewery there. Mr. Hall was well known as an agriculturist and as the breeder of a fat ox which forms the subject of one of Bewick's engravings. To the property in Whitley which he had inherited from his nephew, William Hall of Forth house, Newcastle, he added at various times by purchase from neighbouring landowners, and, about the year 1789, built Whitley park to the north-east of the village. He died in 1792, when Whitley park and grounds were sold to John Haigh, hostman. A few years later Haigh became bankrupt, and the property was resold in 1800 to Mr. Thomas Wright of North Shields. Since Mr. Wright's death in 1840 the house has several times changed hands. It is now the property of the Whitley Park Hotel Company, and the remainder of the estate has been laid out for building purposes.

HALL OF WHITLEY.

I. John Hall, son of John Hall of Whitley, by Catherine his wife, died May 24th. 1743, aged 47. By his wife, Ann, who died January 28th, 1734/5, aged 37, he had issue two sons, John Hall (II.), and Edward Hall of Whitley (who made his will December 31st, 1790, and died unmarried, June 7th, 1792, aged 65); and three daughters, Ann, Catherine, and Isabella who married Samuel Hurry of Great Yarmouth and afterwards of Howdon.

II. John Hall of Whitley, brewer, married Elizabeth, daughter of William Hicks of Whitehaven (marriage settlement dated July 5th, 1746); was admitted to his father's lands at Whitley, May 5th. 1747; died at Berwick-on-Tweed, April 19th, 1762, where he was buried. He left issue, together with an only daughter, Sarah (who married Duncan Campbell, R.N.), a son and heir, William Hall.

III. William Hall of Whitley and of Forth house, Newcastle, was admitted to his father's lands, June 7th, 1777; by his will, dated February 2nd, 1779, he devised his real estate to his uncle, Edward Hall, charged with the payment of £2,000 to his sister's children.¹

The remainder of Edward Hall's property came to his niece, Mrs. Campbell. In consequence of disputes between this lady and her uncle's executors, the estate was thrown into Chancery and sold pursuant to an order made in that court on March 31st, 1804, Whitley Lodge farm being purchased by Zephaniah Shipley, and Whitley Link farm by Cuthbert

¹ Based on pedigree in Bell Collection at Alnwick Castle, No. 369, and on monumental inscriptions at Christ church and Tynemouth priory.

Steel. These farms are now owned respectively by the trustees of John Thomas Davison of North Shields, and by the representatives of Robert Potts of Long Benton.

CAMPBELL OF WHITLEY.

I. Duncan Campbell of Earsdon, an officer in the Royal Navy ; married at Earsdon, August 14th, 1769, Sarah, only daughter of John Hall of Whitley. He died April 21st, 1800, aged 69, and was buried at Earsdon. By his wife, who died at Knightsbridge, May 24th, 1817, he had, with other issue, Edward Hall Campbell (II.) ; Elizabeth, who married February 22nd, 1800, James Justice of Justice hall, co. Berwick ; Maria, who married November 18th, 1797, Thomas Churchill Thompson ; Amelia, who married September 27th, 1800, Sir Wharton Amcotts of Kettlethorp park, co. Lincoln ; Caroline Augusta, who married at St. Michael le Belfry, York, February 10th, 1803, B. Hardy of Hatton Garden, London ; and a daughter, the wife of the Rev. Thomas Craster, rector of Kettlethorpe.

II. Edward Hall Campbell of Saville Row, Newcastle, and of North Shields, brewer ; married at Gosforth, August 9th, 1804, Henrietta, daughter of Cuthbert Reaveley of Newcastle and Kenton, by whom he left issue ; purchased Ivy-house and other property in Whitley in 1824 from John Henzell. He died at Newcastle, April 1st, 1844, aged 67, and was buried at Earsdon. His representatives sold their property in Whitley in 1854 to the duke of Northumberland.¹

William Clarke of Benton and Thomas Taylor of Earsdon succeeded the Hudsons as lessees of the limestone quarries at Marden, and recommenced mining for coal about the year 1810 by opening Cullercoats main, besides working the waste heaps of older coal pits on the Whitley links for ironstone.² They constructed a waggonway past the Monk House to the Low Lights, along which lime and coal were carried in large quantities to be shipped from the lime staiths where the fish quay now is. Edward Hall's brewery, dismantled in 1808, was turned into a storehouse for the colliery. In 1848 the colliery was laid in. Mr. Clarke had sold the greater part of his land in Whitley, now occupied by building sites, in 1809 to Mr. Henry Trewitt. A further account of his family is reserved for Long Benton township.

Nearly all the copyhold land in the township has been enfranchised, and the duke of Northumberland and the executors of Mr. John Thomas Davison are the only large landowners. The duke of Northumberland's property includes land purchased in 1854 from John Henzell's representatives, besides the Whitley hall property above mentioned.

¹ Based on pedigree in Bell Collection, No. 369, and on monumental inscription at Earsdon.

² The Rev. John Hodgson notes in his journal, July 31st, 1821 : 'On the links north of Whitley there are rubbish heaps of old coal-pits, grown over with grass and whins, excepting where the openings of the rabbit burrows are. In them massive pieces of ironstone in flatted spheres, and in masses with parallel faces. They contain mussell shells of different sizes. Also in the same heaps the schist is very thickly filled with shells of the mytillis kind, differing much in size. Whitley colliery is again at work, after being drowned with salt water for several months. The Lenington Iron Company worked ironstone here till the colliery was inundated.' *MS. Materials*, vol. M, p. 32.

HENZELL OF WHITLEY AND NEWCASTLE.

I. Peregrine Henzell of St. Lawrence Broadglass-house, and of the Mushroom, near Newcastle ; married May 8th, 1735, Anne, daughter of Charles Archbold of Whitley and devisee of John Hall of the same place. He made his will on February 14th, 1775, and died October 10th, 1785, aged 72. By his wife, who died February 4th, 1785, aged 72, he had issue John Henzell (II.); Charles Henzell ; Peregrine Henzell of Belvedere house, Whitley, who was baptised December 19th, 1745, made his will December 3rd, 1812, and died July 19th, 1824 ; Julian, wife of Thomas Rutherford of Whitley ; Mary, wife of Joseph Hume ; Anne, wife of Joseph Naters of Sandiford.

II. John Henzell of the Glass-houses, baptised August 31st, 1736, died January 14th, 1784, having had, with other issue, Peregrine Henzell (III.).

III. Peregrine Henzell of Tyne-bridge-end, baptised December 2nd, 1770 ; will dated December 31st, 1816 ; died August 22nd, 1817, leaving issue by his wife Jane, daughter of John Capstaff of the Mushroom.¹

Since the year 1866, the other estates in Whitley have been laid out for building purposes. In 1873, Whitley and Monkseaton were formed into an urban district with a local board under the Local Government Act of 1858. By order of the County Council, October 18th, 1894, the district was divided into the two wards of Whitley and Monkseaton. The local board has been superseded by a District Council under the Parish Councils Act of 1894, and the number of wards has been increased to four, namely, Marden, Monkseaton, Rockcliff, and St. Mary, under an order of the County Council dated November 5th, 1903.

The ecclesiastical parish of St. Paul's, Cullercoats, was formed out of Tynemouth parish in 1860, a church being erected in 1864 by the duke of Northumberland. There are also the following Nonconformist places of worship in Whitley : (1) the United Methodist Free Church in Whitley Road, built in 1905 to replace an earlier chapel erected in 1877, having a schoolroom and lecture hall attached ; (2) a Wesleyan Methodist chapel (Trinity) in Whitley Road, built in 1889 ; (3) the Presbyterian Church of England, Park Parade, built in 1899 ; (4) a Baptist chapel in Oxford Street, built in 1901 ; (5) a Primitive Methodist chapel in Oxford Street, built in 1904 ; and (6) a Congregational church in Park Avenue, built in 1906-1907.

The Prudhoe Memorial Convalescent Home on Whitley links was erected by public subscription in memory of Algernon, fourth duke of Northumberland, and opened in 1869. The Northumberland Village

¹ Based on pedigrees in the Bell Collection, Nos. 373 and 388, wills in the Durham Probate Registry, and registers and monumental inscriptions of All Saints, Newcastle.

Homes for homeless and destitute children was founded by Mr. James Hall of Tynemouth, and opened in 1880. In 1871 a national school was erected in the Whitley road. Two council schools have been recently established, namely, Whitley and Monkseaton North in 1905, and Whitley and Monkseaton South in 1906.¹

MONKSEATON TOWNSHIP.

Monkseaton township is bounded by Whitley on the east, by Hartley on the north, by Earsdon and Murton on the west, by Preston on the south, and by Tynemouth on the south-east. It comprises an area of 1,344 acres,² and in 1901 had a population of 952.³ Its ancient name was Seton, and there can be little doubt that the township formerly included Whitley and extended to the coast. Monkseaton and Whitley were both included in Graffard's lordship, granted to Tynemouth priory in the early part of the reign of Henry I. From that time the village acquired the name of Seton Monachorum, or Monkseaton, as a mark of distinction from Seaton Delaval and Seaton in the parish of Woodhorn.

Walter le Escot of Welton, son of John de Middleton, held seventy-four acres of freehold in Monkseaton at the close of the reign of Henry III. In 1273 he sold the property for £20 to the prior and convent, who in their turn granted forty acres out of the seventy-four to Gilbert de Wulsington.⁴ A survey taken in 1292 shows that the monastery had then three carucates of demesne in Monkseaton, each giving a return of £1 7s., and that they received a rent from their tenants of £2 6s. 10d. and seventy quarters of barley-malt.⁵ Three years later the demesne was measured and found to contain

¹ Further information as to Whitley is to be found in Tomlinson, *Historical Notes on Cullercoats, Whitley, and Monkseaton*.

² Thompson's survey (1757) gives the extent of the township as 1,053 acres 1 rood 10 perches. The tithe commutation map places it at 1,084 acres 2 roods 26 perches, including 808 acres 0 roods 23 perches of arable land, 243 acres 5 perches of meadow, and 33 acres 1 rood 38 perches of buildings, quarry, waggon-ways, etc.

³ The census returns since 1801 are: 1801, 427; 1811, 504; 1821, 537; 1831, 489; 1841, 581; 1851, 424; 1861, 421; 1871, 453; 1881, 450; 1891, 564; 1901, 952. To 1881 inclusive these returns include an allotment on Shire Moor.

⁴ *Feet of Fines*, 1 Edward I. No. 4; *Assize Rolls*, No. 1,217, m. 9 d.

⁵ *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 107; *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 54 b.

	a.	r.	p.		a.	r.	p.
On the south of the seashore ...	12	1	0	In Ber-rigges ...	9	0	0
In Wythermer ...	5	1	10	In le Croftes ...	16	2	0
In the same furlong ...	3	2	0	In North Lang-acres ...	19	1	20
In Short-flat ...	4	1	10	In North-rigge-flat ...	8	0	0
In Merden-flat ...	13	1	0	In the furlong on the north side of the seashore ...	16	2	0
In West Wythermer ...	2	2	10	In le Over-flat near a bank ...	33	1	0
In Colt-fryth ...	7	2	20	In Wytstan-flat ...	9	0	0
In West Lang-acres ...	30	3	0	In Sicchor-rygge ...	20	0	0
In Edereslalawe-flat ...	21	2	10	In Milne-flat ...	8	0	0
In Cotmen-acre ...	5	0	20	A new intake in the Kyne-meadowe	7	0	0 ¹
In Thorn-flat ...	20	2	0				

At the same time 573 acres were held by fifteen and a half bonds and a few cotmen.² Their names appear in the tallage-roll of 1294.

[SETON] MONACHORUM TALLAGE ROLL, 1294.

	£	s.	d.		£	s.	d.
...	1	1	0	[Willelmus] filius Thurby ...	nihil quia pauper		
...	0	5	0	Robertus filius Jurdani ...	0	12	0
...	0	5	0	Galfridus filius Roberti ...	0	5	0
...	0	4	0	Robertus filius Avicie ...	0	8	0
...	0	5	0	Thomas filius Gilberti ...	0	7	0
...	0	5	0	Walterus Guntrem ...	0	2	0
Gilbertus filius Willelmi ...	nihil quia pauper			Walterus de Heryngton ...	0	1	6
Johannes Hert ...	0	6	8	Robertus Sis ...	0	1	6
Willelmus longus ...	0	13	4	Radulfus serviens ...	—		
Johannes filius Johannis ...	0	4	0	Alanus Pleuyn ...	0	1	6
Matilda uxor Willelmi Hert ...	0	6	8				

Summa, £5 14s. 2d.³

With this list may be compared that of the persons who paid subsidy in 1296.

SETON SUBSIDY ROLL, 1296.

	£	s.	d.		s.	d.
Summa bonorum Willelmi filii Rogeri ...	1	19	0	unde regi	3	6½
„ Johannis Hert ...	1	19	0	„	3	6½
„ Ade filii Johannis ...	1	13	3	„	3	0½
„ Willelmi filii Thurby ...	1	2	5	„	2	0½
„ Roberti filii Willelmi ...	1	10	3	„	2	9
„ Waldevi ...	1	19	1	„	3	6½
„ Thome filii Gilberti ...	1	8	4	„	2	7
„ Roberti filii Avicie ...	1	13	1	„	3	0
„ Galfridi filii Roberti ...	1	11	10	„	2	10½
„ Thurby ...	1	17	8	„	3	5
„ Matildis Hert ...	1	13	3	„	3	0½
Summa hujus ville, £18 7s. 2d. ; unde domino regi, £1 13s. 4½d. ¹						

¹ Tynemouth Chartulary, fol. 4.

² St. Alban's Register, fol. 110.

³ Ibid. fol. 8.

¹ Lay Subsidy Roll, 1152.

The custumal of Monkseaton, drawn up about the same time, substitutes the names of Robert son of Thurby, Thurby son of Jordan, and Adam de Erdesden, for those of William son of Thurby, Thurby, and Adam son of John. It also adds those of Ralph son of Walter, William Ald, William Wyot, and Gilbert son of William, making the number of bonds up to fifteen. Each bond held thirty-six acres and rendered the same services as did the bonds of Preston. Robert son of Thurby held an additional two and a half acres, for which he paid 1s. 3d. rent. The cotmen held each a toft and a plot of land for which they did three days' work in the autumn and paid yearly rent. Their names, holdings, and rents are as follow :

'Ux' frater,' four and a half acres, 3s. 9d. rent ; William 'Vicarii,' half an acre, 1s. rent ; Walter de Herynton, four acres, 1s. 4d. rent ; Robert Chis, four acres, 1s. rent ; Robert faber, two and a half acres, 4d. rent ; the miller's wife, three acres, 3s. 9d. rent ; William Guntrem, four acres, 1s. 6d. rent ; Emma, the miller's wife, half an acre, 1s. 7d. rent ; Matilda Chepman, three acres, 6½d. rent ; Alice daughter of Andrew, half an acre, 1s. 7d. rent.

There were three freeholds. Ralph the serjeant held twenty-nine acres and paid 8s. 1d. rent ; Alan Pleuyn and Roger his brother held fifteen acres and paid 2s. 6d. rent ; William, son of Ralph the serjeant, held Thurby Bercar's land, namely ten acres, and paid 2s. 6d. rent. Their services were : money in rent ; half a 'tawe' of malt and half a tawe of conveis-ates ; 3d. for milne-silver ; 3d. for Hertness-pennies ; 3d. for abbot-scot ; boon-ere and boon-harrow ; two anthreps and the prior's great boon-work ; in-lade and Neusum-lade ; herding of cattle taken by way of distraint.¹ Freemen and bonds alike rendered yearly half a quarter of scat-malt, half a quarter of scat-ates, and half a quarter of conveis-ates. The whole township paid three shillings for 'lovinge,' which was probably a commutation for some form of boon-work.²

The surveys and custumals here quoted show that in 1295 there were 880 acres of land in Monkseaton under cultivation. In 1757 the township was found to contain 1,053 acres 1 rood 10 perches. This leaves 173 acres of common, waste, roads and buildings.

The Black Death made its ravages felt in Monkseaton. The fifteen bondage holdings were reduced to ten by throwing some of them into

¹ William, son of Ralph the serjeant, rendered an additional half-tawe of malt and half-tawe of conveis-ates, but was immune from Hertness-pennies and abbot-scot, and only paid 1½d. for milne-silver.

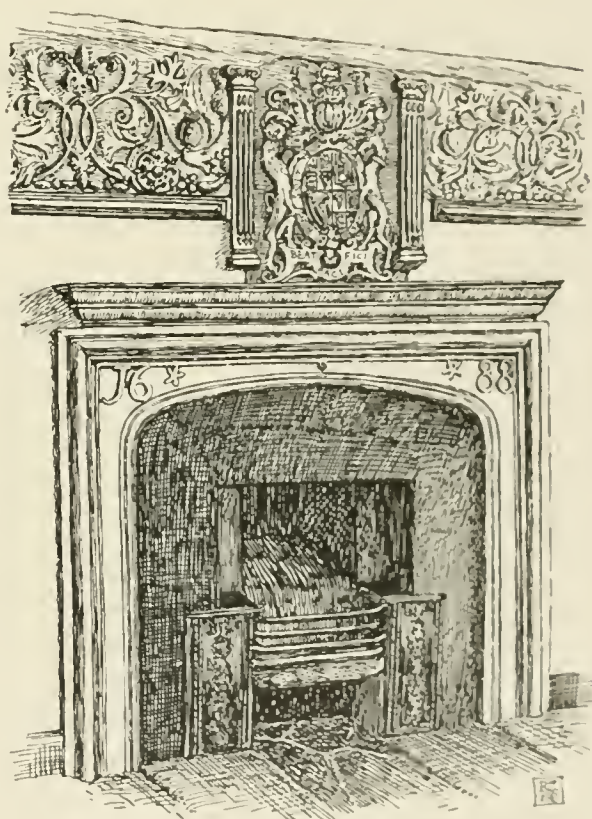
² *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 40-41.

demesne ; and of the remaining ten farms, six were lying waste in 1377 and the other four were in the prior's hands. The little colony of agriculturists had been absolutely swept away, as may be seen from the surveyor's note :

Rent of ten bondage holdings, £2 4s. 0½d., paid in coin. Of these ten holdings, four render no labour service and are in the prior's hands ; six have lain waste for want of tenants since the time of the first pestilence. Rent of free tenants in the town, paid in coin, 2s. 10½d. There is one freeman, named Merley, heir to Robert Teuyng, who holds a cottage and four acres, and half of the tenements and lands formerly held by Adam Fawconer ; but he has as yet paid no rent. Cottages and lands formerly held by Adam Fawconer, and now let at the will of the lord, pay £2 11s. 1d.¹

The ten holdings again found tenants. In 1538 there were ten tenants in husbandry, each having one tenement, with thirty-six acres of arable, one rood of meadow, and pasture for six oxen in the ox pasture, and for six cattle, twenty sheep, and three horses in the common pasture. The rent for a holding was twenty shillings, besides four quarters of barley and two quarters of oats ; and each tenant paid in addition 8d. for the farm of the tithe of hay and 4d. for pannage. A meadow called Chamberlain's meadow, containing nine acres two roods twenty perches, was farmed by the whole township for £1 6s. 8d. John Robinson held fifteen acres of freehold land for which he paid three shillings rent.²

No change in the extent of arable land attached to each tenement had taken place since 1295. On the other hand over five hundred acres



FIREPLACE IN THE SHIP INN, MONKSEATON.

¹ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fols. 52 and 59 b.

² Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 222. Thompson's survey, taken in 1757, gives the acreage of Chamberlain's meadow and Robinson's land, and mentions another demesne close, Shankey's field, containing 7 acres 2 roods.

previously arable or meadow, including the three carucates of demesne, had been converted into pasture, and equal grazing rights had been attached to each of the remaining holdings. The common fields remained unenclosed until the third quarter of the seventeenth century.¹ The various farms have, for the most part, retained their original boundaries, and show the principle on which division was carried out; the farm buildings being grouped together in the village, while the lands attached to them run out from the village to the edge of the township like the spokes of a wheel.

Monkseaton farm, at the north-west corner of the township, was for long the property of the Mills family, and was sold by their representatives, Messrs. Tatham and Mitchell, to Mr. James Younger of Burradon, the present owner. A portion of the Mills property, called South-ridge, passed to Roger Boulby of North Shields, who married Elizabeth, daughter of John Mills. Acquired in 1840 by Henry Perronet Briggs of London, it was resold in 1865 to William Davison of North Shields, and since 1894 has been the property of Mr. John Thomson. The Ship Inn, built in 1688, was formerly the residence of the Mills family.

MILLS OF MONKSEATON.

I. John Mills of Bishopwearmouth, baptised October 7th, 1632; succeeded, on the death of his brother, Thomas Mills, to lands in Monkseaton; made his will January 2nd, 1690, and died leaving issue,

II. John Mills of Monkseaton, who married Mary Smith, and left issue, a son, John Mills (III.), and two daughters, Elizabeth, wife of Roger Boulby, and Mary, wife of Leonard Huntridge.

III. John Mills of Newcastle, attorney, baptised November 29th, 1688; admitted to his father's lands in Monkseaton, October 17th, 1711; married Jane, daughter of Mark Browell of Newcastle (marriage settlement dated February 11th, 1712), by whom he had issue a son, John Mills (IV.), and a daughter, Mary, wife of Robert Robinson of Durham.

IV. John Mills of Lincoln College, Oxford; matriculated October 10th, 1744, aged 16; B.A. 1748; M.A. 1753; perpetual curate of Jarrow, 1751-1775; will dated October 11th, 1768; died *s.p.* and was succeeded by his niece, Jane Robinson, who in 1794 married the Rev. Edward Parker of the city of Durham.²

To the east of Monkseaton farm lies the Red House farm, formerly owned by a family of the name of Hall. The northern portion was surrendered on August 16th, 1687, to John Clarke of North Shields, whose great-grand-daughter, Anne Clarke, brought it by marriage to Samuel Lacy of Preston.³ Their grandson, Samuel Lacy of Kirkoswald in Cumberland,

¹ On July 3rd, 1650, Thomas Hall surrendered to George Milbourne of Chirton, five rigs or leazes of meadow and arable in Monkseaton, namely, one rig lying east and west in the lord's close, another rig lying east and west in Mazon leazes, two rigs lying together east and west in Deckham dubb, and another rig in Deckham dubb. *Tynemouth Court Rolls*.

² Based on abstract of title in the possession of Mr. W. H. Ryott.

³ See *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Newcastle*, 2nd series, vol. ix. pp. 219-222.

sold it in 1801 to Thomas Wright of Dockwray Square and afterwards of Whitley park. Mr. Wright's executors resold it in 1855 to Mr. Edward Stobbs, to whose trustees it still belongs. The southern portion was surrendered on March 27th, 1704, by William Wall of Newcastle to Jonathan Hyndmer, whose representatives sold it in 1763 to Anthony Pearson of North Shields. It passed under his will to William Linskill of Tynemouth house, and was sold in 1875 by the late Captain Linskill to Mr. Edward Stobbs, whose family still owns it.

HINDMER OF MONKSEATON AND NEWCASTLE.

I. William Hindmer of Newcastle, will dated January 24th, 1703; by his wife, Mary, who made her will June 2nd, 1715, he had a son,

II. Jonathan Hindmer of Newcastle, acquired property in Monkseaton in 1704; by his first wife he had issue a son, William Hindmer (III.), and a daughter, Mary, wife of John Cook of Newcastle. He married, secondly, Barbara, daughter of William Peareth of Newcastle, and widow of Abraham Dixon of Newcastle; she was buried May 11th, 1727. By his will, dated May 7th, 1705, he left his farmhold in Monkseaton and his lands in Westmorland to his son William.

III. William Hindmer of North Shields, merchant; married Sarah, daughter of John Story of North Shields (marriage settlement dated January 11th, 1720), by whom he had issue a son, Jonathan Hindmer (IV.), and a daughter, Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Thompson of Newcastle, merchant. By his will, February 28th, 1723/4, he devised his real estate at Kirkby Stephen, his houses in Newcastle, and his copyhold lands in Northumberland to his son Jonathan.

IV. Jonathan Hindmer of Newcastle, merchant, made his will October 29th, 1748, whereby he gave all his property to his sister, Mrs. Thompson, whom he made sole executrix.¹

Monkseaton North-west farm bounds the Red House farm on the east. It was surrendered on April 22nd, 1690, by John Rogers of Newcastle, to Henry Hudson of Whitley, whose representatives sold it in 1853 to the duke of Northumberland. At the north-east corner of the township is Monkseaton Village farm, which was surrendered on October 14th, 1680, by Elizabeth Collyer of Newcastle, to Robert Cay of the same place, baker and brewer.² Coal was worked upon this property at the commencement of the eighteenth century. It was sold in 1885 by the executors of Rev. Edward Cay Adams of Hawkchurch, in the county of Dorset, to the late Mr. T. A. Potts of Newcastle, who laid it out for building purposes. To the south of it is another building estate, formerly called Bygate farm, owned in 1740 by Christopher Spanton of Monkseaton, and sold by his representatives to Alexander Crichton of North Shields in 1795.

South and west of Bygate farm is Monkseaton South-west farm,

¹ Based on deeds in Mr. Richard Welford's possession and on abstract of title in the Bell Collection, No. 352.

² For a pedigree of Cay see vol. ii. of this work, pp. 298-300.

which was surrendered by William Hills, on December 7th, 1711, to John Robinson of Whitley. Robinson's representatives sold it in 1779 to William Clark of Dockwray Square, and it was resold by his heirs in 1813 to Ralph Crawford of Hartley South farm.¹ From Ralph Crawford the farm descended to his son-in-law, Mr. John Moor of Morpeth High House, whose representatives sold it in 1885 to the duke of Northumberland. His Grace is also owner of the Rake close, in the south-west of the township. This was purchased in 1822, along with the Backworth estate, from Mr. Ralph William Grey, to whose ancestor, Ralph Grey of Backworth, it had been surrendered on April 2nd, 1662, by Thomas Hall.

Seaton Ville farm, northward from the Rake House farm, represents a holding surrendered by Robert Fyfe on April 26th, 1654, to James Barker of Monkseaton. Robert Barker of Monkseaton, tanner, grandson of the latter, surrendered his property on April 27th, 1706, to George Johnson of Monkseaton.² It was purchased in 1792 from the representatives of the Johnson family by Henry Mitcalfe of Murton House, and since that time has followed the same course of descent as the Murton House property.

Between Seaton Ville and Monkseaton farms is the Burnt House farm, formerly the property of the Reay family. John Reay, who died without issue in 1715, devised it to his nephew, Charles Archbold of Monkseaton. A moiety was sold in 1762 by the trustees of Reay Archbold, son of Charles Archbold, to Nathaniel Tavernor, a block and mast maker in North Shields, and remained in the possession of his descendants until 1902, when it came into the hands of Mr. Alexander Fairweather. The other moiety was sold by the Archbold family in 1815 to John Crawford of the Steam Mill, North Shields, and has descended from him to the present owner, Mr. Shallett John Crawford.

¹ A pedigree of Clark is given above on p. 273. For the Crawford pedigree see pp. 333-334.

² George Johnson of Monkseaton appears to have been a brother of John Johnson of Bebside, for whom see above, p. 347. He was buried on March 12th, 1708/9, leaving issue three sons and three daughters, namely, (1) William Johnson, who was apprenticed on September 29th, 1710, to John Johnson, hostman; was admitted free of the Hostmen's Company, June 19th, 1718; made his will on June 10th, 1749; and was buried May 5th, 1751; (2) John Johnson, who was apprenticed May 6th, 1715, to Ralph Snowdon, hostman; was admitted to the Hostmen's Company, May 6th, 1723, and died October 18th, 1723; (3) George Johnson, who was apprenticed to John Johnson, hostman, July 8th, 1725; was admitted to the Hostmen's Company, November 29th, 1732; and was buried May 28th, 1734; (4) Ann, the wife of Nathaniel Green of Preston; (5) Mary, the wife of Ward; (6) Elizabeth, the wife of William Hedley of Newcastle. From notices given in Dendy, *Hostmen's Books*; a deed in Mr. Welford's collections, and *Earsdon Parish Registers*.

MURTON TOWNSHIP.

Murton township forms an intrusion into the bleak and level district of the Shire Moor. Previously to the enclosure of 1788, the moor surrounded this township on the north, west, and south-west. On the north-east and east it is bordered by Monkseaton, and on the south-east by Preston. Thompson's survey of the manor, taken in 1757, gives it an acreage of 450 acres 3 roods. Subsequent additions, on the side of Shire Moor, have increased its size to 680 acres. In 1901 the population was 869.¹

Murton first occurs in the list of townships of which the prior and convent of Tynemouth received confirmation in 1189.² It consisted of a few freeholds. Nicholas de Morton, Robert de Chirton, and Roger Tod appeared to make acknowledgment for their holdings to the abbot of St. Alban's in 1264,³ and again in 1291.⁴ The survey of 1292 states that the rental of Murton was £2 12s. 6d., and that the prior and convent had a carucate of arable demesne at a place called Moor-houses, worth 6s. 8d. clear.⁵ A terrier prepared in 1295 specifies the following parcels of demesne :

In Kylne-flat, 5 acres 3 roods 10 perches; in the same, 8 acres 1 rood 20 perches; in Wyth-flat, 21 acres 2 roods; in the Brokes, 2 acres 3 roods; in Galu-flat, 7 acres 2 roods; in the same, 3 roods; in the same, 24 acres; in Mus-welle, 9 acres 2 roods; in the same, 2 roods.⁶

The subsidy roll of 1296 gives the names of five tenants :

MORTON SUBSIDY ROLL, 1296.

		£	s.	d.		s.	d.
Summa bonorum	Nicholai de Morton	...	...	3	2	0	unde regi 5 7 $\frac{3}{4}$
"	Rogeri de eadem	...	...	3	7	0	" 6 1
"	Galfridi de eadem	...	...	1	14	0	" 3 1
"	Radulphi de eadem	...	...	1	4	2	" 2 2 $\frac{1}{2}$
"	Johannis de eadem	...	...	1	4	0	" 2 2 $\frac{1}{2}$
Summa hujus ville, £10 11s. 2d.; unde domino regi, 19s. 2 $\frac{1}{2}$ d. ⁷							

¹ Population returns are: 1801, 496; 1811, 615; 1821, 556; 1831, 451; 1841, 438; 1851, 499; 1861, 543; 1871, 515; 1881, 446; 1891, 630; 1901, 869.

² See above, page 67, note 3.

³ Nicholaus de Morton fecit homagium pro tenemento suo quod tenet in eadem villa de Morton, et dedit nomine recognicionis iij s. Item die sancti Vincentii in camera prioris de Tynemuth fecit fidelitatem Rogerus Tod, et pro confirmatione xxx et unius acrarum terre quas tenet in villa de Morton dedit xs. Item die et loco supradictis fecit Robertus de Chirton fidelitatem, et pro confirmatione x acrarum terre quas tenet in villa de Morton dedit iij s. *St. Alban's Register*, fol. 62; and compare *ibid.* fol. 129. Radulphus [prior] dedit Rogero filio Roberti Tod de Castello triginta et unam acras, cum duabus partibus tofti et crofti in Est Morton, pro xvs. et vjd. annuis.

⁴ *Ibid.* fol. 153 b.

⁵ *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 55 b.

⁶ *Ibid.* fol. 5.

⁷ Lay Subsidy Roll, 1 $\frac{1}{2}$ s.

No cornage was paid by Murton, and, so far as can be ascertained, no services were required from the tenants except rents of assize and suit of court. There were within the township the two hamlets of East and West Murton. Property in each of them was acquired by the prior and convent.¹ Thus, in 1339, Richard de Dalton of Newcastle, and Matilda his wife, granted to Tynemouth priory a messuage and sixty acres of land in Murton, receiving back the messuage and forty acres on lease for their joint lives at twenty shillings yearly rent.² Prior Dunham, at an earlier date, had granted three acres in Murton to the sacristan of Tynemouth, for the maintenance of one poor person and the provision of lights for the high altar.³ In 1377 rents of assize and rents of land let out at will brought in £5 4s. 6³/₄d. yearly.⁴

There is no mention of demesne in the minister's accounts of 1538, but two hundred acres of land in the township were arable or meadow in the hands of customary tenants, and the rest was common pasture. Each tenant held forty-two acres of arable, eight acres of meadow, and pasture for twelve cattle, thirty sheep, and three horses in the common pasture. The rent due from each holding was £1 2s., and four quarters of oats, as well as 10d. for tithe hay and 4d. for pannage. Six shillings was paid for a cottage.⁵ In 1580 George Dennand, one of the four tenants, was paying 3s. for three acres and three roods called Lady-land, which is perhaps to be identified with Prior Dunham's gift.⁶ A small freehold of four acres was

¹ See above, pp. 115-116.

² Hec indentura testatur quod nos, prior et conventus de Tynemuth, concessimus et presenti carta dimisimus Ricardo de Dalton et Matildae uxori ejus unum mesuagium et quadraginta acras terrae cum pertinentiis in Moreton, habenda et tenenda ad terminum vitae ipsorum Ricardi et Matildis, tenenda de nobis et successoribus nostris annuatim solvendis, etc. Hiis testibus, Roberto de Surese, tunc ballivo libertatis de Tynemuth, Johanne de Bacworth, Willelmo Faukes, Alano de Castro, Willelmo de Hereford, Johanne de Whitele, et aliis. Data apud Tenemuth, quintodecimo die Maii, A.D. 1339. *Tynemouth Chartulary*, fol. 102 b. Omnibus, etc., Ricardus prior de Tynemuth et ejusdem loci conventus, salutem. Noveritis quod, consideratis munificentis nobis per Ricardum de Dalton de Novo Castro exhibitis et expressis, remisimus eidem Ricardo et Matildae uxori suae ad terminum vitae utriusque tres solidos et quatuor denarios annuatim, etc. Datum apud Tynemuth, sextodecimo die Julii, A.D. 1339. *Ibid.* fol. 103.

³ Memorandum quod dominus Radulphus de Dunham, prior de Tynemuth, dedit et concessit cum consensu ejusdem loci conventus domino J. de Sutherax, tunc sacristae de Tynemuth, et ejus successori qui pro tempore fuerit, imperpetuum unam dimidiam acram terrae in campo de Moreton, pro qua dabit sacrista qui pro tempore fuerit singulis annis tres denarios die cenae, ad inveniendum unum pauperem ad mandatum prioris; item pro duabus acris et dimidia cum pastura quas idem J., licencia ejusdem Radulphi prioris, emit de Nicholao de Moreton, inveniet sacrista qui pro tempore fuerit duos cereos ad majus altare, scilicet unum ante ymaginem beatae virginis, et alium ante ymaginem sancti Oswini, cum aliis cereis in omnibus principalibus festis ardentibus, et in anniversario domini Johannis abbatis, et domini Radulphi de Dunham, prioris de Tynemuth. *Ibid.* fol. 73 b.

⁴ *Ibid.* fols. 52 and 59 b.

⁵ Ministers' Accounts in Gibson, *Tynemouth*, vol. i. p. 222.

⁶ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

termed Dacre's close, from the name of its former owner, and was devised by Cuthbert Alder, by will dated May 23rd, 1736, to the minister and churchwardens of Long Benton, for the benefit of the poor of Weetslade township.¹ A comparison of two surveys taken in 1707 and 1757 shows the size of the various holdings after enclosure had taken place.²

Name of Tenant, 1707.			Name of Tenant, 1757.				Holding, 1707.	Acreage, 1757.	
								a.	r.
Thomas Andrew, gent.	...	...	Heirs of William Johnson				1 farm	109	2
Heirs of George Rutter	...	...	Abraham Stout				1 „	110	2
John Douglas, esq.	...	}	Sir Matthew White, bart.				1 „	103	2
Isabell Dinning	...								
John Hutchinson	...	...	John Hutchinson				$\frac{1}{2}$ „	47	3
Winifred Milbourne	...	...	Edw. Collingwood and Hilton Lawson				$\frac{1}{4}$ „	26	2
Robert Barker	...	...	Robert Barker				$\frac{1}{4}$ „	32	0

Murton North farm was acquired in 1741 from Robert Andrew of Gateshead by William Johnson of Monkseaton and Newcastle, hostman. It descended through his sister, Ann Green, wife of Nathaniel Green of Preston, to her son, Nathaniel Green of London, whose nieces and devisees, Mary Tattersall and Elizabeth Ward, sold it in 1825 to Matthew Wilson of Blyth. Matthew Wilson's representatives sold it in 1856 to Miss Jane Davison of North Shields, and it is now owned by her devisees and by Mr. John Bowman of South Shields. Murton Steads farm, lying to the east of this property, was sold by John Hutchinson in 1770, and now belongs to the representatives of Mr. Shallett Hewson, who purchased it in 1856.

Murton House farm was sold in 1765 by William Stout of Durham, grandson of Abraham Stout of the same place, to Henry Mitcalfe of North Shields.³ It descended to Mr. Mitcalfe's grand-daughter, Ann Bird Mitcalfe, wife of Levi Ames of Clifton, who sold it in 1833 to Mr. Robert Hansell. His trustees sold it in 1872 to Mr. Joseph Love of Durham, to whose representatives it now belongs. The quarter of a farm owned in 1764 by Collingwood and Lawson is still in the possession of the Collingwood family.

Murton farm represents a holding owned in the seventeenth century by the yeoman family of Dinning or Dennand. It was surrendered by Margaret Dinning in January, 1679, to Robert Lawson of Ulgham,⁴ whose son, George

¹ *Ex inf.* Mr. W. W. Tomlinson.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ For a note on the pedigree of this branch of the Mitcalfe family, see above, p. 268.

⁴ For Lawson of Ulgham and Gloster Hill see Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. ii. vol. ii. pp. 175, 177, and vol. v. of this work, pp. 263-264.

Lawson of Gloster Hill, conveyed it on October 20th, 1702, to John Douglas of Newcastle. In September, 1718, it passed from John Douglas to John Johnson of Newcastle and Bebside. Mr. Johnson devised it to his son-in-law, Matthew White of Blagdon, whose descendant, Sir Matthew White Ridley, bart., sold the farm in 1774 to John Hedley of Newcastle. Mr. Hedley's representatives resold it in 1803 to Robert Gothard of Long Benton, from whom it was purchased in 1824 by Thomas Dryden of Seaton Sluice. Mr. Dryden also bought land in Murton, sold in 1823 by John Barker of North Shields, and his property is now owned by his representatives.

The colliery villages of New York and Philadelphia date from the war of American independence. Philadelphia formed, for a time, a separate constabulary, but is now included in Murton township. Ninety-four acres were allotted to Murton upon the division of Shire Moor in 1788, and seventy-five acres have been subsequently added under orders of the Local Government Board.

SHIRE MOOR.

From Murton and Earsdon westward, a great tract of desolate country stretches right across Long Benton township in the direction of North Gosforth. The western portion is called Killingworth moor; the eastern portion bears the alternative names of Billy moor, Billy Mill moor, Tyne-mouthshire moor, and Shire moor. It stands at a uniform height of between 200 and 250 feet above the sea. No trees grow on its exposed and level surface. The shallow loughs which studded it have been drained, and turnpike roads and colliery lines have been carried through it in every direction. The tall chimneys of colliery engines, huge pit-heaps, and rows of miners' cottages form its only distinctive features.

Possibly this was the Tine-mor, where, in 917, Ragnall, the Danish king of Northumbria, suffered defeat at the hands of Constantine mac Aedh, king of the Scots.¹ Some tradition of a fight here between the Scots and

¹ 'Bellum Tinemore factum est in xvij anno, A.D. 921, inter Constantinum et Regnall, et Scotti habuerunt victoriam.' Pictish Chronicle in *Chronicles of the Picts and Scots*, Scottish Record Publications, p. 9. A fuller account is given in the *Annals of Ulster*, Irish Record Publications, vol. i. p. 437. It is there stated that, in the year 917, Ragnall, king of the Dubhigall, met the men of Alba on the banks of the Tyne, in North Saxonland. The men of Alba gained a victory over three battalions, and made a great slaughter of the Gentiles, including their earls, Ottir and Graggaba. Ragnall, however, afterwards attacked the rear of the army of the men of Alba, and made a slaughter of them, but no king or 'mormaer' of them perished. Night interrupted the battle. The fragmentary *Book of Leinster* says that Ragnall himself perished (*Wars of the Gaedhill with the Gaill*, Rolls Series, pp. 35, 235), but he did not in fact meet his death until 920. *Annals of Ulster*, vol. i. p. 441. This battle is usually identified

English survives in the legend of Hungus mac Ferlon, the great king of the Picts, who gathered his host against Athelstan, king of the Saxons, and camped at the mouth of the river Tyne. In the battle that ensued, St. Andrew intervened on behalf of the Picts. His interposition rendered the flight of the Saxons less discreditable but not less disastrous, and Athelstan's headless trunk was found among the countless numbers of the slain.¹

A survey made in 1722 estimates the size of Billy Mill moor at 1,305 acres 38 perches. Thompson's survey of 1757 gives it at 1,253 acres.² The boundaries are given in a verdict made in the manor court about the close of the seventeenth century :

THE BOUNDERS OF THE MOORE.

Wee finde that the bounders of the said moore beginneth at the west nooke of West Chirton dicke towards the north, and so north-west by a letch to certaine march stones at the north-east end of Rawes moore; from thence west and by north to another march stone almost at the head of the said letch; from thence north-west and by north up another letch to a place in Willington new close called Greenchestere ;³ from thence west and by north to the north-west end of the said close ; from thence to the west end of Paddocke poole, and so north-west to the Hagggar stones being three great stones lying together in a whinbush; and so north-west to a stand with a hole in it, wherein, as it should seem, hath stood a crosse; and from thence directly to Backworth dicke on the south side of Backworth

with the battle of Corbridge, for which the *Historia de S. Cuthberto* is sole authority, but it seems impossible to reconcile the accounts of the two battles, for at Corbridge 'paganus rex vicit, Constantinum fugavit, Elfredum, sancti Cuthberti fidelem, et omnes meliores Anglos interfecit preter Ealdredum et fratrem ejus Uhtred.' *Symeon of Durham*, Rolls Series, vol. i. p. 209. A full account of the history of these years will be given under Corbridge, and it is here sufficient to note that the narratives quoted furnish some slight evidence of the importance of Tynemouth as a stronghold of the Danish kings, for which see also above, pp. 40-41.

¹ Legend of St. Andrew in Skene, *Chronicles of the Picts and Scots*, p. 183. The account might be dismissed as wholly legendary were it not for the reference to war in 740 between Angus and Eadbert, king of Northumbria; Bede, *Hist. Eccl.* ed. Plummer, vol. i. p. 362.

² Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

³ '1724, August 27th, David Richardson, herd of a place called Greene Chester, belonging to Willington in the parish of Wallsend, buried in the churchyard of Earsdon.' *Earsdon Registers*. In an eighteenth-century plan of Willington farm two fields called West Green Chester and East Green Chester are shown lying on the borders of Shire Moor, north of Milbank Square. *Watson Papers*, North of England Institute of Mining and Mechanical Engineers. Though actual traces of earthworks have vanished, the names of Green Chesters and Black Chesters suggest a continuation in a southeasterly direction of 'a series of small camps, each eighty or a hundred yards square, that run in a line northwards out of Cramlington grounds, through Plessey and Shotton, into the east part of the township of Stanington,' to which allusion is made by the Rev. John Hodgson, *Northumberland*, pt. ii. vol. ii. p. 306, note; compare also pt. ii. vol. iii. p. 440. Their origin must await further investigation. For other instances of the name of Green Chesters see *Proc. Soc. Antiq. Newcastle*, 2nd series, vol. vii. p. 16.

⁴ The stone, known as the Holy Stone, still remains in its original position, a few yards north of the railway, westwards from Backworth station. The socket measures only 6½ by 5½ inches, and, from being carried right through the stone, suggests joiner's work. The place is commemorated in an old song of the pitmen of Long Benton :

"The Holy Stone's a holy place ; the trees are thick and la' ;
But they are nought to the Moor Yate for footy again the wa'."

Possibly the origin of the name Rodestone moor (for which see above, page 316, note 1) is to be found in this *rood-stone*. The reference is certainly not to the Monk's stone as Brand supposed; *Newcastle*, vol. ii. p. 90.

eastward downe the said dike till it come to the marches betweene Backworth and Earsdon west feild dicke on the outside thereof, till it come to the marches betweene Earsdon and Morton, and so south-east along Morton west feild dicke to the Rakehead, and so south as far as Preston west feild dicke goeth to the marches betweene Preston and East Chirton to the north dicke of East Chirton close called Billy milne close to the turne of the said dicke south to the gate that cometh from East Chirton to Billimilne moore; and so south and by west to the dike of Middle Chirton, and from thence west and by south along to the said dike of Middle Chirton to the bourne and dike between West Chirton and Middle Chirton, and so along West Chirton dike on the north side thereof westwards to the north nooke of West Chirton dike, deviding West Chirton and Willington, to the west nooke thereof where it begins.¹

Every year, on St. Mark's Day, the bailiff of Tynemouthshire and several of the copyholders rode the boundary. Robert Saburn of Balkwell deposed in 1737 to having seen horse races run forty years before, on the day that the boundary was ridden.² The bailiff's duties in connection with the moor are given as follow :

The manor bayliff rides the boundery on St. Mark Day annually, and generally expends five or six pounds with the copyholders, repairs the Tynemouth bounder hedges and pinfold on the moor, which amounts one year with another to about fifteen pounds, and is at an uncertain expence annually in herding the moor, impounding the cattle belonging to ye Long Benton township for trespassing on ye common, and drives the moor once or twice a year, and he employs on that occasion ten or fifteen persons to assist him, and has disbursed between thirty, forty, and fifty shillings in doing that business, which necessarily detains him and his assistance from one or two in the morning till four or five o'clock next day.³

The customs regulating the right of common on the moor are described in an agreement drawn up on May 1st, 1707. The sole right of herbage and of eating and depasturing on Billy Mill moor was there stated to belong to the tenants of the seven copyhold townships within the manor of Tynemouth; the tenants of Tynemouth and North Shields, where freehold tenure prevailed, being excluded. There were fifty-three farms in the seven townships. Every farm had eight stints allotted to it, and paid two shillings to the herd, who had a house upon the moor. The agreement contains the usual prohibition of carting or leading flags and turves.⁴

In 1788 the tenants of Tynemouthshire came to terms with the lord of the manor for the enclosure of the common. The Act of Parliament authorising division, provides for the setting out of highways and bridle-paths over the common, of a breadth not less than forty feet, in the one case, and not exceeding twenty-one feet in the other. One sixteenth part of the residue was to be allotted to the duke of Northumberland as lord

¹ Duke of Northumberland's MSS.

² *Ibid.*

³ *Ibid.*

⁴ *Ibid.*

of the manor, in lieu of his right to the soil, and the remainder to all persons having right of common or stints. Allotments to the lord of the manor were to be of freehold tenure, and allotments in right of stints appurtenant to copyhold farms were to be of copyhold tenure. The duke of Northumberland, as lord of the manor, was to have full power to work mines and quarries within the moor, and to lay waggon-ways for leading coals from the pits. If anyone sustained damage by the mines being wrought, compensation was to be made to him by all the owners of allotments.¹

Commissioners were appointed for setting out, dividing, and allotting the commons. They allowed claims for 448 $\frac{3}{8}$ stints upon the moor, the number being made as follows :

Duke of Northumberland, 54 stints (plus $\frac{1}{16}$ th of the whole) ; Ralph William Grèy, esq., 101 $\frac{1}{4}$; John Lawson, esq., 18 ; John Noble, 4 ; Henry Metcalfe, 8 ; John Hedley, esq., 8 ; Edward Collingwood, esq., 10 ; Nathaniel Green, 8 ; John Barker, 1 $\frac{2}{3}$; Thomas Barker, $\frac{2}{3}$; Henry Cramlington, 4 ; Thomas Fenwick, esq., 16 $\frac{2}{3}$; Elizabeth Barker, 16 ; William Ainsley, 4 ; Robert Robinson, 4 ; Edward Hall, esq., 22 $\frac{4}{5}$; Ralph Milbank, esq., 32 ; Richard Ellison, esq., 2 $\frac{2}{3}$; Samuel Lacey, esq., 34 ; Mr. Robert Yelloley, 8 ; Henry Hudson, esq., 22 $\frac{2}{3}$; John Archbold, 4 ; Nathaniel Tavenor, 4 ; Christopher Spanton, 2 ; Henry Boulton, esq., 8 ; Jane Mills, 14 ; Thomas Sikes and others, 8 ; Messrs. Clarke, 8 ; Thomas Rutherford, 8 ; Rev. Wilfrid Huddleston, 2 $\frac{2}{3}$; Joseph and Ralph Saburn, 1 ; Juliet Rutherford, 1 ; Peregrine Henzell, 1 ; Rachel Yeoman and Mary Waters, 5 $\frac{1}{3}$; Ralph Spearman, 2. Total, 448 $\frac{3}{8}$ stints.

The award is dated October 19th, 1790. A reference to the plan accompanying it (Plate XVII.) shows that the number of acres allotted to each tenant bears only an approximate relation to the number of stints in respect to which allotment was made, other considerations being introduced to insure an equable division. As a claim to a certain number of stints expressed the rights of common appurtenant to a farm in one of the seven copyhold townships of the manor, the land awarded in virtue of each respective claim was assigned to that township within which the particular farm lay. Thus an allotment made to a farm in Monkseaton came to be included in Monkseaton township, and if a copyholder held a whole farm in one township and half a farm in another, his allotment was equivalently divided between the two townships. The sixteenth part of the moor assigned to the duke of Northumberland, as lord of the manor, was, under the provisions of a subsequent Act,² reckoned as falling within Chirton township.

¹ 28 George III. cap. xlvii.

² 46 George III. cap. xlvii.

This arrangement resulted in a large number of detached portions of various townships being scattered over the moor. It continued in force until December 20th, 1881, when, under an order of the Local Government Board, portions of Monkseaton and Whitley were transferred to the contiguous townships. Other changes were made under the Divided Parishes Act of 1882, and under another order of the Local Government Board, made on March 24th, 1889, the colliery village known as the Allotment, built early in the nineteenth century upon land assigned to Preston, was transferred from that township to Chirton. Detached fragments of Chirton and Murton still exist, as well as insignificant portions of Tynemouth, Cullercoats, and North Shields. Part of Murton township lying within the municipal borough of Tynemouth has, for nominal purposes, become a separate civil parish. The principal proprietors of lands in Shire Moor are the duke of Northumberland (Shire Moor farm), the Backworth colliery owners (Allotment farm), Mr. John Liddell's heirs (Prospect Hill farm), and Mr. Charles Taylor of London (Murton Grange farm).

APPENDIX I.

REFERENCES TO GEOLOGICAL LITERATURE.

Author.	Title.	Authority.	Date.
1.—Thomson (Dr.) ...	A Geognostical Sketch of the Counties of North Durham and part of Cumberland.	<i>Annals of Philosophy</i> , Nov. p. 337.	1814
2.—Winch (N. J.) ...	Geology of Northumberland and Durham.	<i>Trans. Geol. Soc.</i> vol. iv. p. 1 (pub. 1817).	1814
3.—Sedgwick (Prof. Adam)	On the Geological Relations and Internal Structure of the Magnesian Limestone.	<i>Proc. Geol. Soc.</i> vol. i. p. 2. <i>Trans. Geol. Soc.</i> 2nd series, vol. iii. pp. 37-124.	1826
4.—Trevelyan (Sir W. C.)	On a Whin Dyke in Cowpen Colliery, near Blyth, Northumberland.	<i>Proc. Geol. Soc.</i> vol. i. p. 23. 1834. <i>Trans. Geol. Soc.</i> 2nd series, vol. ii. p. 405. 1828.	1827
5.—Wood (Nicholas)	On the Geology of a part of Northumberland and Cumberland.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. Northumberland and Durham.</i> vol. i. p. 305.	1831
6.—Howse (R.) ...	Catalogue of the Fossils of the Permian System of the Counties of Northumberland and Durham.	<i>Trans. Tyneside Nat. Field Club</i> , vol. i. p. 219.	1848
7.—Hancock (A.) ...	Notice of the Occurrence of Fossil Fish in the rocks (marl slate) in the great slip dyke at Cullercoats Haven.	<i>Trans. Tyneside Nat. Field Club</i> , vol. i. pt. ii. p. 275.	1848
8.—King (Wm.) ...	Monograph of Permian Fossils.	<i>Pal. Soc.</i>	1850
9.—Sorby (H. C.) ...	On the Oscillation of the Currents drifting the Sandstone Beds of the South-east of Northumberland	<i>Proc. Yorks. Polyt. Soc.</i> vol. iii. p. 232.	1852
10.—Howse (R.) ...	Notes on the Permian System of Northumberland and Durham, being a supplement to the Catalogue of Fossils.	<i>Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist.</i> vol. xix. 2nd series, pp. 33, 304 and 463.	1857
11.—" "	Notes on the Permian System of Northumberland and Durham.	<i>Trans. Tyneside Nat. Field Club</i> , vol. iii. p. 235.	1857
12.—Hancock (A.) ...	Remarks on certain Vermiform Fossils found in the Mountain Limestone Districts of the North of England.	<i>Trans. Tyneside Nat. Field Club</i> , vol. iv. p. 17. Plates III.-VIII.	1858
13.—Hurst (T. G.) ...	On some Peculiarities of the Low Main Seam.	<i>Trans. North of England Inst. Mining Engineers</i> , vol. viii. p. 23.	1860
14.—Geinitz (Dr. H. B.)	The Dyas or Permian Formation in England.	Leipsig. 1861.	1861
15.—Binney and Kirkby	Translation of above.	<i>Trans. Manchester Geol. Soc.</i> vol. iv. p. 121.	1863
16.—Howse (R.) and Kirkby (J. W.)	Synopsis of the Geology of Durham and part of Northumberland.	<i>Trans. Tyneside Nat. Field Club</i> , Aug. 1863.	1863
17.—Bainbridge (W.) ...	On the Fault in connection with the Volcanic Rocks at the foot of Crossfell, and with the Tynedale Fault called 'The Ninety Fathom Dyke.'	<i>British Association Report (Notes and Abstracts)</i> , 1863, pt. ii. p. 64.	1864

APPENDIX I.—REFERENCES TO GEOLOGICAL LITERATURE (*continued*).

Author.	Title.	Authority.	Date.
18.—Howse (R.) ...	Synopsis of Organic Remains found in the Northumberland Coal Measures.	<i>Industrial Resources of the Tyne, Wear and Tees</i> , 2nd edition.	1864
19.—Kirkby (J. W.) and Atthey (T.)	On some Fish Remains from the Durham and Northumberland Coal Measures.	<i>Trans. Tyneside Nat. Field Club</i> , vol. vi. p. 231. Plate VI.	1864
20.—Howse (R.) ...	On the Glaciation of the counties of Durham and Northumberland.	<i>Trans. North of England Inst. Mining Engineers</i> , vol. xiii. p. 169.	1864
21.—Kirkby (J. W.) ...	On the Fossils of the Marl Slate and Lower Magnesian Limestone.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. Northumberland and Durham</i> , vol. i. p. 184.	1865
22.—Atthey (T.) ...	Remarks on Report of Prof. Owen's Paper on Fish Remains found in Northumberland Coal Fields.	<i>Geol. Mag.</i> vol. iv. p. 378.	1867
23.—Owen (Prof.) ...	On Dental Characters of genera and species, chiefly of Fishes, from the Low Main Seam and Shales of Coal, Northumberland.	<i>Geol. Mag.</i> vol. iv. p. 323.	1867
24.—Hancock (A.) and Atthey (T.)	Notes on various Species of <i>Ctenodus</i> obtained from Shales of the Northumberland Coal Field.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. Northumberland and Durham</i> , vol. iii. p. 54.	1868
25.—Atthey (T.) ...	On the Occurrence of Palatal Teeth of a Fish belonging to the genus <i>Climaxodus</i> (McCoy) in the Low Main Shale of Newsham.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. Northumberland and Durham</i> , vol. iii. p. 306.	1868
26.—Barkas (T. P.) ...	On the Fauna of the Low Main Seam, Northumberland.	<i>Geol. Mag.</i> vol. v. p. 580.	1868
27.—Barkas (T. P.) ...	Results of Fossil Gathering from the Shale over the Low Main Coal.	<i>Naturalist's Notebook</i> , vol. ii. p. 334.	1868
28.— „ „ ...	Fossil Reptiles and Fish from the Northumberland Coal Measures.	<i>Science Gossip</i> , No. 45, p. 204.	1868
29.— „ „ ...	On <i>Climaxodus</i> or <i>Pæcilodus</i> ; a Palatal Tooth from the Low Main Coal Shale, Northumberland.	<i>Geol. Mag.</i> vol. v. p. 495.	1868
30.—Hancock (A.) and Atthey (T.)	Notes on Remains of Reptiles and Fishes from the Shales of the Northumberland Coalfield.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. Northumberland and Durham</i> , vol. iii. p. 66; also <i>Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist.</i> vol. i. pp. 266 and 346. Plates XIV. XV. and XVI.	1868
31.—Hancock (A.) and Atthey (T.)	On a new Labyrinthodont Amphibian from the Northumberland Coalfield, and on the Occurrence in the same locality of <i>Anthracosaurus Russellii</i> .	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. Northumberland and Durham</i> , vol. iii. p. 310. <i>Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist.</i> vol. iv. series iv. pp. 182 and 270.	1869

APPENDIX I.—REFERENCES TO GEOLOGICAL LITERATURE (*continued*).

Author.	Title.	Authority.	Date.
32.—Hancock (A.) and Atthey (T.)	On the generic identity of <i>Climaxodus</i> and <i>Janassa</i> , two fossil fishes related to the Rays.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North-umberland and Durham</i> , vol. iii. p. 330. Plate IX.	1869
33.—Barkas (T. P.) ...	On the Discovery of a Molar of a large Reptile in the Northumberland Coal Measures.	<i>Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist.</i> vol. iii. p. 419.	1869
34.—" "	Notes on various Species of <i>Ctenodus</i> found in the Low Main Coal Shale, Newsham Colliery.	<i>Geol. Mag.</i> vol. vi. p. 314.	1869
35.—" "	Letters on unusual forms of <i>Ctenoptychius</i> and <i>Climaxodus ovatus</i> and <i>Diplodus</i>	<i>Geol. Mag.</i> vol. vi. pp. 42, 43.	1869
36.—" "	Letter on Teeth of <i>Climaxodus</i> from the Coal Measures.	<i>Geol. Mag.</i> vol. vi. p. 381.	1869
37.—Brady (G. S.) ...	Description of an Entomostracan inhabiting a Coal Mine.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North-umberland and Durham</i> , vol. iii. p. 203. Plate VI.	1869
38.—Hancock (A.) and Atthey (T.)	Note on Undescribed Fossil Fish found in Newsham Coal Shale, near Newcastle-on-Tyne.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North-umberland and Durham</i> , vol. iv. p. 199.	1870
39.—Cohn (Prof. J.) ...	Ueber den Steinkohlenpilze Archagaricon.	48 <i>Jahresb. Schles. Ges. Vaterl. Kultur</i> , p. 62.	1871
40.—Hancock (A.) and Atthey (T.)	On Occurrence of <i>Loxomma Allmanni</i> in Northumberland Coalfields.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North-umberland and Durham</i> , vol. iv. p. 201.	1871
41.—Hancock (A.) and Atthey (T.)	Description of a considerable portion of a Mandibular Ramus of <i>Anthracosaurus Russellii</i> ; with Notes on <i>Loxomma</i> and <i>Archichthys</i> .	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North-umberland and Durham</i> , vol. iv. p. 385. Plate XII.	1871
42.—Hancock (A.) and Atthey (T.)	Description of a Labyrinthodont Amphibian, a new generic form, obtained in the Coalshale at Newsham, near Newcastle.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North-umberland and Durham</i> , vol. iv. p. 208. Plate IV.	1871
43.—Hancock (A.) and Atthey (T.)	A few Remarks on <i>Dipterus</i> and <i>Ctenodus</i> , and on their Relationship to <i>Ceratodus Forsteri</i> from Newsham.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North-umberland and Durham</i> , vol. iv. p. 397. Plates XIII and XIV.	1871
44.—Barkas (T. P.) ...	Teeth of <i>Climaxodus</i> from the Coal Measures.	<i>Geol. Mag.</i> vol. vi. pp. 42 and 381.	1869
45.—Hancock (A.) and Atthey (T.)	On some curious Fossil Fungi from Black Shale of the Northumberland Coal Measures.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North-umberland and Durham</i> , vol. iii. p. 321. Plates VII. and VIII.	1869
46.—Hancock (A.) and Atthey (T.)	Descriptive Notes on a nearly entire specimen of <i>Pleurodus Rankinii</i> , on two new species of <i>Platysomus</i> and a new <i>Amphicentrum</i> , with Remarks on a few other Fish-remains found in the Coal Measures at Newsham.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North-umberland and Durham</i> , vol. iv. p. 408. Plates XV. and XVI.	1871

APPENDIX I.—REFERENCES TO GEOLOGICAL LITERATURE (*continued*).

Author.	Title.	Authority.	Date.
47.—Atthey (T.) ...	<i>Climaxodus linguiformis</i> .	<i>Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist.</i> vol. ii. series iv. p. 321.	1868
48.—Barkas (T. P.) ...	Illustrated Guide to the Fish Amphibian, Reptilian and Supposed Mammalian Remains of the Northumberland Car- boniferous Strata.		1873
49.—Allport (S.) ...	On the micro-structure and composition of British Carboniferous Dolerites.	<i>Q. J. G. S.</i> vol. xxx. p. 529.	1874
50.—Topley (W.) ...	On the Correspondence between some Areas of Apparent Upheaval and the Thickening of Subjacent Beds.	<i>Q. J. G. S.</i> vol. xxx. p. 186, and <i>Brit. Assoc.</i> 1873, p. 91.	1874
51.—Lindley (J.) and Hutton (W.), ed. by Lebour (G. A.)	Illustrations of Fossil Plants.	Pub. for the North of England Institute of Mining and Mechanical Engineers.	1877
52.—Atthey (T.) and Dinning	On <i>Anthracosaurus Russellii</i> (Huxley).	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North- umberland and Durham</i> , vol. v. p. 307. Plates VI, VII, VIII, and IX.	1877
53.—Embleton (D.) and Atthey (T.)	On the Skull and other Bones of <i>Loxomma</i> <i>Allmanni</i> (Huxley) from the Low Main Coal Shale, Newsham, Northumberland.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North- umberland and Durham</i> , vol. v. p. 196. Plates I.-IV.	1877
54.—Simpson (J. B.) ...	The Coal Seams of the Northumberland and Durham Coalfield.	Pub. Newcastle.	1877
55.—Atthey (T.) and Dinning	On <i>Pteroplax Cornuta</i> .	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North- umberland and Durham</i> , vol. vii. p. 176. Plates XV. and XVI.	1880
56.—Atthey (T.) ...	Notes on the Vertebral Column and other Remains of <i>Loxomma Allmanni</i> (Hux- ley) at Newsham.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North- umberland and Durham</i> , vol. viii. p. 46. Plate VI.	1882
57.—Teall (J. J. H.) ...	Petrographical Notes on some of the Igneous Rocks of Northumberland.	<i>Proc. Geol. Association</i> , vol. ix. p. 575.	1886
58.—Howse (Richard)...	Catalogue of the Local Fossils in the Museum of the Natural History Society, Newcastle.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North- umberland and Durham</i> , vol. x. p. 227.	1888
59.—Howse (R.) ...	Catalogue of the Hutton Collection of Fossil Plants in Newcastle Museum.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North- umberland and Durham</i> , vol. x. p. 19.	1887
60.—Teall (J. J. H.) ...	On the Amygdules of the Tynemouth Dyke.	<i>Geol. Mag.</i> vol. vi. p. 481.	1889
61.—Lebour (G. A.) ...	Outlines of the Geology of Northumberland and Durham.	Pub. Newcastle, 3rd edition.	1889
62.—Tate (Robert M.)	On the Erosion and Destruction of the Coast Line from the Low Lights and Tynemouth and Cullercoats during the last Fifty Years.	<i>Nat. Hist. Trans. North- umberland and Durham</i> , vol. xi. pt. ii. p. 187.	1894

APPENDIX II.

EARLY DEEDS RELATING TO PROPERTY IN TYNLMOUTH.

A. Harbottle's land ; deeds in the possession of the duke of Northumberland :

(1) Grant from William, son of Gilbert of Tynemue, to William, son of Robert of Chirton, of a toft with buildings and curtilage, in Tynemouth, lying between the house of Germanus de coquina on the east, and the house of William de Hyndeleye on the west, paying yearly a rent of 4s. Testibus, Thoma de Clyvedon, tunc senescallo de Tynem', Ada de Pykering, Philippo de Merston, Roberto berciatore, Roberto filio Baldwyni, Petro de Bacwrth, Rogero Boyd, Willelmo filio Alani, Alano de Hertelawe, et aliis. [Circa 1276.]

(2) Grant from John, son of John de Hundemanby, and Nigasia, his wife, to John de Ridesdale, their son-in-law, of all their lands, tenements and buildings, which they have as dowry in Tinemuye, paying 8s. during the life of Nigasia. Hiis testibus, Willelmo de Heselrig, John le oefener, Ada le sergaunt, Roberto filio Baldwini, Philippo de Binham, et aliis. [Thirteenth century.]

(3) Grant from John Dunne of Redesdal and Dyonisia, his wife, to Robert, son of William, son of Gilbert of Tynemouth, in free marriage with their daughter, Constance, of four acres of arable land in Tynemouth, of which one rood lay beneath Stanilawe, between the land of Margery de Wulsington and the land formerly of William de Hyndeley, three roods lay beneath Stanilawe, between the land formerly of Roger, son of Michael, and the land of Margery de Wulsington, one rood lay at the 'hevedeslandes,' between the land of John de Redingge and the land of Margery de Wulsington, one rood lay on the north side of Kenewaldes-den, between the land of Robert de bracina and the land of Philip de Merston, one-acre lay on the north side of Tunstalles-dike, between the land of the foresaid Robert, son of William, and the land of Margery de Wulsington, half an acre lay at Tudehope, between the land formerly of William de Hyndeley and the land of Margery de Wulsington, half an acre lay over 'le bourne,' between the land of Philip de Merston and the land of the foresaid Margery, and half an acre lay near the road 'del Pul,' between the land of the chamberlain of Tynemouth and the land of the foresaid Philip ; to hold subject to the rent and service due to the lord of Wulsington as lord of the fee. Hiis testibus, Willelmo de Wulsington, Willelmo Russel de Discington, Nicholao Faurus, Nicholao de Morton, Rogero de eadem, Roberto de Chirton, Roberto de bracina, Willelmo de Wylum, Alano de Boldam, clerico, et multis aliis. Seal, a fleur-de-lys (?) ornament. [Thirteenth century.]

(4) Grant from Alice of Tynemouth, widow, to Robert, son of William of Tynemouth, of half an acre of arable land in Tynemouth, of which one rood lay between the land of Philip de Merston on the south and the land of Thomas de Burton on the north, and abutted on the road leading to Wytteleye on the west ; and one rood lay near Stanilawe, between the land formerly of William de Hindely on the north and the land of John Dunne on the south, and abutted on the land of Peter de Backworth ; to hold to the said Robert and to the joint heirs of him and of Constance, his wife, paying yearly at Whitsuntide one halfpenny to the chief lord. Hiis testibus, Johanne de Dudden, tunc senescallo domini prioris, Rogero Gray, tunc serviente, Petro de Backword, Willelmo de Seyton, Philippo de Merston, Alano de Hertelawe, Willelmo de Chirton, et aliis multis. 1302.

(5) Grant from Matilda Brown, formerly wife of Robert Turnur of Tynemouth, to Richard, son of Geoffrey of the same place, and to Alice, his wife, of half a toft, with buildings, etc., in the Cross street in Tynemouth ; which half-toft came to the grantor by hereditary right on the death of her mother, Cecily Brown, and lay between the tenement of John, son of Roger, clerk, on the south, and the tenement of William Broun on the north. Hiis testibus, Henrico de Harden, tunc senescallo domini prioris de Tynemuth, Roberto filio Willelmi, Willelmo de Seton, Willelmo Fayrman, Roberto Sauvage, Sampson de Seton, et multis aliis. July 2nd, 1319. Seal attached.

(6) Quit-claim from Robert de Bewick to John de Horton of his right to the tofts in Tynemouth which he had of the gift of Roger le tailler. August 25th, 1320.

(7) Deed of entail whereby William de Heppiscotes granted to Gilbert de Tynemouth all his lands and tenements in Tynemuth and Preston of which he had been enfeoffed by the said Gilbert, to hold for life, with reversion to Agnes, sister of the said Gilbert, and to the heirs of her body ; with reversion, in case of failure of issue, to Gilbert, son of Peter Webster, and to the heirs of his body ; with ultimate

reversion to the heirs of Gilbert de Tynemouth. Hiis testibus, Johanne de Murton, Willelmo de kylne, Roberto Gubbe, Willelmo Bacon, Johanne Clerk, Johanne de Preston, Roberto Maymund, Johanne de Thornton, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, April 16th, 1363. Seal attached. Printed above, p. 258, note 4.

(8) Grant from William de Heppiscotes to Nicholas Wright of Tynemouth and Margaret his wife, of an acre of land in Tynemouth given to the grantor by Christiana Porter. Hiis testibus, Roberto de Tewing, Willelmo de Chevington, Roberto de Bynham, Roberto Maymund, Roberto Gubbe, Willelmo Bacoun, et aliis. Dated at Tynemuth, September 31st, 1363. Seal, *on a shield armorial a lion rampant*.

(9) Grant from Gilbert, son and heir of William Robynsone of Tynemouth, chaplain, to William de la Vale, knight, of all his lands within the liberty of Tynemouth which descended to him on the death of his father. Hiis testibus, Alano Whitchevede, perpetuo vicario ecclesie parochialis de Tynemuth, Thoma Ruft, Waltero Cok, Roberto de Bynham, Willelmo del kilne, Willelmo Watsons, Adam Smythe, Roberto Gubbe de Tynemouth, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, March 12th, 1375/6.

(10) Lease from Gilbert de Tynemouth, chaplain, to his sister, Agnes, relict of William de Episcotys, of one part of his tenement in Tynemouth (described in detail), to hold for life, at a nominal rent during the first thirteen years, and thereafter paying ten shillings yearly. Hiis testibus, Alano Whitcheved, perpetuo vicario de Tenemuth, Roberto de Fenrother, Willelmo de Chevington, Willelmo . . . , Roberto de Bynham, et aliis. Dated at Tinemuth, June 2nd, 1381. Printed above, p. 258, note 2.

(11) Lease from Gilbert Wilkynesson, chaplain, to Walter Dun, for twenty-five years, of all his lands and tenements within the liberty of Tynemouth, at the yearly rent of £10. Hiis testibus, Willelmo Tychington, Willelmo Chevyngton, Willelmo Vescy, Adam Smyth, et Roberto Bynnam, et aliis. Dated at Tynemuth, May 22nd, 1383. Seal: *two martlets in chief*; SIGNVM IOHANNIS Enrolled on the court roll of the manor, July 12th, 1415.

(12) Grant from Agnes de Heppescottes, formerly wife of William de Heppescottes, and widow of Robert Bullok, to Gilbert de Tynemouth, chaplain, and to William Vescy, of all her lands and tenements which she had as dower in Morpath and Heppescottes, together with her rents within the liberty of Tynmouth, to hold for her life. Hiis testibus, Willelmo de Bysschopdall, tunc majore ville Novi Castri super Tynam, Ricardo Scott, Laurentio de Acton, Thoma de Gryndon, et Willelmo Joneson, tunc ballivis ejusdem ville, et aliis. Dated at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, May 19th, 1391. Seal: the letter I between two palm branches; over it VIV.

(13) Grant from William Dune to Gilbert de Tynmouth, chaplain, of all his lands and tenements within the town and liberty of Tynmouth, which he had by feoffment of the said Gilbert. Dated at Tynemouth, August 1st, 1391. Hiis testibus, Johanne le Orford, tunc senescallo, Willelmo Vesci, Johanne Wilkinson, Roberto de Bynham, et Ricardo del brewheus, et multis aliis. Seal: *three martlets*. Enrolled on the court roll of the manor, July 12th, 1415.

(14) Grant from Gilbert de Tynmouth, clerk, to Walter Dune, of a yearly rent-charge of 13s. 4d. issuing out of his lands within the town and liberty of Tynmouth. Dated at Tynemouth, August 26th, 1391. Seal: *three martlets*.

B. Radcliffe's lands; Greenwich Hospital deeds, P.R.O.:

(1) Grant from Simon Wattarius to William Grey of the Sheles of one acre in Tynemouth, on the Scowel-braddes, between the land of Robert Baldewyn on the west and the land of the said Simon on the east, and abutting on the land of Peter del horcheherd and Adam de coquina on the south, and on the land of Robert Baldewyn on the north, to hold at the rent of one penny to the prior. Hiis testibus, Nicholao Vigr, tunc senescallo, Rogero Gray, tunc serviente, Philippo de Merstona, Willelmo de Chirtun, Alano de Hertelaw, Johanne de Wittelyt, Radulpho serviente de Seyton, Roberto de Chirton, et aliis. [Circa 1295.]

(2) Grant from Robert de Slykeburn to William Gubbe of Tynemouth of the moiety of one acre in Tynemouth, lying at Todupp, between the land of the said William on the south and the land of Robert, son of William, son of Gilbert, on the north, and abutting on the land of the said Robert, son of William, on the west. Hiis testibus, [Henrico de Harden], tunc senescallo domini prioris de Tynem', Gilberto Daudre, Roberto filio [Willelmi], [Willelmo] Fayrm[an], Philippo filio Alani de Hertlawe, Johanne le coyLOUR, et multis aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, November 28th, 1320. Seal imperfect.

(3) Grant from John de Grey to John, son of John de Bydik of Scheles, of all his lands and tenements in Tynemouth, Scheles, Milnetone, Prestone, Setone, Middel Chirtone, and Est Chirtone, and five

shillings yearly rent out of the land which Simon Stocard held in Est Backwerth. Hiis testibus, Thoma de Rayntone, tunc senescallo libertatis de Tynemuth, Johanne de Bakwerth, Henrico Faukes, Galfrido de Mortone, Ricardo de Daltone, Johanne de Setone, Roberto Savage, et multis aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, March 12th, 1325/6.

(4) Quit-claim by Symon Nogge of Newcastle-upon-Tyne to John, his son and heir, of his right to a tenement in the Middilrawe in Tynemouth, between the tenement of Richard Brunson on the west, and the tenement of John, son of Ralph the taylor, on the east. Hiis testibus, Roberto Soreys, tunc senescallo libertatis de Tynemouth, Roberto de Tewyng, Roberto Savage, Johanne Curtays, Willelmo filio Roberti, Rogero Dabber, et multis aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, September 2nd, 1333. Seal, a shield.

(5) Quit-claim by John, son of Symon Nogge, to John de Tewyng, of his right to the tenement above-mentioned. Witnesses as before, with the addition of Richard, son of Geoffrey. Dated at Tynemouth, November 6th, 1333. Same seal as No. 4.

(6) Grant by Roger, son of William Malkeyn of Tynemouth, to John de Tewyng, of half an acre in Tynemouth, namely, one selion between the land of John de Horton and the land formerly of Philip de Merston, and two selions lying at the head of the said selion towards the east, near the pasture of the prior of Tynemouth. Hiis testibus, Roberto Soreys, tunc senescallo libertatis de Tynemuth, Roberto de Tewyng, Ricardo filio Galfridi, Willelmo filio Roberti, Stephano Scot, Johanne Curtays, et multis aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, August 8th, 1340.

(7) Grant by John the clerk, son of Ralph the taylor, to John de Tewyng, of two acres, of which half an acre lay in Tynemouth in the culture called Chaund-landis, between the land of John Curtays and the land of John de Bedik; half an acre lay in Est Chyrton between the land of William Chaumpeneys and the land of Thomas Breuster; and one acre lay in Preston between the land of John de Bedyk and the land of John, son of Adam de Preston. Hiis testibus, Roberto Soreys, tunc senescallo libertatis de Tynemuth, Roberto de Tewyng, Rogero filio Ranulphi, Ricardo filio Galfridi, Willelmo filio Roberti, Johanne de Wylum, et multis aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, July 31st, 1341.

(8) Grant by John, son of Ralph the taylor, of Tynemouth, to John de Tewyng, of half an acre in Tynemouth on the west side of Spital-den, lying in two selions, between the land of Robert de Tewyng on the east and the bondage land of the prior of Tynemouth, which Simon Grene of Preston formerly held, on the west. Hiis testibus, Roberto Soreys, tunc senescallo libertatis de Tynemuth, Roberto de Tewyng, Johanne de Wyteley, Ricardo filio Galfridi, Willelmo filio Roberti, Stephano Scot, Rogero filio Ranulphi, et multis aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, September 30th, 1343.

(9) Lease by Agnes, daughter of Sibill of Tynemouth, to William Gubbe, of half an acre in Tynemouth, near the water-mill, between the land of William, son of Robert, on the west, and the land formerly of Philip de Merston on the east. Hiis testibus, Roberto Soreys, tunc senescallo libertatis de Tynemuth, Johanne de Wyteley, Ricardo filio Galfridi, Willelmo filio Roberti, Thoma Robil, Stephano Scot, et multis aliis. November 11th, 1344.

(10) Grant by Joan, daughter of Richard Brounson, to John Tewyng and Alice his wife, of all her arable lands in Tynemouth, of which one rood and a half lay at Seton-cross,* and one rood upon Boterlawe, and one acre on the north side of the water-mill belonging to the prior of Tynemouth, and half an acre on the west side of St. Leonard's hospital. Hiis testibus, Willelmo de Hepescotis, tunc senescallo libertatis de Tynemuth, Roberto de Tewyng, Johanne clerico, Roberto Gubbe, Stephano Gubbe, Johanne Stiford, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, May 5th, 1351. Seal, flower and leaves.

(11) Grant by William, son and heir of William Mason, to John de Horsseley of the Sheles, of three messuages, one acre of land, and three roods in Tynemouth. Hiis testibus, Roberto de Fenrothre, Willelmo de Chevington, Willelmo del kylne, Roberto de Bynham, Waltero Coke, Willelmo Watisson, Johanne filio Willelmi, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, February 28th, 1375/6. Seal, a bird.

* Seton-cross, which is probably to be identified with the Monk's stone, recurs in a deed dating *circa* 1312, whereby Nicholas, son of Ralph, granted to William Hyndeley half an acre in Tynemouth, lying between the land of the said William and the land of William Cuherd, 'ex parte boreali crucis de Seton.' Hiis testibus, Thoma de Fischeburn, tunc senescallo, Ada de Pykering, Nicholao de Bacwrht, Nicholao de la Hay, Johanne aurifabro, Johanne filio Suayn, et multis aliis. *Arch. Acl.* 1st series, vol. ii. p. 410.

(12) Quit-claim of all right to the said premises, by John de Thornton to John de Horsley. Date and witnesses as above. Seal, St. Andrew's cross with unequal arms.

(13) Quit-claim by John de Dalton to John de Horsseley of his right to the premises. February 27th, 1375/6. Same seal as to No. 10.

(14) Grant by John, son of Roger of Tynemouth, to Agnes, widow of William de Heppiscotes, of all those lands and tenements in Tynemouth and Bakworth which came to him on the death of Alice, his mother. Hiis testibus, Alano Whithevede, perpetuo vicario ecclesie parochialis de Thynemuth, Roberto de Fenrother, Willelmo Vessi, Willelmo de Chevynton, Roberto de Bynham, Willelmo del kylne, Adamo Smythe, Willelmo Watson, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, April 9th, 1381.

(15) Grant by Agnes, widow of William Hepsccotes, to John Horsly of the Shelyz, of one tenement and eight acres in Tynemouth, purchased by the said Agnes from John de Tynemouth, butcher, of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. Hiis testibus, Willelmo Wattison, Johanne Wilkynson, Adam Smyth, Roberto Bynhame, et Roberto Hakford de Tynemuth, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, July 9th, 1386. Same seal as (10).

(16) Grant by William de Bolton to John de Horsley and Agnes, his wife, of three roods lying in two selions in Tynemouth, on the south side of the Stavekartway, between the land of the said John on the north and the land of Alan Whitehed on the south. Hiis testibus, Johanne Brotherwyk, tunc ballivo libertatis de Tynemouth, Johanne de Merlay, Johanne Wilkynson, Roberto de Bynham, Roberto Wryght, Roberto de Hacford, Johanne del kylne, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, May 20th, 1392. Seal, a scorpion (?)

(17) Quit-claim by John Horsley, junior, of Tynemouth Scheles to his mother, Agnes Horsley, of his right to the lands and tenements in Tynemouth, Chirton-est, Preston, and Middel Chirton, which had descended to him from his father, John Horsley. Hiis testibus, Robert Hakford, Ricardo Brewe-house, Roberto Bynham, Roberto Wryght, Johanne Nele, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, March 20th, 1399.

(18) Grant by Agnes, widow of John Horsley of Tynemouth, to Alice, wife of John Halmonde and daughter of the said John Horsley, of all her lands and tenements in Tynemouth, Chirton-est, Preston, and Middel Chirton. Hiis testibus, Ricardo Brewehouse, Roberto Bynham, Roberto Hakford, Johanne Wilkynson, Willelmo Jacson, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, April 1st, 1400.

(19) Grant by John Horsley, son and heir of John Horsley and of Agnes, his wife, formerly of Tynemouth-Sheles, to his kinsman, Thomas Horsley of Benwell, of the premises above-mentioned, which were the lands of his father or of his mother. Hiis testibus, Johanne Bertram, milite, Sampson Hardyng, Willelmo Hardyng, Eligio Rothbury, Willelmo Jacson de Tynemouth, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, July 28th, 1421. Seal, an initial T with a crown above it (?).

(20) Quit-claim by John Almonde of Tynemouth-Sheles, and Alice his wife, daughter of John Horseley and of Agnes his wife, to Thomas Horsley of their right to the said premises. Same witnesses and seal as to No. 19. Dated at Tynemouth, 1421.

(21) Quit-claim by John de Horsley, son and heir of John de Horsley, to Thomas de Horsley, of his right to the lands and tenements in Tynemouth, Preston, West Chirton, and Est Chirton, lately belonging to his father. Hiis testibus, Willelmo de Mitford, tunc senescallo de Tynemouth, Willelmo Swan, tunc ballivo ibidem, Willelmo Davy, Willelmo Jakson, Johanne Elyson, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, October 28th, 1421. Same seal as to No. 19.

(22) Grant by Thomas de Horslee of Benwell to John de Cartyngton of all his tenements and lands in Tynemouth. Hiis testibus, Johanne de Woddryngton, chivaler, vicecomite Northumbriae, Roberto Ogle, chivaler, Johanne Bertram, chivaler, Johanne Middelton, chivaler, Rogero Woddryngton, armigero, et multis aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, September 6th, 1426. Same seal as to No. 19.

(23) Quit-claim by Thomas Horslee of Benwell to John de Cartyngton of his right to the said premises. Hiis testibus, Rogero Woddryngton, Johanne Middelton, armigeris, Willelmo Chessman, Willelmo Cartyngton, Willelmo Bedenhall, et multis aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, September 14th, 1426. Same seal as to No. 19; also official seal of the mayor of Newcastle.

(24) Quit-claim by John Horslee of Richemond, goldsmith, son and heir of John Horslee, late of Tynemouth, to John de Cartyngton, of his right to the said premises. Hiis testibus, Johanne Woddryngton, chivaler, Johanne Middelton, chivaler, Rogero Woddryngton, Alexander Heron, Johanne Fenwyk, armigeris, et multis aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, September 15th, 1426. Seal broken.

(25) Grant by Thomas Horslee to John de Cartington of all his lands and tenements in Tynemouth, Chirton-est, Preston, and Middel Chirton. Same witnesses and seal as to No. 22. Dated at Tynemouth, December 6th, 1426.

(26) Quit-claim by Thomas Horslee of Benwell to John de Cartington of his right to the said premises. Same witnesses and seal as to No. 23. Dated at Tynemouth, December 12th, 1426.

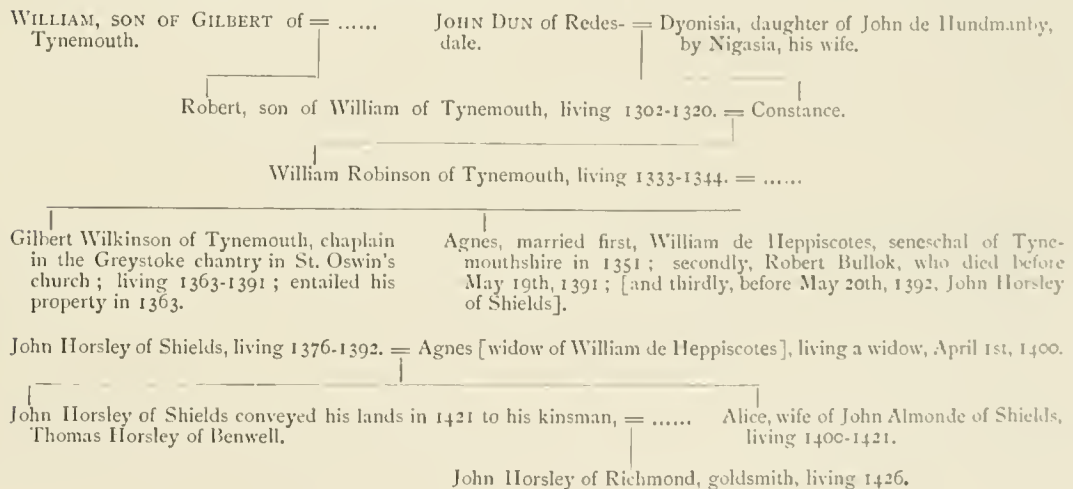
(27) Quit-claim by John Horslee of Richmond, son and heir of John Horslee late of Tynemouth, to John de Cartington, of his right to the said premises. Hiis testibus, Johanne Woddryngton, chivaler, vicecomite Northumbriae, Roberto Ogle, chivaler, Johanne Middelton, chivaler, Rogero Woddryngton, Johanne Middelton, armigeris, et multis aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, December 15th, 1426. Seal broken.

(28) Quit-claim by John Horslee, son and heir of Thomas Horslee of Benwell, to John de Cartington, of his right to the said premises. Hiis testibus, Rogero Woddryngton, Johanne Middelton, Johanne Fenwyk, Willelmo Cartyngton, Willelmo Bedenhall, et multis aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, December 20th, 1426. Seal, an initial 1; also the official seal of the mayor of Newcastle.

(29) Lease by John Cartyngton to Robert Smyth of one tenement in Tynemouth, between the tenement of the prior of Tynemouth, and the tenement in which William Davy formerly dwelt, at a yearly rent of 2s. 8d. Hiis testibus, Roberto Whelpyngton, tunc senescallo dicte ville, Henrico Grey, ballivo ejusdem, Willelmo Hardyng, Willelmo Bedford, Thoma Browster, et aliis. May 25th, 1434.

(30) Grant by John Cartyngton to the sacristan of the church of St. Oswin of Tynemouth, of a yearly rent of 6d. out of a tenement at the east end of the Middel rawe in Tynemouth, for the maintenance of lights before the altar of the said church. Hiis testibus, Henrico Gray, ballivo libertatis de Tynemouth, Henrico Lancastre, constabulario castri de Tynemouth, Johanne Robynson, Willelmo Peresson, Willelmo White, et aliis. Dated at Tynemouth, December 16th, 1445. Printed above, p. 259, note 2.

The following table shows the relationship of the principal persons concerned in these deeds :



INDEX.

A.

- Abbot-scot. *See* Cornage.
 Abbot's welcome, service called the, 112, 226.
 Abetot, Urso de, witness, 55 n.
 Acene, Fulk, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262, 263, 265.
 Acorne, Robert, juror of Tynemouth (1293), 218.
 Acton, Lawrence de, witness (1391), 422.
 Adam, sheriff of Northumberland (*circa* 1140), 60 n ; bastard child of Edward II., buried at Tynemouth, 84.
 Adams, Rev. Edward Cay, of Hawkechurch, 407.
 Adamson, Charles Alexander, mayor of Tynemouth (1871-1872), 352 ; Henry Edward Pyle, mayor of Tynemouth (1874), 352.
 Adington, Robert de, witness, 64-65 n.
 Adrian IV., Pope. *See* Popes.
 Adshead, Aaron, of Bedlington, 334.
 Aelius Rufus, altar at Tynemouth dedicated by, 37.
 Agnew, Sir Andrew, of Lochnow, bart., governor of Tynemouth castle (1750), 204.
 Ainewyk, John de, witness (1332), 254.
 Ainsley, William, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415.
 Airey, John, owns salt pans at North Shields (1707), 310 ; Thomas, marriage (1687), 365 ; Ursula (Toll) (1687), 269.
 Aitken, Rev. James, M.A., Presbyterian minister (1877-1881), 375.
 Akarius. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
 Akome, Luke, of Tynemouth, bequest (1563), 127.
 Alheric. *See* Northumberland, earls of.
 Albini, Nigel de, witness, 49 n, 55 n ; Richard de, *see* St. Alban's, abbots of.
 Aleok, Geoffrey, land in Tynemouth, 255 ; William, land in Tynemouth, 255.
 Alcuin, sub-prior of Tynemouth, 61.
 Ald, William, Monkseaton custumal (*circa* 1296), 404.
 Alder, Cuthbert, will (1736), 411.
 Aldred, comes, attests forged charter, 44 n.
 Alduin, re-founds Jarrow monastery (1079), 44.
 Alebrandini, Alebrando, creditor of Henry III., 75.
 Alexander I., king of Scotland, charter to Tynemouth, 51 ; brother of Malcolm, at founding of new church at Durham (1093), 120 n.
 Allen, Mary (Delaval), 171.
 Allgood, Robert, lessee of Flatworth (1708), 341 n.
 Allison, Barbara, property at Chirton, 322.
 Allotment (Shire Moor), 28, 416.
 Allport, S., geological work, 420.
 Almonde, John, quit-claim (1421), 424.
 Aln, Malcolm III. of Scotland killed near the, 51.
 Alnmouth, representatives of, 261 n ; fishing at, 379, 388.
 Alnwick, escape of John de Vesci to, 78.
 Aluric, sheriff of Northumberland, writs addressed to (*circa* 1106-1116), 55.
 Alwald, or Elwald, vicar of Tynemouth (1083), 362.
 Alwinton, payment out of tithes of, 312 n.
 Amble, in Tynemouthshire, 208 ; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 68 n ; grant of tithes of, 49 n, 62 n ; appropriated to St. Alban's, 118 ; men of, mulcted by sheriff, 69 ; court held at, 113, 221 ; township fined at Tynemouth assizes, 219 ; customary tenure at, 228 ; recognition of copyhold tenure at, 239 ; payment of hall-corn at, 231, 236 ; fishing at, 388 ; coble-building at, 382.
 Amble, Hugh de, grant to Tynemouth priory (1392), 117 ; Robert de, chaplain of Greystoke chantry, 85 n ; grant to Tynemouth priory (1391), 116.
 Amcotts, Sir Wharton, of Kettlethorp park, 400.
 Ames, Levi, of Clifton, 268, 411.
 Amundesham, John of, cited, 101 n, 102 n, 118 n, 396 n.
 Anderson, Dorothy (Mitalfe), 267 ; Eleanor (Spearman), 347 ; Henry (1), juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240 ; Henry (2), partner in keel (1596), 327 ; Robert (1), copyholder (1609), 238 ; Robert (2), lieutenant of volunteers (1667), 200 n.
 Andreu, Gilbert. *See* Audre.
 Andrew, St., legend of, 413.
 Andrew, Gilbert, bailiff, juror of Tynemouth (1293), 218 ; Robert (1), tenant of East Chirton (1606), 321 ; Robert (2), of Gateshead, sells farm in Murton (1741), 411 ; Thomas, tenant of Murton (1707), 411.
 Anglian remains, cross fragments at Tynemouth, 131-135 ; fibula from Whitehill point, 316.
 Angus, Robert de Umframvyll, earl of. *See* Umfraville.
 Anick, heir of, swears fealty to Abbot Norton (1264), 113.
 Annesley, Frances (Linskill), 272.
 Anson, Rev. W. C. H., Baptist minister (1874-1877), 377.
 Appleton (Yorkshire), property of St. Alban's abbey at, 52 n.
 Archbold, Anne (Henzell), 401 ; Charles, of Monkseaton (1715), 408 ; Henry, juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241 ; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368 ; John, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415 ; Mrs., tenant of Whitley (1757), 397 ; Reay, trustees of (1762), 408.
 Archer, John, of North Shields, will (1562), 259 n.
 Arenis, Milo de, witness (1147), 60 n.
 Arey, Thomas. *See* Airey.
 Argyll, Archibald, first duke of, property at Chirton, death (1703), 322.
 Arkill, workman, miraculously saved by St. Oswin, 57.
 Arkless, John George, of Blyth, 333.
 Arlington, Henry Bennet, Lord, 270.
 Armorer, Nicholas, scheme for seizing Newcastle and Tynemouth (1652), 194 ; William, ensign of volunteers (1667), 200 n.
 Armstrong, Rev. Alexander, Presbyterian minister, (1788-1810), 375 ; George, mayor of Tynemouth, (1804-1895), 352.
 Arms : Clarke, 129, 130 ; Conyers, 361 ; Delaval, 172 ; Errington, 362 ; Lacy, 130 ; Rhodes, 102 ; St. Alban's, 145 ; Tynemouth priory, 122 ; Villiers, 201 ; in Percy chapel, 104, 144, 145.

- Ascham, Anthony, English ambassador in Madrid, 198.
 Ashburnham, Henry, vicar of Tynemouth (1662), 305 n, 364; marriage, 365.
 Ashfield, Lieut-Col., takes Tynemouth castle (1648), 192.
 Asshe, William, purchases Whitley manor (1403), 396; grants it to Tynemouth priory (1404), 117.
 Astley, Sir Jacob (1), fortification of Newcastle (1638), 181; Sir Jacob (2), 30; sells Tynemouth advowson (1838), 371.
 Atcheson, Robert, of Middle Chirton (1597), 173.
 Athelstan, king, 413.
 Athy, John, of Newcastle, mill-wright (1599), 329.
 Atkins, Sarah (Fenwick) (1722), 348.
 Atkinson, John, land in Tynemouth (1714), 268; Margaret (Spearman) (1620), 346; Mary (1) (White), marriage (1678), 365; Mary (2) (Mittcalle) (1772), 267; Nicholas, master mariner (1603), 328; Rev. William (1833), 273.
 Atthey, T., geological works, 418.
 Auckland, Thomas de, vicar of Whalton, grant to Tynemouth priory (1337), 115.
 Auco, Hugh de, witness (1138), 59 n.
 Audre (or Andreu), Gilbert (1290), 216, 220 *See also* Daudre.
 Avenel, Robert de, witness, 58 n.
 Averay, Ralph, East Chirton and Whitley subsidy roll (1296), 393; William, Preston tallage roll (1294), 342; subsidy roll (1296), 343.
 Auth-repe, meaning of, 224.
 Aynsley, J., bequest (1874), 366.
 Aydon castle, 265 n.
 Ayr, Gilbert, Middle Chirton tallage roll (1294), 330; Preston tallage roll (1294), 342; John, free tenant of Middle Chirton (1295), 330.
- B.
- Backworth, in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 62 n, 67 n; manor of, 221; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115, 116, 117; deed relating to, 424; Conveys at, 225; rights of pasturage at, 241; suit to Flatworth mill, 339 n; tithes of, 369, 371; plundering of, 90; size of holdings, 228; rent of farmholds, 229; recognition of copyhold tenure at, 239; enclosure of, 244 n; Otway property at, 346; coal mining at, 27-28, 29, 30.
 Backworth, East, lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115, 116; rent-charge out of, 423.
 Backworth, West, lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115, 116; quarries at, 91.
 Backworth, Hugh de, juror of Tynemouth (1293), 218; John de, 115; witness (1319-1339), 248 n, 395 n, 410 n, 423; Nicholas de, witness, 423 n; Peter de, tenant and juror of Tynemouth (1292-1302), 218, 249 n, 252, 421.
 Bacon, William, tenant of Tynemouth (1336), 256; witness (1363), 258 n, 422.
 Bailiff, Robert, of East Chirton, yeoman (1596), 232; William, tenant of East Chirton (1606), 321.
 Bainbridge, W., geological work, 417.
 Baker, Augustine, transcripts cited, 47 n, 63 n, 102 n, 113 n; Joseph, mayor of Tynemouth (1880), 352.
 Baking and brewing, at Tynemouth, 252; at North Shields, 287-288, 289; legalised, 290, 292; suppressed, 299, 301, 305.
 Baldwin, archbishop of Canterbury, witness, 68 n.
 Baldwin, goldsmith, 66; Gilbert, land in Tynemouth, 255; Robert, land in Tynemouth (*circa* 1295), 422.
 Balkwell. *See* Chirton (Middle).
 Balliol, Guy de, benefactor of Tynemouth priory, 49-50; Edward, king of Scotland, 212; John (1), gift to Tynemouth priory, 121; John (2), hostile to Tynemouth and Durham, 75; John (3), king of Scotland, 80.
 Baltic, trade with the, 312, 381.
 Bamburgh, siege of, by William II. (1095), 53; David of Scotland at (1138), 59; charter of Earl Henry dated at, 60 n; fishing at, 388.
 Bamburgh, John de, sub-prior of Tynemouth, prior of Wallingford and Belvoir, 102-103; gift to Tynemouth library (1438-1450), 119; commentary on Geoffrey de Vinsauf, 120; life of Prior Whethamstede, 103.
 Banester, John, lessee of Tynemouth lord-ship (1546), 230, 233.
 Bankhead, Rev. William T., Presbyterian minister (1882-1890), 375.
 Barbitonsor, William, baker, 252.
 Baret, William, of Burradon (1305), 394.
 Barkas, T. P., geological works, 418-420.
 Barker, Christopher (1), juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; Christopher (2), juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241; Elizabeth (1790), 415; Henry, juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241; James, of Monkseaton (1654), 408; Robert, of Monkseaton, 408; tenant of Murton (1707 and 1757), 411; John (1790), 412, 415; Thomas Bell, of Westoe, 333; Thomas (1) (1662), 241; Thomas (2) (1790), 415; William, tenant of East Chirton (1294), 319.
 Barnard Castle, William de Montague, custodian of (1315-1316) 87 n; millstones wrought at, 328.
 Barneburgh, John de, vicar of Tynemouth (*circa* 1308), 126, 362.
 Barnes, lessee of Seaton Delaval colliery, 30.
 Bartleman, Alexander, mayor of Tynemouth (1851), 352.
 Barton, Thomas. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
 Bartram, Robert, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240.
 Basire, Isaac, archdeacon of Northumberland (1668), 359, 364 n.
 Bateman, Robert, tenant of Preston (1294), 342, 343.
 Bates, Margaret, marriage (1712), 365; Richard, marriage (1694), 365.
 Beadnell, fishing at, 379, 388.
 Bebside, in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 67 n; manor of, 221; court held at (1264), 113; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory (1307) 115; coal mines and salt pans at, leased by Peter Delaval, 170; included in Tynemouth Union, 351.
 Bebside, Robert de, grant to Tynemouth priory, 115; William de, land in Tynemouth, 256.
 Beckmann, Sir Martin, drawings of Clifford's fort, 276 n.
 Bedenhall, William, witness (1426), 424, 425.
 Bedford, William de, prior of Tynemouth and of Worcester (1224), 122; William, witness (1434), 425.
 Bedlington, road from Tynemouth to, 317.
 Belford, family of Clark of, 273.
 Bell, Agnes, wife of Nicholas of Newcastle, inquest on, 210; Christopher, 262; Elizabeth (1) (Mittcalle), 268; Elizabeth (2) (Potter, Spearman), 347; George, mayor of Tynemouth (1870), 352; Gilbert, son of Galfrid, West Chirton tallage roll (1204), 337;

- Humphrey, minister of Ponteland, quoted, 364 n ; Jane (Fenwick), 348 ; John, 373 n ; Margaret, 327 ; Matthew, 20 ; Milot, Middle Chirton tallage roll (1294), 330, 331 ; Roger, tenant of Preston (1296), 343 ; William (1), East Chirton subsidy roll (1296), 320 ; William (2), chaplain of Tynemouth (1505), 367.
- Bellasis, Richard, of Henknowl, 108 ; agent for Crown on dissolution of monastery, 157, 160 n, 233.
- Belsay. *See* Bileshe.
- Belsowe, Thomas de, seneschal of Tynemouth (1316), 87 n.
- Belvoir, John de Bamburgh, prior of, 102 ; prior of, enquiry at Tynemouth, 106.
- Benehalerag, 35.
- Benson, William, of Whitehaven, 399.
- Bensted, John, prior of Hertford (1483), and of Tynemouth (1503), and abbot of Whithy (1505), 123.
- Benton, wayleave over moor, 83 n ; trespass on Shire Moor, 414 ; Ralph Clarke, vicar of, 129, 130 ; payments out of, 339 n ; included in Tynemouth Union, 351 ; pitmen's song, 413 n.
- Benton, Adam de, officer of Tynemouth priory (1306), 216 n, 339 n ; witness (1321), 394 n ; property in Middle Chirton, 331.
- Benwell, conveyed to Tynemouth priory (1458) 49, 102 ; included in Tynemouthshire, 208 ; annuity charged on, 107 n ; Prior Blakeney retires to, 110, 123 ; oppression of customary tenants at, 231 ; recognition of copyhold tenure at, 239 ; entries on Tynemouth court rolls relating to, 240.
- Bergoma, Antonio de, employed on Tynemouth fortifications (1545), 157.
- Berkhamstead, John de. *See* St. Alban's, abbots of.
- Bernard, William, prior of Tynemouth (1279), 123.
- Bertram, Sir John, witness (1421), 424 ; Robert (1), sheriff of Northumberland, witness (*circa* 1140), 60 n ; Robert (2), justice (1283), 211 n.
- Berwick, Edward I. at (1292), 80 ; house property in, acquired by Tynemouth priory (1335), 90, 115 ; Margaret of Anjou lands at (1462), 104 ; Sir Francis Leeke, governor of, 158 ; Sir Richard Lee's fortifications at, 161 ; establishment of garrison at (1649), 193 ; George Fenwick, governor of, 194 ; garrison of, capture royalist party at Morpeth, 195 ; rumoured plot at (1665), 199 ; Tynemouth garrison reinforced from (1667), 200 ; declares for William III., 203 ; sea fisheries at, 379, 380, 381, 383, 386, 388.
- Bewick, in Tynemouthshire, 208 ; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48-49, 54, 55, 62 n, 67 n, 69 n ; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115 ; restored to St. Alban's and Tynemouth, 62 n ; church confirmed to St. Alban's, 64, 68 n ; claimed by earl of Dunbar, 74 ; manor of, 221 ; court held at, 113 ; gallows at, 211 ; market at, 75 ; forest of, 76 n ; plundered, 90 ; lease of, 110. *See also* Morel, Archil.
- Bewick, John William (1857-1869), Roman Catholic bishop of Hexham and Newcastle, 376, 377 ; Robert de (1), payment to (*circa* 1260), 76 n ; Robert de (2), quit-claim (1320), 421.
- Bickerstaffe, Philip, of Chirton (1688), 203, 322.
- Bigod, Hugh, witness to charters, 58 n.
- Bileshe (*query* Belsay), granted to Tynemouth priory, 68 n.
- Billington, Ralph, of Birtley, marriage, 347.
- Billy Moor. *See* Shire Moor.
- Billy Mill, Tynemouth dyke at, 13 ; cist found at, 316 ; description of, 328-329 ; lease of, 398.
- Billy Mill lane, 306 n, 316, 317 ; Jewish cemetery in, 378.
- Binham, co. Norfolk, patronage of, 70 ; Ralph Gulium, Richard de Parco, and William Dixwell, priors of. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
- Binham, Geoffrey de, warden of Lady-chapel at Tynemouth (1338), 91 ; Philip de, witness (thirteenth century), 421 ; Robert de, witness (1363-1400), 258 n, 422-424.
- Bird, Anne (Mitcalfe), 268.
- Bishopdale, William de, mayor of Newcastle (1391), 422.
- Bitleston, Thomas, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240.
- Black Chesters in Chirton, 316, 413 n.
- Black Middens, 298 n.
- Blackburn, John, marriage, 272.
- Blackett, Sir William, property at Chirton (1699), 322.
- Black Prince, the, 92.
- Blake, Sir Francis, bart., 29.
- Blakeney, Robert. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
- Blakeston, John (1664), 305 n ; Col. Nathaniel, 283 n ; Sir William, lieutenant of volunteer troop (1667), 200 n.
- Blaydon, 281, 328.
- Blencowe, Bridget (Reay), monument, 130.
- Bliethman, Cuthbert, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240.
- Blunt, Capt. Robert, in command at Tynemouth castle (1649), 194.
- Blyth, fishing at, 382, 388 ; tiibe of fish, 370 ; boat-building at, 383 ; shipment of salt at, 22 ; shipment of coal at, 33 ; prohibition of trade with, 184 ; Scottish artillery landed at, 186 ; transference of salt pans to, 21, 284 ; Seaton Sluice and Cullercoats under charge of, 282 ; creation of port, 353 ; family of Clark of, 273.
- Blyth and Tyne railway. *See* Railways.
- Boath, Thomas, steward of Tynemouth (1685), 215 n.
- Bolam, lords of, benefactors of Tynemouth priory, 48-49.
- Bolam, Walter de, prior of Tynemouth, 123.
- Bolam, church of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 49, 68 n ; claimed by Archbishop of York (1254), 73 n ; Joseph Bonner, vicar of, 365.
- Boldon, Alan de, clerk, tenant of Preston (1296), 344, 421.
- Bolt, Roger, tenant of Tynemouth (1264), 249 n.
- Bolton, leper hospital at, 123.
- Bolton, Thomas Thompson, mayor of Tynemouth (1896), 352 ; William de, grant by (1392), 424.
- Bond, derivation of the term, 222 n.
- Bonett, holder of pension from Tynemouth, 118 n.
- Bonner, Joseph, vicar of Bolam (1702), 365.
- Boon-cre, meaning of, 224.
- Boon-harrow, meaning of, 224.
- Bostock, Hugh, 100 ; John of Whethamstede. *See* St. Alban's, abbots of.
- Boston, Nicholas (*see* Tynemouth, priors of) ; John, of Bury, account of John of Tynemouth 127 n.
- Bothal, tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 50, 62 n.
- Bothwell, James, earl of, prisoner at Tynemouth (1563), 162.
- Boulby, Roger, of North Shields, property in Monk-seaton, 406.
- Boulmer, fishing at, 385, 388.
- Boutflower, William, of Apperley, trustee for Chirton estate (1702), 322.
- Bowe, John, freehold in Tynemouth (1608), 263.
- Bower, Joshua, 32.

- Bowes, Elizabeth, widow, of North Shields, 296;
Henry, copyholder (1609), 238; John, freehold in
Tynemouth (1649), 265, 272; Sir Robert, survey
cited, 159 n; Stephen, sued (1659), 241.
- Bowmaker, Thomas, tenant of Tynemouth, 233.
- Bowman, John, of South Shields, owns land at Mur-
ton, 411; Rev. Thomas, Presbyterian minister
(1842-1845), 375.
- Bowser, farmer of 'hall-corn' at Tynemouth, 235.
- Boyd, Roger, witness (*circa* 1276), 421.
- Boyfelde, Hugh, master of ordnance (1545), 158.
- Boyt, Roger, tenant of Preston (1296), 344; Tunnok,
Tynemouth subsidy roll (1296), 252.
- Bradford, Thomas, of Bradford, commissioner (1596),
232.
- Bradley, George, one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368.
- Brady, G. S., geological work, 419.
- Brandon, Hugh de, grant to Tynemouth priory (1380
and 1382), 116.
- Branxton, Oliver Selby, chaplain of, 363.
- Breadalbane, John, second earl of, marriage, 202.
- Brende, John, overseer of fortifications at Tynemouth
castle (1545), 158.
- Bredden, William de, East Chirton and Whitley
subsidy roll (1296), 393.
- Breton, Sir William, account of Tynemouth church
(1635), 128; of salt pans at Shields, 300 n.
- Breuster, Thomas, land in East Chirton (1341), 423.
- Bridgman, Sir Orlando, 121.
- Bridock, Thomas, inquest on, 219.
- Brierdean burn, 1, 389; pits at, 24; pasture, 327.
- Briggs, Henry Perronet, of Monkseaton (1840), 406.
- Briton, Hugh, witness to charter (1138), 59 n.
- Brinkburn, prior and convent of, owned coal mines at
Hartley, 22.
- Bristol, Merchant Venturers of, 371.
- Broadbent, Rev. John, Congregationalist minister
(1868), 377.
- Brodrick (Brotherwyk), John, bailiff of Tynemouth
(1392), 424; Susannah (Mitalfe), 267.
- Browell, Jane (Mills), 406.
- Brown, Alexander, of Callaly, 383; Alice (Spearman),
346; Cecily, land in Tynemouth, 421; Elizabeth,
marriage (1697), 365; Rev. J. C., minister of St.
Andrew's chapel (1892-1895), 374; Mary (Clark),
273; Matilda (Turner), grant from (1319), 421;
Roger, of Tynemouth (1324), 394; Sir Valentine,
garrisons Tynemouth castle, 163; William (1), land
in Tynemouth (1319), 421; William (2), juror of
Tynemouth (1562), 240; William (3), millwright
(1599), 329; William (4), his fire-engine (1760), 24.
- Brownhill, Francis, marriage (1711), 365.
- Browster, Thomas, witness (1434), 425.
- Bruce, Robert I., benefactor of Tynemouth priory, 50;
witness to charters, 59 n.
- Bruce, Robert, king of Scotland, inroads into Nor-
thumberland, 85.
- Bruerne, Robert de, baker, 252.
- Brun, Roger, Tynemouth subsidy roll (1296), 252;
William, East Chirton and Whitley subsidy roll
(1296), 393.
- Brunson, Joan, grant from (1351), 423; Richard, land
in Tynemouth (1333), 423.
- Brutton, Thomas, vicar of Tynemouth (1868), 364.
- Buchan, Rev. Charles F., Presbyterian minister (1840-
1843), 374.
- Buddle, John, colliery owner, 22, 27, 28.
- Budle bay, garpike in, 378; mussel cultivation in, 383.
- Bugnel, Robert, marriage (1730), 365.
- Bull-ring, North Shields, 306 and n; coaches start
from, 314; Quakers' meeting house, 372; dock at,
310.
- Bullein, William, physician and author, 160.
- Bullok, Robert, 422.
- Bulmer, Thomas de, chaplain to Lord of Greystoke at
Tynemouth, 85 n; Sir William, 107.
- Burdon Main, 26.
- Burdon, Hugh, claims West Chirton (1293), 337;
Robert, tenant of East Chirton (1294), 319; Roger,
337; Thomas, lessee of Coble Dene (1733), 341 n;
—, lessee of Seaton Delaval colliery, 30.
- Burfield, Jane (Spearman), 347.
- Burleigh, Lord. *See* Cecil.
- Burlington House, Roman stones from Tynemouth at,
36-37.
- Burnetoft, Henry de, grants to Tynemouth priory
(1345 and 1348), 115.
- Burnvill, D. de, witness to charter, 60 n.
- Burradon fire-stone, 9; colliery, 28, 30, 32; Burradon
and Coxlodge Coal Company, 32; tithes of, 124.
125 n, 369, 370, 371.
- Burrell, John, of Winton Gilbert, buys land at Preston
(1808), 345.
- Burton, Thomas de, land in Tynemouth (1302), 421.
- Burward, Adam, Tynemouth subsidy roll (1206), 252.
- Burwood, wood of, confirmed to Tynemouth priory,
62 n.
- Buth, Roger del, grant to Tynemouth priory (1382), 116.
- Butler, of Chirton, pedigree, 324; John, of Chirton,
346; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; John,
see Lanesborough, earl of.
- Bydik, John de, of Shields, land in Tynemouth, 422,
423.
- Byker, Robert de, witness (1321), 395 n.
- Byseth, Manasser, sewer to Henry II., witness to
charters, 62 n.
- Bywell St. Peter's, church of, granted to Tynemouth
priory, 49; appropriated to St. Alban's, 118; sur-
rendered to Durham (1174), 63.
- Bywell St. Andrew, tithes of, 363.

C.

- Caldewell, Robert, tenant in West Chirton (1294),
337; (1296), 338.
- Callander, James Livingstone, earl of, leader of Scottish
army (1644), 186.
- Callerton, Black, tithes of, granted to Tynemouth
priory, 49 n, 50, 62 n.
- Cambo, chapel of, confirmed to St. Alban's (1174), 64.
- Cambou, Sir Walter de, officer of Tynemouth priory
(1306), 216 n.
- Camden, William, cited, 120, 120 n, 168, 284-285.
- Campbell, of Whitley, pedigree, 400; Duncan, R.R.,
399.
- Camperdown, 351.
- Canterbury, Baldwin, archbishop of, witness to charter
(1189), 68 n; Hubert, archbishop of, witness to
charter (1198), 68 n; council of (1180), 60 n.
- Capstaff, Jane (Henzell), 401.
- Cardonnel, Mansfeldt, 322 n.
- Cardonnel-Lawson of Chirton and Cramlington, pedi-
gree, 323; Adam, 322 n, 326; James Hilton de,
sells Chirton property (1865), 323.
- Carey, Mary (Delaval), 171; Robert, earl of Mon-
mouth and captain of Tynemouth castle (1632),
167, 179, 180, 204; Thomas, reversion of captaincy
of Tynemouth, 180.

- Carlbury, co. Durham, granted to Tynemouth priory, 50, 68 n; court held at (1264), 113; cornage rent at, 118 n.
- Carliol, Thomas de, seeks protection at Tynemouth, 77, 212.
- Carlisle, defended against Scots (1315), 86.
- Carlisle, Archibald, bishop of, witness to charter, 60 n.
- Carlisle, earl of, lieutenant-general of the North (1667), 109; defence of Tyne, 200.
- Carnaby, Jane (Kellet), marriage (1672), 365; Thomas, royalist (1655), 195.
- Carr, Edward, resident in North Shields (1664), 305 n; John, works coal at Whitley and Monkseaton (1676), 20, 281; Messrs., work Seghill colliery, 29; purchase Burriadon colliery (1848), 30; owners of Cowpen colliery, 31; S. S., account of monumental stones at Tynemouth, 147 n; William (1), mayor of Newcastle, 341 n; William (2), land at Flatworth (1671), 341 n.
- Carrick, Rev. J. D., Baptist minister (1839-1866), 377.
- Carruth, John, cornet (1646), 189; freehold in Tynemouth (1649), 265, 269.
- Carter, Robert, of Earsdon, grant to (1319), 248 n; grant by (1324), 248 n.
- Cartington, John, land in Tynemouth, etc. (1426), 259, 424, 425; William, witness (1426), 424, 425.
- Cartwright, Thomas, land in Tynemouthshire (1633-1640), 240.
- Carville, John, solicitor to earl of Northumberland (1606), 121, 174 n.
- Cary, Lady Mary (Stafford), secures appointment of Gardiner to priorate of Tynemouth (1528), 107; annuity, 107, 109.
- Castell, Thomas, sub-prior of Tynemouth (1539), 111.
- Castle-ward, payable in West Chirton, 214.
- Castro, Alan de, witness (1319-1339), 88 n, 248 n, 394 n, 395 n, 410 n.
- Cavendish, William. *See* Newcastle, marquis of.
- Cay, pedigree, 407 n; Henry Boulton, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; Robert, of Newcastle, farm at Monkseaton (1680), 407.
- Cecil, Sir Robert, holds ancient grants of Tynemouth (*circa* 1600), 120; Sir William, Lord Burleigh, obtains captaincy of Tynemouth for Sir Henry Percy (1561), 160; letter to, from Sir Henry Percy (1566), 127.
- Cella, John de. *See* St. Alban's, abbots of.
- Census returns: Chirton, 315 n; Cullercoats, 280 n; North Shields, 315 n; Monkseaton, 402 n; Murton, 409 n; Preston, 342 n; Tynemouth, 247 n; Whitley, 389 n.
- Chaitour, Christopher, servant to bishop of Durham (1539), 111.
- Champerneys, William, East Chirton tallage roll (1294), 319; subsidy roll (1296), 320.
- Chandler, Bishop, visitation of Tynemouth (*circa* 1736), 368.
- Charities: parochial charities, 365-366; general charitable institutions, 356; lifeboat institutions, 356-357, 401-402; charity schools, 312, 356, 366; Master Mariners' Asylum, 248 n, 356; Shields dispensary, 311, 366.
- Charles I. at Newcastle, 189-190; visits Tynemouth, 180, 189.
- Charleton, Rev. Charles (1), vicar of Tynemouth (1789), 361, 364; Charles (2), M.D., monument in Christ church (1827), 361; bequest, 366.
- Charlton, William, of Newcastle, 270.
- Chastelon, Robert de, merchant of Normandy (1333), 254.
- Chatton, Charles Ward, vicar of, 364.
- Chayter, Sarah, owns salt pan at North Shields (1707), 310.
- Chepman, Matilda, cottager, of Monkseaton, 404.
- Cheseman, William, grant to Tynemouth priory (1392), 117; witness (1426), 424.
- Chester, Jane (Lorrence), marriage (1675), 365; Ranulph, earl of, 60.
- Chester-le-Street, property in, 398.
- Cheveage. *See* Head-pennies.
- Chevale, Robert, grant to Tynemouth priory (1307), 115.
- Chevyngton, William de, grant to Tynemouth priory (1380 and 1382), 116; witness (1363-1383), 258 n, 422-424; trustee, 396.
- Chiffinch, Barbara (Villiers, countess of Jersey), 202.
- Chille, well called, at Gateshead, 210.
- Chirton TOWNSHIP, 315-341; account of East Chirton, 319-329; Middle Chirton, 329-334; West Chirton, 334-341; in Tynemouthshire, 208, 230; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 55, 62 n, 67 n, 318; lands in acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115-117; plundering of, 90; deeds relating to property in, 254 n, 422-425; size of holdings, 228; rent of farmholds in, 229; recognition of copyhold tenure at, 239; tithes of, 369, 370; parochial services at, 358; charities, 365, 366; medieval coal mines in, 17; grant of royalties, 19; the Blaw Pit at, 241; later history of mining in, 22, 26; included in Tynemouth Borough, 247, 350-353; portions of Shire Moor added to, 415, 416; census returns, 315 n. *See also* Flatworth and West Chirton.
- Chirton barracks, 349.
- Chirton hall, 322-323.
- Chirton Hill, coal outcrop at, 8.
- Chirton, Robert de, juror of Tynemouth (1295), 215 n; tenant of East Chirton, 319, 320; of Preston, 342-343; of Murton, 409; witness, 421-422; William de, juror of Tynemouth (1295), 215 n; fined, 220; land in Tynemouth, 257, 421; Preston tallage roll, 342; witness, 421-422.
- Chis, Robert, cottager of Monkseaton, 404.
- Cholmley, royalist (1655), 195.
- Choppington, family of Clark of, 273.
- Chopwell woods, 327.
- Christ church, Tynemouth. *See* Tynemouth parish church.
- Christie, Rev. David, M.A., Presbyterian minister (1890-1897), 375.
- Christien, Rev. J., minister of St. Andrew's chapel (1868-1871), 374.
- Cisseson, John, grant to Tynemouth priory (1360), 116.
- Clapam, Dorothy, charge against (1535), 367.
- Clarendon, Edward Hyde, earl of, 194, 198.
- Clark, of Blyth, Choppington, North Shields and Belford, pedigree, 273; Robert, sued (1655), 241; William, of Dockwray Square, buys Monkseaton farm (1779), 408.
- Clarke, Ann (Lacy), monument in Tynemouth church, 130, 406; Edward (Stewart), 274; James Stewart (Stewart), 274; John (1), agent of earl of Northumberland, land at Chirton (1672), 322, 359; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; John (2), of North Shields, property in Monkseaton (1687), 406; Margaret (1) (Collingwood), marriage (1684), 365; Margaret (2) (Bates), marriage (1694), 365; Messrs., claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415;

- Ralph, tenant of Whitley (1757), 397; Rev. Ralph, vicar of Long Benton, and family, monumental inscription, 129; marriage (1697), 365; Robert, of North Shields, master mariner, and family, monumental inscription, 129; marriage (1752), 365; William, lessee of Whitley colliery (1810), 26, 400; of Earsdon colliery (1823), 28; of West Holywell colliery (1828), 29; of East Holywell colliery (1839), 30-31.
- Clavering, royalist (1656), 196.
- Clere, Henry, claims land in West Chirton (*circa* 1280), 337.
- Clerk, John (1), of Shields, land in Tynemouth (1336), 257; John (2), witness (1360), 257 n; (1363), 258 n, 422.
- Cleveland, alum industry at, 19.
- Clibborn, Alice (Spence), 350.
- Cliffe, Thomas, of North Shields, shipwright (1646), 301.
- Clifford, Lady, taken prisoner (*circa* 1315), 86; Henry, Lord, inspection of Tynemouth (1627), 179; Robert de, marches against Edward II. at Newcastle (1312), 84; Thomas, Lord, fort at Shields named after, 200; Sir Thomas, loan to Tynemouth priory (1538), 110.
- Clifford's fort, 200, 276; watch-house near, 312.
- Clousden Hill, Killingworth, Permian rocks at, 2; Clousden Hill seam, 4, 7; fossil plants at, 9.
- Clutterbuck, John, 321.
- Clyveden, Thomas de, seneschal of Tynemouth (1276), 215 n, 421.
- Coal: descriptions of coal-measures in Tynemouth parish and Earsdon chapelry, 6-11; collieries and the coal trade, 17-34; character of the district, 17; use of wagonways, 20-21, 27-28; invention of the atmospheric engine, 21; system of supports and shallow workings, 19-20, 25; reduction of export duties, 29-30; total annual sale of (1538), 114; export at North Shields (1267), 286; North Shields colliery, 266; Cullercoats colliery, 282-283; Flatworth colliery, 341; Percy Main colliery, 341; Whitley colliery, 282, 283, 397, 400; Monkseaton colliery, 407.
- Coast-erosion at Tynemouth, 16, 72 n, 97, 420.
- Coatsworth, Michael, owns salt pans at North Shields (1707) 310.
- Cobbet, Major, leads attack on Tynemouth castle (1648), 192.
- Coble Dene, landing place at, 298 n, 317; salt pans at, 341; dock (Albert Edward), 341, 354.
- Cochrane, Rev. John, Presbyterian minister (1817-1823), 374.
- Cock, Ralph, 327 n; Samuel, of Newcastle, boothman (1647), 346; Walter, witness (1376), 422.
- Cocklaw, murder of Lord Francis Russell at, 167.
- Cohn, Prof. J., geological work, 419.
- Coke, Robert, land in Tynemouth, 125 n.
- Cokeman, William, claims land in West Chirton, 337.
- Cokesho, Richard de, officer of Tynemouth priory (1306), 216 n.
- Coldingham, Richard de, witness to documents, 64-66 n.
- Coles, William, steward of Tynemouth (1707), 215 n.
- Collingwood, of Dissington, descent, 325, 326 n; of Lilburn, descent, 326; Barbara (Otway), 346; Cuthbert, Lord, 325, 326 n; Edward (1), of Byker and Dissington, 325, Edward (2), of Byker, gravestone at North Shields (1752), 310; recorder of Newcastle, 324, 325, 326 n; tenant of Murton, 411; Edward (3), of Chirton, 325; claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; Edward Stanhope, 325; John, of Chirton, 326; monument in Christ church (1841), 361; Robert, lease of Bewick (1536), 110; Sarah, monument in Christ church (1824), 361; William (1), of North Shields (1661), 304, 305 n; William (2), marriage (1684), 365.
- Collins, Ralph, mayor of Tynemouth (1885-1889), 352; William, grantee from the Crown, 19, 264, 299, 328, 341.
- Collinson, Henry, of Aydon castle, 268; Captain William, freehold in Tynemouth (1649), 265; buys land at Tynemouth and Aydon castle, 265 n; heirs own salt pans at North Shields, 310; bequest, 365; subscription to church, 367; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368.
- Collyer, Elizabeth, of Newcastle, surrenders Monkseaton village farm (1680), 407.
- Colville, Sir Thomas, champion for Prior de la Mare, 94; Rev. William, M.A., Presbyterian minister (1899), 375.
- Communication: between North Shields and Newcastle, 303, 314; between North Shields and South Shields, 314 and n.
- Conevis-pennies and Conevis-silver. *See* Conveys.
- Coniscliffe church granted to Tynemouth priory, 50, 68 n; confirmed to St. Alban's (1174), 64; claimed by bishop of Durham (1258), 73 n; by William de Greystoke (1256), 74; advowson conceded to St. Alban's (1315), 85; pension from, payable to St. Alban's, 65; cornage rent at, 118 n; Adam, vicar of (1174), 65.
- Constantine mac Aedh, king of the Scots, 412.
- Conveys, meaning and origin of, 224-225; at Whitley, 390, 393-394, 395.
- Conway, royalist general (1640), 181.
- Conyers, Ann, monument in Christ church, 361; Margaret (Reed), 321; Mary, monument in Christ church, 361; Nicholas, of Scarborough, 361; William, monument in Christ church, 361.
- Cook, John, of Newcastle, 407.
- Cookson, Christopher, steward of Tynemouth (1831), 215 n.
- Cooper, Grey, marriage (1753), 365.
- Copyhold tenure in Tynemouthshire, development of, 228, 236-238; legal recognition of, 238-239; statement of customs, 241-242; in North Shields, 293-297.
- Coquet, mussel bait in the, 382; salmon conservancy, 387.
- Coquet Island, granted to Tynemouth priory, 48; foundation of cell at, 56; appropriated to St. Alban's, 118; St. Henry of, 56, 146.
- Corbridge, battle of (923), 413 n; tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 49, 62 n, 68 n; David I. at (1138), 58; skirmish at (1644), 185.
- Corder, Elizabeth (Spence), 350; Percy, cited, 350 n.
- Cornage rents, granted to prior and convent of Tynemouth (1205), 69; their amount, 213-214; not paid by Tynemouth township, 222; not paid by Murton township, 410; paid to abbot of St. Alban's (abbot-scot), 118 n, 224.
- Corneth, Mark, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; Mark, of Tynemouth (1680), 241.
- Corrody, example of, 70 n.
- Cosyn, John, alderman of Newcastle (1647), 191.
- Coulson, Gabriel, parish clerk and schoolmaster of North Shields (1655), 312 n, 368.
- Council of the North, proceedings before, 228, 295-297

- Council of Trade, proceedings before, 301-303.
 Coventry, bishop of, arbitrator between Tynemouth priory and Newcastle (1512), 291.
 Coward, Anne, monument in Christ church (1834), 361; Henry, of Preston, 272; monument in Christ church (1836), 361; Humphrey, marriage (1636), 364; Margaret Antonia Linskill, monument in Christ church (1843), 361; Thomas, tenant of East Chirton (1606), 321.
 Cowden, William, dissenting teacher (died 1730), 373 n.
 Cowell, Richard, of Long Benton, buys North Balkwell farm (1805), 333.
 Cowpen, geological faults at, 8; in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 68 n; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115-117; township fined at Tynemouth assizes (1293), 219; survey of (1323), 227; customary tenure at, 226 n; entries on Tynemouth court rolls relating to, 240, 241; tithes of, 370; Toll property at, 269; coal seams at, 7; coal mines leased by Peter Delaval, 170; colliery, 31, 32; railway communication with the Tyne, 33; included in Tynemouth Union, 351.
 Cowpen, John de, juror of Tynemouth (1295), 215 n; William de, concerned in burglary (1290), 216; death, 218, 220; William de, prior's carter (1336), 257.
 Craig, Herbert, M.P. for Tynemouth (1906), 351.
 Cramfield, engineer (1625), 178.
 Cramlington, coal seams at, 7; fossil plants at, 9; ancient earthworks in, 413; wagonway, 29, 30, 341 n; family of Lawson of, 110, 322-323; included in Tynemouth Union, 351.
 Cramlington, George (*circa* 1550), 171; Henry, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; John, sexton of Tynemouth (1645), 367.
 Craster, fee farm rent from, 49; harbour at, 381; fishing at, 385, 386, 387 n, 388.
 Craster, John, of Craster, 202; Rev. Thomas, rector of Kettlethorpe, 400.
 Crawford, of Seaton Delaval, Hartley and Balkwell, pedigree, 333; George, of King's Langley, bequest (1811), 366; John (1), of North Shields, buys Monkseaton property (1815), 408; John (2), of Cambois, land in Chirton, 333; Ralph, of Hartley, buys Balkwell farm (1805), 333; Monkseaton South-west farm (1813), 408; Shallett John, owner of Monkseaton property, 408.
 Crawlhall, Thomas Emerson, vicar of Tynemouth (1899), 364.
 Creppynge, Simon de, collector of subsidy (1276), 213 n.
 Cressingham, H. de, justice itinerant (1293), 218.
 Cresswell, fishing at, 388.
 Cresswell, Cresswell, steward of Tynemouth (1832), 215 n.
 Cressy, Hugh de, witness to charter, 62 n.
 Crewe, trustees of Lord, 381.
 Crighton, Alexander, of North Shields, buys Monkseaton property (1795), 407.
 Crook, Walter, land in Tynemouth, 256.
 Cromwell, Oliver, petition to, for market at Shields (1654), 303; at Dunbar, 397; Thomas, annuity from Tynemouth priory, 107; secures appointment of Robert Blakeney as prior, 109.
 Cruddas, Eleanor, monumental inscription (1830), 361; John, of North Shields, brewer, monumental inscription (1831), 361.
 Cuherd, William, land in Tynemouth, 423 n.
 Cullercoats TOWNSHIP, 280-284; fossil fish at, 3, 5-6, 417; Red Sandstone at, 4, 8; Ninety-fathom Dyke at, 5, 8, 417; coal outcrop at, 8; creation of township, 283; annexed to port of Newcastle, 282; included in Tynemouth borough, 247, 350-351; salt trade at, 20-21, 282-284; colliery, 282-283; fishing industry at, 284, 385, 386, 388; pier at, 20, 281; marine laboratory at, 389; lifeboat station at, 356, 357; fishermen's chapel at, 376; St. George's church, 360; Quakers' burial ground, 281, 372; census returns, 280. *See also* Marden.
 Curset, Colonel, account of Scottish attack on the Tyne (1644), 185.
 Curtays, John, witness (1333 and 1340), 423.
 Custumal (1295); East Chirton, 319-320; Middle Chirton, 330; West Chirton, 338; Monkseaton, 404; Preston, 223, 343-344. *See also* Tynemouth and Whitley.
 Cuthbert, St., at Tynemouth, 38-39; dedication of church at Tynemouth by, 40; legend of his hair, 42 n.
 Cutter, Richard, of Earsdon, yeoman (1596), 233; Robert, of Earsdon, will (1570), 228 n; Thomas, 228 n; William, of Newcastle, cooper (1596), 234.
- D.
- Dabber, Geoffrey, land in Tynemouth, 256; Roger, witness (1333), 423; William, Tynemouth subsidy roll (1296), 252.
 Dacre, of Gilsland, family of, 254 n; Dorothy (Lacy), monumental inscription, 130; Sir Philip, knight (1535), 367; Sir Thomas, Lord Dacre of Gilsland, 212; tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262.
 Dagger lech, North Shields, 262, 285, 306, 368.
 Daglish, Jacob, mayor of Tynemouth (1900-1901), 352; John, of Wideopen, murdered (1596), 172 n.
 Dale, Isabella (Fenwick), 348; John (1), master mariner, monumental inscription (1744), 361; John (2), 267; Shallett, of Newcastle, 267; S. J., 349.
 Dalton, county Durham, tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 62 n.
 Dalton, John de, grant to Tynemouth priory (1391), 116, 117; quit-claim (1376), 424; Matilda, wife of Richard de, 410; Richard de, of Newcastle, grant to Tynemouth priory (1339), 115, 410; witness (1326), 423.
 Danby, earl of, secures Tynemouth for William of Orange (1688), 203.
 Danish invasions, 40-41; Tynemouth a Danish base, 154; Danish influence in Tynemouth, 222, 248.
 Danun (Deanham), granted to Tynemouth priory, 68 n.
 Darneton, William, of North Shields (1596), 235.
 Dandre, Gilbert, witness (1320), 88 n, 422. *See also* Andre.
 Davenport, chaplain to bishop of Durham (1668), 359.
 David I., king of Scotland, invades Northumberland, (1136), 58; second invasion (1138), 58; defeated at battle of the Standard (1138), 59; charters, 59 n.
 David II., king of Scotland, capture at Neville's Cross, 94.
 Davison, Sir Alexander, of Newcastle, property in North Shields (1631), 298 n; Jane, of North Shields, buys land at Murton (1856), 411; John Thomas, 348, 399, 400; Thomas, 270; William, of North Shields, buys Preston farm (1872), 348; Whitley property (1855), 399; Monkseaton property (1865), 406.
 Davy, William (1413), 258 n; witness (1421), 424.

- Dawson, Barbara, monumental inscription, 129; Richard, tenant of Tynemouth, 231 n; Thomas, monumental inscription, 129.
- Deanham. *See* Danun.
- Deckham, Thomas (1609), officer of earl of Northumberland, 167, 233, 234, 235; copyholder, 238.
- Defte. *See* Deste.
- Defoe, Daniel, 'Tour through Great Britain' cited, 307 n, 379 n, 393 n.
- De la Beche, Eliza (Mitalfe), 268.
- De la Mare, Thomas. *See* St. Alban's, abbots of.
- Delaval of Tynemouth, pedigree, 171; family of, sell manor of Benwell to Tynemouth priory, 102.
- Delaval, Barbara, subscription to Tynemouth garrison (1643), 184 n; Edward Hussey (1814), 25; Hubert, benefactor of Tynemouth priory, 48, 50, 55 (10); Sir John, knight (1), hostile to Tynemouth priory, 107; Sir John, knight (2), leases Whitley tithes (1539), 110; surveys Tynemouth castle (1571), 164; John (3), of Tynemouth, petition to earl of Northumberland, 172 n; sells Arnold's close (1618), 281; Sir John (4), of Dissington, knight, list of Northumberland fishermen (1626), 378 n, 388; Sir John (5), third baronet (1725), works Hartley coal mines, 23; John Hussey, Lord, exploits coal trade at Hartley, 23, 25; Joshua, of Rivergreen, report on Tynemouth castle (1596), 169; convicted of murder, 172 n; Luce (Hall), marriage (1635), 364; Peter, character of, 170; works Preston coal mines (1590), 18; purchase and sale of Tynemouth rectory, 363 n, 370; freehold in Tynemouth, 262, 263, 281; captain of Tynemouth castle (1596), 169, 173; dismissal, 174; letters from, 173, 174 n, 370 n; law-suits, 231-235, 294-296; purchase of Arnold's close (1606), 281; seal, 172; Ralph (1), of North Shields, at Tynemouth castle (1596), 169, 173; purchases moiety of Tynemouth rectory, 370; hall-corn dispute, 322, 235; champions claims of copyholders in North Shields, 294-297; inventory taken by, 328; owner of Arnold's close (1606), 281; Sir Ralph (2), knight, works coal at Hartley, 22; letter on presentation to Tynemouth vicarage (1607), 363 n; Sir Ralph (3), first baronet, develops coal trade at Hartley, 22-23; defence of the Tyne (1667) 199; pew in Christ church, 359; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; sells tithes (1676), 371; theological treatise dedicated to, 372; Robert (1), plunders Tynemouth property (*circa* 1325), 90; Sir Robert (2), knight, defends Tynemouth castle, 87; agreement with prior (1326), 318; witness (1321), 394 n; Robert (3), of Seaton Delaval, deputy captain of Tynemouth castle (1585), 167; on commission (1596), 232; buys half Tynemouth rectory, 371; Robert (4), of Cowpen, officer of the earl of Northumberland (1609), 238; Robert (5), captain of volunteers (1667), 200 n; Thomas, directs trade at Hartley, 23-24; Walter, plunders Tynemouth property (*circa* 1325), 90; William (1) (before 1158), reputed benefactor of Tynemouth priory, 49; Sir William (2), grant to (1376), 422; witness (1360), 257 n; William (3), murdered at Hexham (1618), 172 n; William (4), town clerk of Newcastle (1661), 198; —, royalist (1655), 195.
- De la Zouche, family of, 92.
- Denand, Edward, yeoman (1596), 234; George, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; tenant of Murton (1580), 410; Robert, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240. *See also* Dinning.
- Dene, Hugh, freeholder of East Chirton (1294), 319.
- Dent, John, trawling experiments, 339.
- Denton, West, conveyed to Tynemouth priory (1311), 49, 98, 116; included in Tynemouth hire, 208.
- Denton, James, of North Shields (1664), 305 n.
- Depommas, Mary (Johnson), marriage (1723), 365.
- Derlyng, —, West Chirton tenant (1294), 338.
- Dersley, —, vicar of Tynemouth (1651), 363.
- Dispenser, Hugh (the younger), charge against, 84.
- Deste, John, grant to Tynemouth priory (1337), 115, 255, 257.
- De Witt, attempt to raid colliers (1653), 194.
- Dialect of Tynemouthshire, 222 n.
- Dickson, James, 327.
- Digby, John, captain of volunteers (1667), 200 n.
- Dinning, geological work, 420; Isabel, tenant of Murton (1707), 411; Margaret, surrenders Murton farm (1679), 411; Robert, juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241. *See also* Denand.
- Dissington, South, manor and tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 48-50, 62 n, 67 n; included in Tynemouthshire, 208; recognition of copyhold tenure at, 239; culture charged on tenants of, 318, 339 n; Collingwood family of, 325.
- Dissington, William de, renders homage (1264), 113.
- Dixon, Rev. George, M.A., vicar of Tynemouth (1825), 364.
- Dixwell, William. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
- Dobson, A., of North Shields (1607), 296; John, architect (1850), 129, 352.
- Docks, Northumberland, 341, 354; Albert Edward, 341, 354; graving docks, 310, 314.
- Dockwray, of Tynemouth, pedigree, 269; Josias, of North Shields (1724), 299; Richard, of North Shields, and family, monumental inscription (1802), 361; Stephen, vicar of Tynemouth (1673), 364; monumental inscription, 361; Thomas, vicar of Tynemouth (1668), 354, 361, 364; Thomas, vicar of Tynemouth (1682), 364; Thomas, vicar of Stamfordham, 271.
- Dodding, Charles, trustee for sale of Tynemouth rectory (1589), 370.
- Dodds, George, mayor of Tynemouth (1887), 352.
- Doewaye. *See* Dove.
- Dogger Letch. *See* Dagger Letch.
- Donemuth, identified with Jarrow, 39.
- Donkin Rigg, lands at, held by Tynemouth priory, 49.
- Donkin, Armorer, of the Low Lights, monumental inscription, 129; Elizabeth, monumental inscription, 129; Richard Sims, M.P. for Tynemouth (1885-1900), 351; W., schoolmaster at Tynemouth, (*circa* 1736), 368.
- Dorset, Thomas Sackville, earl of, petitioned by tenants of Shields (1607), 297.
- Dortwick sands, 306, 334, 354; salt pans at, 297, 341.
- Douglas, John, tenant of Murton (1707), 411, 412; Sir William, prisoner at Tynemouth (1346), 94.
- Doune, James, tenant of Tynemouth, 263.
- Dove, family of, 281 n; Eleanor (Huddleston), 282; John (1), miller (1530), 261, 280; John (2), of Whitley, tenant of Tynemouth (1640), 265; quaker, 281, 372; works coal mines (1673), 20, 281, 307; John (3), of the Low Lights, will (1704), 266 n; John (4), of Wapping, marriage, 398; sells Sparrow Hall (1706), 282; Mary, imprisoned (1661), 372; Robert (1), tenant of Tynemouth (1530), 262, 265; miller, 261, 280; Robert (2), tenant of Tynemouth (1594), 234, 235, 262, 263, 290; Robert (3), freehold in Tynemouth (1640), 265; family of, 271;

- Robert (4), of Tynemouth, one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; Robert (5), of the Low Lights, will (1704), 271; Sarah (Hudson), 398; Sarah (2), tenant of Whitley (1757), 397; Thomas (1), juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; Thomas (2), of Whitley, purchases Arnold's Close (1621), 281; lease (1644), 281 n; Thomas (3), of Whitley, builds Sparrow Hall (1682), 282; William, imprisoned (1661), 281, 372.
- Dowe, *See* Dove.
- Downing, Edmund, trustee for sale of Tynemouth rectory (1589) 370.
- Dowson, Mary (Mitalfe), 267.
- Drengage in Tynemouthshire, 225.
- Driffeld, Robert de, rector of Ponteland and vicar of Neuburn (*circa* 1267), 286 n.
- Diury, Henry, West Chirton tenant (1294) 338; Theodosia (Mitalfe), 267.
- Dryden, Thomas, of Seaton Sluice, buys Murton farm (1824), 412.
- Drymouth, William, tenant of East Chirton (1294), 320; Middle Chirton tallage roll (1294) 330.
- Dubuisson, Rev. M., French refugee (1793) 376.
- Duchman, Herman, tenant of North Shields (1446), 290.
- Dudden, John de, seneschal of Tynemouth (1302), 215 n; witness (1302), 421.
- Duddo, in parish of Stannington, royalist plot at (1665), 195.
- Dudley, John, duke of Northumberland. *See* Northumberland.
- Dunbar, George Hume, earl of, governor of Tynemouth castle (1606), 177; enquiry by, 297; Patrick, earl of, claims advowson of Eglington (1225), 73 n; claims manors of Bewick and Eglington, 74; death (1248), 74.
- Duncan, Rev. George J. C., Presbyterian minister (1844-1851), 374.
- Dunfermline, body of Malcolm III. transferred to, 51; abbot of, witness to charter, 59 n.
- Dunfermline, earl of, attends Charles I. to Tynemouth (1646), 189.
- Dunham, Ralph de, *see* Tynemouth, priors of; William de, vicar of Tynemouth (1291), 362.
- Dunne, Constance, daughter of John, 421; Dyonia, wife of John, 421; John, of Redesdale, grant from (thirteenth century), 421; pedigree, 425; Thomas, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262; Walter, lease (1383), 422; grant to (1391), 422; William, grant from (1391), 422.
- Durant, M. L. C. (Fenwick), 349.
- Durham priory, foundation of (1033), 45; deprived of Tynemouth (1085), 46; Turgot, prior of, asserts claims to Tynemouth (1093), 50-51; claims renewed (1121), 57-58; settlement of claims by Prior Germanus (1174), 63-66.
- Durham, bishops of: Egelwin (1057-1071) assists at the discovery of the body of St. Oswin, 41-42; Walcher (1071-1080), confirms Tynemouth to the monks of Jarrow, 44; William de St. Carileph (1080-1096), transfers the monks of Jarrow to Durham, 45; quarrels with Robert de Mowbray, 46; founds church of Durham, 120 n; writ addressed to, 53 n; Ranulf Flambard (1099-1128), present at translation of St. Oswin, 56, 57; writs addressed to, 55; Hugh Pudsey (1153-1195); renounces claim to Tynemouth (1174), 63 and n; witness to royal charters, 62 n, 68 n; Nicholas de Farnham (1241-1249), composition with Tynemouth (1247), 73; oppressive conduct, 74; Walter de Kirkham (1249-1260), restores churches to St. Alban's, 74; contests rights of St. Alban's and Tynemouth, 74; Anthony Bek (1284-1311) pleads before Edward I. at Tynemouth (1301), 83; presentations to Tynemouth vicarage, 126; Richard de Bury (1333-1345) confirms grant of land to Tynemouth priory, 117 n; Cuthbert Tunstall (1530-1559), complaint to privy council (1558), 127; Tobias Matthew (1595-1606), account of defenceless state of Tyne (1599), 170; Richard Neile (1617-1628), recommends fortification of Tynemouth, 178; letter, 179; John Cosin (1660-1672), petition to, 202 n; consecrates Christ church, Tynemouth (1668), 359.
- Durham, Dean and Chapter of, ferry rights at North Shields (1717), 314 n.
- Durham, Robert, marriage (1694), 365.
- Duxfield, Mary (Crawford), 333.
- Dymon, widow, complaint (1597), 173.

E.

- Eachwick, family of Spearman of, 346-347.
- Eadbert, king of Northumbria, 413 n.
- Eagleston, Mary Anne (Fenwick), 349.
- Ealdred, king of Northumbria, 413 n.
- Earsdon chapelry, geology of, 2-16; collieries and the coal trade in, 17-34.
- Earsdon chapel, endowment of, 124-125, 361; Thomas Castell, curate of, 111.
- Earsdon township, in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 55, 62 n, 67 n; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115; medieval road through, 317; number of holdings in, 228; rent of farmholds in, 229; testamentary disposition of farm in, 228 n; recognition of copyhold tenure in, 239; enclosure of, 244; tithes of, 369, 371; coal mining in, 17, 28, 30-31.
- Earthworks, ancient, at Tynemouth, 155; at Chirton, 316; at Cramlington, 413 n.
- Eddowes, James, of South Shields, 348.
- Eden, William, Crown grantee, 19, 239, 332.
- Edgar, son of Gospatric, charter, 120.
- Edlington, church of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 49; surrendered to Durham (1174), 63.
- Education at North Shields, 312 and n, 355-356, 365; at Whitley, 402.
- Edward, son of Malcolm III. of Scotland, 52.
- Edward I., visits to Tynemouth, 80, 83, 84; seizes liberty of Tynemouth (1291), 80, 218; surrenders claims to Tynemouth advowson, 81; licence to crenellate Tynemouth castle (1296), 83, 150, 156; restores franchise (1299), 83, 221; grant of market at Tynemouth (1304), 83, 253; at Holywell (1304), 317; private chapel at Tynemouth, 147.
- Edward II. at Tynemouth (1312), 84; intervenes between prior of Tynemouth and warden of Northumberland, 89; puts John de Haustede in charge of Tynemouth castle, 156.
- Edward III., petition of prior of Tynemouth to, 91; visit to Tynemouth (1335), 92; praise of Abbot de la Mare, 92.
- Edward IV., charter to Tynemouth priory, 104, 221, 290.
- Edwards, H. S., of Corbridge, owner of dock at North Shields (1883), 310 n.
- Edwin, king of Northumbria, traditional founder of a chapel at Tynemouth, 39.
- Egelwin. *See* Durham, bishops of.

- Egfrid, king of Northumbria, founder of Jarrow monastery, 39.
- Eglingham, in Tynemouthshire, 208; manor granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 54, 55, 58 n, 62 n, 67 n, 69 n; manor claimed by earl of Dunbar, 74; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 116; township fined at Tynemouth assizes, 219; church of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 49, 63 n, 65, 68 n; advowson claimed by earl of Dunbar, 73 n; church appropriated by St. Alban's, 74; accounts for, 76 n.
- Eglinton, earl of, 185.
- Elder, Thomas, steward of Tynemouth (1725), 215 n.
- Elfton, land in, 249 n.
- Elfred, tenant of St. Cuthbert, 413 n.
- Elizabeth, Queen, letter concerning Tynemouth castle (1560), 161; condemnation of Sir Henry Percy, 164.
- Ellenborough, Lord, cited, 237.
- Ellerington, William de, plunders Tynemouth property (*circa* 1325), 90.
- Ellington, lands in, held by Tynemouth priory, 49, 115; plundered, 90.
- Elliott, Joseph, mayor of Tynemouth (1885-1886), 352; Sergeant, arbitrator between Tynemouth priory and Newcastle (1512), 291.
- Ellis, Rev. J. W., minister of St. Andrew's chapel (1872-1878), 374.
- Ellison, Anne (Benson), 399; Elizabeth (Hudson), 398; Hannah (1) (Dockwray), 270; Hannah (2), property in Whitley (1815), 398; Henry, of Otterburn and Whitehaven, 398; John, witness (1421), 424; Nathaniel, vicar of Newcastle (1705), 102, 368, 398; Richard, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; Robert, 398.
- Elswick, in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 49, 68 n; grant of tithes of, 50, 62 n; grant of fishery at, 60 n; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115, 117; Henry Scot receives lands in, 82; Edward III. at, 92; manor of, 221; court held at, 113; assizes for Tynemouthshire held at, 210; deaths in coal pits at, 219; suit to Flatworth mill, 339 n; oppression of tenants at, 231; entries on Tynemouth court rolls relating to, 240, 241.
- Etwald. *See* Alwald.
- Elwick, tithes of, held by Tynemouth priory, 50, 370; house at, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115; John de Thoresby, rector of (1340), 115.
- Ely, Geoffrey, bishop of, witness to charter, 62 n.
- Embleton, fishing at, 388.
- Embleton, D., geological work, 420.
- Enclosures, in Tynemouth parish, 244 n; in Monkseaton, 406; in Preston, 345; in Tynemouth, 264-266; in Whitley, 397; enclosure of Shire Moor, 414-415.
- England's Grievance*, quoted, 301-303.
- Erdesden, Adam de, Monkseaton custumal (1296), 404.
- Errington, of Woosington, family of, 119; Anthony, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; copyholder (1609), 238; Christopher, of North Shields, and family, monumental inscription (1722), 361; Elizabeth (Howett), monumental inscription (1732), 361; George, tenant of Tynemouthshire (1594), 234; Gilbert (1), of Woosington, autograph, 119; connection with Tynemouth monastery, 160 n; Gilbert (2), of West Denton, marriage, 321, 364; Lancelot, ensign of volunteers (1667), 200 n; Mary, marriage (1753), 365; Thomas, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; W., ensign of volunteers (1667), 200 n.
- Escot, Walter le, property in Monkseaton (1273), 402.
- Eskdale, Jonathan, mayor of Tynemouth (1899), 352.
- Essec, Walter (1121), 57.
- Essenden, Ralph de, justice of the prior of Tynemouth's court (1283), 211 n.
- Essex, Henry de, constable, witness to charter, 62 n.
- Ethelred, king of Northumbria, 40.
- Eudo, seoyer to William II., witness, 53 n.
- Eugenius, chancellor of Earl Henry Fitz David, witness, 59 n, 60 n.
- Eure, Ralph, Lord (1597), 299 n; Henry, attacks Tynemouth priory, 108.
- Euthymius, St., relic of, 114.
- Eversdon, Hugh de. *See* St. Alban's, abbots of.
- Evesham, battle of, 77.
- Evreux, bishop of (1121), 57.
- F.
- Faccalle, Thomas, freeman of Middle Chilton (1295), 330.
- Fader, Robert, tenant of fishery (1328), 340 n.
- Fairfax, Thomas, Lord, 191; petition to (1648), 193.
- Fairman, Roger, tenant of Tynemouth (1264), 249 n; William, witness (1319) 421 (1320), 422.
- Fairweather, Alexander, acquire Monkseaton property (1902), 408.
- Fall, Mary, wife of William, monumental inscription, 130.
- Farewell, Mr., receiver of 'hall-corn,' 233.
- Farms, discussion of their origin, 242-244; in Tynemouth township, 266.
- Farne, seal fisheries, 378.
- Farneakers, John de, justice for Tynemouth hire (1283), 211 n.
- Farnham, Nicholas de. *See* Durham, bishops of.
- Fauconberg, Thomas, Lord (1662), 198.
- Fauconer, Adam, witness (1360), 257 n; land in Monkseaton, 405.
- Faucus. *See* Faukes.
- Faukes, Henry de, of Backworth, grant to Tynemouth priory (1320), 91, 315, 328; witness, 248 n, 305 n, 423; Nicholas, of Backworth, juror of Tynemouth (1293), 218; grant to Tynemouth priory, 316 n; witness, 421; William, witness (1339), 410 n.
- Fawcus, John, mayor of Tynemouth (1862), 352.
- Fawedon, Sir Robert de, witness (1321), 394 n.
- Fearon, Thomas, of South Shields, salt manufacturer (1677), 283.
- Featherstonhaugh, John, of Stanhope, commissioner (1596), 232.
- Felde, Edward, S.T.P., vicar of Tynemouth (*circa* 1526), 362.
- Felton, John de, grant to Tynemouth priory (1326), 115.
- Fenham, ownership disputed by Newcastle and Tynemouth (1357), 97; tenants of, amerced at Tynemouth manor court, 240.
- Fenham flats, shell-fish in the, 382, 383.
- Fenn, Edward, Crown grantee, 19, 204, 290, 328, 341.
- Fenrother, Adam de, rector of Stokesley and master of St. Edmund's hospital, Gatehead, grant to Tynemouth priory (1381), 49, 116; trustee, 39; Robert de, grant to Tynemouth priory (1380), 116; witness, 258 n, 422-424.
- Fenwick, of Preston and North Shields, pedigree, 348; Anne (Clark), 273; Cuthbert Smith, 267; Edward, high sheriff (1659), 307; Eleanor (Clark), 273; Elizabeth, sued (1651), 241; Col. George, of Brinkburn, in command of Tynemouth castle (1648), 193; governor of Berwick (1640), 194;

- Henry, captain of Tynemouth castle (1634), 182 and n; Sir John de (1), sheriff (1319, 1325), 88 n, 89 n; witness (1321), 391 n; John (2), witness (1426), 424, 425; Sir John (3), of Wallington, captain of Tynemouth castle (1616), 150 n, 178; John (4), of Milburn Place, buys land at Preston (1814), 348; John (5), of Dockwray Square, buys land at Preston (1818), 348; John (6), of Preston, marriage, 267; Margaret (Mills, Spearman), 346; Mary (Penwick), 349; Ralph, marriage (1652), 364; Richard (1), bailiff (1610), 240; Richard (2), buys land at Preston (1844), 345; Robert, servant to William, 173; Thomas (1), marriage (1695), 347; Thomas (2), buys Preston farm (1817), 348; Thomas (3), of Earsdon, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; William, of the Sheele Milnes, fight in Tynemouth castle (1597), 173; of Wallington, 173.
- Ferguson, Joseph, of Carlisle, 273.
- Fernham, Frances (Salkeld), 333; Sir Francis, 333.
- Ferrers, Edward, grant of mills to (1610), 263.
- Ferries on the Tyne, 241, 354-355.
- Fesefoul, John, of Wylam, prior's serf, 255.
- Fielding, Mary, property at Preston, 347.
- Fishburn, Thomas de, seneschal of Tynemouth (*circa* 1312), 215 n, 216 n, 423 n.
- Fisheries: account of sea fisheries, 378-389; herring fishery, 379-381; fishing cobbles, 381-382; trawling, 383-385; crab and lobster fishing, 385-386; salmon and sea-trout, 386-387; Northumberland Sea Fisheries Committee, 387-389; list of fishermen in Northumberland (1626), 388; number of fishing boats (1905), 388; fishing industry at North Shields, 285, 286-288, 290, 292-293; fish market at North Shields, 314; grant of fisheries in the Tyne, 59, 60 n; salmon fishery at the Low Lights, 298 and n; tithe of fish, 369 and n.
- Fitz Audelm, William, sewer to Henry II., witness to charters, 62 n.
- Fitz Harding, John, Viscount, 202.
- Fitz Walter, Robert, 70.
- Flambard, Ranulph. *See* Durham, bishops of.
- Flane, John, free tenant of Cowpen (1323), 226.
- Flatford. *See* Flatworth.
- Flatford, Questrie de, 337.
- Flatworth, historical account of, 334-341; in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 62, 335; manor of, 221, 318, 339; suit to mill at, 222, 339, 395, 396; leased to Sir Thomas Hilton, 156, 340; acquired by the earl of Northumberland, 19, 341; coal worked at, 22, 25.
- Flaundes, Michael de, takes sanctuary, 220.
- Flemings, royal writ in favour of (1325), 261.
- Foliot, Robert, witness to charter (1138), 59 n.
- Forests. *See* Bewick, Burwood.
- Forster, Collingwood, steward of Tynemouth (1761), 215 n; Dorothy (Mitalfe), 267; Gawen, sued (1652), 241; bequest (1654), 365; Sir John (1), charged to arrest Sir Henry Percy, 163; report on Tynemouth castle, 164; attacked by Scots at Cocklaw, 167; John (2), lieutenant of volunteers (1667), 200 n; Richard, letters from Newcastle (1667), 199, 200.
- Foster, Mary (Spence), 350.
- Fourstones, justices of assize met at, 210.
- Fowke, Mary (Lockey, Villiers), 202, 207; William, owner of Tynemouth lighthouse (1802), 207.
- Fox, George, the quaker, 371.
- Franchlyn, Major-General John Henry, C.B., 267.
- Frank, Elizabeth (Penwick), 348.
- Franklin, Rev. Robert J., Roman Catholic priest (1873-1878), 376; William, chancellor of Durham, 107.
- Fraser, Rev. Henry Erskine, M.A., Presbyterian minister (1845-1856), 375.
- Freeman, Patrick, of Cambois, 334; Thomas, of Benton, 334.
- Fundelyng, Robert, sentenced at Tynemouth (1293), 219.
- Fyfe, Robert, surrenders Monkseaton property (1654), 408.
- Fymer, William, property in Whitley (1382), 396.

G.

- Gaclut, William, forfeits lands in Tynemouth, 253.
- Gaddon, Richard, tenant of North Shields (1446), 290 n.
- Gaidum, Hugh (*circa* 1260), 76 n.
- Galeway, Agnes (1382), 116; Robert, of Newcastle (1382), 116.
- Galt, Robert, Shields subsidy roll (1296), 288.
- Gardiner, Thomas, *see* Tynemouth, priors of; William, of London, 107.
- Gardner, Devereux, writing-master, 332; Katharine (1664), 305 n; Ralph, of Chirton, account of, 332 and n; works Flatworth colliery, 19, 241; quarry at Billy Mill, 329; schedule of losses, 185 n, 193; refusal to pay 'hall-corn,' 236; struggle against Newcastle's monopoly, 301-304; parochial concerns, 358, 367.
- Gategang, Henry, vicar of Tynemouth (thirteenth century), 362.
- Gateshead, property in, held by Tynemouth priory, 49.
- Gaveston, Piers, flight with Edward II. from Newcastle, and death, 84.
- Geinitz, Dr. H. B., geological work, 417.
- Geoffrey, prior of Tynemouth (12th century), 122.
- GEOLOGY of Tynemouth parish and Earsdon chapelry, 2-16; appendix of geological literature, 417-420; Permian rocks, 2-6; coal-measures, 6-11; dykes, 11-15; glacial deposits, 15-16.
- Germanus (1), prior of Tynemouth (1148) and abbot of Selby (1153), 122; (2), prior of Durham, releases claims to Tynemouth (1174), 64; (3), *see* Tynemouth, priors of.
- Gervase, abbot of Westminster, 119.
- Gibson, Francis, vicar of Tynemouth (1652), 363, 367; William Sidney, esq., monument in Tynemouth church, 129; *History of Tynemouth cited passim*.
- Gilbert, constable to Earl Henry fitz David, 60 n. *See also* Tynemouth, priors of.
- Gillespie, James Dunsmore, mayor of Tynemouth (1902), 352.
- Gilling in Richmondshire. *See* Ingetlingum.
- Gillison, Rev. Andrew, M.A., Presbyterian minister (1897-1899), 375.
- Gillow, Rev. Thomas, Roman Catholic priest (1821-1857), 376; Rev. William, Roman Catholic priest (1869-1873), 376.
- Gilmour, Rev. Thomas, Presbyterian minister (1813-1841), 375.
- Gilpin, Rev. R., marriage, 398.
- Girling, Rev. W. H., minister of St. Andrew's chapel (1896-1898), 374.
- Glanvill, Ralph de, witness to charter, 62 n.
- Glede, William, gaoler, 220.

- Glenham, Sir Thomas, governor of Carlisle (1644), 187.
- Gloucester, Adam de, witness, 66 n; Richard, duke of, *see* Richard III.; Thomas, duke of, patron of Tynemouth priory (1390), 98, 99; William de Clare, earl of (1177), 120 n.
- Goble, James Methold, 267.
- Gobyclif, Patrick, order of arrest, 220.
- Gobyon, Hugh, sheriff (1293), 220.
- Godric, St., cures effected by, 43 n.
- Goldsmith, family in Tynemouth, 254.
- Goodyear, Captain Henry, in Tynemouth garrison (1648), 192 n.
- Gordon, Lord Adam, governor of Tynemouth castle (1778), 204; Alexander, vicar of Tynemouth (1659), 363; ejected, 372.
- Goreham, Henry de, donor to Tynemouth conventual library, 119.
- Gospatric I. *See* Northumberland, earls of.
- Gospatric II. grants Edlingham church to Tynemouth priory, 49; witness to charters, 59 n, 60 n.
- Goswick bay, fishing in, 380, 386.
- Gothard, Robert, of Long Benton, buys Murton farm (1803), 412.
- Gourley, Walter de, plunders Tynemouth property, 90.
- Gowland, Mary (Stephenson), 268 n.
- Graffard, grant of his lordship to Tynemouth priory, 54, 55, 389, 402; charter of enfeoffment, 225.
- Graggaba, Danish earl, 412 n.
- Graham, Major, deputy governor of Tynemouth castle (1661), 372.
- Grandisson, family of, 92.
- Gray, George, of Newcastle, freeholder in Tynemouth, 172, 265 n; Henry, bailiff of Tynemouth (1445), 259 n, 425; John, officer of Tynemouth priory (1306), 216 n; grant from (1326), 422; Robert, Shields subsidy roll (1296), 288; Roger, land in Tynemouth, 256; Shields subsidy roll (1296), 288; tenant of Middle Chirton, 329, 330; East Chirton and Whitley subsidy roll (1296), 393; witness, 421-422; William, juror of Tynemouth (1295), 215 n; tenant of East Chirton (1294), 319; of Preston, 342; grant to, 422.
- Greathed, Henry, model of first lifeboat (1789), 356.
- Greaves, Joseph Edward (Elmsall), 323.
- Green, Isabel, of North Shields (1672), 373; Joseph, mayor of Tynemouth (1865 and 1876), 352; Messrs., of Newcastle, architects, 360; Nathaniel (1), of Preston, 408 n, 411; Nathaniel (2), of London, property in Murton, 411; claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; Simon, land in Tynemouth, 423; Surgeon, 268.
- Green Chesters in Willington, 316, 413 n.
- Greteville, John de, of Newcastle, witness (1332), 254.
- Grey, Charles, Earl, parliamentary reform, 350; Sir Charles, M.P. for Tynemouth (1838-1841), 351; Elizabeth Mary (Linskill), 272; Elizabeth (Crawford), 333; John (1), lieutenant of volunteers (1667), 200 n; John (2), of Hartley, 334; Margaret, marriage (1753) 365; Mary (Dockwray), 270; Ralph, of Backworth (1649), lands in Preston, 345; in Monkseaton, 408; Ralph William (1), of Backworth, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; Ralph William (2), of Backworth, sale of lands (1821), 27, 348, 408; Ralph William (3), of Chipchase, M.P. for Tynemouth (1847), 351; Richard, first master of Trinity House (1538), 274; Sir Thomas, of Wark, author of *Scalachronica*, 126.
- Greystoke, John de, grants wayleave to Tynemouth priory (1296-1297), 83 n; Ralph fitz William, lord of, agreement with abbot of St. Alban's over Coniscliffe (1315), 85; founds chantry in Tynemouth priory (1315), 147.
- Grey Friars, London, church of, Prior Bolton buried at, 106.
- Grieve, Richard, steward of Tynemouth (1760), 215 n.
- Grif, Peter, of Whitsand, owner of vessel (1332), 254 n.
- Grimm, drawing by (*circa* 1780), 143.
- Gros, John, of Berwick, grant to Tynemouth priory (1335), 115.
- Gryndon, Thomas de, witness (1391), 422.
- Gub, Robert, witness (1351-1376), 257 n, 258 n, 422-423; Stephen, witness (1351), 423; William, of Tynemouth, grants to (1320), 422; (1344), 423.
- Gubiun, Hugh, prior of Tynemouth (*circa* 1200), 122, Ralph, *see* Tynemouth, priors of.
- 'Guedesho,' granted to Tynemouth priory, 62 n.
- Guillims, Captain, captain of Tynemouth castle (1664), 198.
- Gumer, officer of Robert de Mowbray, 46.
- Guntrem, Walter, Monkseaton tallage roll (1294), 403, William, Monkseaton custumal (1296), 404.
- Gut, William, inquest on, 219.

II.

- Haddock, Zephaniah, buys Sparrow hall (1706), 282.
- Hadrian, erection of wall, 280.
- Hadston, barony of, 334-336.
- Hagen, Sarah (Spence), 350.
- Haggarty, Rev. M. J., Roman Catholic priest (1903), 377.
- Haggatt, Bartholomew, commissioner on tenures at Tynemouth (1608), 297.
- Haggerston, Thomas, captain of volunteers (1667), 200 n.
- Haigh, John, hostman, buys Whitley park (1792), 399; Rev. William, vicar of Wooler, family of, monumental inscription, 130.
- Hakford, Robert, witness (1386, etc.), 424.
- Halldene, reduces Northumberland (875), 40.
- Halidon Hill, battle of (1333), 92.
- Haliwaresfolch (*i.e.*, St. Cuthbert's patrimony), 64.
- Hall, of Whitley, pedigree, 399; family of, property in Monkseaton, 406; Lady Appolonia, royalist agent (1656), 196; Edward (1), 327; Edward (2), of Whitley, monumental inscription, 130; buys land in Whitley, 399; claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; Elizabeth (Stephenson), 268 n; James, of Tynemouth, charity (1880), 402; John (1), tenant of Tynemouth (1596), 235; John (2), marriage (1635), 364; John (3), marriage, 347; John (4), tenant of Whitley (1757), 397; Reynold, of Otterburn, 398; Robert, tenant of Tynemouth (1590), 234; Sarah (Campbell), 400; Thomas (1), tenant of Tynemouth (1530), 262, 265; Thomas (2), sued (1652), 241, Monkseaton property (1650), 406 n, 408; Thomas (3), juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; William, of Forth house, Newcastle, 399.
- Hall-corn, account of, 229, 231-236, 331.
- Hallsey, Robert, bailiff (1597), 328.
- Halton, John de, sheriff, letter to prior of Tynemouth (1265), 77; collector of subsidy (1276), 213 n; Mabel (Killingworth), marriage (1662), 364.
- Haltwhistle, church of, granted to Tynemouth priory (1384), 49, 98, 101 n, 116.
- Halwell, Walter de, of Newcastle (1203), 219, William de, sells land (1407), 254 n.

- Hambleton, Ambrose, of Tynemouth, 268.
 Hameldon, William de, 219.
 Hamilton, William, curate of Tynemouth (1605), 176.
 Hancock, Albany, geological works, 417, 418, 419.
 Hancock museum, Newcastle-upon-Tyne, 2, 6, 9.
 Hansard, Gilbert (1), tenant of bishop of Durham (1166), 335; pedigree, 335; enfeoffed of West Chirton, 336; Gilbert (2), suit as to homage (1202), 336; Sir Gilbert (3), sells West Chirton (1256), 76 n, 336; John, tenant of West Chirton (*circa* 1240), 335 n; sued (1225), 336.
 Hansell, Robert, buys Murton house (1833), 411.
 Hanswell, John, marriage (1611), 172.
 Harbottle, family of, lands in Tynemouth, 258 and n; John, sells freehold (1519), 263 n; Sir Ralph, freeholder in Tynemouth, 263; Sir Wigiot, freeholder in Tynemouth, 262; William, of Newcastle, marriage, 270.
 Harden, Henry de, seneschal of Tynemouth (1319-1320), 215 n; clerk to prior, 220; witness, 248 n, 421, 422.
 Hardewey, William, Middle Chirton tallage roll (1294), 330.
 Hardiada, Harold, king of Norway, enters the Tyne (1066), 43.
 Hardy, B., marriage (1803), 400.
 Hardyng, Sampson, grant to Tynemouth priory (1391), 116; witness (1421), 424; William, witness (1421), 424, 425.
 Harehope, granted to Tynemouth priory, 48.
 Harker, Thomas, of North Shields (1607), 296.
 Harley, Edward, Lord, account of salt pans at Shields (1725), 300 n.
 Harris, Benjamin, grant of land in North Shields to (1600), 298 n; Frederick Leverton, M.P. for Tynemouth (1900-1906), 351.
 Harrison, Thomas, of Liverpool, 349.
 Harthurn, church of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 49, 68 n; confirmed to St. Alban's (1174), 64; claimed by bishop of Durham (1252), 73 n; restored to St. Alban's (*circa* 1252), 74; papal provision to, 75; accounts for, 76 n.
 Hartburn, Robert, vicar of (1174), 64.
 Hartford, West, in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 68 n; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115; township fined at Tynemouth assizes (1293), 219; leased to Thomas Lawson (1536), 110; included in Tynemouth Union, 351.
 Hartlepool, captured by the Scots (1644), 186, 189; petition of garrison of (1648), 193; cable-building at, 382; fishing at, 385.
 Hartley, geological features, 2, 7, 8-9, 11-12; coal-mining at, 22-25, 31-32; accident at the Hester pit, 32; colliery engines used at, 24; lands in, held by Tynemouth priory, 49; priory lands in, granted in fee farm, 239; family of Crawford of, 333-334; ownership of tithes, 369, 371; tithe of fish, 370; fishing at, 388.
 Hartley Pans. *See* Seaton Sluice.
 Haslam, Lawrence, of North Shields, imprisonment (1661), 372.
 Haukewell, Robert de, witness (1321) 394 n.
 Haustede, John de, custodian of Tynemouth castle (1318), 87, 156.
 Hauxley, in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 68 n; charges on rent, 101, 105; township fined at Tynemouth assizes (1293), 219; payment of hall-coin at, 231; recognition of copyhold tenure at, 239; fishing at, 388.
 Haverfield, F., note on Roman armour by, 278-280.
 Hawthorn, Peter de, Shields subsidy roll (1296), 288.
 Hay, Nicholas del, Tynemouth subsidy roll (1296), 252, 255; tenant of Preston (1296), 344; witness, 423 n.
 Hay Hole (Northumberland Dock), 33, 341, 354.
 Hebburn Point, 353.
 Head-pennies, meaning of, 224, 339 and n.
 Heatherington, Edward, 27.
 Hebborne, John, vicar of Tynemouth (1492), 362; complaint against (1505), 367.
 Hedley, John (1), of Newcastle, 333; buys Murton farm (1774), 412; claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; John (2), mayor of Tynemouth (1866, 1882-1883), 352; William, of Newcastle, 408 n.
 Hedley wood, 281, 328.
 Hedwin-streams, 292.
 Helme, Robert, officer of the earl of Northumberland (1605), 237, 328; freehold in Tynemouth (1608), 263; account of tenure in North Shields, 293; deposition (1596), 233; Henry, of North Shields (1607), 296.
 Hendele. *See* Hlyndeley.
 Henderson, William, curate of Earsdon, 372.
 Henley, Walter de, manuscript of, 119.
 Henry, prior of Tynemouth (twelfth century), 122.
 Henry, St., of Coquet Island, 56; buried in Tynemouth priory (1127), 146.
 Henry I., list of charters to Tynemouth priory, 54-55; grant of Graffard's lands, 48, 54, 389; confirmation of tithes, 49 n; grant of free warren, 209; accords free election of priors of Tynemouth, 57-58, 81.
 Henry II., charters to Tynemouth priory, 61-62, 209, 212 n, 335.
 Henry III., demands on Tynemouth, 75; charter, 213.
 Henry VI., grant to Prior Langton (1446), 289-290.
 Henry VIII., grant of Tynemouth priory to Sir Thomas Hilton (1538), 156; charter to Trinity House (1536), 274-275.
 Henry, earl of Northumberland. *See* Northumberland.
 Henzell, of Whitley and Newcastle, pedigree, 401; John, sells property in Whitley (1824), 400; Peregrine, of Whitley, monumental inscription (1824), 362; claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415.
 Heppescotes, William de, seneschal of Tynemouth (1351), 215 n, 425; witness, 257 n, 423; grants from, 421-422; Agnes, wife of William de, 258, 425; grants to (1381), 422, 424; grants from, 422, 424.
 Heppscot, deed relating to property in, 422.
 Herebald, abbot of Tynemouth (745), 39.
 Hereford, bishop of, exactions from Tynemouth, 75, 76; Richard de, juror of Tynemouth (1293), 218; William de, witness (1339), 410 n.
 Hering, William, witness (1332), 254.
 Heron, Alexander, witness (1426), 424; Gilbert, agreement (1299) 339 n; Jordan (1), tenant of bishop of Durham (1166), 335; marries heiress of Hadston barony, 336; Jordan (2), 336; Mary, widow of William, 339 n; Ralph, 336; William (1), grants West Chirton to Tynemouth priory (1256), 48, 76, 336, 339 n; William (2), king's justice (1290), 216.
 Herries, Rev. Robert, Baptist minister (1880-1892), 377.
 Herrington, Walter de, Monkseaton tallage roll (1294), 403; cottager, 404.
 Hert, John, Monkseaton tallage roll (1294 and 1296), 403; Matilda, Monkseaton tallage roll (1294 and 1296), 403.
 Herterpol, Galfred de, officer of Tynemouth priory (1306), 216 n.

- Hertford, John Bensted, prior of, 123; William Dixwell, prior of, 106, 123; Algernon, earl of, seventh duke of Somerset, governor of Tynemouth castle (1715), 204; Edward, earl of, makes Tynemouth a naval base (1544), 157; John de, *see* St. Alban's, abbots of.
- Hertlaw, Alan de, juror of Tynemouth (1295) 215 n, 218, 249 n; witness, 421-422; Philip de, witness (1320), 422; Robert de, property in Tynemouth, 255, 256.
- Hertness church, sacked by the Danes (800), 40; tithes of demesne of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 50, 62 n, 63 n; service of carting tithes from, 224, 390.
- Hertness-pennies, 224, 390.
- Hesilden, Walter de, holds land in East Chirton (1377), 320.
- Hesilrige, Sir Arthur, governor of Newcastle and Tynemouth (1647), 191-192, 397; tried as regicide, 197; William de (Heslerig), seneschal of Tynemouth (1291), 215 n, 217; witness, 421.
- Heslop, John, vicar of Tynemouth (1623), 363; marriage, 171.
- Heton, Sir Alan de, of Lowick, property in Tynemouth (1388), 262 n; Sir Henry de, 262 n; Margaret (Middleton), 262 n.
- Heward, Joseph Elder, bequest (1872), 366.
- Hewson, Shallett, owns land in Murton, 411.
- Hexham, franchise of, 68, 208; letter from canon of, 76; destruction of priory by Scots (1296), 83.
- Heyworth, William. *See* St. Alban's, abbots of.
- Hickeringill, Isabell (Bonner), marriage (1702), 365.
- Hicks, Elizabeth (Hall), 399; William, of Whitehaven, 398.
- Hidewyn, Thomas de, witness (1324), 248 n; (1321), 394 n.
- Hild, St., her monastery at South Shields, 38-39.
- Hills, John, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; William, surrenders Monkseaton south-west farm (1711), 408.
- Hilton, Agnes (Bullein), 160; Anne (Cardonnel), 323; Sir Thomas, of Hilton, hostility to Tynemouth priory, 115; leases Tynemouth priory and demesnes to (1539), 156, 230, 261, 340, 370; resigns stewardship of Tynemouth manor (1546), 158; appointed captain of Tynemouth castle (1549), 159, 204; re-appointed to stewardship (1549), 159, 215 n; letter to, 127; death of (1559), 159; Thomas (2), of Hilton, commissioner (1596), 232; William, of Biddick, 160.
- Hindmer, of Monkseaton and Newcastle, pedigree, 407; Jonathan, acquires Monkseaton property, (1704), 407.
- Hinguar, Danish leader (875), 41 n.
- Hirlawe, Gilbert de, flock master of Newminster abbey, 78 n.
- Hoby, Ralph, plunderer of Tynemouth property, 90 n.
- Hobson, William, vicar of Tynemouth (1533), 363.
- Hodgson, Anne, monumental inscription (1689), 362; Edward, of North Shields, one of the 'twenty-four,' 368; monumental inscription (1690), 362; Richard (1), of Cowpen, 334; Richard (2), M.P. for Tynemouth (1861-1865), 351.
- Hodshon, William, of Whitley, 234.
- Holderness, John (Ramsay), earl of, 298.
- Holdsworth, Richard, vicar of Newcastle (1595), 327 n.
- Holme, Bridget (Morton), 274 n.
- Holy Island, Bothwell captured at, 162; petition of garrison of (1648), 193; fishing at, 378, 383, 385, 386, 388.
- Holy-stone (Shire Moor), 413 n.
- Holywell, lands in, held by Tynemouth priory, 49; Edward I. stops at, 317; road from, to Stickley, 318; tithes of, 369, 371; collieries at, 29, 30, 31.
- Hopper, Jane (Fenwick), 349.
- Horlyne, Roger, sentenced at Tynemouth (1293), 219.
- Horner, Alice (Spearman), 346.
- Hornsee, Robert, of North Shields (1407), 254 n.
- Horsley, near Felton, property in, 396.
- Horsley, Agnes, widow of John, 424; Alice (Almonde), 424; John (1), of Shields, land in Tynemouth, 259; grants to (1376), 423-424; pedigree, 425; John (2), son of John de, 256; quit-claim, 424; John (3), of Richmond, goldsmith, 259, 424-425; John (4), son of Thomas, quit-claim, 425; Thomas (1), owner of manuscript from Tynemouth library, 119; Thomas (2), of Benwell, 250, 424-425.
- Horton, castle held by William de Valence, 75 n; Edward I. at, 80, 317; chapel confirmed to St. Alban's monastery (1174), 63 n; not subject to pension, 64; agreement respecting *synodalia* and churchyard of, 66 n; included in Tynemouth Union, 351; Osbern, chaplain of, 362.
- Horton, John de (1), grant to Tynemouth priory, 115; officer of priory (1306), 216 n; John (2), son of John de, tenant of Tynemouth, 256, 423; grant to (1320), 421; grant of right of way (1331), 259 n; William de, prior of Wymondham and of Tynemouth (*circa* 1265), 123.
- Hostmen's Company, Newcastle, privileges of, 300-302, 304, 308, 312.
- Howard, of Carlisle, family of, 254 n; colonel, captures royalists at Morpeth (1655), 195; Frances (Villiers), 202; Frederick, fifth earl of Carlisle, sells lands in Tynemouth (1796), 266; Lord, freehold in Tynemouth (1649); 265; Thomas, marriage (1681), 365; William, Lord, freehold in Tynemouth (1608), 262.
- Howarth, John de, vicar of Tynemouth (1325), 126, 362; grant of land to (1321), 394.
- Howdon-on-Tyne, 1; Howdon pit (1804), 25; wagon-way to, 29; staithes at, 30; landing place at, 298 n; Howdon burn, 315; Howdon pans, 298 n.
- Howe, Rev. G. F., Roman Catholic priest (1882), 377.
- Howick, John de, vicar of Tynemouth (1311), 126, 362.
- Howlet, John, one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 308.
- Howse, Richard, geological works, 417, 418, 420.
- Hubba, Danish leader (875), 41 n.
- Hucheson, William, tenant of Tynemouth (1530), 262, 265.
- Huddleston, Rev. Curwen, 282; Wilfrid, of Hutton John, 282 n; Rev. Wilfrid, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415.
- Hudson, of Newbiggin in Newburn and of Whitley, pedigree, 398; Enoch, of Brunton, 282; Henry (1), 397; works coal at Whitley and Cullercoats, 20, 281; Henry (2), buys land in Whitley (1690), 398; at Monkseaton (1690), 407; Henry (3), tenant of Whitley, 397; builds Whitley hall, 398; sells land in Whitley (1778), 399; trustee for North Shields poorhouse, 311; claim on Shire Moor, 415; Mary (Dove), 282; Richard, of Tynemouth (1675), 128 n.
- Hull, merchants of, 254.
- Humble, Thomas, fined (1610), 240.
- Hume, James, vicar of Tynemouth (1637), 363; Joseph, 401.
- Humford mill on the Blyth, 317.
- Humframvill. *See* Umfraville.

Hundemanby, John de, grant from (thirteenth century), 421; Nigasia de, 421.
 Hungus mac Ferlon, king of the Picts, 413.
 Hunsdon, Robert Carey, Lord (1588), 164, 167.
 Hunter, John, one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; Nicholas, charge against (1603), 367.
 Huntingdon, Henry, earl of, instructed to defend Tynemouth castle (1588), 168; lord lieutenant, 232.
 Huntridge, Leonard, 406.
 Hurry, Amelia (Fenwick), 349; Samuel, of Great Yarmouth and Howdon, 399.
 Hurst, T. G., geological work, 417.
 Hutchinson, Anne (Clark), 273; Edward, 348; John, tenant of Murton (1707 and 1757), 411; Ruth (Hudson), 398.
 Hutton, Michael, of Newcastle, cooper (1596), 235; W., geological work, 420.
 Hyndeley, William de, tenant of Tynemouth (1264), 249 n, 421; grant to, 423 n.
 Hyndmarsh, Anthony, juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241.

I.

Iceland fisheries, 378.
 Igham Mote, county Kent, Selby of, 176 n.
 Ineary, Rev. Robert, Baptist minister (1798-1814), 377.
 Inchiquin, William, third earl of, 202.
 Ingetlingum (Gilling), scene of St. Oswin's death, 42 n.
 In-lade, service called, 222 n.
 Innocent III., Pope. *See* Popes.
 Inshire, application of the term, 1, 240.
 Ireland, Rev. Mr. (1783), 312 n; John of, rebel (1316), 86-87.
 Ipswich, settlers from, at North Shields, 310.
 Irvin, Richard, mayor of Tynemouth (1897-1898), 352.
 Isabella, Queen, at Tynemouth (1312), 84.

J.

Jack, Rev. Archibald, minister of St. Andrew's chapel (1834-1867), 374.
 Jackson, Collingwood, 349; Edward, of Gateshead, 267; Sarah (Fenwick), 348; William, witness (1400), 424.
 James IV. of Scotland, 106.
 Jarrow monastery, identified with 'Donemuth,' 39; sack of (794), 40; re-settled by Bishop Walcher (1074), 44; monks removed from, to Durham (1085), 45; tithe fish of, 369.
 Jersey, Edward Villiers, earl of, 202.
 Jesmond, grant of lands in, to Tynemouth, 120.
 Jobling and partners, lessees of Hartley collieries, 31.
 Jobling, Emily (Micalfe), 268; George, mayor of Tynemouth (1864), 352.
 Johanna, princess of Wales, 100.
 John, King, charter to Tynemouth priory, 69 and n; charter to Newcastle, 287.
 John, St., of Beverley, 39.
 Johnson, Ann (Green), 411; George, of Monkseaton, acquires Seaton Ville farm (1706), 408; family, 408 n; Humphrey, brewer (1627), 299; Rev. James, Roman Catholic priest (1784), 376; John (1), of Bebside, high sheriff (1715), 347, 408 n; acquires Murton farm (1718), 412; John (2), of Woodhorn, and family, monumental inscription, 130; Michael, marriage (1723), 365; Robert, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262, 265; William (1), bailiff of Newcastle (1391), 422; William (2), of Monkseaton and Newcastle, buys farm in Murton (1741), 411.
 Jones, Rev. David Thomas, chaplain at Blyth, 334.

Jouyn, Robert, merchant of Normandy (1333), 254.
 Junius Dubitatus, owner of Roman shield found in the Tyne, 279.
 Justice, James, of Justice hall, 400.

K.

Keith, Lord, prisoner at Tynemouth, 163.
 Kelleseye, Robert de, grant to Tynemouth priory (1337), 115.
 Kellet, John, marriage (1672), 365.
 Kellio, Benjamin, marriage (1731), 365; Ralph, marriage (1675), 365.
 Kelly, Magnus Morton, 323.
 Kenneslawe, William de, grant to Tynemouth priory (1307), 115, 257.
 Kenton, coal mines in, 327.
 Ker, Sir Andrew, of Cessford, prisoner at Tynemouth, 163; Mr., of North Shields (1764), 359 n.
 Kerrich, John (1), of Harleston, 271; John (2), of Geldestone hall, 271.
 Kettlewell, Thomas, founds charity school at North Shields (1819), 312, 336, 366.
 Kidd, Mary (Cardonnel-Lawson), 323.
 Kilham, Rev. Alexander, Primitive Methodist minister (1797), 375.
 Killerby, James, one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368.
 Killingworth, moor, 316, 412; geological features, *see* Clousden Hill.
 Killingworth, Luke, heirs own salt pans at North Shields (1707), 310; Ralph, marriage (1662), 364.
 King, Allan, deputy at Tynemouth (1584), 165; William, geological work, 6, 417.
 Kirkby, J. W., geological works, 2, 3, 417, 418.
 Kirkham, Walter de. *See* Durham, bishops of.
 Kitchin, Phillis (Reed), 321.
 Klein, Edward, 268.
 Knight, Colonel, under General Monk (1660), 197.
 Knightley, John, vicar of Tynemouth (1578), 363.
 Knox, Rev. Walter, Presbyterian minister (1803-1817), 374.

L.

Lacy, Joseph, 349; Richard, of Newcastle, monumental inscription, 130; Robert de, sheriff of Northumberland (*circa* 1105), 54 n; Samuel (1), of Great Yarmouth, and family, monumental inscription, 130; property at Preston, 347; at Monkseaton, 406; Samuel (2), of Kirkoswald, sells Preston farm (1805), 348; Monkseaton property (1801), 407; claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415.
 Lade-bund, meaning of, 224.
 Laing, family of, owners of dock at North Shields, 310 n.
 Lamb, Joseph, lessee of collieries (1799-1838), 27, 29, 30; Mary (Ashburnham), marriage (1663), 365.
 Lambert, Anne (Crawford), 334; Major-General, at Newcastle (1659), 196; Robert, takes sanctuary at Tynemouth (1523), 212; and Byas, Messrs., 32.
 Lancaster, John of Gaunt, duke of, supports cause of Tynemouth priory, 98; subscribes towards repair of Tynemouth castle (1390), 99, 150, 156; Henry, constable of Tynemouth (1445), 259 n, 425; Thomas, earl of, 84.
 Langley, Prior de la Mare visits Edward III. at, 93, 95 n.
 Lanesborough, John V. D. Butler, earl of, 273.
 Lanfranc, archbishop of Canterbury, 46.
 Langdale, Sir Marmaduke, defeats Scots (1644), 185; secures Tynemouth castle for the Royalists (1648), 191; plans for securing Newcastle and Tynemouth (1652), 194.

- Langthong, Adam, murdered, 219.
 Langton, John. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
 Larkin, Isabel, Quaker meetings in the house of, 371.
 Lawrence, Peter, marriage (1675), 365; Ralph, in charge of Tynemouth castle, 160.
 Laws, Cuthbert Umfreville, steward of Tynemouth (1870), 215 n.
 Lawson, Sir George (1), takes surrender of Tynemouth priory (1539), 111; George (2), of Gloster Hill, sells Murton farm (1702), 412; Hilton, of Chirton, will (1748), 322; marriage, 324, 325; tenant of Murton (1757), 411; Jane (Dockwray), 269; John (1), of Barton, 322 n; John (2), of Chirton, 322 n, 415; Robert (1), of Ulgham, acquires Murton farm (1679), 411; Robert (2), of Cramlington, buys Chirton, 322; sells land for Quakers' burial ground, 372; Thomas, of Cramlington, lease of West Hartford from Tynemouth priory, 110; Rev. Wilfrid, vicar of Warkworth, 322 n; Winifred, 322 n; bequest (1790), 366.
 Laycock, Joseph, lessee of Seghill colliery, 32.
 Leadbitter, Edward, steward of Tynemouth (1882), 215 n.
 Lebour, Professor G. A., geological works, 4, 10, 420.
 Lee, Arthur, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; Edward, of Monkwearmouth, 172; Dr. Peter, candidate for Tynemouth priorate, 107; Sir Richard, fortification of Tynemouth castle (1545), 157; report on Tynemouth fortifications, 161; inspection of Tynemouth church, 127.
 Leeke, Sir Francis, captain of Tynemouth castle (1546), 127, 158, 204; steward of Tynemouth manor, 158, 215 n.
 Leker, Nicholas, inquest on, 219.
 Leland's *Collectanea* cited, 35, 106 n, 119, 154 n.
 Lemington ironworks, 27.
 Len, Stephen de, workman, 76.
 Leowric, Tynemouth fisherman, captured by earl of Chester, 60.
 Leshury, John de Barneburgh, vicar of, 362.
 Leslie. *See* Leven, earl of.
 Leven, Alexander Leslie, earl of, occupies Newcastle (1640), 181; campaign of 1644, 185; besieges Newcastle, 186; Tynemouth surrenders to, 187; holds earl of Northumberland's demesnes at Tynemouth, 193.
 Leving, Captain, rebel (1662), 198.
 Libert, John de, of Saxton, grant to Tynemouth priory (1345), 115.
 Liddell, John (1), of Dockwray Square, and family, monumental inscription, 130; heir of, property in Shire Moor, 416; John (2), of Benwell, 349.
 Lighthouses at Tynemouth and North Shields, 201, 205-207, 274-278.
 Ligulph, sheriff of Northumberland, writs addressed to (circa 1106-1116), 55.
 Lilburn, in Tynemouthshire, 208 and n; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 54, 55 (13), 67 n, 69 n; restored to the priory after forfeiture (1176), 62 n; chapel of, confirmed to St. Alban's (1174), 64; agreement respecting *synodalia*, 66 n. *See also* Morel, Archil.
 Lilburn, Captain (1655), 195; Lieut.-Colonel Henry, deputy captain of Tynemouth castle (1648), 192.
 Lindisfarne, sack of (793), 40.
 Lindley, J., geological work, 420.
 Lindsay, William Schaw, M.P. for Tynemouth (1854-1859), 351.
 Lingones, fourth cohort of the, 36-37.
 Linskill of Tynemouth lodge, pedigree, 272; William (1), inherits property in Tynemouth, 269, 274; in Monkseaton, 407; William (2), mayor of Tynemouth (1849-1850, and 1855), 352; sells Monkseaton property (1875), 407.
 Linton, George, quaker (1661), 372; Robert, quaker (1661), 372.
 Litel, Matilda, messuage in Tynemouth (1336), 256.
 Loadman, Robert, fishery at North Shields (1729-1730), 298 n; marriage (1711), 365.
 Lomax, John, nonconformist preacher, 373; monumental inscription (1693), 130.
 Long, Henry, Preston tallage roll (1294), 342; subsidy roll (1296), 343.
 Longchamp, William de, witness to charter, 68 n.
 Longhorsley, Charles Ward, vicar of, 364.
 Long Houghton, survey of (1567), 244 n; family of Clark of, 273.
 Lothian, William (Ker), earl of, at Tynemouth (1646), 189.
 Love, Elizabeth (Dockwray), 269; Joseph, of Durham, buys Murton house (1872), 411; Captain Thomas, deputy-governor of Tynemouth (1662), 198, 203; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368.
 Low Lights (North Shields), early building at, 286; medieval pier at, 285; salmon fishery, 298, 324; staiths, 308, 309; coal and lime shipped at, 27, 313, 400; factories, 271, 310, 313; proposed dock, 354; lifeboat station at, 356. *See also* Clifford's fort, Lighthouses, and Pow-burn.
 Lowe, Jeremiah, juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241, 305 n; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368.
 Lowes, John, and family, monumental inscription, 130.
 Lucy, family of, arms in chapel in Tynemouth priory, 104, 145; Richard de, witness to charters, 62 n.
 Ludeburn, John de, monk of Tynemouth, 392 n.
 Ludgate, Ann, widow, of North Shields, 296.
 Lyberd. *See* Libert.
 Lynn, merchants of, 254.
 Lyon, James, 349.

M.

- Macdonell, Colonel, 202.
 Mackay, Hon. Alexander, governor of Tynemouth castle (1771), 204.
 Mackenzie, Rev. Colin A., Presbyterian minister (1854-1864), 374.
 Macrel. *See* Makarey.
 Madeson, Henry, heirs hold land in Tynemouth, 262, 263.
 Makarey, family of, pedigree, 100; John, of Whethamstede, *see* Tynemouth, priors of, Margaret (Bostock), 100; Thomas, of Whethamstede, 100.
 Malcolm III., king of Scotland, submits to William the Conqueror (1072), 43; buried at Tynemouth (1093), 51-52.
 Malcolm IV., king of Scotland, surrenders Northumberland to Henry II. (1157), 61.
 Malkeyn, Roger, son of William, grant from (1340), 423.
 Manley, George, 268.
 Mansell, Captain John, 272.
 Maperteshall, Adam de. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
 Mare, Thomas de la. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
 Marden, coal mine at (1315), 17, 254, 280; water-mill at, 106, 241, 261, 263, 280-281, 328; demesne land at, 251, 262, 281; well at, 311; limestone quarries, *see* Whitley; burn, course of, 247, 280 n, 342, 389. *See also* Cullercoats.

- Mareys, Peter, of Berwick, fined at Tynemouth (1293), 219.
- Margaret, wife of Edward I., at Tynemouth (1304), 84, 253.
- Margaret of Anjou, lands at Tynemouth (1462), 104.
- Margaret, daughter of Henry VII., received by prior of Tynemouth (1503), 106.
- Market at Bewick, 75; at Tynemouth, 75, 79, 84, 252-253; market cross at Tynemouth, 217; at North Shields, 301-303, 311.
- Marley, Sir John, governor of Newcastle, 182, 195, 198; Robert, son of Sir John, 195; lieutenant of volunteers (1667), 200 n.
- Marmion, Manser, witness to charter (1138), 59 n; Robert, witness to charter, 62 n.
- Marshall, Elizabeth Fairlam (Clark), 273; Rowland, tenant of East Chirton (1606), 321; William, witness to charters, 68 n, 69 n.
- Marston Moor, battle of, 186.
- Mary, St., Tynemouth church dedicated to, 41, 57; figure on counterseal of Prior Germanus, 121.
- Mary, Queen of Scots. *See* Stuart.
- Maryns, John. *See* St. Alban's, abbots of.
- Mason, service of carting from, 224.
- Mason, William, son of William, grant from (1376), 423.
- Matilda, queen of Henry I., grants Bewick and Lilburn to Tynemouth priory, 48-49, 54 and n.
- Matlyne, John, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240.
- Matthew, Tobias. *See* Durham, bishops of.
- Matthewson, Roger, tenant of fishery (1328), 340 n.
- Maud, Empress, supported by David of Scotland (1136), 58.
- Maude, Jacob, lessee of Percy Main colliery (1799), 22; of Backworth colliery (1812), 27.
- Maudut, Roger, coroner of Tynemouth (before 1293), 219.
- Maximinus, C. Julius, dedicatory inscription by, found at Tynemouth, 37.
- Maymond, Robert, witness (1363), 258 n, 422.
- Maynard, Mary (Dockwray), 270.
- Mayson, John Walker, mayor of Tynemouth (1854), 352.
- Mazon, Simon, land in Tynemouth (1336), 255, 256; Walter, land in Tynemouth, 256; William, son of Roger, land in Tynemouth (1336), 256.
- Mease, Solomon, mayor of Tynemouth (1852 and 1860), 352.
- Melton, Sir John, grant of salt pans at North Shields (1631), 310; land in Tynemouth (1631-1637), 264; Lady, sued (1649), 241.
- Merchant Venturers of Bristol, Company of, owners of fee-farm rent in Tynemouth, 371.
- Merdeffen-pennies, meaning of, 224.
- Meredith, Thomas, governor of Tynemouth castle (1708), 204.
- Merley, freeman of Monkseaton (1377), 405; John de, witness (1392), 424.
- Merryman, William, vicar of Tynemouth (1466), 362.
- Mersfen. *See* Mason.
- Merston, Philip de, exemption from merchet, 250 n; Tynemouth subsidy roll (1296), 252; witness, 421, 422; land in Tynemouth, 423.
- Meryngton, William, grant to Tynemouth priory (1380), 116.
- Messor, Robert, West Chirton tallage roll (1294), 337.
- Metcalf. *See* Mitcalfe.
- Michellson, Thomas, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262, 265.
- Middlesex, Lionel, earl of, lord treasurer (1622), 178.
- Middleton-in-Teesdale, tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 50, 62 n, 68 n.
- Middleton, Anne (Delaval), 171; Gilbert de, rebel (1318), 86, 254; executed, 87; John de (1), seneschal of Tynemouth (1264), 215 n, 402; John (2), witness (1426), 425, 426; Sir John (3), witness (1426), 424, 425; Robert de, chaplain (1319), 248 n; Thomas de (1), plunders Tynemouth property (*circa* 1325), 90; Thomas (2), of Silksworth, 262 n, 263 n; William de (1), justice itinerant (1280), 211 n; William de (2), marauder (1321), 88.
- Milbanke, of Halnaby and Thorpe Perrow, descent, 326; Bryan, 327; Christobel, 327; Edmund (1), tenant of Tynemouth (1597), 231, 234, 235, 326; will, 327; Edmund (2), 327; Eleanor, 327; Grace, 327; Joan, 327; John, 327; Lancelot, 327; Mark (1), tenant of East Chirton (1606), 321; high sheriff and mayor of Newcastle, 326; inheritance, 327; buys Middle Chirton, 333; acquires part of Tynemouth tithes (1676), 371; Sir Mark (2), of Halnaby, first baronet, creation (1661), 326; bequest (1678), 365, 368, 371; Nicholas, 327; Sir Ralph (1), fifth baronet, petition for wagonway (1757), 266 n; Sir Ralph (2) (Noel), sixth baronet, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; sale of Balkwell estate (1805), 328; sells tithes in Tynemouth parish (1818), 371; Richard (1), 327; Richard (2), 327; Robert, 327; William, of North Shields, death (1603), 260; transfer of land to (1600), 298; will, 327.
- Milbourne, of Chirton, pedigree, 324; family of, own salt pans at Shields, 306, 310; George (1), of Chirton, works coal in Chirton and Monkseaton, 19, 325; sued (1649), 241; property at Low Lights, 272; fishery at North Shields (1637), 298 n; mortgage of property in Chirton (1641), 332; land in Preston (1649), 345; bequest, 365; land in Monkseaton (1650), 406 n; George (2), of Chirton, bequest (1671), 365; Jane (Mitford), 324; Ralph, of Chirton, death (1689), 325; monument in Christ church, 362; William, of Newcastle, fishery at North Shields (1637), 298 n; Winifred (1), rebuilds Chirton house (1693), 325; monument in Christ church, 362; tenant of Murton (1707), 411; Winifred (2) (Roddam), heir to Chirton, 325; marriage (1698), 365.
- Milburn, George, of Chirton, herd, 324 n; Lucy (Delaval), 171; Thomas de, conservator of Tyne (1293), 220.
- Miller, John, of Preston, 'bond' (1295), 223.
- Mills, suit to, 222, 228 n; mill silver, 339 n; Tynemouth windmill, 219, 247-248, 261, 263. *See also* Billy Mill, Flatworth, Marden.
- Mills, of Monkseaton, pedigree, 406; Elizabeth (1), (Otway), 346; Elizabeth (2) (Boulby), 406; Jane, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; John, juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241; high constable (1690), 283 n; Robert, yeoman (1603), 328; Thomas (1), juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; Thomas (2), soldier, 177.
- Milnton, near North Shields, 247-248; in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 55 (13), 67 n; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115, 117, 248; valuation of tithes, 369; deed relating to, 422.
- Milneton, Hugh de, pays homage to Abbot Norton (1264), 113, 248; William de, pays homage to Abbot Berkhamstead (1291), 248.

- Mitcalfe, of Tynemouth and North Shields, pedigree, 267-268; Ann Bird (Ames), sells Murton house (1833), 411; Anne Emma (Fenwick), 349; Henry (1), of Murton house, buys Monkseaton property (1792), 408; Murton house (1765), 411; claim on Shire Moor (1790) 415; Henry (2), M.P. for Tynemouth (1841-1847), 351; John, porter at Tynemouth castle, 164; receiver of hall-corn rent, 235; Susanna (Fenwick), 349; Thomas, graving dock at North Shields (1820), 314; William, of Tynemouth house, presents patent to Christ Church (1825), 360.
- Mitford castle, surrender of (1321), 88 and *n*; David I. at (1138), 59.
- Mitford, Anthony, constable of Tynemouth castle, 216 *n*, 234; tenant (1539), 262; Christopher, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262; Henry, 262 *n*; Jane (Milbourne and Fenwick), 324; second marriage (1652), 364; Robert, 327; W. de (1), canon of Hexham, 78 *n*; William de (2), seneschal of Tynemouth (1421), 215 *n*, 424.
- Mollineux, Roger, ensign of volunteers (1667), 200 *n*.
- Monk, General, crosses the Tweed (1660), 196; advance to London, 197.
- Monkchester. *See* Newcastle-upon-Tyne.
- Monk's stone, near Tynemouth, description of, 131-133; possibly a grith cross, 211; early reference to, 423 *n*.
- Monkseaton TOWNSHIP, 402-407; in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 54, 55, 62 *n*, 67 *n*, 389, 402; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115, 116; manor of, 221; serf of, buried at Dunfermline, 51; plundering of property at, 90; Black Death in, 227, 405; freeholds in, 263, 422; suit to Flatworth mill, 339 *n*; number and size of holdings in, 228; rent of farmholds in, 229; recognition of copyhold tenure at, 239; tenants of, presented at Tynemouth manor court, 241; tithes of, 369, 371; coal mines, 17, 18, 19, 20, 26-27, 321, 397-398; census returns, 402 *n*; urban district, 401; isolated portions of township, 416.
- Montacute, family of, 92.
- Montague, William de, custodian of Barnard-castle (1315-1316), 87 *n*.
- Montgomery, Hugh, Lord, in command of Tynemouth Castle (1640), 182; Major, commander of Scottish horse (1644), 185.
- Montivilliers, merchants of, 254.
- Montrose, James, Marquis of, joins royalists (1644), 186.
- Moor, John, of Morpeth High House, 333; property at Monkseaton, 408.
- Moor Houses, 315; gallows at, 317; demesne at, 409.
- Moray, Earl of, besieges Tynemouth (1389), 99.
- More, Rev. George, Presbyterian minister (1781-1785), 375.
- Morel, Archil, lord of Bewick and Lilburn (*circa* 1105), 54 and *n*.
- Morgan, Robert, grant of land in North Shields to (1600), 298 *n*.
- Morkar, cousin of earl Waltheof, 44.
- Morpeth, capture and recapture of castle (1644), 186; royalist conspirators at (1655), 195; General Monk at (1660), 197; deed relating to, 422.
- Morton, Galfrid de, witness (1321-1326), 395 *n*, 423; Murton subsidy roll (1296), 409; John de (1), Murton subsidy roll (1296), 409; witness (1319 and 1324), 248 *n*; John de (2), witness (1360), 257 *n*, (1363), 258 *n*, 422; John (3), of Tynemouth, freehold in Tynemouth (1649), 265, 274; John (4), of Willington, freehold in Tynemouth (1640), 265, 274; Matilda de, Preston tallage roll (1294), 342; subsidy roll (1296), 343; Nicholas de, juror of Tynemouth (1293), 218; holding in Murton (1264 and 1291), 409, 410 *n*; subsidy roll (1296), 409; witness, 421; Ralph de, Murton subsidy roll (1296), 409; Roger de (1), juror of Tynemouth (1293) 218; Murton subsidy roll (1296), 409; witness, 421; Roger (2), 173; freehold in Tynemouth (1608), 263, 274 *n*.
- Morton-Tynemouth, granted to Tynemouth priory, 50, 68 *n*; cornage rent at, 118 *n*.
- Morvill, Hugh de, witness to charters, 59 *n*, 60 *n*.
- Mould, John, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240.
- Mowbray, Robert de. *See* Northumberland, earls of.
- Moyer, Colonel, prisoner at Tynemouth, 198.
- Moyner, Hugh le, seneschal of Tynemouth (1256), 215 *n*.
- Muggleswick plot, 198 *n*.
- Murray, Rev. George M., 273.
- Murton TOWNSHIP, 409-412; in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 67 *n*; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115, 116, 410; tithes of, 124, 369, 371; number and size of holdings in, 228; rent of farmholds in, 229; recognition of copyhold tenure at, 239; presentment made at Tynemouth manor court, 241; freeholds in, 263, 411; outcrop of coal at, 8; colliery, 19; census returns, 409 *n*; isolated portions of township, 416.
- Murton, Mary (Durham), marriage (1694), 365. *See also* Morton.
- Mussel scalp near North Shields, 298 *n*.
- Mykeley, Roger de, inquest on, 219.

N.

- Nades, Roger, freeholder of Preston (1296), 343.
- Naters, Joseph, of Sandiford, 401; Mrs., of Tynemouth, presents patent to Christ church (1818), 360.
- Naylor, Katherine (Dockwray), 269.
- Neile, Richard. *See* Durham, bishops of.
- Nele, John, witness (1399), 424.
- Nelle, Roger, order of arrest (1293), 220.
- Nennius, cited, 35.
- Netherwitton farm case, 243.
- Neuborn, Christiana, widow of William de, messuage in Tynemouth (1336), 256.
- Neusum-lade, meaning of 224, 250 *n*.
- Neville of Raby, pedigree, 335; Ralph de, warden of the Marches (1346), 95, 156.
- Neville's Cross, battle of, 94.
- Newbiggen in Newburn parish, family of Hud. n of, 398.
- Newbiggin in Woodhorn, lands in, held by Tynemouth, priory, 49, 117; chapel confirmed to St. Alban's abbey (1174), 63 *n*; pension from, payable to St. Alban's, 64; parliamentary representatives of, 261 *n*; fishing at, 287 *n*, 385, 386, 388.
- Newburn, tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 49 *n*, 50, 62 *n*, 68 *n*; carting to, 396; battle of, 181; Dockwray, vicar of, 269.
- Newcastle-upon-Tyne, William I. at (1070, 1072), 43; arrival of monks at (1074), 44; siege of, by William II. (1095), 52-53; monks of Tynemouth freed from forced labour at, 55 (14); charters of David I. dated at, 59 *n*; charters of Earl Henry fitz David dated at, 60 *n*; burgesses of, do homage to Abbot Norton (1264), 113; attack on North Shields by men of (1268), 79, 286; legal proceedings with Tynemouth regarding North Shields (1291), 70, 286-288; Edward I. at (1292), 80; attempted capture of Gaveston at (1312), 84; defended against

- Bruce (1315), 86; Edward III, at (1335), 92; castle of, 395; claims ownership of Fenham, 97; St. Bartholomew's priory at, 260; property of Tynemouth priory in, 49, 62 n, 100, 115, 116; Scots besiege Hotspur in (1388), 98; armed feud with prior of Tynemouth (1510), 290-291; settlement of disputes by arbitration (1512), 291-292; acquires monopoly of trade in the Tyne (1530), 292-293; establishment of Trinity House at (1536), 274-275; petition for custody of Tynemouth castle (1574), 164-165; defenceless state of, 168, 170; claims right of searching vessels, 299 n; offer to repair Tynemouth castle (1625), 178-179; action taken against North Shields brewers, 299; ordnance removed from Tynemouth to (1638), 181; occupation by the Scots (1640), 181-182; re-fortified by the marquises of Newcastle (1641), 182; Parliament prohibits trade with (1643), 183-184; siege of (1644), 186-187; Charles I. at (1646), 189-190; evacuation by the Scottish troops (1647), 190-191; occupation by the Parliamentarians (1647), 191; monopoly exercised by the Hostmen's Company and Shipwrights, 300-301; Gardner's attack on privileges of (1653), 301-303; George Fox at (1653), 371; royalist plots for seizure of (1654), 194-195; declares for Monk (1660), 197; money voted for repair of Tynemouth castle (1665), 198; sectarianism at, 198-199; attempts at suppressing trade at Shields, 304-305, 308; house property in, 327, 396, 398; fish market at, 379, 382; Newcastle and North Shields railway, 355; Shields separated from port of (1848), 353; Richard Holdsworth, vicar of (1595), 327 n; tithes of, 363. *See also* Tyne.
- Newcastle, William Cavendish, marquis of, governor of Newcastle (1642), 182; campaign of 1644, 186.
- Newcomen's atmospheric engine, 21.
- Newenham, Henry de, manor of Whitley conveyed to (1310), 393.
- Newminster, abbey destroyed by David of Scotland (1138), 58; debt from Tynemouth to, 76.
- Newport, Montjoy, earl of, master of ordnance (1638), 181.
- Newsham, fossil plants and fish at, 9, 418, 419, 420; geological features, 11, 30; coal workings at, 33; tithes, 369, 371; service of carting from, 224.
- Newton by the Sea, fishing at, 385, 386, 388.
- New York, hamlet of, 412.
- Nicholas IV., Pope. *See* Popes.
- Nicholson, John, sued (1651), 241.
- Nixon, Frances (Crawford), 334.
- Noble, John, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415.
- Noel, Sir Ralph. *See* Milbanke.
- Nogge, John, quit-claims to and by (1333), 423; Symon, of Newcastle, quit-claim (1333), 423.
- Nolan, Rev. John, Roman Catholic priest (1878-1884), 376-377.
- Norfolk, Hugh Bigod, earl of, witness to charter (1158), 62 n; Thomas, fourth duke of, trial before, 160; report on cost of Tynemouth garrison (1560), 161.
- Norham, surrenders to David of Scotland (1138), 59; Parliament at (1291), 80, 392.
- Norris, Rev. Alfred, Congregationalist minister (1869-1885), 377.
- North, John, of London, 273; Roger, 'Life of Lord Keeper Guildford' cited, 308.
- Northampton, Peace of, 91.
- Northbury, William de, justice for Tynemouthshire, (1278), 211 n.
- North Seaton. *See* Seaton Woodhorn.
- North Shields, TOWNSHIP, 284-315; in Tynemouthshire, 298 and n; boundaries, 284; early growth of, 75, 285-286; shipment of coal at (1268), 18; attacked by citizens of Newcastle (1268), 79, 286; suit between Tynemouth and Newcastle regarding (1290), 79, 286-288; subsidy roll of 1296, 288; further growth and development, 289; inquisition into state of (1447), 290; privileges at, conferred on Tynemouth priory (1462), 104, 290; dispute between Newcastle and Tynemouth regarding port of, 290, 292; lighthouses built at (1539), 274-275; decline of, 293-294; attempted establishment of copyhold tenure at, 294-297; office of bailiff of, 298 n; right of search exercised at, 298 n; sale of crown lands in (1635), 240, 297-299; suppression of brewing trade at, 299, 301, 305; forts erected at (1641), 182-184, 276; capture of forts (1644), 186-187; attempt to obtain market for (1653), 301-303; threatened destruction of quays at (1661), 304-305; description of, in the seventeenth century, 305-307; local government in, 307-308; entries on Tynemouth court-rolls relating to, 240-241; Clifford's fort built at (1672), 200, 276; decay of salt trade, 309-310; increase of shipping at, 308-309, 310, 312; roperies at, 268; colliery at, 266 n; development of Lord Howard's lands, 266; development of Dockway estate, 271; Stephenson and Linskill properties, 269, 274; Walker property in, 271; development of Yeoman and Silthorpe estate, 326; urban extension and public buildings, 311-314; establishment of municipal government (1828), 314-315; creation of Tynemouth borough (1838), 247, 350-353; town hall, 352; Newcastle railway, 355; creation of port of (1848), 353; ferries, 241, 354-355; public institutions, 356; churches, 360; tithes, 369, 371; nonconformity in, 199, 371-378; coble-building at, 382; herring fishing at, 380-381; white fisheries at, 382-385; number of fishing boats at, 388; census returns, 315 n. *See also* Tynemouth Borough and Low Lights.
- North Sunderland (Seahouses), fish trade at, 380, 381, 385, 388.
- Northumberland, John Dudley, duke of, receives site of Tynemouth priory and lands (1551), 159. *See also* Percy.
- Northumberland, earls of, Tostig (1055-1066), visits Tynemouth, 41; his banishment and death, 43; connection with Tynemouth, 154; Gospatric (1067-1072), his deposition, 44; Waltheof (1072-1075), grants church of Tynemouth to the monks of Jarrow, 44; Walcher (1075-1080), *see* Durham, bishops of; Alberic (1080-1082), confirms grant of Tynemouth to the monks of Jarrow, 45; Robert de Mowbray (1082-1095), extent of his powers as earl, 209; sanctions removal of the monks of Jarrow to Durham, 45; probable founder of Tynemouth castle, 155; transfers Tynemouth priory from Durham to St. Alban's, 46-47, 81; his endowments, 47-50, 55, 248; buries Malcolm III. at Tynemouth, 51; his revolt and death, 52-54, 155; history of, in Tynemouth library, 120 n; Henry (fitz David) (1139-1152), recognised by treaty (1139), 59; confers privileges on monks of Tynemouth, 59, 209; charters of, 59 n, 60 n; Hugh Pudsey, *see* Durham, bishops of. *See also* Percy.
- Northumberland Dock, 33.
- Northumbrian Annals, 40.
- Norton, county York, cornage of, 118 n; county Durham, John de Barneburgh, vicar of, 362.

- Norton, John, of Clitheroe, officer at Tynemouth castle (1545), 158; Mark, witness (1603), 327, 328; Roger de, *see* St. Alban's, abbots of.
 Norwich, bishop of, arbitrator between Tynemouth priory and Newcastle (1512), 291.

O.

- Odard, sheriff of Northumberland, writs of Henry I. addressed to (*circa* 1120), 55; at York (1121), 57.
 Offa, king of Mercia, founder of St. Alban's monastery, 122 n.
 Ogle, Henry Cavendish, earl of, governor of Newcastle (1667), 200; colonel of volunteer regiment, 200 n; Frances (Howard), marriage (1681), 365; Henry, of Liverpool, marriage (1754), 365; Jane (Ogle), marriage (1754), 365; John (1), of Ogle, 171; John (2), of Newsham and Behside, marriage, 171; Katherine, tenant of Tynemouth (1649), 265; Mark, owns salt pans at North Shields (1707), 310; Oswald, of Shilvington, deposition (1596), 234; Phillis (Cramlington, Delaval, Ogle), 171; Sir Robert, witness (1426), 424, 425.
 Oilli, d'. *See* Oyley d'.
 Oliver, Johanna, of Rypton, 396; John, of Rypton, sells manor of Whitley (1403), 396; Thomas, architect, 377.
 Orange, William (1), prince of, sends man-of-war to the Tyne (1646), 190; William (2), prince of (William III.), lands at Torbay (1688), 203.
 Orde, Lancelot, lieutenant of volunteers (1667), 200 n; Nathaniel, deputy captain of Tynemouth, 177.
 Orkney, George Hamilton, first earl of, 202.
 Orm, villager of Tynemouth, 248.
 Ormford, John le, seneschal of Tynemouth (1392), 215 n, 422.
 Osbern, vicar of Tynemouth (twelfth century), 362.
 Oseworth, John de, plunders Tynemouth property (*circa* 1325), 90.
 Osred, king of Northumbria, buried at Tynemouth (792), 40.
 Oswald, St., reputed founder of Tynemouth monastery, 39; cross in church of, at Durham, 132, 133.
 Oswin, St., discovery of his body at Tynemouth (1065), 41-43, 135; his body granted to monks of Jarrow (1072), 44-45; patron saint of Tynemouth, 57; extinction of fire attributed to, 61; last miracle of (1384), 98; shrine made for (1110), 56; work of Baldwin the goldsmith on shrine, 66; description of shrine, 73; shrine removed to Lady-chapel (*circa* 1346), 95-96; donation to shrine by Johanna, princess of Wales, 100; destruction of shrine (1539), 111; search for remains of (1774), 146; figure on Tynemouth priory seal, 121; psalter of, 118; *Vita Oswini*, 118, 119; cited, 41-44, 56-57, 60-61, 67, 119, 212, 222 n, 248, 318.
 Oswy, king of Bernicia, murderer of St. Oswin, 41.
 Ottir, Danish earl, 412 n.
 Otterburn, battle of (1388), 98.
 Otway, of Preston, pedigree, 346; Anne (Dove), 271; Gilbert, tenant of Tynemouth (1649), 265; John, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262, 265; Robert (1), assault on (1305), 394; Robert (2), of Preston, freehold in Tynemouth (1649), 265; freehold in Preston (1649), 345; daughter's marriage, 271; Thomas (1), tenant of Tynemouth (1595), 232, 234; juror (1562), 240; freehold (1608), 263; Thomas (2), juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368.

- Overing, John, brewer of North Shields (1672), 305.
 Ovingham rectory, purchase of, 121; John Pikeworth, vicar of, 121.
 Ovington, tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 49 n, 50, 62 n, 121.
 Owen, Prof., geological paper, 418.
 Owton, tithes of, held by Tynemouth priory, 50, 370.
 Oxenhall, near Darlington, 'hell-pots' at, 120 n.
 Oxford, payment made by Tynemouth to St. Alban's hall, 118.
 Oxley, Joseph, invents winding-engine (1763), 24.
 Outshire, application of the term, 1, 240.
 Oyley, Richard d', witness, 58 n.

P.

- Page, John, candidate for vicarage of Tynemouth (1659), 367.
 Palmer, Rev. E. R., M.A., minister of St. Andrew's chapel (1888-1892), 374.
 Pape, Gilbert, land in Tynemouth, 256.
 Parco, Richard de, prior of Tynemouth (1244), 123.
 Parker, Rev. Edward, of Durham, 406; William, marriage, 396; inherits Whitley (1403), 396; grants Whitley to Tynemouth priory (1404), 117.
 Patadoille, William, tenant of Preston (1296), 343.
 Pate, Margaret, tenant of Tynemouth (1530), 262; Thomas, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262, 265.
 Pattison, Hannah (Whitehead), marriage (1684), 365; John, of North Shields (1607), 296; Robert, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; Stephen, of North Shields (1607), 296.
 Paul. *See* St. Alban's, abbots of.
 Payne, John, receiver of hall-corn rent, 233.
 Pearreth, Barbara (Dixon and Hindmer), 407.
 Pearson, Anthony, of North Shields, monumental inscription, 130; will, 274, 366, 407; buys property at Monkseaton (1763), 407; Christopher, legacy to (1603), 327; Jane (Linskill), 272; Nicholas, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; Robert, legacy to (1603), 327; Rev. Samuel, Congregationalist minister, 377.
 Pedie, Lieutenant John, 270.
 Pedigrees: Butler of Newcastle and Chirton, 324; Campbell of Whitley and Earsdon, 400; Cardonnel-Lawson of Chirton and Cramlington, 323; Clark of Blyth, North Shields and Belford, 273; Crawford of Seaton Delaval, Hartley and Balkwell, 333-334; Delaval of Tynemouth, 171-172; Dockwray of Tynemouth, 260-270; Fenwick of Preston and North Shields, 348-349; Hall of Whitley, 309; Hansard of Chirton, 335; Henzell of Newcastle and Whitley, 401; Hindmer of Newcastle and Monkseaton, 407; Horsley of North Shields, 425; Hudson of Newbiggen and Whitley, 401; Linskill of Tynemouth lodge, 272; Milbourne of Chirton, 324; Mills of Monkseaton, 406; Mitcalfe of Tynemouth house, 267-268; Neville of Raby, 335; Otway of Preston, 346; Reed of Chirton, 321; Spearman of Preston and Eachwick, 346-347; Spence of South Preston, 350; Toll of North Shields, 269; Villiers of Tynemouth castle, 202; Whethamstede, 100; Whitley of Whitley, 305.
 Pelham. *See* Vanlore.
 Percy, family of, arms in chapel in Tynemouth priory, 104, 144; Alan de (1121), 57; Algernon, tenth earl of Northumberland (1662-1668); grant of Tynemouth castle to, revoked, 170, 100; acquires town of North Shields (1635), 240, 290; acquires

- Tynemouth lordship (1637), 240, 264, 328; acquires Flatworth demesnes (1637), 19, 341; acquires lordship of Tynemouthshire (1640), 240; grants land at Tynemouth for church (1654), 358; purchases mills (1659), 263 n; captain of Tynemouth castle (1661), 197, 204; Algernon, fourth duke of Northumberland (1792-1865), buys land at Monkseaton (1853), 407; builds Sailors' Home at Tynemouth (1856), 356; builds church at Cullercoats (1864), 401; Prudhoe Convalescent Home, Whitley, in memory of (1869), 401; Algernon, sixth duke of Northumberland (1810-1899), buys Chirton property (1869), 324; Monkseaton South-west farm (1885), 408; Preston farm (1894), 348; Arnold de (1121), 54, 57; Elizabeth, duchess of Somerset, 20; builds Cullercoats pier (1677), 281; petition, 282; G. de, witness to charter, 60 n; Henry de (1) (1272-1315), marches against Edward II. at Newcastle (1312), 84; Sir Henry (2) (1319-1353), friend of Prior de la Mare, 94; Henry (3) (1342-1407), first earl of Northumberland, subscribes towards repair of Tynemouth castle (1390), 99, 150, 156; Henry (4) (1444-1489), fourth earl of Northumberland, grant to Prior Dixwell, 105; Sir Henry (5), afterwards eighth earl of Northumberland (1532-1585), steward and captain of Tynemouth (1561), 160, 204, 215 n; complaint of scanty remuneration, 161-162; warned of Mary Stuart's return to Scotland, 162; letters to Sir William Cecil, 127, 298 n; in charge of Bothwell, 162; acquires right of working coal at Tynemouth (1569), 18; opposed to the Rising of the North, 163; receives site of Tynemouth monastery for life (1570), 163; concerned in Ridolphi conspiracy, 163; imprisoned, fined, liberated, 164; succeeds as eighth earl, 165; lessee of Tynemouth (1580), 230, 235; maintains light-house at Tynemouth, 205; imprisoned again for conspiracy (1583), 165; third imprisonment and death (1585), 166; Henry (6), ninth earl of Northumberland (1564-1632), reversion of captaincy of Tynemouth castle and stewardship of Tynemouthshire, 163, 204, 215 n; volunteers against Spanish Armada, 168; restored to captaincy of Tynemouth castle (1591), 168; lessee of Tynemouthshire (1596), 230, 235; letters to, 293, 294, 295; petition to, from tenants of Shields, 295; purchases half of Tynemouth rectory (1602), 363 n, 371; works coal at Tynemouth, 18; concerned in Gunpowder Plot, 175-176; grant to, of Tynemouth copyhold lands (1624), 263; grant of lands in North Shields (1624), 298; grant of coal in Murton and Shire Moor (1624), 19; death (1632), 179; Henry (7), seventh duke of Northumberland (born 1846), paper on Northumbrian farms, 243; Hugh, first duke of Northumberland (died 1786), fishery at North Shields (1759), 298 n; Hugh, second duke of Northumberland (1742-1817), his enclosure of Shire Moor (1788), 414-415; leases Backworth royalty (1812), 27; Hugh, third duke of Northumberland (1785-1847), purchases Backworth (1821), 27; White House farm (1821), 348; second half of advowson of Tynemouth (1838), 371; tithes in Tynemouth parish (1818), 371; Joscelin, eleventh earl of Northumberland (1644-1670), captain of Tynemouth castle, 197, 204; death, 200; petitioned by townsmen of North Shields, 304; Lady Mary, supports Prior de la Mare, 94; Thomas, seventh earl of Northumberland (1529-1572), site of Tynemouth priory leased to (1557), 159; joins in Rising of the North, 163; attainted, 163; executed (1572), 165; Thomas, concerned in Gunpowder Plot, 175; Thomas, brother of ninth earl, 179.
- Percy chapel, Tynemouth, description of, 144-145.
Percy Main, colliery, 22, 25-26, 341.
Percy Square, Tynemouth, coast erosion at, 16, 274.
Peresson, William, witness (1445), 259 n, 425.
Perkins, Anne (Spearman), 347.
Perrin, James, of Newcastle, 268 n.
Peter, vicar of Tynemouth (1250), 125 n, 362.
Peterborough, Akarius, abbot of, 122.
Peterson, William, sued (1652), 241.
Philadelphia, hamlet of, 412.
Phillips, Francis, grant of Tynemouth mills to (1610), 263; Jane (Mitalfe), 268.
Phillipson, Joseph, 349.
Picot, Roger, writ of William II. addressed to (1095), 53; writs of Henry I. addressed to (1105-1108), 53-54 n.
Pickering, Adam de, grant to Tynemouth priory, 115; coroner of Tynemouth (before 1293), 219; witness (*circa* 1276), 421, 423 n.
Pikeworth, John, parson of Ovingham, 121.
Pilgrimage of Grace, 109.
Pindar, Richard, of North Shields, holds Quaker meetings (1681), 372.
Pipe, Rev. S., Baptist minister (1869-1874), 377.
Plescies, John de, witness (1319 and 1324), 248 n.
Pleuyn, Alan, Monkseaton tallage roll (1294), 403; freehold, 404; Roger, freehold (*circa* 1295), 404.
Plowman, Mary Anne (Mitalfe), 267.
Plummer, —, lessee of West Holywell colliery (1828), 29.
Pointel, William, West Chirton tallage roll (1294), 337; (1296), 338.
Pollard, John, of Newcastle, 349.
Ponteland, Humphrey Bell, minister of, 364 n.
Pont l'Évêque, Roger de, archbishop of York, rights granted to Tynemouth priory by, 69-70.
Poor-law, administration of, 308 and n; Tynemouth Union, 351. *See also* Charities.
Popes: Innocent III. confirms rights of Tynemouth priory (1209), 69; Nicholas IV., taxation of benefices (1292), 80, 361, 369; Adrian IV., confers immunity on churches in gift of St. Alban's, 124.
Poppelwell, Matthew, mayor of Tynemouth (1853), 352.
Pore, Thomas, of Flatworth (1597), 173.
Porter, Christiana, land in Tynemouth (before 1363), 422.
Portington, Sir Ralph, owner of *Tynemouth Chartulary*, 119.
Portland, William, first earl of, 202.
Post, Simon, of Suthloges, order of arrest (1293), 220.
Potter, Edward, mayor of Tynemouth (1858-1859), 352; Emanuel, vicar of Tynemouth (1749), 364; William, mayor of Tynemouth (1875), 352.
Potts, Robert (1), surrenders lands in Preston (1622), 346; Robert (2), of Long Benton, representatives of, own Whitley Link farm, 400; T. A., buys Monkseaton property (1885), 407.
Pow, Robert, of North Shields, mayor of Tynemouth (1857), 352; bequest (1859), 366.
Pow burn (North Shields), ancient landing place at, 78 n, 285; bridge over, 284, 306 and n, 314; salt pans at, 306, 310; land at, purchased by Reed and Milbourne, 321, 324; mill on, 248. *See also* Low Lights and St. Leonard's hospital.

- Power, Captain, deputy at Tynemouth castle (1591), 168; deposition, 171, 173.
- Powlton, cofferer to earl of Northumberland (1600), 174 n.
- Poyen, Robert, tenant of Tynemouth (1264), 249 n.
- Prat, Richard, of Tynemouth, fined (1293), 219.
- Prehistoric remains in Chirton, 316.
- Preston TOWNSHIP, 342-350; in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 55 (13), 67 n, 342; manor of, 221, 344, 393; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115-117; tanyards at, 75, 286; services of bonds at, 223, 342; services of free tenants, 226 n, 343-344; suit to Flatworth mill, 339 n; early deeds relating to, 422, 423, 424; demesne, 251, 260, 342; tithes, 369, 371; plundering of, 90; number and size of holdings, 228, 342-344; rent of freeholds in, 229, 344; recognition of copyhold tenure at, 239; freeholds in, 253, 258, 263; enclosure of (1649), 244 n, 345; collieries, 17, 18-19, 34, 321; included in Tynemouth borough, 247, 350-353; cemetery, 378; census returns, 342 n.
- Preston, John de, witness (1363), 258 n, 422; land in Tynemouth, 423.
- Price, John, lieutenant of volunteers (1667), 200 n.
- Prosperini, Bernardo, creditor of Henry III., 75.
- Prudhoe, freeholders of, 281; woods, 328.
- Prudhoe, Robert de, juror of Tynemouth (1295), 215 n.
- Pryor, Richard, tenant of Tynemouth (1649), 265.
- Pudsey, Hugh. *See* Durham, bishops of.
- Puissars, Marquis de, 202.
- Pull. *See* Pow burn.
- Pulleine, Mary Winifred (Spencer-Stanhope), 325; Thomas Babington, of Carlton, 325.
- Punder, William, Preston subsidy roll (1296), 343.
- Pygun, William, monk of Tynemouth, 70-71.
- R.
- Radcliffe, of Dilston, family of, own estates in Tynemouth, 259; Christopher, murder (1523), 212; Sir Cuthbert, chief steward of Tynemouthshire, 215 n; lands in Tynemouth (1539), 262; Edward, property in Tynemouth (1614), 263 n; Francis, property in Tynemouth (1614), 263 n; George, property in Tynemouth (1560), 263 n.
- Rad-mal, tenure by, 226.
- Rae, Rev. James, Presbyterian minister (1759-1803), 373-374.
- Ragnal, king of Northumbria, defeated (917), 412.
- Railways, 355; Blyth and Tyne, 29, 33, 34; Cramlington, 29, 30, 341 n; Backworth, 27, 28, 341 n; Whitley, 27, 313; Newcastle and North Shields, 355.
- Raine, Jonathan, steward of Tynemouth (1796), 215 n.
- Raineford, Charles, governor of Tynemouth castle (1796), 204.
- Rakedul, William, Tynemouth subsidy roll (1296), 252.
- Ramrigge, Thomas. *See* St. Alban's, abbots of.
- Ramsey, family of, 298 n; Edward, of Heathersett, grant of property in North Shields to (1624), 298, 314 n; James, sued (1652), 241; Robert, grant of property in North Shields to (1624), 298, 314 n.
- Raper, William, presents patent to Christ church (1728), 360; bequest (1730), 366.
- Ratcliffe. *See* Radcliffe.
- Raven-ness, merchants of, 254.
- Ravensworth family, 28.
- Rawdon, Marmaduke, description of Tynemouth castle (1664), 198.
- Rawe, Ralph, of Tynemouth, maltster (1596), 327; Richard, receiver of hall-corn (1596), 235.
- Rawlinge, James, of North Shields (1607), 296.
- Ray, Thomas, lessee of Tynemouth (1558), 230; William, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240.
- Raymes, Anne (Delaval), 171.
- Raynton, Thomas de, grants to Tynemouth Priory (1325 and 1328), 115, 248 n, 395 n; seneschal of Tynemouth (1325), 215 n, 249; grants to (1324), 248 n; (1325), 394; witness (1326), 423.
- Rea, Richard, millwright (1599), 329.
- Read. *See* Reed.
- Reaveley, Henrietta (Campbell), 400.
- Reay, Henry, of Newcastle, and family, monumental inscription, 130; John, Monkseaton property (1715), 408; William, juror of Tynemouth (1636), 241; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368.
- Redesdale, franchise of, 68; men of, 106.
- Redewood, near Newburn, acquired by Tynemouth priory (1386), 116.
- Redhead, Abraham, one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; William, of Newcastle, 267.
- Reding, John de, tenant of Tynemouth (1291), 249 n, 252, 256, 421; Maud de (Bacon), 256.
- Reed of Chirton, pedigree, 321; Anne (Coward), marriage (1636), 364; Rev. Christopher, vicar of Tynemouth (1830), 364; Dorothy (Mitalffe), 267; Francis, ensign of volunteers (1667), 200 n; Jane (Errington), marriage (1640), 364; John, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; Ralph (1), works mines in Tynemouthshire (1624), 19, 325; grant of salt pans at North Shields (1631), 310; acquires farms in East Chirton, 322; mortgages property, 322; death in prison (1646), 332; Ralph (2), quartermaster of volunteers (1667), 200 n; sells property in Chirton (1672), 322; petition, 332; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368.
- Reinhard, J., 334.
- Reive, Rev. William, Presbyterian minister (1852-1854), 374.
- Remigius, prior of Tynemouth (1129), 122.
- Resley, Stephen, 327.
- Reygar, John de, justice of the prior of Tynemouth's court (1278), 211 n.
- Reymund, prior of St. Alban's, banished to Tynemouth, 70.
- Rhodes, Robert de. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
- Richard I., charter (1189), 67, 208, 209, 218, 221 n, 287; confirmation of charter (1198), 68.
- Richard II., grants Haltwhistle church to Tynemouth priory, 49, 98; grant in aid of repairs to Tynemouth castle (1390), 99, 150, 156.
- Richard III., appoints Nicholas Boston prior of Tynemouth (1478), 105; grant to Boston, 106, 280.
- Richardson, David, shepherd, buried (1724), 413 n; Edmund, tenant of Tynemouth (1530), 262, 265; James, Nonconformist minister, 373; John, of the Low Lights, tanner, 271; Margaret, of West Ham, bequest (1788), 366; T. M., sketch of lime staithes at North Shields, 313 n; William, petty constable of Cullercoats (1600), 283 n; monumental inscription (1710), 362; Winifred (Milbourne), 324.
- Riddell, Gervase, sewer to Earl Henry fitz David (*circa* 1147), 60 n; Peter, copyholder (1609), 238; Thomas (1), witness to charter (1147), 60 n; Sir Thomas (2), of Gateshead, 183 n; Sir Thomas (3), of Fenham, governor of Tynemouth castle, 183, 270 n; siege and surrender (1644), 187; escape and death, 188; Sir Walter Buchanan, baronet, steward of Tynemouth (1842), 215 n; Sir William, imprisonment (1644), 188.

- Ridesdale, John de, grant to (thirteenth century), 421.
See also Dunne.
- Ridley, Anne, of Westwood, deposition concerning murder of William Delaval (1618), 172 n; Sir Matthew White, baronet (1), sells Murton farm (1774), 412; Sir Matthew White, baronet (2), lease of Cowpen colliery, 33; Richard, buys Cullercoats salt pans (1726), 284.
- Rikelot, William, Preston tallage roll (1294), 342; subsidy roll (1296), 343.
- Rishanger, chronicle in Tynemouth library, 119; cited, 83 n.
- Ritson, Nicholas, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; Urick, colliery owner, 34.
- Roads, medieval; Tynemouth to Newcastle, 219, 241, 259 and n, 311; Tynemouth to Bedlington (North Street), 316, 317; Tynemouth to Whitley, 249, 421; Tynemouth to Low Lights, 259 and n, 421.
- Robert, prior of Tynemouth (twelfth century), 122.
- Robeson, Margaret, widow, of North Shields (1607), 296.
- Robil, Thomas, witness (1344), 423.
- Robinson, Edward, land in Tynemouth (1570), 263; George, freehold in Tynemouth (1649), 265; Gerrard, 272; Gilbert, son of William, *see* Wilkinson; Isaac, Nonconformist minister (1782), 373; Isabella (Liddell), monumental inscription, 130; James (1), freehold in Tynemouth (1608), 263; James (2), one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; John (1), witness (1445), 259 n, 425; John (2), tenant of Monkseaton (1538), 405; John (3), of Whitley, owns Monkseaton farm (1711), 408; Robert, of Durham, 406; claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; William, vicar of Tynemouth (1607), 363.
- Rohson, Anne (Crawford), 334; Jane (Fenwick), 349.
- Rocheford, Thomas (Boleyn), Lord, high steward of Tynemouth priory (*circa* 1530), 108, 215 n.
- Roddam, John, of Roddam and Little Houghton, marriage, 324, 365; Mary (Collingwood), fishery at North Shields (1729), 298 n; marriage, 325; Susannah (Brownhill), marriage (1711), 365; Winifred (Lawson), fishery at North Shields (1729), 298 n; marriage, 325.
- Rodestane moor, 315-316, 413 n. *See also* Shire Moor.
- Roger, archbishop of York, witness to charter (1158), 62 n; confirms rights of St. Alban's over Tynemouth, 65 n.
- Rogers, family of, 283 n; captain, at siege of Tynemouth (1648), 192 n; Elizabeth, inherits collieries, etc., 283 n; John (1), works coal at Whitley (1676), 20, 281; at Hartley, 23; holds salt pans at Cullercoats, 283; surrenders Monkseaton property (1690), 407; John (2), leases Hartley coal mines, 23; will (1711), 283 n.
- Roland, John, trustee (fourteenth century), 396.
- Role (*query* Rothley), granted to Tynemouth priory, 68 n.
- Roman stones at Tynemouth, 35-38; armour found in the Tyne, 278-280; supposed remains at Black Chesters, 316 n.
- Rookbye, receiver of hall-corn rent, 233.
- Rookhope lead mines, 398.
- Rosella, legend of, 39 n.
- Roses, Wars of the, 104.
- Rossiter, Arabella (Villiers), 202.
- Rothbury, tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 49, 62 n, 68 n.
- Rothbury, Giles, witness (1421), 424.
- Rotherford. *See* Rutherford.
- Rothley. *See* Role.
- Roucestre, Robert de, 219.
- Rudyerd, family of, property in Chinton, 326; Richard, 326.
- Ruelendus. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
- Ruft, Thomas, witness (1376), 422.
- Rupert, Prince, intercedes for Sir William Riddell, 188.
- Rushworth, *Collections* cited, 192 n.
- Russell, Lord Francis, 164; captain of Tynemouth castle (1583), 165; report on state of castle, 166; death at Cocklaw, 167; William (1), juror of Tynemouth (1293), 218; William (2), of Dissington, 256; witness (thirteenth century), 421; Sir William (3) (1631), 264.
- Ruthall, Richard, property in Tynemouth (1570), 263 n.
- Rutherford, John, juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241; Juliet, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; Ralph, lieutenant of volunteers (1667), 200 n; Robert, tenant of Tynemouth (1649), 265; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; Thomas, tenant of Whitley (1757), 397; marriage, 401; claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415.
- Rutland, Henry, earl of, letter to Sir Henry Percy (1561), 162.
- Rutter, George, juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241; heirs of, tenants of Murton (1707), 411.
- Ryan, Rev. Denis, Roman Catholic priest (1884), 377.
- Ryhill, Robert de, witness (1319 and 1324), 88 n, 248 n, 394 n.
- Ryott, William Hall, steward of Tynemouth (1894), 215 n.
- Ryton, Richard de, inquest on (1293), 219.

S.

- Saburn, Joseph, tenant of Whitley (1757), 397; claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; Ralph, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; Richard, plaintiff (1653), 241; Robert, of Balkwell (1737), 414.
- Sadberge, wapentake of, possessions of Tynemouth priory in, 50; transferred to Bishop Pudsey (1189), 74.
- Sadler, Sir Ralph, charged with custody of Sir Henry Percy (1571), 164.
- Sainebraine, John, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262, 265.
- St. Alban, altar of, in Tynemouth priory, 147.
- St. Alban's abbey, burials at, 395; heraldry of, 122 n; register, description of, 47 n; Nicholas Boston, archdeacon of (1477), 105.
- St. Alban's, abbots of, Paul (1077-1093), receives grant of Tynemouth priory from Robert de Mowbray, 46-47; visits Tynemouth, 50-51; Richard de Albini (1097-1119), regulates payments from Tynemouth, 118; grant of Graffard's lands from Henry I., 389; Simon (1167-1188), surrenders Bywell St. Peter's and Edlingham to Durham (1174), 63; patron of art, 66; visits Tynemouth, 67, 112; John de Cella (1195-1214), banishes monks to Tynemouth, 70; adds to St. Alban's church, 138; William de Trumpington (1214-1235), banishes Prior Reymund and others to Tynemouth, 70; visits Tynemouth, 70, 112, 141; John de Hertford (1235-1260), payments from Tynemouth during abbacy, 76 n; Roger de Norton (1263-1290), letter, 77; visits Tynemouth (1264), 79, 113, 221; John de Berkhamstead (1290-1301), visits Tynemouth (1291), 80 n; secures rights of St. Alban's over

- Tynemouth (1293), 81; takes prior of Tynemouth prisoner (1294), 82; John Maryns (1302-1308), regulations for Tynemouth, 118; Hugh de Eversdon (1308-1326), agreement with lord of Greystoke over Conescliffe (1315), 85; special devotion to the Virgin, 90; threat of long stay at Tynemouth, 112; builder of Lady chapel at St. Alban's, 143; Richard de Wallingford (1326-1334), author of work in Tynemouth library, 119; Thomas de la Mare (1349-1396), election, 96; petition for aid to repair Tynemouth castle, 99; constitution (1352), 118, 396; *see also* Tynemouth, priors of; William Heyworth (1402-1420), waives right of homage at Tynemouth, 113; John de Whethamstede (1420-1440 and 1451-1464), register of second abbacy, 71 n; pedigree, 100; visitation of Tynemouth (1426), 101; deposes prior of Binham, 104; correspondence, 102, 109; William Wallingford (1476-1484), register, 104; election, 105; Thomas Ramrigge (1492-1516), compelled to consent to independence of Prior Stonywell, 107; his chapel in the abbey, 122.
- St. Amphibalus, altar of, in Tynemouth priory, 147.
- St. Andrews, bishop of, witness to charter, 59 n.
- St. Bartholomew, Benedictine nunnery of, Newcastle, 260.
- St. Leonard's hospital, Tynemouth, account of, 259-260; site of, leased to Sir Thomas Hilton, 156, 261; bridge at, 219, 259; burial place at, 260, 327; early references to, 219, 223 n, 423.
- St. Martin, Alfred de, witness to charter, 62 n.
- St. Mary's Island, fishing at, 388.
- Salmond, Rev. William, Presbyterian minister (1858-1875), 375.
- Salkeld, Catherine (Reed, Gardner), 321, 332 n; John, of Rock, 321; property at Middle Chirton (1652), 332; Sir William, sells Middle Chirton, 333.
- Salter, George, grant of salt pans (1610), 341.
- Salt pans at Warkworth (*circa* 1140), 59; free exportation of salt allowed to Tynemouth priory, 290, 293; total annual sale of salt (1536), 114; salt trade at Cullercoats, 20-21, 282-284; salt pans at North Shields, 298-299, 306; at Hartley, 22; Society of Saltmakers, 300; method of manufacture, 300 and n; decline of salt trade at Shields, 309-310.
- Sanctuary, rights of, at Tynemouth, 211-212; examples of, 219.
- Sanderson, Dorothy, monument in Tynemouth church, 129; Henry, suit (1602), 299 n; Mary (Dockwray), 269.
- Sandys, Francis, captain of volunteers (1667), 200 n; George, ensign of volunteers (1667), 200 n.
- Saunders, Anne (Fenwick), 348.
- Savage, Rev. H. S., minister of St. Andrew's chapel (1898), 374; Robert (1), of Tynemouth, witness (1324), 248 n; householder (1336), 253; witness, 395 n, 421, 423; Robert (2), mayor of York (1384, 1391, 1392), 253, 258 n; Robert (3), of North Shields, baker (1447), 254; Thomas, archbishop of York, 254; William (1), baker (1298), 252, 253; William (2), mayor of York (1369), 253; William (3), owner of lands at Tynemouth (1400), 253.
- Say, William, Lord, nominates Boston prior of Tynemouth (1478), 105.
- Sayburne. *See* Saburn.
- Scala, John Thomas, employed on Tynemouth fortifications (1545), 157.
- Scarborough, fishing at, 60, 385; Edward II. and Gaveston retreat to, 84.
- Scorht. *See* Short.
- Scot, Henry, bribed to seize prior of Tynemouth (1295), 82; John (1), of Suthloges, order of arrest (1293), 220; John (2), tenant of fishery (1328), 340 n; Nicholas, mayor of Newcastle, attacks North Shields (*circa* 1267), 79, 286; Richard (1), of Newcastle, levies prior's rents at Elswick, 92; grants land at Elswick to Tynemouth priory (1345), 115; Richard (2), of Newcastle, witness (1341), 422; Robert, resident in Tynemouth (1296), 252; Roger, tenant of Preston (1296), 344; Stephen, witness (1340-1344), 423; Walter, of Welton, pays homage to Abbot Norton (1264), 113; collector of subsidy (1274), 213 n.
- Scott, Barbara, charge against (1603), 367; Edward, receiver of hall-corn, 235; James, steward of Tynemouth (1756), 215 n; John (1), charge against (1603), 367; John (2), buys Preston farm (1805), 348; Joseph, wharfinger of North Shields (1808), 312.
- Scottish Fisheries Board, 381.
- Scriven, William, Crown grantee (1633), 19, 239, 332.
- Scrope, Henry, Lord, captain of Carlisle (1569), 163.
- Seaton Carew, county Durham, tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 62 n.
- Seaton Delaval, plundering of Tynemouth property at, 90; chapel of, confirmed to St. Alban's monastery (1174), 63 n; agreement respecting churchyard, 66 n; moor, 318; service of carting from (Neusum-lade), 250 n, 390; tithes of, 369, 370, 371; colliery, 30; family of Crawford of, 333-334.
- Seaton Sluice, formation of harbour at, 23; wagonway to, 24; export of coal from, 31; decline of, 33; fishing at, 388.
- Seaton Woodhorn, lands in, held by Tynemouth priory, 49, 115.
- Sedgwick, Professor Adam, geological works, 2, 3, 5, 12, 417.
- Segedunum. *See* Wallsend.
- Seghill, in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 54, 55 (13), 62 n, 67 n; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 49, 115, 117; tenure of, 225; lands of Tynemouth priory in, granted in fee farm, 239; tithes of, 369, 371; colliery, 29.
- Segrave, John de, captain of king's forces in Northumberland (1304), 214.
- Selby, Adam, collector of subsidy (1276), 213 n; Henry Collingwood, steward of Tynemouth (1775), 215 n; John, soldier, 177; Mary (Bell, Clark), 273; Oliver, vicar of Tynemouth (1540), 363; Roger de, vicar of Tynemouth (1344), 362; Sir Walter de, marauder (1315), 86; surrenders (1321), 88; house burned by Scots, 254, 255; Sir William, of Twisell, sheriff (1605), 176; captain of Tynemouth castle, 177.
- Selfodes, status of, 227, 250.
- Septem Signacula, a book at Tynemouth priory, 120 n.
- Services. *See* Abbot's welcome, Auth-repe, Boon-ere, Boon-harrow, Hall-corn, Head-pennies, Hertness-pennies, In-lade, Merdesfen-pennies, Neusum-lade, Yevel-pennies.
- Seton, John de, witness (1321), 395 n; (1326), 423; Ralph de, le serjaunt, juror of Tynemouth (1295), 215 n; witness, 422; Sampson de, witness (1319), 421; William de (1), juror of Tynemouth (1295), 215 n; witness, 421; William de (2), grants to Tynemouth priory (1380-1392), 116-117; house in Tynemouth, 258 n.
- Seton-Wodehorn, Robert de, witness (1321), 395 n.

- Severan, John, marriage (1712), 365.
 Severus's Wall, its eastern termination, 35-36.
 Shadforth, Henry, 349; Sarah, monumental inscription, 130.
 Shaftoe, chapel of Hartburn, confirmed to St. Alban's (1174), 64.
 Shaftoe, Robert, copyholder (1609), 238.
 Sharpe, Archdeacon (Thomas), visitation of Tynemouth (1725), 361, 368.
 Shavaldore, note on use of the term, 86 n.
 Shaw, Rev. M. S., Congregationalist minister (1887-1891), 377.
 Sheldon, Robert, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262; Thomas, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262.
 Sheles, Patrick de, order for arrest (1293), 220.
 Shephird, Emma (Fesefoul), land in Tynemouth (1336), 255; John, land in Tynemouth (before 1336), 255.
 Shetland barks, 301 n (cp. 327 n, 378 n).
 Shewell, Caroline (Spence), 350.
 Shieldfield fort, near Newcastle, 185.
 Shields. *See* North Shields.
 Shipley, Collingwood property at, 325.
 Shipley, Zephaniah, buys Whitley Lodge farm (1804), 399.
 Shipperdson, Adam, royalist (1656), 196.
 Shire, meaning of the term, 207-208. *See also* Tynemouthshire.
 SHIRE MOOR, account of, 412-416; bounder of, 413-414; rights of common on, 222, 414-415; enclosure of, 244 n, 315, 342, 409, 412, 414-416; coal mining on, 19, 20, 22, 33-34, 321.
 Shire rents, 229.
 Shoreston, fishing at, 388.
 Short, Robert, Preston tallage roll (1294), 342; customary (1296), 344.
 Shotton, Edward, mayor of Tynemouth (1867-1868 and 1877), 352; bequest (1884), 366.
 Shrewsbury, Francis, earl of, arrangements for garrisoning Tynemouth castle (1545), 157; suggests use of Spanish troops, 158.
 Sibthorpe, family of, property in Chirton, 326.
 Sigillo, Baldwin de, witness to writ, 58 n.
 Sikes, Thomas, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415.
 Silky's lane in Chirton, 317.
 Silvermouth, Adam, Preston tallage roll (1294), 342; Robert, Preston tallage roll (1294), 342, 343.
 Simon, *see* St. Alban's, abbots of; Henry, steward of Tynemouth (1725), 215 n.
 Simpson, Dr., deeds cited, 281 n; Frederick, candidate for vicarage of Tynemouth (1658), 367; J. B., geological work, 420.
 Singleton, Archdeacon, visitation of Tynemouth (1827), 368; Robert, miller (1597), 328.
 Sis, Robert, tenant of East Chirton (1294), 319; Monkseaton tallage roll (1294), 403.
 Sisterson, Dorothy (Airey), marriage (1687), 365.
 Skinner, Thomas, parliamentary draftsman (1653), 302.
 Skippon, Major-General (Philip), governor of Newcastle, etc. (1646), 190; secures Newcastle and Tynemouth (1647), 190; recalled to London, 191.
 Slade, William, incites Tynemouth troops to treason (1650), 194.
 Slaley, millstones obtained from, 226 n; tithes of, 363.
 Slauk (*ulva marina*), 72 n.
 Slikborne, John de, land in Tynemouth (1336), 256; Robert de, land in Tynemouth, 255, 256; grant from (1320), 422.
 Slingsby, Francis, of Scriven, deputy captain of Tynemouth castle, 164; Sir William (1611), lease of Hartley coal mines, 22.
 Smith, Adam, witness (1376 and 1383), 422; (1381), 424; Barbara (Wilkinson), marriage (1687), 365; Sir David, buys property in Preston (1809), 348; Edward, of Gateshead, master mariner (1650), 301; Father, organ builder, 360 n; John, tenant of Tynemouth (1596), 234, 235; Mary (1) (Fenwick), 348; Mary (2) (Mills), 406; Messrs., dock owners, land in Chirton (1825), 325; Robert, lease (1434), 425; Thomas, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262; Thomas Eustace, M.P. for Tynemouth (1868-1885), 351.
 Somerset, Algernon, seventh duke of, *see* Hertford, earl of; duchess of, *see* Percy, Elizabeth.
 Somerville, Robert de, grants wayleave to Tynemouth priory (1297), 83 n; William de, witness to charters, 60 n.
 Sorby, Dr. H. C., geological work, 8-9, 417.
 Soreys, Robert de, seneschal of Tynemouth (1333-1344), 215 n, 410 n, 423.
 Soulbye, John, of Blaydon (1599), 328.
 South Shields, Roman camp at, 35-36; St. Hild's monastery at, 38-39, 40; fort at (1644), 186; salt trade at, 300; creation of port of, 353.
 Spanish battery at Tynemouth, 52 n; erection of (1545), 158; rebuilt (1643), 184; lifeboat station at, 356.
 Spanton, Christopher (1), of Monkseaton (1740), 407; Christopher (2), claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415.
 Sparhawk, shoal at mouth of the Tyne, 292 and n.
 Sparrow, Henry, West Chirton tallage roll (1294), 337.
 Sparrow hall, Cullercoats, 282.
 Spearman, of Preston, pedigree, 346; of Old Acres, descent, 326; of Thornley, descent, 346; Edward, juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; John, of Durham, bequest to North Shields schools (1703), 312 n, 365; presents flagon to Christ church, 360; Michael, tenant of Preston (1649), 345; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; Ralph, of Eachwick, manuscripts cited, 365 n, 366 n; claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415; sells land in Preston (1808), 345; Robert (1), of Preston, freehold in Tynemouth (1608), 263, 326; charity, 365; Robert (2), freehold in Tynemouth (1649), 265, 345; Robert (3), of Durham, sells land in Tynemouth and Chirton (1724), 266 n, 326; Thomas (1), juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; Thomas (2), property in Chirton (1620), 326.
 Spence, of South Preston, pedigree, 350; Charles J., 350; cited, 303 n, 356 n; Gilbert, vicar of Tynemouth (1588), 363; John, mayor of Tynemouth (1881), 352; John Foster, mayor of Tynemouth (1861 and 1891-1893), 352, 357; Joseph, mayor of Tynemouth (1863 and 1869), 352; Robert, founds first bank at North Shields (1819), 312-313.
 Spencer, John Philip, mayor of Tynemouth (1903-1906), 352.
 Spittal, fishing at, 380, 388.
 Stamfordbridge, death of Tostig at (1066), 43.
 Stamfordham, Thomas Dockwray, vicar of, 270.
 Stanhope, Richard de, grant to Tynemouth priory (1360), 116; Walter Spencer, of Cannon hall, 325.
 Stanley, Catherine (Mitalcfe), 268; Rev. Charles, Baptist minister (1892), 377.
 Stanley burn, diversion of, 240.
 Stanton, Anne (Kellio), marriage (1675), 365.
 Steel, Cuthbert, buys Whitley Link farm (1804), 399-400.
 Stella on the Tyne, 328.

- Stephen, King, charters to Tynemouth priory, 58 and n, 209, 214, 287; vicar of Tynemouth (*circa* 1200), 362.
- Stephens, Daniel Edward, 267; Rev. Thomas, of Horsley, 278.
- Stephenson, of North Shields, family of, 268 n; George, experiments on Killingworth wagonway, 28; John, of North Shields, and family, monumental inscription (1752), 362; property in Tynemouth, 268 n; John C., 349.
- Steventon, Robert de, grants land at Earsdon to Tynemouth priory (1345), 115.
- Stewart, Edward, of North Shields, 268; James, of North Shields, buys land in Tynemouth, 272; fishery at North Shields (1730), 298 n; Jessie Monro (Linskill), 272; Rev. John, Presbyterian minister (1866-1872), 374; history of North Shields Presbyterian church, 374 n.
- Stickley in Horton, 317, 318.
- Stiford, Agnes, 255; John de, land in Tynemouth (1336), 255; witness (1351), 423.
- Stiklawe, William de, land in Tynemouth, 257.
- Stiward, William, coroner of Tynemouth (before 1293), 215 n, 216, 217, 219, 220.
- Stobbard, John, land in Tynemouth, 257.
- Stobbs, Edward, buys Monkseaton property (1855 and 1875), 407.
- Stocard, Simon, land in Backworth, 423.
- Stockton, captured by the Scots (1644), 186, 189.
- Stonywell, John. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
- Storey, James, of Low Lights, 312 n; presents bells to Christ church, 359; charity (1785), 366.
- Storo, Anne (Bugnel), marriage (1730), 365.
- Story, Margaret (Loadman), of Shields, marriage (1711), 365; Robert, one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; Sarah (Hindmer), 407.
- Stout, Abraham, tenant of Murton (1757), 411; William, of Durham, sells Murton House farm (1765), 411.
- Stowell, Rev. W. H., D.D., minister of St. Andrew's chapel (1820-1834), 374.
- Strabolgy, David de, warden of Northumberland (1322), 89.
- Straker, Joseph, and family, monumental inscription (1867), 362; —, colliery owner, 30, 32.
- Strangale, Richard, land in Tynemouth, 255.
- Strathmore family, 28.
- Strother, John, captain of volunteers (1667), 200 n; William, major and captain of volunteers (1667), 200 n.
- Stuart, Mary, return to Scotland (1561), 162; projected escape from Tutbury, 163.
- Stutevill, Robert de, witness to charter (1176), 62 n.
- Subsidy roll (1296): East Chirton, 320, 393; Middle Chirton, 331; West Chirton, 338; Monkseaton, 403; Murton, 409; North Shields, 288; Preston, 343; Tynemouth, 252; Tynemouthshire (jurors), 215 n; Whitley, 393; collection of subsidy (1276), 213 n.
- Suffolk, Thomas, earl of, interest in advowson of Tynemouth (1609), 371 n.
- Sunderland, prohibition of trade with (1643), 184; coble-building at, 382.
- Surese. *See* Soreys.
- Surtees, Robert Watson, mayor of Tynemouth (1873), 352.
- Surveys of Tynemouthshire: A. (1292)—East Chirton, 319; Middle Chirton, 329; West Chirton, 337; Flatworth, 337; Monkseaton, 402; Murton, 409; Tynemouth, 251; B. (*demesne*, 1294)—Flatworth, 337; Monkseaton, 403; Moorhuts, 409; Tynemouth, 251; C. (bondage lands, 1294)—East Chirton, 319; Middle Chirton, 330; West Chirton, 337; Monkseaton, 403; Preston, 342; D. (1377)—East Chirton, 320; Middle Chirton, 331; West Chirton, 339; Monkseaton, 405; Murton, 410; North Shields, 289; Preston, 344; Tynemouth, 261; Whitley, 395; E. (1535)—East Chirton, 320; Middle Chirton, 331; Flatworth, 340; Monkseaton, 405; Murton, 410; North Shields, 293; Preston, 344; Tynemouth, 261-262; Whitley, 396; F. (1608)—East Chirton, 320; North Shields, 297; Preston, 344-345; Tynemouth, 262-263; Whitley, 397.
- Sutherax, J. de, sacristan of Tynemouth, 410 n.
- Sutton, John, tenant of Tynemouth (1649), 265; Robert, lieutenant of volunteers (1667), 200 n.
- Suynwynd, Robert, Shields subsidy roll (1296), 288; William, Shields subsidy roll (1296), 288.
- Swan, Rev. Francis, 273; William, bailiff of Tynemouth (1421), 424.
- Swetopp, Warin de, under-sheriff (1315-1316), 87 n.
- Swinburne, Adam de, sheriff, 86; Allan, ensign of volunteers (1667), 200 n; Anthony, sued (1623), 241; Sir John, captain of volunteers (1667), 200 n; Sir William de, witness (1321), 394 n.
- Symeon, Johanna, property at Whitley, 396; Percival, property at Whitley (1382), 396.

T.

- Taca, Robert, officer of Robert de Mowbray, 46.
- Tailour, John, tenant of Tynemouth (1534), 262; Philip, tenant of Tynemouth (1392), 117.
- Tallage roll (1294): East Chirton, 319; Middle Chirton, 330; West Chirton, 337; Monkseaton, 403; Preston, 342.
- Tankerville, earl of, oyster beds at Fenham, 383.
- Tasker, Rev. David, Presbyterian minister, 374.
- Tate, Robert Morrison, mayor of Tynemouth (1884), 352; geological work, 420.
- Tatham and Mitchell, Messrs., representatives of Mills of Monkseaton, 406.
- Tattersall, Mary, sells land at Murton (1825), 411.
- Taunton, Simon de, prior of Tynemouth (1311), 123.
- Tavenor, Nathaniel (1), schoolmaster at Tynemouth (*circa* 1736), 368; Nathaniel (2), of North Shields, buys Monkseaton property (1762), 408; claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415.
- Taylor, Charles, of London, property in Shire Moor, 416; Henry, Crown grantee (1632), 240, 264; Hugh, of Earsdon, colliery owner (1823-1830), 28, 29, 30; Hugh, of Chipchase, M.P. for Tynemouth (1852 and 1859), 351; Thomas, of Whitehill point, 349; colliery owner (1810), 26, 27, 420.
- Teall, Dr. J. J. H., geological works, 12, 13-14, 420.
- Tempest, Sir Nicholas, 241, 328; lessee of Flatworth property (1649), 341; Richard, will (1671), 341.
- Temple, Mary Clementina, monumental inscription, 129.
- Tenures. *See* Castle-ward, Conveys, Cornage, Drengage, Rad-mal.
- Tewing, Adam de, *see* Tynemouth, priors of; John de, land in Tynemouth (1333-1351), 255, 259, 423; Richard de, *see* Tynemouth, priors of; Robert de, grants lands to Tynemouth priory (1345), 115; witness (1333-1363), 257 n, 422, 423; land in Tynemouth, 423; in Monkseaton, 405.
- Thirlwall castle garrisoned by the Scots (1646), 183.

- Thirny, Ralph, tenant of Preston (1296), 343.
 Thomas, archbishop of York (1093), 50.
 Thomson, Rev. Charles, Presbyterian minister (1823-1840), 374; history of North Shields Presbyterian church, 374 n; Dr., geological works, 5, 417; John, tenant in Monkseaton, 406; Thomas, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240.
 Thompson, Elizabeth (Clark), 273; Francis, 350; Isaac, survey of Tynemouthshire (1757), 397, 402 n; 405 n, 409, 413; Thomas, of Newcastle, 407; Thomas Churchill, 400.
 Thoresby, John de, rector of Elwick, grant to Tynemouth priory (1340), 115; Ralph, visit to Tynemouth castle (1681), 203.
 Thornburgh, Thomas, purchases manor of Whitley (1403), 396; grants same to Tynemouth priory (1404), 117.
 Thornton, John de (1), witness (1360), 257 n; (1363), 258 n, 422; quit-claim (1376), 424; John (2), cornet of volunteer troop (1667), 200 n.
 Thorp Basset (Yorkshire), property of St. Alban's abbey at, 52 n; surrendered in exchange for Conescliffe (1315), 85; cornage rent at, 118 n.
 Throckelawe, Alice de, land in Tynemouth, 255; John de, cellarer of Tynemouth priory (1292), 81; taken prisoner to St. Albans, 82; author of history of Edward II., 119; Robert de, conservator of the Tyne (1293), 220.
 Thurlow, John, secretary of state (1655), 195.
 Thurstan, archbishop of York (1121), 57.
 Tillmouth, John, vicar of, 126, 127 n.
 Timor, battle of (917), 412 and n.
 Tithes, grants of, to Tynemouth priory, 49, 50; royal confirmations of, 49 n, 55; 62 n, 68 n; episcopal confirmations of, 64, 65; conventual leases of, 77, 110; Tynemouth rectorial tithes, valuations of, 369; ownership of, 368-370; Tynemouth vicarial tithes, 125; corn tithes, mode of collection, 319, 370 n; tithing of fish, 369 n.
 Titlington, William de, trustee, 396.
 Tod, Roger, holding in Murton (1264 and 1291), 409.
 Toll, pedigree, 269; Edward of North Shields, 305 n; buys land in Tynemouth (1667), 269; one of the 'twenty-four' (1674), 368; Elizabeth (Dockwray), 270; Susanna (Otway, Snowden), 346.
 Tolls: men of Tynemouth exempted from, 58, 287; tolls and customs in port of Tyne granted to Tynemouth priory, 289-290, 292; anchorage and groundage, 298 n; toll on fish, 287, 296; furnace, 287, 292; lightage, 205-207, 275, 277, 278 and n; murage, exemption from, 213; *tolnetum cervisiae*, 251.
 Tong, Captain John, 321.
 Topley, W., geological work, 420.
 Topping, Major John, governor of Tynemouth castle, 194-195; declares for Monk (1660), 197; monumental inscription to family of, 130.
 Tostig. *See* Northumberland, earls of.
 Tounstede, Symon, work in Tynemouth conventual library, 119.
 Tourney, Edward, lieutenant of volunteers (1667), 200 n.
 Towlehurst, Jeremiah, governor of Carlisle (1656), 196 n.
 Treulove, Julian, Tynemouth subsidy roll (1296), 252.
 Trevelyan, Sir George Otto, of Wallington, buys Chirton property (1865), 323; M.P. for Tynemouth (1865-1868), 351; Sir W. C., geological work, 417.
 Trewitt, Henry, buys land in Whitley (1809), 400.
 Trinity House, Deptford Strand, controversy with Sir Edward Villiers, 206; purchases Tynemouth lighthouse, 207; Trinity House, Newcastle, charter of (1536), 274-275; lighthouses belonging to, 275-278; contributes to maintenance of Tynemouth light, 205, 206; monopoly exercised by, 302, 309.
 Triplett, Dr. Thomas, rector of Whitburn (1668), 270.
 Trokelowe. *See* Throcklawe.
 Trollop, Robert, builder of Christ church (1663), 359.
 Trumpington, William de. *See* St. Alban's, abbots of.
 Tully, Charles, mayor of Tynemouth (1878-1879), 352.
 Tunnacester, identification of, 38.
 Tunnocellum, identification of, 38.
 Tunstal, county Durham, tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 62 n.
 Turchil, monk of Jarrow (1082-1085), 46.
 Turgot, prior of Durham (1093), 50.
 Turnbull, John, Nonconformist minister (1693-1723), 373.
 Turner, Archdeacon, visitation of Tynemouth, 373 n; Cuthbert, 269; Robert, Tynemouth subsidy roll (1296), 252; land in Tynemouth, 421; Roger, land in Tynemouth, 257; grant to Tynemouth priory (1345), 115; William, master of Pembroke college, Cambridge (1568), cited, 72 n.
 Tweed salmon conservancy, 387.
 Tweedmouth, fish-curing at, 381; coble-building at, 382.
 Twyne, Brian, antiquary, 119.
 Tychington, William, witness (1383), 422.
 Tyne, mouth of the, 34; Roman defences of the, 35-37; Roman armour found in, 278-280; entered by the Danes (875), 40; entered by Harold Hardrada (1066), 43; 'in nord de Tyne et in suth de Tyne' (1095), 52, cp. 55 (13); fisheries in, confirmed by Henry I. to Tynemouth priory, 54, 55 (13); fisheries in, granted by Earl Henry to Tynemouth priory, 59; names of fisheries in, 60 n; breach of regulations for fisheries, 220; suit regarding liberties in the port of (1290), 286-288; enquiry into encroachments in (1401), 289; weirs in, 289; grant of customs and tolls in, to the prior of Tynemouth (1446), 289-290; freedom of import in, allowed to Tynemouth priory (1462), 290; wharfs and weirs in, 290-291; award concerning rights of Tynemouth and Newcastle in (1512), 291-292; lighthouses on the, 205-207, 274-275; right of searching vessels in, 298 n; conservancy of, granted to Newcastle Corporation (1613), 300; Gardner's proposal for new conservancy board (1653), 301-303; River Commission, 353-354; division of port of (1848), 353; salmon conservancy, 387; ferries, 314, 354-355; docks, 341, 354.
 Tynedale, franchise of, 68; men of, retained by prior of Tynemouth, 106.
 Tynemouth borough, 247-389; creation of parliamentary borough, 350-351; list of members of parliament for, 351; poor law union, 351; creation of municipal borough, 352; list of mayors of, 352; port of North Shields, 353; River Tyne Commission, 353-354; ferry boat service, 354-355; railways, 355; education, 355-356; public institutions, 356-357; non-established churches in, 371-378. *See also* Chirton, Cullercoats, North Shields, Preston and Tynemouth.
 Tynemouth castle, historical account of, 154-204; architectural account of, 150-154; not a Roman fortress, 35-38; a Danish stronghold, 40; Mowbray's castle, its capture (1095), 52-53; traces of its earthworks, 155; fortified by Prior Adam de

- Tewing (1296), 83, 156; siege of, by Gilbert de Middleton (1317), 86-87, 254; custody entrusted to John de Hauastede (1318), 87; garrisoned by Prior Richard de Tewing (1322-1327), 89, 91; acknowledged as a private castle (1346), 93; constables appointed by priors of Tynemouth, 215-216; reparations by Prior de la Mare (1346-1349), 95; decay of the fortifications (1380-1384), 97-98; besieged by the earl of Moray (1389), 98-99; the gate-house rebuilt (1390), 99-100; description of the gate-house, 150-152; re-fortified (1545), 157-158; inventory of goods in (1559), 160n; Scottish prisoners at, 162-163; Rising of the North, 163; Ridolphi conspiracy, 163-164; Newcastle petitions for custody of (1574), 164-165; inventory of goods in (1585), 167; the Spanish Armada, 167-168; report of Joshua Delaval on (1596), 169-170; fray at, 173-174; Gunpowder Plot, 175-176; repairs at (1607), 177; ruined state of, 178; plans for rebuilding, 178-179; report on strategical position of, 180; the castle dismantled (1638), 180-181; second Bishop's War and Scottish occupation (1640), 181-182; re-fortified by marquis of Newcastle (1641), 182-184; campaign of 1644 and capture by Leslie, 183-188; Charles I. visits, 180, 189; handed over to the parliamentary forces (1647), 191; second Civil War, revolt and capture (1648), 191-193; royalist plot and rising of 1655, 194-196; the Restoration, 196-197; Muggleswick Plot, 198; description of (1664), 198; the Dutch Wars, 198-200; the Revolution, 203; list of captains and governors of, 204; Quakers imprisoned in, 372; establishment at, under Sir Francis Leeke (1546), 158-159; under Sir Henry Percy (1560), 160-162; under Sir William Selby (1610), 177; under Sir Arthur Heslerig (1649), 193-194, 196; under Sir Edward Villiers (1600), 197; ordnance at (1545), 158, 159; list of ordnance (1558), 160n; decay of ordnance at (1571), 164; inventory of ordnance (1584), 165-166 and 166n; Delaval's report on ordnance (1597), 169; reparation by Sir William Selby (1610), 177; its decay, 179; cannon removed to Newcastle (1638), 181.
- Tynemouth Chantry* cited *passim*; description of, 86n, 119.
- Tynemouth Chronicle* (lost), 120 and n.
- Tynemouth, Great Book of*, 121.
- Tynemouth parish church (St. Mary and St. Oswin), 124-131; alleged consecration by St. Cuthbert, 40; discovery of St. Oswin's body in (1065), 41-42; granted to monks of Jarrow (1074), 44; granted to Durham (1083), 45-46; transferred to St. Alban's (1085), 46; demolition of pre-Conquest church (1110), 56-57; confirmed to St. Alban's by Bishop Pudsey (1174), 63; settlement of parochial rights (1247), 73, 124; ordination of vicarage (1250), 124-125; valuation of vicarage (1292), 125-126; continued use of church after the dissolution, 127; its decay and ruin, 128; monumental inscriptions, 129-131; plans for rebuilding (1674), 201; (Christ church), 357-368; erection of, 357-359; division of parish, 360; account of church plate, 360; valuation of vicarage, 361, 368; monumental inscriptions, 361-362; list of vicars, 362-364; extracts from registers, 364-365; charities, 365-366; extracts from church books, 367-368.
- Tynemouth priory, historical account of, 34-123; description of the site, 34-35; Roman remains at, 35-38; the Anglian monastery, 38-41; discovery of the body of St. Oswin at (1065), 41-43; attached to Jarrow monastery (1074), 44-45; attached to Durham priory (1083), 45-46; made a cell of St. Alban's (1085), 46-47; table of endowments, 48-50; burial of Malcolm III. at (1092), 51-52; revolt of Robert de Mowbray (1095), 52-54; grants made to, by Henry I., 54-55; building of the priory church (1110), 56-57; disputes regarding the patronage of (1121), 57-58; charters of Stephen to, 58; charter of David I. of Scotland and Earl Henry to, 59-60; fire at, 60-61; charters of Henry II. to, 61-62; settlement touching counterclaims of Durham and St. Alban's to (1174), 63-66; extension of choir, 66; Richard I.'s and John's charters to, 67-70; early description of, 71-73; disputes with the bishops of Durham (1247-1275), 73-74; financial difficulties of, 74-76; collection of monastic letters (1258-1269), 76-78; lawsuits with Newcastle and with the Crown (1290-1293), 79-81; fortification of, (1296), 83; visits of Edward I. and of Edward II. to, 80, 83-84; Scotch wars and Middleton's rebellion (1313-1323), 85-90; erection of Lady-chapel at (*circa* 1326), 91, 256; Edward III. at (1335), 92; priorate of Thomas de la Mare (1340-1349), 92-96; renewed Scottish invasions and reparation of the fortifications (1380-1390), 97-100; visitation of (1426), 101-102; erection of Percy chapel at (*circa* 1450), 103-104; landing of Queen Margaret at (1462), 104; privileges granted by Edward IV. to (1463), 104; quarrels of Prior Boston and Prior Dixwell (1462-1485), 104-106; last days of, 106-110; suppression of (1539), 110-111; site of, leased to Sir Thomas Hilton (1539), 156-157; site of, leased to Thomas, seventh earl of Northumberland (1557), 159; leased to Henry, eighth earl (1570), 163; internal organisation, constitution and officers, 111-112; visitations of, 112-113; revenue of (*temp.* Henry III.), 75-76; in 1292, 80; in 1526, 114; table of property acquired in the fifteenth century, 115-117; financial regulations, 118; books in the conventual library, 118-119; literary productions, 103, 119-120; muniments, 120-121; conventual seals, 121-122 and plate vii.; arms of, 122; list of priors of, 122-123; architectural description of, 131-153; pre-Conquest remains, 131-135; the church, (A) the Norman structure, 135-138; (B) the Early English development, 138-142; (C) the Lady-chapel, 142-143; (D) the chamber over the choir, 143; (E) the Percy chapel, 144-145; sepulchral remains, 146-147; conventual buildings, 147-149; the great gate-house, 150-152; the curtain, 152-153; interments at, St. Oswin (651), 41-43, 146; St. Heribald (745), 30; Osred, king of Northumbria (792), 40; Malcolm III., king of Scotland (1093), 51-52; St. Henry of Coquet Island (1127), 146; Patrick, earl of Dunbar (1248), 74-75; Adam, son of King Edward II. (1322), 84; Prior John Whethamstede (1410), 146.
- Tynemouth, priors of, list, 122-123; Germanus (1148), grant to nuns of St. Bartholomew, 260; Ruelendus (twelfth century), fire in time of, 61, 140; Gilbert (twelfth century), death, 66; Akarius (*before* 1189), 391; election, 66, 81; seal, 121; builder of choir of priory church, 138; Ralph Gubiun (1208), resignation, 70, 249; Germanus (1227), appointment, 70; seal, 121; founds North Shields, 285; sues tenant, 300; Ralph de Dunham (1252), finds supposed coffin of Malcolm Caenmore (1257), 52; offer for Hartburn and Eglingham, 74; letter, 76; gift to

- library, 118; seal, 121; endowment of Tynemouth vicarage (1250), 124; agreement with William Heron (1256), 336; leases land at Murton, 409 n; grants land at Murton to sacristan, 410; Adam de Maperteshall (1273), complaint against by John de Whitley, 391; William Bernard (1279), John de Whitley complains against, 392 n; Simon de Walden (1280), *quo warranto* proceedings against (1290), 79, 208, 210 n, 252, 286-288; complaint of John de Whitley against, 392; forfeits franchise of Tynemouth (1291), 216-218; seeks royal protection against St. Alban's, 80-81; seized by abbot of St. Alban's (1294), 82; erects pillory, 211 n, 216; seal, 122; Adam de Tewing (1295), 82 n; mensuration of estates, 222; Richard de Fewing (1315), strong rule, 85-86, 156; chartulary and register, 86 n; letter to, 88; secures letters of protection, 89; buys land at Newcastle and Berwick, 90; builds Lady-chapel, 91; seal used by, 122; remits tenant's rent, 256; agreement with Sir Robert Delaval (1326), 318; lease of fishery (1337), 339 n, 340 n; agreement for land in Murton (1339), 410 n; death (1340), 92; Thomas de la Mare (1340), account of, 92-93; secures letters of protection from Edward III., 93, 156; religious work, 94; outlay on priory buildings, 95-96, 143, 148-149; moves shrine of St. Oswin, 143; made abbot of St. Alban's (1349), 96; Clement de Whethamstede (1349), appointment, 96; dispute with Newcastle over Fenham (1357), 97; seal used by, 122; John Macrell (Whethamstede) (1393), builds gate-house at Tynemouth, 100, 150; pedigree, 100; verses on, 101 n; life of, 103; effigy in Tynemouth priory, 146; Thomas Barton (1419), correspondence with abbot of St. Alban's, 102; Robert de Rhodes (*circa* 1440), acquires manor of Benwell, 102; John Langton (1450), probable builder of Percy chapel, 103, 144; deposed (1478), 105; commissioned to visit priory (1480), 105; monogram in Percy chapel, 145; grant from Henry VI. (1446), 289-290; Nicholas Boston (1478), almoner of St. Alban's (1462), 104; archdeacon of St. Alban's (1477), 105; appointed prior (1478), 105; grant from Richard III., 106, 280; resignation (1480), 105; reinstated, grant in perpetuity reissued, death (1495), 106; William Dixwell (1480), prior of Binham, deposed and reinstated, 104; prior of Tynemouth (1480), 105; again prior of Binham, 106; prior of Hertford, death, 106; John Bensted (1503), reception of Princess Margaret, 106; John Stonywell (1512), exempted by Wolsey from jurisdiction of St. Alban's, 107; dispute with Newcastle (1510), 290; Thomas Gardiner (1528), appointment, 107; made prior for life, 107; petition for protection, 107-108; charges against, 108-109; hall-corn customs in time of, 234; agreement with tenants, 235; Robert Blakeney (1537), appointment of, 109; grant of corrody, 70 n; signs deed of surrender (1539), 110, 156; receives pension and lease of Benwell, 110; hall-corn customs in time of, 233; books belonging to, 71 n.
- Tynemouth rectory, 369-371; leased to Sir Thomas Hilton, 156.
- Tynemouth TOWNSHIP, 247-280; geological features, 2-4, 8, 12-15; manor and church of, granted to monks of St. Alban's, 48, 49; manor of, 221; early rental of, 248-249; fishing industry at, 379, 388; customary freeholds in, 249-251; market at, 75, 79, 84, 252-253; survey of (1336), 255-257; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115-117, 257; early deeds relating to property in, 258-259, 421-425; semi-corporate character of, 261; destruction of village by the Scots (1389), 98, 261; survey of (1538), 261-262; survey of (1608), 262-263; lordship of, acquired by the earl of Northumberland (1637), 240, 263-264; survey of (1649), 265; enclosure of (1649), 244, 264-266, 311; descent of freehold properties, 266-274; census returns, 247 n; tithes of, 369, 371; Holy Saviour church, 360; non-established churches at, 377. *See also* Tynemouth borough.
- Tynemouth, John de, author of the *Historia Aurea*, 120, 255.
- Tynemouthshire, 207-246; the liberty, 207-221; creation of liberty of (1198), 68; forfeiture of (1291), 80, 216-218; restoration of (1299), 83, 221; geographical extent of, 208; historical development, 208-210; special jurisdiction, 210-211; sanctuary, 211-212; financial privileges, 211-214; military and naval obligations, 214-215; officers of the liberty, 215-216; list of seneschals and stewards, 215 n; assize roll for (1293), 218-220; Abbot Norton's progress through (1264), 113; the manor, 221-246; various manors within the liberty, 221-222; the bond's services, 222-225; varieties of customary freehold, 225-226; transition from bond-age tenure to tenant right, 227-230; leased from the Crown, 230; commutation of labour services, 230; hall-corn, 231-236; custom of husbandry, 236-238; recognition of copyhold tenure, 238-239; lordship of, granted in fee farm (1633), 239-240; extracts from manor rolls, 240-241; jury for (1562), 240; customs of, 241-242; rating by farms, 242-246; surveys of, *see* Surveys.
- Tyzack, family of, 271; Benjamin Cowley, monumental inscription, 131; Mary, monumental inscription, 131.
- U.
- Uhtred, member of the Northumbrian royal house, 413 n.
- Ufford, Robert de, earl of Suffolk, 95.
- Umfreville, Gilbert de, witness to charters, 60 n; Robert de (1), witness to charters, 59 n; Robert de (2), earl of Angus, letter to prior of Tynemouth, 88.
- Uphill, Anthony, of London, property in North Shields (1624), 298 n.
- Upton, J. R., 268.
- V.
- Val, de la. *See* Delaval.
- Valence, William de, earl of Pembroke, oppressor of St. Alban's and Tynemouth (1257-1270), 75.
- Vallibus, Hubert de, witness (1158), 62.
- Valoniis, Peter de, witness, 55.
- Vanholt, Dorothy, marriage (1752), 365.
- Vanlore, Catherine, Lady (Pelham), 263 n.
- Vasey, Martha (Kellio), marriage (1732), 365.
- Vaux, Sir John de, itinerant justice, 392 n.
- Vauxhall gardens, organ from, 360 n.
- Vavasour, Edward, 'prayer' of fish (1485), 287 n.
- Ventermann, Joel, town crier of Tynemouth (1523), 368.
- Vere, Robert de, witness to charter, 58 n.
- Vescy, John de, escape from Evesham (1265), 77; William de (1), witness to charter (1158), 62 n; William (2), grant to Tynemouth priory (1382), 116; witness (1381-1391), 422, 424.

- Vigerus, Nicholas, attorney for prior of Tynemouth (1293), 219; seneschal (1295), 215 n, 422.
- Vikers, Simon del, grant to Tynemouth priory (1360), 116, 331.
- Villiers, of Tynemouth castle, family of, arms, 201; pedigree, 202; Sir Edward, governor of Tynemouth castle (1661-1689), 197-204; builds lighthouse at Tynemouth, 206; Colonel Henry (1), governor of Tynemouth castle (1702-1707), 102, 203, 204; monumental inscription, 131; Henry (2), lieutenant-governor of Tynemouth (died 1753), 203, 207.
- Vinsauf, Geoffrey de, work in Tynemouth library, 119.
- W.**
- Wake, Richard, of Whitburn, 269.
- Walcher. *See* Durham, bishops of.
- Walden, Simon de. *See* Tynemouth, priors of.
- Waldie, George, coal owner, 22, 27.
- Walesende, Alan de, witness to documents, 64-65 n.
- Walker township, 351.
- Walker, Bryan, of Willington, 327; Elizabeth (Ker-
rich), 271; Esther (Ellison), 326; Henry, of
Whitby, buys land in Chirton and Tynemouth
(1724), 266 n, 326; James, of Newcastle, 347;
John (1), ensign of volunteers (1667), 200 n; John
(2), of the Low Lights, 326; John (3), of Dock-
wray Square and Wallsend, coal owner, 27; will
(1818), 271 n; John (4), property at the Low
Lights (1833), 271 n; Mary (Waters), 326; claim
on Shire Moor (1790), 415; Rachel (Yeoman),
326; Susannah, land in Tynemouth (1704), 266 n,
271; William, mayor of Tynemouth (1856), 352.
- Wall, William, of Newcastle, surrenders Monkseaton
property (1704), 407.
- Wallace, William, invades Northumberland (1297), 83.
- Wallingford, Richard de, *see* St. Alban's, abbots of;
William, *see* St. Alban's, abbots of.
- Wallis, Roger, messuage in Tynemouth (1336), 257;
Thomas (1), of Tynemouth, receives corrody from
Tynemouth priory (1538), 70 n; Thomas (2), 349.
- Wallsend, Roman stones from, 37; in Tynemouth
Union, 351; tithes of, 363; Thomas Dockwray,
curate of, 269, 270, 364; Emanuel Potter, curate
of, 364.
- Walmsley, Emanuel, 349.
- Walsingham, Francis, Lord, reports death of earl of
Northumberland (1585), 166; John de, chaplain
of Greystoke chantry at Tynemouth, 85 n; Thomas
de, *Historia Anglicana*, cited, 98 n, 99 n, 100 n.
- Waltham, abbot of, claims satisfaction for attack on
North Shields (1267), 286.
- Waltheof. *See* Northumberland, earls of.
- Walton, Thomas de, grants to Tynemouth priory
(1382, etc.), 116, 117, 257.
- Warburton's MSS. cited, 36, 283 n, 298 n, 309, 323.
- Ward, Ann, charge of brawling (1605), 367; Charles,
vicar of Tynemouth (1736), 364; Elizabeth, sells
land at Murton (1825), 411; George, commissioner
on tenures at Tynemouth (1608), 297; George, of
Whitby, marriage (1753), 365; Simon, charge
against (1603), 367.
- Warener, William, grant to Tynemouth priory
(1382), 116.
- Warkworth, lands and tithes in, held by Tynemouth
priory, 49, 62 n, 68 n; grant of salt pans at, 59;
garrisoned by the Scots (1646), 189; the castle
dismantled, 322; Wilfrid Lawson, vicar of, 322 n;
fishing at, 388.
- Warnham flats, mussels in the, 382.
- Warren, Henry, 323.
- Warwick, John Dudley, earl of. *See* Northumberland.
- Waters, Ralph, eighteenth century drawings of Tyne-
mouth priory, 140, 153.
- Watson, Aaron, cited, 387 n; Bennet, plaintiff (1595),
232, 234; John (1), of Bedlington, 171; John (2), of
Willington Quay, buys West Chirton farm (1805),
333; Thomas, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262,
263; William, witness (1376-1386), 422-424.
- Watt, James, visits Hartley (1768), 24.
- Webb, Rev. James, minister of St. Andrew's chapel
(1878-1887), 374.
- Webster, Gilbert, property in Tynemouth (1413), 258,
421; Peter, 258 n, 421.
- Weetslade township, 351.
- Weiss, Alice M. G. (Spence), 350.
- Weldon, Christopher, 262; Matthew, land in Tyne-
mouth, 263; Ralph, tenant of Tynemouth, 233;
Simon de, witness (1321), 394 n; Simon, land in
Tynemouth, 263; William de, juror of Tynemouth
(1295), 215 n.
- Welton, in Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tyne-
mouth priory, 49, 68 n; Walter Scot of, pays
homage to Abbot Norton (1264), 113; township
fined at Tynemouth assizes (1293), 219.
- Wemyss, General David, governor of Tynemouth
castle (1807), 204.
- Wesley, Charles, visit to North Shields, 375; John,
visits to North Shields (1759-1788), 375.
- West Chirton, historical account of, 334-341; in
Tynemouthshire, 208; granted to Tynemouth
priory (1256), 48, 76 n, 336; charge on rent, 101.
See also Flatworth.
- Westgate (Newcastle), granted to Tynemouth priory,
49; entries on Tynemouth court rolls relating to,
240; hospital of St. Mary at, 362.
- Westminster, Gervase, abbot of, 119; abbey organ,
360 n.
- Weston, Elfred, collector of relics, 42.
- Westwood, near Hexham, murder at, 172.
- Westwyke, John de, donor to Tynemouth library, 119;
possessor of manuscript of Bede, 119.
- Whalton, church of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 49,
68 n; claimed by Robert fitz Roger (1269), 73 n;
Thomas de Aukland, vicar of (1337), 115; Edward
Felde, vicar of (1531), 362; John de, chaplain of
Greystoke chantry, 85 n.
- Wheldon. *See* Weldon.
- Whelpington, Robert, seneschal of Tynemouth (1426-
1434), 215 n, 425.
- Wheteley, John de, vicar of Tynemouth (1350), 362;
grants to the priory (1300), 116, 257.
- Whethamstede, family of, pedigree, 100; Clement de,
see Tynemouth, priors of; John (Bastock) de, *see*
St. Alban's, abbots of; John (Macrell) de, *see*
Tynemouth, priors of; William de, cellarer of
Tynemouth (1405), 100, 396.
- Whitburn, county Durham, Thomas Dockwray, rector
of, 260, 270; Thomas Triplett, rector of, 270.
- Whitby, John Bensted, abbot of, *see* Tynemouth, priors
of; settlers from, at North Shields, 310.
- Whitechester, manor of, 321.
- White, Matthew (1), of Blagdon, acquires Murton
farm, 412; Sir Matthew (2), baronet, tenant of
Murton (1757), 411; Robert, minister, marriage
(1678), 365; William, witness (1445), 259 n, 425.
- Whitehead, George, deputy captain of Tynemouth
castle (1606), 175; report on state of castle, 178;

- letters from, 121, 237, 239, 244 n, 264, 294, 295, 297; charges against, 296, 299 n; Hugh, last prior of Durham, 175 n; Michael, lieutenant of volunteers (1667), 200 n; William, marriage (1684), 365.
- Whitehill point, wagonway to (1818), 27, 28, 341; landing place at, 298 n; fibula found at, 316; sands at, 353, 354; ferry, 354.
- Whitehorn, Augustus, mayor of Tynemouth (1890), 352.
- Whitfield, Hannah (Reay), monumental inscription, 130.
- Whiteved, Alan, vicar of Tynemouth, 362; grants to the priory (1360-1392), 116-117, 257; witness (1376, etc.), 258 n, 421, 424; trustee, 396.
- Whitley TOWNSHIP, 389-402; in Tynemouthshire, 208; geological features, 2, 5-6, 7, 10, 16, lordship granted to Tynemouth priory, 48, 54, 55 (13), 62 n, 67 n; tenure of, 225-226, 393-394; Conveys at, 224-225, 390, 393-394; customals (1225), 390, (1377), 395, (1404), 396; payment to Marden mill, 241; payment to Flatworth mill, 339 n; land in, acquired by Tynemouth priory (1325), 115, 394; licence to crenellate tower at (1345), 395; manor purchased by Tynemouth priory (1405), 100, 117, 396; tithes of, 110, 369, 371; grant of corrody out of, 70 n; number and size of holdings in, 228; rent of farmholds in, 229; recognition of copyhold tenure at, 239; Whitley hall, 398; colliery, 20-21, 26-27, 281, 397, 400; limestone quarries, 26-27, 397-398, 400; ironstone workings, 400; brewery, 399, 400; wagonway to Low Lights, 27, 313, 355, 400; St. Paul's church, 360; urban district, 401; detached portion of, 416; census returns, 389 n.
- Whitley, pedigree, 395; Agnes de (1), grant of land to vicar of Tynemouth (1321), 394; Agnes de (2) (Parker), 396; Alice de, messuage in Tynemouth (1336), 256; Gilbert de, messuage in Tynemouth (1336), 257; witness (1360), 257 n; East Chirton and Whitley subsidy roll (1296), 393; breaches of the peace (1318-1324), 394; military architect, 395; Henry de, 391; John de (1) (Wyteley), juror of Tynemouth (1295), 215 n; concerned in burglary (1290), 216, 220, 392; petition against prior, 391; losses (1297), 393; attack on William Baret (1305), 394; witness, 422; John de (2), witness (1339), 410 n; (1343-1344), 423; death at St. Alban's, 395; Nicholas de, East Chirton and Whitley subsidy roll (1296), 393; Ralph de (1), witness to charters (twelfth century), 389; Ralph de (2), sued (1225), 390; Robert de, property in Tynemouth, 255; Thomas de, grants to Tynemouth priory (1382, etc.), 116-117.
- Whittingham, Charles Ward, vicar of, 364.
- Whittonstall, Milo de, grant to St. Mary's, Westgate (*circa* 1200), 362.
- Widdrington chapel confirmed to St. Alban's abbey (1174), 63 n; pension in, payable to St. Alban's, 64; agreement respecting *synodalia*, 66; lands at, acquired by Tynemouth priory (1392), 117.
- Widdrington Edward, ensign of volunteers (1667), 200 n; Gerard de, claims Hauxley, 94; Sir Henry, takes possession of Percy castles, 175-176; report on state of Tynemouth, 178; Sir John de, sheriff of Northumberland (1426), 424, 425; Ralph, ensign of volunteers (1667), 200 n; Roger (1), witness (1426), 424, 425; Roger (2), captain of volunteers (1667), 200 n; William, Lord, governor of Berwick (1667), 200; captain of volunteer troop, 200 n.
- Wideopen, murder of John Daglish at, 172.
- Wildgose, Sir Robert, 333.
- Wilford, Caroline Russell (Cardonnel-Lawson and Warren), 323.
- Wilkinson, Agnes (Hepescotes), 258, 421-422, 424; pedigree, 425; George (juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240; Gilbert, of Tynemouth, chaplain of Grey-stoke chantry, 85 n, 258; grants, 421-422; pedigree, 425; Jacob, marriage (1687), 365; James, of Newcastle, and family, monumental inscription, 131; John (1413), 258 n; witness (1391), 422, (1386-1400), 424; Joseph, Nonconformist minister (*circa* 1759), 373.
- William I., invades Northumbria (1070 and 1072), 43-44, 154; consents to transfer of Tynemouth from Durham to St. Alban's (1085), 46.
- William II., charters to Tynemouth priory 52-53, 209; crushes Mowbray's revolt, 52-53, 155.
- Williams, Rev. J. F. C., Baptist minister (1866-1869), 377; William, of North Shields, land in Tynemouth, 268.
- Williamson Rev. James, Baptist minister (1816-1838), 377.
- Willington, Milbanke property in, 327; plan of, 413; included in Tynemouth Union, 351.
- Willington Quay, 351.
- Wills and Inventories: Hilton Lawson of Chirton (1748), 322 n; Edmund Milbanke of Tynemouth (1596), 327; William Milbanke of North Shields (1603), 327-328.
- Willoughby, royalist (1655), 195.
- Wilson, Eleanor, of North Shields, bequest (1703), 366; Dr. Gregg, paper on crab and lobster fishing, 389 n; Rev. John, D.D., minister of St. Andrew's chapel (1818-1820), 374; Mary (Crawford), 333; Matthew, of Blyth, buys land at Murton (1825), 411; Ralph, sued (1653), 241.
- Wilton, Thomas de, attorney for prior of Tynemouth, 90 n.
- Winch, N. J., geological works, 5, 11, 12, 417.
- Winchester, Richard, bishop of, witness to charter, 62 n.
- Windebank, Sir Francis, secretary of state, 181.
- Windsor, Robert de Mowbray imprisoned at, 54.
- Winnoc the hunter, grants Eglingham to Tynemouth priory, 48-49, 54.
- Winship, Luke, juror of Tynemouth (1686), 241; Thomas, juror of Tynemouth (1562), 240.
- Winter, Sir William, mission to Scotland (1560), 162.
- Wircester, Ralph de, grants Flatworth to Tynemouth priory (1158), 48, 62, 335; owns West Chirton (1166), 335; death, 336.
- Witton, chapel of Hartburn, confirmed to St. Alban's, 64.
- Witton, William de, tenant of Tynemouth (1264), 249 n; land acquired from, 220.
- Wolsey, Cardinal (Thomas), 107, 212.
- Wolsington, in Tynemouthshire, 208 and n; granted to Tynemouth priory, 49, 67 n; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory (1360), 116.
- Wolsington, Gilbert de, pays homage to Abbot Norton (1264), 113; grant of land in Monkseaton, 402; Margery de, land in Tynemouth (thirteenth century), 421; William de, witness (thirteenth century), 421.
- Wood, Nicholas, geological works, 5, 11, 12-13, 417.
- Woodburn, Thomas de, plunders Tynemouth property (*circa* 1325), 90.
- Wooden Dolly quay, 305.

- Woodhorn, church of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 49, 68 n; confirmed by Bishop Pudsey, 63 n; Richard, vicar of (1174), 64; church claimed by Bishop Philip de Poitiers (1205), 73 n; appropriated by St. Alban's, 118; pension in, payable to St. Alban's, 64; lease of tithes, 156; survey of (1271), 227 n; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 115; grant of lands in parish of, 159.
- Woodman, William, solicitor (1832), 243.
- Wooler, tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 50, 62 n, 68 n; William Haigh, vicar of, 130; General Monk at, 197.
- Wooperton, granted to Tynemouth priory, 48.
- Worcester, battle of, 194; William de Bedford, prior of, *see* Tynemouth, priors of.
- Worswick, Rev. James, of Newcastle, Roman Catholic priest (*circa* 1821), 376.
- Worthington, —, dissenting teacher (died 1733), 373 n.
- Wouldhave, William, inventor of lifeboat, 356.
- Wrangham, Thomas, buys Arnold's close (1618), 281.
- Wrench, —, prebendary of Durham (1668), 359.
- Wright, John (1), of North Shields, purchases lands in Tynemouth (1796), 266; monumental inscription, 131; John (2), of Wallsend, 273; John Bowes, property in Tynemouth, 266; Margaret (1), wife of Nicholas, 422; Margaret (2) (Kelso, Mitcalfe), 267; Nicholas, of Tynemouth, grant to (1363), 422; Robert, witness (1392), 424; Stephen, of Dockwray Square, buys Chirton Hill farm (1805), 333; monumental inscription, 131; Thomas, of Whitley park, buys Chirton Hill farm (1805), 333; buys Whitley park (1800), 399; buys land at Monkseaton (1801), 407; monumental inscription, 362; William, property in Tynemouth, 266.
- Wycliffe, John, of Offerton, 175 n; Thomas, 174 n; William, deputy captain of Tynemouth, 174; letters, 176, 294; charges against, 296, 299 n.
- Wydall, Thomas, tenant of Tynemouth (1539), 262, 263.
- Wylam, in Tynemouthshire, 208; manor and tithes of, granted to Tynemouth priory, 49, 50, 62 n, 63 n, 121; manor of, 221; court held at, 113; prior's house at, 101; murder at, presented at Tynemouth assizes, 219; lands in, acquired by Tynemouth priory, 116; laid waste by Scots (1297), 83; plundering of property at, 90; oppression of prior's men at, 92; recognition of copyhold tenure at, 239; presentments at Tynemouth manor court, 240; woods, 396.
- Wylam, John de, tenant of Chirton (1377), 227, 331; witness (1341), 423; Ralph de, 337; Roger de, freeholder of Chirton (1295), 227, 330; claims land, 337; William, Tynemouth subsidy roll (1296), 252; witness, 421.
- Wymondham, prior of, author of *l'ita Orcini*, 119; William de Horton, prior of, *see* Tynemouth, priors of.
- Wynyarde, David, cooper, 233, 235.
- Wyot, Henry, Middle Chirton tallage roll (1291), 330; William, Monkseaton custumal (*circa* 1236), 404.

Y.

- Yarmouth, merchants of, 254; fish trade, 379, 380, 381, 388.
- Yelloley, Robert, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415.
- Yeoman, family of, property in Chirton, 326; Anne (Rudyerd,) 326; Rachel, claim on Shire Moor (1790), 415.
- Yevel-penies, meaning of, 224.
- Young, George Frederick, M.P. for Tynemouth (1832-1837), 351.
- Younger, James, of Burradon, owner of Monkseaton farm, 406; Rowland (1597), 328.

LONDON AND NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE :
ANDREW REID & COMPANY, LIMITED, PRINTING COURT BUILDINGS, ABERNETHY HILL.



University of California
SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
405 Hilgard Avenue, Los Angeles, CA 90024-1388
Return this material to the library
from which it was borrowed.

REC'D LD-URC

AUG 17 1991

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



D 000 376 329 9

3 1158 00636

*DA
670
NSN81
v.8

